This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

**Usage guidelines**

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

**About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

KC
14322
NEDL TRANSFER
HN 3FKD 5

Ke 14322

Edgar Buckingham

Hazlitt's Cabinet Edition.

# THE WORKS

OF

# WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE,

FROM THE TEXT OF

JOHNSON, STEVENS, AND REED.

A New Edition,

INCLUDING THE POEMS AND DOUBTFUL PLAYS,

WITH

Glossarial Notes, Life, Etc.

BY

WILLIAM HAZLITT, ESQ.

*COMPLETE IN FIVE VOLUMES....VOLUME III.*

NEW YORK:
C. S. FRANCIS & CO., 252 BROADWAY.
BOSTON: CROSBY, NICHOLS & CO.
M.DCCC.LII.

KC 14322

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY
50 #132

# CONTENTS OF VOL. III.


King Henry V. ..... *Page* 1

First Part of King Henry VI. ..... 69

Second Part of King Henry VI. ..... 130

Third Part of King Henry VI. ..... 199

The Life and Death of King Richard III. ..... 264

King Henry VIII. ..... 345

Troilus and Cressida ..... 415

Coriolanus ..... 487

# KING HENRY V.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING HENRY THE FIFTH.
DUKE OF GLOSTER, } *Brothers to the King.*
DUKE OF BEDFORD, }
DUKE OF EXETER, *Uncle to the King.*
DUKE OF YORK, *Cousin to the King.*
EARLS OF SALISBURY, WESTMORELAND, and WARWICK.
ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.
BISHOP OF ELY.
EARL OF CAMBRIDGE, } *Conspirators against the King.*
LORD SCROOP, }
SIR THOMAS GREY, }
SIR THOMAS ERPINGHAM, GOWER, FLUELLEN, MACMORRIS, JAMY, *Officers in King Henry's Army.*
BATES, COURT, WILLIAMS, *Soldiers in the same.*
NYM, BARDOLPH, PISTOL, *formerly Servants to Falstaff, now Soldiers in the same.*
BOY, *Servant to them.*
A HERALD.—CHORUS.

CHARLES THE SIXTH, *King of France.*
LEWIS, *the Dauphin.*
DUKES OF BURGUNDY, ORLEANS, and BOURBON.
THE CONSTABLE OF FRANCE.
RAMBURES, and GRANDPREE, *French Lords.*
GOVERNOR OF HARFLEUR.
MONTJOY, *a French Herald.*
AMBASSADORS to the King of England.

---

ISABEL, *Queen of France.*
KATHARINE, *Daughter of Charles and Isabel.*
ALICE, *a Lady attending on the Princess Katharine.*
QUICKLY, *Pistol's Wife, a Hostess.*

LORDS, LADIES, OFFICERS, French and English SOLDIERS, MESSENGERS, and ATTENDANTS.

The SCENE, at the beginning of the Play, lies in England; but afterwards wholly in France.

---

*Enter* CHORUS.

O, for a muse of fire, that would ascend
The brightest heaven of invention!
A kingdom for a stage, princes to act,
And monarchs to behold the swelling scene!
Then should the warlike Harry, like himself,
Assume the port of Mars; and, at his heels,
Leash'd in like hounds, should famine, sword, and fire,
Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentles all,

The flat unraised spirit, that hath dared,
On this unworthy scaffold to bring forth
So great an object: Can this cockpit hold
The vasty fields of France? or may we cram
Within this wooden O,* the very casques,
That did affright the air at Agincourt?
O, pardon! since a crooked figure may
Attest, in little place, a million;
And let us, ciphers to this great accompt,
On your imaginary forces† work:
Suppose, within the girdle of these walls
Are now confined two mighty monarchies,
Whose high upreared and abutting fronts
The perilous, narrow ocean parts asunder.
Pierce out our imperfections with your thoughts;
Into a thousand parts divide one man,
And make imaginary puissance:
Think, when we talk of horses, that you see them
Printing their proud hoofs i' the receiving earth:
For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our kings,
Carry them here and there; jumping o'er times;
Turning the accomplishment of many years
Into an hour-glass; For the which supply,
Admit me chorus to this history;
Who, prologue-like, your humble patience pray,
Gently to hear, kindly to judge, our play.

---

## ACT I.

### *SCENE I.—London. An Antichamber in the King's Palace.*

*Enter the Archbishop of* CANTERBURY, *and Bishop of* ELY.

*Cant.* My lord, I'll tell you,—that self bill is urged,
Which, in the eleventh year o' the last king's reign
Was like, and had indeed against us pass'd,
But that the scambling and unquiet time
Did push it out of further question.‡
*Ely.* But how, my lord, shall we resist it now?
*Cant.* It must be thought on. If it pass against us,
We lose the better half of our possession:
For all the temporal lands, which men devout
By testament have given to the church,
Would they strip from us; being valued thus,—
As much as would maintain, to the king's honour,
Full fifteen earls, and fifteen hundred knights;
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires;
And to relief of lazars, and weak age,

* An allusion to the circular form of the Globe Theatre.
† Powers of fancy. ‡ Debate.

Of indigent faint souls, past corporal toil,
A hundred alms-houses, right well supplied;
And to the coffers of the king beside,
A thousand pounds by the year: Thus runs the bill.
*Ely.* This would drink deep.
*Cant.* 'Twould drink the cup and all.
*Ely.* But what prevention?
*Cant.* The king is full of grace, and fair regard.
*Ely.* And a true lover of the holy church.
*Cant.* The courses of his youth promised it not.
The breath no sooner left his father's body,
But that his wildness, mortified in him,
Seem'd to die too: yea, at that very moment,
Consideration like an angel came,
And whipp'd the offending Adam out of him;
Leaving his body as a paradise,
To envelop and contain celestial spirits.
Never was such a sudden scholar made:
Never came reformation in a flood,
With such a heady current, scouring faults;
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness
So soon did lose his seat, and all at once,
As in this king.
*Ely.* We are blessed in the change.
*Cant.* Hear him but reason in divinity,
And, all-admiring, with an inward wish
You would desire, the king were made a prelate:
Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs,
You would say,—it hath been all-in-all his study:
List* his discourse of war, and you shall hear
A fearful battle render'd you in music:
Turn him to any cause of policy,
The Gordian knot of it he will unloose,
Familiar as his garter; that, when he speaks,
The air, a charter'd libertine, is still,
And the mute wonder lurketh in men's ears,
To steal his sweet and honey'd sentences;
So that the art and practic part of life
Must be the mistress to this theoric:†
Which is a wonder, how his grace should glean it,
Since his addiction was to courses vain:
His companies‡ unletter'd, rude, and shallow;
His hours fill'd up with riots, banquets, sports;
And never noted in him any study,
Any retirement, any sequestration
From open haunts and popularity.§
*Ely.* The strawberry grows underneath the nettle;
And wholesome berries thrive and ripen best,
Neighbour'd by fruit of baser quality:
And so the prince obscured his contemplation

* Listen to.
‡ Companions.
† Theory and practice.
§ Plebeian intercourse.

Under the veil of wildness; which, no doubt,
Grew like summer grass, fastest by night,
Unseen, yet crescive* in his faculty.
*Cant.* It must be so: for miracles are ceased:
And therefore we must needs admit the means,
How things are perfected.
*Ely.* But, my good lord,
How now for mitigation of this bill
Urged by the commons? Doth his majesty
Incline to it, or no?
*Cant.* He seems indifferent;
Or, rather, swaying more upon our part,
Than cherishing the exhibiters against us:
For I have made an offer to his majesty,—
Upon our spiritual convocation;
And in regard of causes now in hand,
Which I have open'd to his grace at large,
As touching France,—to give a greater sum
Than ever at one time the clergy yet
Did to his predecessors part withal.
*Ely.* How did this offer seem received, my lord?
*Cant.* With good acceptance of his majesty;
Save, that there was not time enough to hear
(As, I perceived, his grace would fain have done)
The severals, and unhidden passages,
Of his true titles to some certain dukedoms;
And, generally, to the crown and seat of France,
Derived from Edward, his great grandfather.
*Ely.* What was the impediment that broke this off?
*Cant.* The French ambassador, upon that instant,
Craved audience: and the hour, I think, is come,
To give him hearing: Is it four o'clock?
*Ely.* It is.
*Cant.* Then go we in, to know his embassy;
Which I could, with a ready guess, declare,
Before the Frenchman speak a word of it.
*Ely.* I'll wait upon you; and I long to hear it. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—The same. A Room of State in the same.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND, *and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Where is my gracious lord of Canterbury?
*Exe.* Not here in presence.
*K. Hen.* Send for him, good uncle.
*West.* Shall we call in the ambassador, my liege?
*K. Hen.* Not yet, my cousin; we would be resolved,
Before we hear him, of some things of weight,
That task our thoughts, concerning us and France.

* Increasing.

*Enter the Archbishop of* CANTERBURY, *and Bishop of* ELY.

*Cant.* God and his angels guard your sacred throne,
And make you long become it!
*K. Hen.* Sure, we thank you.
My learned lord, we pray you to proceed;
And justly and religiously unfold,
Why the law Salique, that they have in France,
Or should, or should not, bar us in our claim.
And God forbid, my dear and faithful lord,
That you should fashion, wrest, or bow your reading,
Or nicely* charge your understanding soul
With opening titles miscreate,† whose right
Suits not in native colours with the truth;
For God doth know, how many, now in health,
Shall drop their blood in approbation ‡
Of what your reverence shall incite us to:
Therefore take heed how you impawn our person,
How you awake the sleeping sword of war;
We charge you in the name of God, take heed:
For never two such kingdoms did contend,
Without much fall of blood; whose guiltless drops
Are every one a woe, a sore complaint,
'Gainst him, whose wrongs give edge unto the swords
That make such waste in brief mortality.
Under this conjuration, speak, my lord:
And we will hear, note, and believe in heart,
That what you speak is in your conscience wash'd
As pure as sin with baptism.
*Cant.* Then hear me, gracious sovereign,—and you peers,
That owe your lives, your faith, and services,
To this imperial throne;—There is no bar
To make against your highness' claim to France,
But this, which they produce from Pharamond,—
*In terram Salicam mulieres ne succedant,*
*No woman shall succeed in Salique land:*
Which Salique land the French unjustly gloze,§
To be the realm of France, and Pharamond
The founder of this law and female bar.
Yet their own authors faithfully affirm,
That the land Salique lies in Germany,
Between the floods of Sala and of Elbe:
Where Charles the great, having subdued the Saxons,
There left behind and settled certain French;
Who, holding in disdain the German women,
For some dishonest manners of their life,
Establish'd there this law,—to wit, no female
Should be inheritrix in Salique land;
Which Salique, as I said, 'twixt Elbe and Sala,

* Sophistically. † Spurious.
‡ Supporting. § Explain.

Is at this day in Germany call'd—Meisen.
Thus doth it well appear, the Salique law
Was not devised for the realm of France:
Nor did the French possess the Salique land
Until four hundred one and twenty years
After defunction of king Pharamond,
Idly supposed the founder of this law;
Who died within the year of our redemption
Four hundred twenty-six; and Charles the great
Subdued the Saxons, and did seat the French
Beyond the river Sala, in the year
Eight hundred five. Besides, their writers say,
King Pepin, which deposed Childerick,
Did, as heir general, being descended
Of Blithild, which was the daughter to Clothair,
Make claim and title to the crown of France.
Hugh Capet also,—that usurp'd the crown
Of Charles the duke of Lorain, sole heir male
Of the true line and stock of Charles the great,—
To fine* his title with some show of truth
(Though, in pure truth, it was corrupt and naught),
Convey'd† himself as heir to the lady Lingare,
Daughter to Charlemain, who was the son
To Lewis the emperor, and Lewis the son
Of Charles the great. Also king Lewis the tenth,
Who was sole heir to the usurper Capet,
Could not keep quiet in his conscience,
Wearing the crown of France, till satisfied
That fair queen Isabel, his grandmother,
Was lineal of the lady Ermengare,
Daughter to Charles the foresaid duke of Lorain:
By the which marriage, the line of Charles the great
Was re-united to the crown of France.
So that, as clear as is the summer's sun,
King Pepin's title, and Hugh Capet's claim,
King Lewis his satisfaction, all appear
To hold in right and title of the female:
So do the kings of France unto this day;
Howbeit they would hold up this Salique law,
To bar your highness claiming from the female:
And rather choose to hide them in a net,
Than amply to imbare‡ their crooked titles
Usurp'd from you and your progenitors.

*K. Hen.* May I, with right and conscience, make this claim?

*Cant.* The sin upon my head, dread sovereign!
For in the book of Numbers is it writ,—
When the son dies, let the inheritance
Descend unto the daughter. Gracious lord,
Stand for your own; unwind your bloody flag;
Look back unto your mighty ancestors:

* Make showy or specious.
† Derived his title. ‡ Lay open.

Go, my dread lord, to your great grandsire's tomb,
From whom you claim; invoke his warlike spirit,
And your great uncle's, Edward the black prince;
Who on the French ground play'd a tragedy,
Making defeat on the full power of France
Whiles his most mighty father on a hill
Stood smiling; to behold his lion's whelp
Forage in blood of French nobility.
O noble English that could entertain
With half their forces the full pride of France;
And let another half stand laughing by,
All out of work, and cold for action!

*Ely.* Awake remembrance of these valiant dead,
And with your puissant arm renew their feats:
You are their heir, you sit upon their throne;
The blood and courage, that renowned them,
Runs in your veins; and my thrice-puissant liege
Is in the very May-morn of his youth,
Ripe for exploits and mighty enterprises.

*Exe.* Your brother kings and monarchs of the earth
Do all expect that you should rouse yourself,
As did the former lions of your blood.

*West.* They know, your grace hath cause, and means, and might;
So hath your highness; never king of England
Had nobles richer, and more loyal subjects;
Whose hearts have left their bodies here in England,
And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France.

*Cant.* O, let their bodies follow, my dear liege,
With blood, and sword, and fire, to win your right
In aid whereof, we of the spirituality
Will raise your highness such a mighty sum,
As never did the clergy at one time
Bring in to any of your ancestors.

*K. Hen.* We must not only arm to invade the French;
But lay down our proportions to defend
Against the Scot, who will make road upon us
With all advantages.

*Cant.* They of those marches,* gracious sovereign,
Shall be a wall sufficient to defend
Our inland from the pilfering borderers.

*K. Hen.* We do not mean the coursing snatchers only,
But fear the main intendment† of the Scot,
Who hath been still a giddy neighbour to us;
For you shall read, that my great grandfather
Never went with his forces into France,
But that the Scot on his unfurnish'd kingdom
Came pouring, like the tide into a breach,
With ample and brim fulness of his force;
Galling the gleaned land with hot essays;
Girding with grievous siege castles and towns;

* The borders of England and Scotland. † General disposition.

That England, being empty of defence,
Hath shook, and trembled at the ill neighbourhood.

*Cant.* She hath been then more fear'd* than harm'd, my liege:
For hear her but exampled by herself,—
When all her chivalry hath been in France,
And she a mourning widow of her nobles,
She hath herself not only well defended,
But taken, and impounded as a stray,
The king of Scots; whom she did send to France,
To fill king Edward's fame with prisoner kings;
And make your chronicle as rich with praise,
As is the ooze and bottom of the sea
With sunken wreck and sumless treasuries.

*West.* But there's a saying, very old and true,—

*If that you will France win,*
*Then with Scotland first begin;*

For once the eagle England being in prey,
To her unguarded nest the weasel Scot
Comes sneaking, and so sucks her princely eggs;
Playing the mouse, in absence of the cat,
To spoil and havoc more than she can eat.

*Exe.* It follows then, the cat must stay at home:
Yet that is but a cursed necessity;
Since we have locks to safeguard necessaries,
And pretty traps to catch the petty thieves.
While that the armed hand doth fight abroad,
The advised head defends itself at home:
For government, though high, and low, and lower,
Put into parts, doth keep in one concent;†
Congruing in a full and natural close,
Like music.

*Cant.* True: therefore doth heaven divide
The state of man in divers functions,
Setting endeavour in continual motion;
To which is fixed, as an aim or butt,
Obedience: for so work the honey bees;
Creatures, that, by a rule in nature, teach
The act of order to a peopled kingdom.
They have a king, and officers of sorts:‡
Where some, like magistrates, correct at home;
Others, like merchants, venture trade abroad;
Others, like soldiers, armed in their stings,
Make boot upon the summer's velvet buds;
Which pillage they with merry march bring home
To the tent-royal of their emperor:
Who, busied in his majesty, surveys
The singing masons building roofs of gold;
The civil§ citizens kneading up the honey;
The poor mechanic porters crowding in
Their heavy burdens at his narrow gate;

* Frightened. † Harmony.
‡ Companies. § Sober, grave

The sad-eyed justice, with his surly hum,
Delivering o'er to executors* pale
The lazy yawning drone. I this infer,—
That many things, having full reference
To one concent, may work contrariously;
As many arrows, loosed several ways,
Fly to one mark;
As many several ways meet in one town;
As many fresh streams run in one self sea;
As many lines close in the dial's centre;
So many a thousand actions, once afoot,
End in one purpose, and be all well borne
Without defeat. Therefore to France, my liege.
Divide your happy England into four;
Whereof take you one quarter into France,
And you withal shall make all Gallia shake.
If we, with thrice that power left at home,
Cannot defend our own door from the dog,
Let us be worried; and our nation lose
The name of hardiness, and policy.

*K. Hen.* Call in the messengers sent from the Dauphin.

[*Exit an Attendant. The* KING *ascends his Throne.*

Now are we well resolved: and,—by God's help;
And yours, the noble sinews of our power,—
France being ours, we'll bend it to our awe,
Or break it all to pieces: Or there we'll sit,
Ruling, in large and ample empery,†
O'er France, and all her almost kingly dukedoms;
Or lay these bones in an unworthy urn,
Tombless, with no remembrance over them:
Either our history shall, with full mouth,
Speak freely of our acts; or else our grave,
Like Turkish mute, shall have a tongueless mouth,
Not worship'd with a waxen epitaph.

*Enter* AMBASSADORS *of France.*

Now are we well prepared to know the pleasure
Of our fair cousin Dauphin; for, we hear,
Your greeting is from him, not from the king.

*Amb.* May it please your majesty, to give us leave
Freely to render what we have in charge;
Or shall we sparingly show you far off
The Dauphin's meaning, and our embassy?

*K. Hen.* We are no tyrant, but a Christian king
Unto whose grace our passion is as subject
As are our wretches fetter'd in our prisons:
Therefore, with frank and with uncurbed plainness,
Tell us the Dauphin's mind.

*Amb.* Thus, then in few.
Your highness, lately sending into France,
Did claim some certain dukedoms, in the right

* Executioners. † Dominion.

Of your great predecessor, king Edward the third.
In answer of which claim, the prince our master
Says,—that you savour too much of your youth;
And bids you be advised, there's nought in France,
That can be with a nimble galliard* won;
You cannot revel into dukedoms there:
He therefore sends you, meeter for your spirit,
This tun of treasure; and, in lieu of this,
Desires you, let the dukedoms, that you claim,
Hear no more of you. This the Dauphin speaks.

*K. Hen.* What treasure, uncle?

*Exe.* Tennis-balls, my liege.

*K. Hen.* We are glad, the Dauphin is so pleasant with us;
His present, and your pains, we thank you for:
When we have match'd our rackets to these balls,
We will, in France, by God's grace, play a set,
Shall strike his father's crown into the hazard:†
Tell him, he hath made a match with such a wrangler,
That all the courts of France will be disturb'd
With chaces.‡ And we understand him well,
How he comes o'er us with our wilder days,
Not measuring what use we made of them.
We never valued this poor seat of England;
And therefore, living hence, did give ourself
To barbarous licence; As 'tis ever common,
That men are merriest when they are from home.
But tell the Dauphin,—I will keep my state;
Be like a king, and show my sail of greatness,
When I do rouse me in my throne of France:
For that I have laid by my majesty,
And plodded like a man for working days;
But I will rise there with so full a glory,
That I will dazzle all the eyes of France,
Yea, strike the Dauphin blind to look on us.
And tell the pleasant prince,—this mock of his
Hath turn'd his balls to gun-stones; and his soul
Shall stand sore charged for the wasteful vengeance
That shall fly with them: for many a thousand widows
Shall this his mock mock out of their dear husbands;
Mock mothers from their sons, mock castles down;
And some are yet ungotten, and unborn,
That shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's scorn.
But this lies all within the will of God,
To whom I do appeal; And in whose name,
Tell you the Dauphin, I am coming on,
To venge me as I may, and to put forth
My rightful hand in a well-hallow'd cause.
So, get you hence in peace; and tell the Dauphin,

* A dance.

† A place in the tennis-court into which the ball is sometimes struck.

‡ At tennis, the spot where a ball falls, beyond which the adversary must strike his ball to gain a point.

His jest will savour but of shallow wit,
When thousands weep, more than did laugh at it.—
Convey them with safe conduct.—Fare you well.
[*Exeunt* AMBASSADORS.

*Exe.* This was a merry message.
*K. Hen.* We hope to make the sender blush at it.
[*Descends from his Throne.*

Therefore, my lords, omit no happy hour,
That may give furtherance to our expedition:
For we have now no thought in us but France;
Save those to God, that run before our business.
Therefore, let our proportions for these wars
Be soon collected; and all things thought upon,
That may, with reasonable swiftness, add
More feathers to our wings; for, God before,
We'll chide this Dauphin at his father's door.
Therefore, let every man now task his thought,
That this fair action may on foot be brought. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT II.

*Enter* CHORUS.

*Chor.* Now all the youth of England are on fire,
And silken dalliance in the wardrobe lies;
Now thrive the armourers, and honour's thought
Reigns solely in the breast of every man:
They sell the pasture now to buy the horse;
Following the mirror of all Christian kings,
With winged heels, as English Mercuries.
For now sits Expectation in the air;
And hides a sword, from hilts unto the point,
With crowns imperial, crowns, and coronets,
Promised to Harry, and his followers.
The French, advised by good intelligence
Of this most dreadful preparation,
Shake in their fear; and with pale policy
Seek to divert the English purposes.
O England!—model to thy inward greatness,
Like little body with a mighty heart,—
What mightst thou do, that honour would thee do,
Were all thy children kind and natural!
But see thy fault! France hath in thee found out
A nest of hollow bosoms, which he fills
With treacherous crowns: and three corrupted men,—
One, Richard earl of Cambridge; and the second,
Henry lord Scroop of Masham; and the third,
Sir Thomas Grey knight of Northumberland,—
Have, for the gilt* of France, (O guilt indeed!)

* Gelt, money.

Confirm'd conspiracy with fearful France;
And by their hands this grace of kings must die
(If hell and treason hold their promises),
Ere he take ship for France, and in Southampton.
Linger your patience on; and well digest
The abuse of distance, while we force* a play.
The sum is paid; the traitors are agreed;
The king is set from London; and the scene
Is now transported, gentles, to Southampton:
There is the playhouse now, there must you sit:
And thence to France shall we convey you safe,
And bring you back, charming the narrow seas
To give you gentle pass; for, if we may,
We'll not offend one stomach with our play.
But, till the king come forth, and not till then,
Unto Southampton do we shift our scene. [*Exit.*

### *SCENE I.—The same. Eastcheap.*

*Enter* NYM *and* BARDOLPH.

*Bard.* Well met, corporal Nym.

*Nym.* Good morrow, lieutenant Bardolph.

*Bard.* What, are ancient Pistol and you friends yet?

*Nym.* For my part, I care not: I say little: but when time shall serve, there shall be smiles;—but that shall be as it may. I dare not fight; but I will wink, and hold out mine iron: It is a simple one: but what though? it will toast cheese; and it will endure cold as another man's sword will: and there's the humour of it.

*Bard.* I will bestow a breakfast, to make you friends; and we'll be all three sworn brothers to France; let it be so, good corporal Nym.

*Nym.* 'Faith, I will live so long as I may, that's the certain of it; and when I cannot live any longer, I will do as I may: that is my rest,† that is the rendezvous of it.

*Bard.* It is certain, corporal, that he is married to Nell Quickly: and, certainly, she did you wrong; for you were troth-plight to her.

*Nym.* I cannot tell; things must be as they may: men may sleep, and they may have their throats about them at that time; and some say, knives have edges. It must be as it may: though patience be a tired mare, yet she will plod. There must be conclusions. Well, I cannot tell.

*Enter* PISTOL *and Mrs.* QUICKLY.

*Bard.* Here comes ancient Pistol, and his wife:—good corporal, be patient here.—How now, mine host Pistol?

*Pist.* Base tike,‡ call'st thou me—host?
Now, by this hand I swear, I scorn the term;
Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers.

* *I. e.* by compressing events. † Resolution. ‡ Clown.

*Quick.* No, by my troth, not long: for we cannot lodge and board a dozen or fourteen gentlewomen, that live honestly by the prick of their needles, but it will be thought we keep a bawdy-house straight. [NYM *draws his sword.*] O well-a-day, Lady, if he be not drawn now! O Lord! here's corporal Nym's—now shall we have wilful adultery and murder committed. Good lieutenant Bardolph,—good corporal, offer nothing here.

*Nym.* Pish!

*Pist.* Pish for thee, Iceland dog! thou prickeared cur of Iceland!

*Quick.* Good corporal Nym, show the valour of a man, and put up thy sword.

*Nym.* Will you shog off? I would have you *solus.*

[*Sheathing his sword.*

Pist. *Solus*, egregious dog? O viper vile!
The *solus* in thy most marvellous face;
The *solus* in thy teeth, and in thy throat,
And in thy hateful lungs, yea, in thy maw, perdy;*
And, which is worse, within thy nasty mouth!
I do retort the *solus* in thy bowels:
For I can take, and Pistol's cock is up,
And flashing fire will follow.

*Nym.* I am not Barbason;† you cannot conjure me. I have a humour to knock you indifferently well: If you grow foul with me, Pistol, I will scour you with my rapier, as I may, in fair terms: if you would walk off, I would prick your guts a little, in good terms, as I may; and that's the humour of it.

*Pist.* O braggard vile, and damned furious wight!
The grave doth gape, and doting death is near;
Therefore exhale.‡ [PISTOL *and* NYM *draw.*

*Bard.* Hear me, hear me what I say:—he that strikes the first stroke, I'll run him up to the hilts, as I am a soldier. [*Draws.*

*Pist.* An oath of mickle might; and fury shall abate.
Give me thy fist, thy fore-foot to me give;
Thy spirits are most tall.

*Nym.* I will cut thy throat, one time or other, in fair terms; that is the humour of it.

Pist. *Coup le gorge*, that's the word?—I thee defy again.
O hound of Crete,§ think'st thou my spouse to get?
No; to the 'spital go,
And from the powdering tub of infamy
Fetch forth the lazar kite of Cressid's kind,
Doll Tear-sheet she by name, and her espouse:
I have, and I will hold, the *quondam* Quickly
For the only she; and—*Pauca*, there's enough.

*Enter the* BOY.

*Boy.* Mine host Pistol, you must come to my master,—and you, hostess;—he is very sick, and would to bed.—Good Bardolph,

* *Par Dieu!*
† The name of a demon.
‡ Breathe your last.
§ Blood-hound.

put thy nose between his sheets, and do the office of a warming-pan: 'faith he's very ill.

*Bard.* Away, you rogue.

*Quick.* By my troth, he'll yield the crow a pudding one of these days: the king has kill'd his heart.—Good husband, come home presently. [*Exeunt Mrs.* QUICKLY *and* BOY.

*Bard.* Come, shall I make you two friends? We must to France together; Why, the devil, should we keep knives to cut one another's throats?

*Pist.* Let floods o'erswell, and fiends for food howl on!

*Nym.* You'll pay me the eight shillings I won of you at betting?

*Pist.* Base is the slave that pays.

*Nym.* That now I will have; that's the humour of it.

*Pist.* As manhood shall compound; Push home.

*Bard.* By this sword, he that makes the first thrust, I'll kill him; by this sword, I will.

*Pist.* Sword is an oath, and oaths must have their course.

*Bard.* Corporal Nym, and thou wilt be friends, be friends: an thou wilt not, why then be enemies with me too. Pr'ythee, put up.

*Nym.* I shall have my eight shillings, I won of you at betting.

*Pist.* A noble* shalt thou have, and present pay;
And liquor likewise will I give to thee,
And friendship shall combine, and brotherhood:
I'll live by Nym, and Nym shall live by me;—
Is not this just?—for I shall sutler be
Unto the camp, and profits will accrue.
Give me thy hand.

*Nym.* I shall have my noble?

*Pist.* In cash most justly paid.

*Nym.* Well then, that's the humour of it.

*Re-enter Mrs.* QUICKLY.

*Quick.* As ever you came of women, come in quickly to Sir John: Ah, poor heart! he is so shaked of a burning quotidian tertian, that it is most lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

*Nym.* The king hath run bad humours on the knight, that's the even of it.

*Pist.* Nym, thou hast spoke the right;
His heart is fracted and corroborate.

*Nym.* The king is a good king: but it must be as it may; he passes some humours, and careers.

*Pist.* Let us condole the knight; for, lambkins, we will live.
[*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—Southampton. A council-chamber.*

*Enter* EXETER, BEDFORD, *and* WESTMORELAND.

*Bed.* 'Fore God, his grace is bold, to trust these traitors.

*Exe.* They shall be apprehended by-and-by.

* A coin, in value six shillings and eight pence.

*West.* How smooth and even they do bear themselves!
As if allegiance in their bosoms sat,
Crowned with faith and constant loyalty.
*Bed.* The king hath note of all that they intend,
By interception which they dream not of.
*Exe.* Nay, but the man that was his bedfellow,
Whom he hath cloy'd and graced with princely favours,—
That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell
His sovereign's life to death and treachery!

*Trumpet sounds. Enter* KING HENRY, SCROOP, CAMBRIDGE, GREY, *Lords, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Now, sits the wind fair, and we will aboard.
My lord of Cambridge,—and my kind lord of Masham,—
And you my gentle knight,——give me your thoughts:
Think you not, that the powers we bear with us,
Will cut their passage through the force of France;
Doing the execution, and the act,
For which we have in head* assembled them?
*Scroop.* No doubt, my liege, if each man do his best.
*K. Hen.* I doubt not that: since we are well persuaded,
We carry not a heart with us from hence,
That grows not in a fair consent with ours;
Nor leave not one behind, that doth not wish
Success and conquest to attend on us.
*Cam.* Never was monarch better fear'd and loved,
Than is your majesty; there's not, I think, a subject,
That sits in heart-grief and uneasiness
Under the sweet shade of your government.
*Grey.* Even those that were your father's enemies,
Have steep'd their galls in honey; and do serve you
With hearts create† of duty and of zeal.
*K. Hen.* We therefore have great cause of thankfulness;
And shall forget the office of our hand,
Sooner than quittance of desert and merit,
According to the weight and worthiness.
*Scroop.* So service shall with steeled sinews toil;
And labour shall refresh itself with hope,
To do your grace incessant services.
*K. Hen.* We judge no less.—Uncle of Exeter,
Enlarge the man committed yesterday,
That rail'd against our person: we consider,
It was excess of wine that set him on;
And, on his more advice,‡ we pardon him.
*Scroop.* That's mercy, but too much security:
Let him be punish'd, sovereign; lest example
Breed, by his sufferance, more of such a kind.
*K. Hen.* O, let us yet be merciful.
*Cam.* So may your highness, and yet punish too.
*Grey.* Sir, you show great mercy, if you give him life,
After the taste of much correction.

* Force. † Compounded. ‡ Coming to his senses.

*K. Hen.* Alas, your too much love and care of me
Are heavy orisons 'gainst this poor wretch.
If little faults, proceeding on distemper,*
Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch our eye,
When capital crimes, chew'd, swallow'd, and digested,
Appear before us?—We'll yet enlarge that man,
Though Cambridge, Scroop, and Grey,—in their dear care,
And tender preservation of our person,—
Would have him punish'd. And now to our French causes;
Who are the late† commissioners?
*Cam.* I one, my lord;
Your highness bade me ask for it to-day.
*Scroop.* So did you me, my liege.
*Grey.* And me, my royal sovereign.
*K. Hen.* Then, Richard, earl of Cambridge, there is yours;—
There yours, lord Scroop, of Masham;—and, Sir knight,
Grey of Northumberland, this same is yours:—
Read them; and know, I know your worthiness.—
My lord of Westmoreland,—and uncle Exeter,—
We will aboard to-night.—Why, how now, gentlemen?
What see you in those papers, that you lose
So much complexion?—look ye, how they change!
Their cheeks are paper.—Why, what read you there,
That hath so cowarded and chased your blood
Out of appearance?
*Cam.* I do confess my fault;
And do submit me to your highness' mercy.
*Grey, Scroop.* To which we all appeal.
*K. Hen.* The mercy, that was quick‡ in us but late,
By your own counsel is suppress'd and kill'd:
You must not dare, for shame, to talk of mercy;
For your own reasons turn into your bosoms,
As dogs upon their masters, worrying them.—
See you, my princes, and my noble peers,
These English monsters! My lord of Cambridge here,—
You know, how apt our love was, to accord
To furnish him with all appertinents
Belonging to his honour; and this man
Hath, for a few light crowns, lightly conspired,
And sworn unto the practices of France,
To kill us here in Hampton: to the which,
This knight, no less for bounty bound to us
Than Cambridge is,—hath likewise sworn—But Oh!
What shall I say to thee, lord Scroop; thou cruel,
Ingrateful, savage, and inhuman creature!
Thou that didst bear the key of all my counsels,
That knew'st the very bottom of my soul,
That almost mightst have coin'd me into gold,
Wouldst thou have practised on me for thy use?
May it be possible, that foreign hire
Could out of thee extract one spark of evil,

* Disorder from wine. † Lately appointed. ‡ Living.

That might annoy my finger? 'tis so strange,*
That, though the truth of it stands off† as gross
As black from white, my eye will scarcely see it.
Treason and murder, ever kept together,
As two yoke-devils, sworn to either's purpose,
Working so grossly in a natural cause,
That admiration did not whoop at them:
But thou 'gainst all proportion, didst bring in
Wonder, to wait on treason, and on murder:
And whatsoever cunning fiend it was,
That wrought upon thee so preposterously,
H'ath got the voice in hell for excellence:
And other devils, that suggest by treasons,
Do botch and bungle up damnation
With patches, colours, and with forms being fetch'd
From glistering semblances of piety:
But he, that temper'd‡ thee, bade thee stand up,
Gave thee no instance why thou shouldst do treason,
Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor.
If that same demon, that hath gull'd thee thus,
Should with his lion gait walk the whole world,
He might return to vasty Tartar§ back,
And tell the legions—I can never win
A soul so easy as that Englishman's.
O, how hast thou with jealousy infected
The sweetness of affiance!‖ Show men dutiful?
Why, so didst thou: Seem they grave and learned?
Why, so didst thou: Come they of noble family?
Why, so didst thou: Seem they religious?
Why, so didst thou: Or are they spare in diet;
Free from gross passion, or of mirth or anger;
Constant in spirit, not swerving with the blood;
Garnish'd and deck'd in modest complement;¶
Not working with the eye, without the ear,
And, but in purged judgment trusting neither?
Such, and so finely bolted,** didst thou seem:
And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot,
To mark the full-fraught man, and best indued,††
With some suspicion. I will weep for thee;
For this revolt of thine, methinks, is like
Another fall of man.—Their faults are open,
Arrest them to the answer of the law;—
And God acquit them of their practices!

*Exe.* I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Richard earl of Cambridge.

I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Henry lord Scroop of Masham.

I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of Thomas Grey, knight of Northumberland.

* Palpable. † Stands out. ‡ Rendered thee pliable.
§ Tartarus. ‖ Trust, confidence. ¶ Accomplishment.
** Sifted. †† Endowed.

*Scroop.* Our purposes God justly hath discover'd;
And I repent my fault more than my death;
Which I beseech your highness to forgive,
Although my body pay the price of it.
*Cam.* For me,—the gold of France did not seduce;
Although I did admit it as a motive,
The sooner to effect what I intended:
But God be thanked for prevention;
Which I in sufferance heartily will rejoice,
Beseeching God and you to pardon me.
*Grey.* Never did faithful subject more rejoice
At the discovery of most dangerous treason,
Than I do at this hour joy o'er myself,
Prevented from a damned enterprize:
My fault, but not my body, pardon, sovereign.
*K. Hen.* God quit you in his mercy! Hear your sentence.
You have conspired against our royal person,
Join'd with an enemy proclaim'd, and from his coffers
Received the golden earnest of our death;
Wherein you would have sold your king to slaughter,
His princes and his peers to servitude,
His subjects to oppression and contempt,
And his whole kingdom unto desolation.
Touching our person, seek we no revenge;
But we our kingdom's safety must so tender,
Whose ruin you three sought, that to her laws
We do deliver you. Get you therefore hence,
Poor miserable wretches, to your death:
The taste whereof, God, of his mercy, give you
Patience to endure, and true repentance
Of all your dear offences!—Bear them hence.
[*Exeunt Conspirators, guarded.*
Now, lords, for France; the enterprize whereof
Shall be to you, as us, like glorious.
We doubt not of a fair and lucky war;
Since God so graciously hath brought to light
This dangerous treason, lurking in our way.
To hinder our beginnings, we doubt not now,
But every rub is smoothed on our way.
Then, forth, dear countrymen; let us deliver
Our puissance into the hand of God,
Putting it straight in expedition.
Cheerly to sea; the signs of war advance:
No king of England, if not king of France. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—London. Mrs.* QUICKLY'S *House in Eastcheap.*

*Enter* PISTOL, *Mrs.* QUICKLY, NYM, BARDOLPH, *and* BOY.

*Quick.* Pr'ythee, honey-sweet husband, let me bring* thee to Staines.
*Pist.* No; for my manly heart doth yearn.†—

* Attend. † Grieve.

Bardolph, be blithe;—Nym, rouse thy vaunting veins;
Boy, bristle thy courage up; for Falstaff he is dead,
And we must yearn therefore.

*Bard.* 'Would, I were with him, wheresome'er he is, whether in heaven, or in hell!

*Quick.* Nay, sure, he's not in hell; he's in Arthur's bosom, if ever man went to Arthur's bosom. 'A made a finer end, and went away, an it had been any christom* child; 'a parted even just between twelve and one, e'en at turning o' the tide: for after I saw him fumble with the sheets, and play with flowers, and smile upon his fingers' ends, I knew there was but one way; for his nose was as sharp as a pen, and 'a babbled of green fields. How now, Sir John? quoth I: what, man! be of good cheer. So 'a cried out—God, God, God! three or four times: now I, to comfort him, bid him, 'a should not think of God; I hoped, there was no need to trouble himself with any such thoughts yet: So, 'a bade me lay more clothes on his feet: I put my hand into the bed, and felt them, and they were as cold as any stone; then I felt to his knees, and so upward, and upward, and all was as cold as any stone.

*Nym.* They say, he cried out of sack.

*Quick.* Ay, that 'a did.

*Bard.* And of women.

*Quick.* Nay, that 'a did not.

*Boy.* Yes, that 'a did; and said, they were devils incarnate.

*Quick.* 'A could never abide carnation; 'twas a colour he never liked.

*Boy.* 'A said once, the devil would have him about women.

*Quick.* 'A did in some sort, indeed, handle women: but then he was rheumatic;† and talked of the whore of Babylon.

*Boy.* Do you not remember 'a saw a flea stick upon Bardolph's nose; and 'a said, it was a black soul burning in hell-fire?

*Bard.* Well, the fuel is gone, that maintained that fire: that's all the riches I got in his service.

*Nym.* Shall we shog off? the king will be gone from Southampton.

*Pist.* Come, let's away. My love, give me thy lips.
Look to my chattels, and my moveables:
Let senses rule; the word is *Pitch and pay;*
Trust none;
For oaths are straws, men's faiths are wafer-cakes,
And hold-fast is the only dog, my duck;
Therefore *caveto* be thy counsellor.
Go, clear thy crystals.‡—Yoke-fellows in arms,
Let us to France! like horse-leeches, my boys;
To suck, to suck, the very blood to suck!

*Boy.* And that is but unwholesome food, they say.

*Pist.* Touch her soft mouth, and march.

*Bard.* Farewell, hostess. [*Kissing her.*

*Nym.* I cannot kiss, that is the humour of it; but adieu.

* A child not more than a month old.
† Lunatic. ‡ Dry thy eyes.

*Pist.* Let housewifery appear; keep close, I thee command.
*Quick.* Farewell; adieu. *Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—France. A Room in the French King's Palace.*

*Enter the French* KING *attended; the* DAUPHIN, *the Duke of* BURGUNDY, *the* CONSTABLE, *and others.*

*Fr. King.* Thus come the English, with full power upon us;
And more than carefully it us concerns,
To answer royally in our defences.
Therefore the dukes of Berry and of Bretagne,
Of Brabant, and of Orleans, shall make forth,—
And you, prince Dauphin,—with all swift despatch,
To line, and new repair, our towns of war,
With men of courage, and with means defendant:
For England his approaches makes as fierce,
As waters to the sucking of a gulf.
It fits us then, to be as provident
As fear may teach us, cut of late examples
Left by the fatal and neglected English
Upon our fields.
*Dau.* My most redoubted father,
It is most meet we arm us 'gainst the foe:
For peace itself should not so dull a kingdom
(Though war, nor no known quarrel, were in question),
But that defences, musters, preparations,
Should be maintain'd, assembled, and collected,
As were a war in expectation.
Therefore, I say, 'tis meet we all go forth,
To view the sick and feeble parts of France:
And let us do it with no show of fear;
No, with no more, than if we heard that England
Were busied with a Whitsun morris-dance:
For, my good liege, she is so idly king'd,
Her sceptre so fantastically borne
By a vain, giddy, shallow, humorous youth,
That fear attends her not.
*Con.* O peace, prince Dauphin!
You are too much mistaken in this king:
Question your grace the late ambassadors,—
With what great state he heard their embassy,
How well supplied with noble counsellors,
How modest in exception,* and, withal,
How terrible in constant resolution,—
And you shall find, his vanities fore-spent†
Were but the outside of the Roman Brutus,
Covering discretion with a coat of folly;
As gardeners do with ordure hide those roots
That shall first spring, and be most delicate.
*Dau.* Well, 'tis not so, my lord high constable,
But though we think it so, it is no matter:

* Diffident in objection. † Exhausted.

In cases of defence, 'tis best to weigh
The enemy more mighty than he seems,
So the proportions of defence are fill'd;
Which, of a weak and niggardly projection,
Doth, like a miser, spoil his coat, with scanting
A little cloth.

*Fr. King.* Think we king Harry strong;
And, princes, look, you strongly arm to meet him.
The kindred of him hath been flesh'd upon us;
And he is bred out of that bloody strain,*
That haunted us in our familiar paths:
Witness our too much memorable shame,
When Cressy battle fatally was struck,
And all our princes captived, by the hand
Of that black name, Edward black prince of Wales;
Whiles that his mountain sire,—on mountain standing,
Up in the air, crown'd with the golden sun,—
Saw his heroical seed, and smiled to see him
Mangle the work of nature, and deface
The patterns that by God and by French fathers
Had twenty years been made. This is a stem
Of that victorious stock; and let us fear
The native mightiness and fate of him.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Ambassadors from Henry king of England
Do crave admittance to your majesty.

*Fr. King.* We'll give them present audience. Go, and bring them. [*Exeunt* MESSENGER *and certain* LORDS.
You see, this chase is hotly follow'd, friends.

*Dau.* Turn head, and stop pursuit: for coward dogs
Most spend their mouths,† when what they seem to threaten,
Runs far before them. Good my sovereign,
Take up the English short; and let them know
Of what a monarchy you are the head:
Self-love, my liege, is not so vile a sin
As self-neglecting.

*Re-enter* LORDS, *with* EXETER *and Train.*

*Fr. King.* From our brother England?

*Exe.* From him; and thus he greets your majesty.
He wills you, in the name of God Almighty,
That you divest yourself, and lay apart
The borrow'd glories, that, by gift of heaven,
By law of nature, and of nations, 'long
To him, and to his heirs; namely, the crown,
And all wide-stretched honours that pertain,
By custom and the ordinance of times,
Unto the crown of France. That you may know,
'Tis no sinister, nor no awkward claim,

* Lineage. † Bark.

Pick'd from the worm-holes of long-vanish'd days,
Nor from the dust of old oblivion raked,
He sends you this most memorable line, [*Gives a paper.*
In every branch truly demonstrative;
Willing you, overlook this pedigree:
And, when you find him evenly derived
From his most famed of famous ancestors,
Edward the Third, he bids you then resign
Your crown and kingdom, indirectly held
From him the native and true challenger.

*Fr. King.* Or else what follows?

*Exe.* Bloody constraint; for if you hide the crown
Even in your hearts, there will he rake for it:
And therefore in fierce tempest is he coming,
In thunder, and in earthquake, like a Jove
(That, if requiring fail, he will compel);
And bids you, in the bowels of the Lord,
Deliver up the crown; and to take mercy
On the poor souls, for whom this hungry war
Opens his vasty jaws: and on your head
Turns he the widows' tears, the orphans' cries,
The dead men's blood, the pining maidens' groans,
For husbands, fathers, and betrothed lovers,
That shall be swallow'd in this controversy.
This is his claim, his threatening, and my message;
Unless the Dauphin be in presence here,
To whom expressly I bring greeting too.

*Fr. King.* For us, we will consider of this further:
To-morrow shall you bear our full intent
Back to our brother England.

*Dau.* For the Dauphin,
I stand here for him; What to him from England?

*Exe.* Scorn, and defiance; slight regard, contempt,
And anything that may not misbecome
The mighty sender, doth he prize you at.
Thus says my king: and, if your father's highness
Do not, in grant of all demands at large,
Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his majesty,
He'll call you to so hot an answer for it,
That caves and womby vaultages of France
Shall chide* your trespass, and return your mock
In second accent of his ordnance.

*Dau.* Say, if my father render fair reply,
It is against my will: for I desire
Nothing but odds with England; to that end,
As matching to his youth and vanity,
I did present him with those Paris balls.

*Exe.* He'll make your Paris Louvre shake for it,
Were it the mistress court of mighty Europe:
And, be assured, you'll find a difference
(As we, his subjects, have in wonder found)

* Resound, echo.

Between the promise of his greener days,
And these he masters now; now he weighs time,
Even to the utmost grain; which you shall read
In your own losses, if he stay in France.

*Fr. King.* To-morrow shall you know our mind at full.

*Exe.* Despatch us with all speed, lest that our king
Come here himself to question our delay;
For he is footed in this land already.

*Fr. King.* You shall be soon despatch'd, with fair conditions:
A night is but small breath, and little pause,
To answer matters of this consequence. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT III.

*Enter* CHORUS.

*Cho.* Thus with imagined wing our swift scene flies,
In motion of no less celerity
Than that of thought. Suppose, that you have seen
The well-appointed king at Hampton pier
Embark his royalty; and his brave fleet
With silken streamers the young Phœbus fanning.
Play with your fancies; and in them behold,
Upon the hempen tackle, ship-boys climbing:
Hear the shrill whistle, which doth order give
To sounds confused: behold the threaden sails,
Borne with the invisible and creeping wind,
Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd sea,
Breasting the lofty surge: O, do but think,
You stand upon the rivage,* and behold
A city on the inconstant billows dancing;
For so appears this fleet majestical,
Holding due course to Harfleur. Follow, follow!
Grapple your minds to sternage† of this navy;
And leave your England, as dead midnight, still,
Guarded with grandsires, babies, and old women,
Either past, or not arrived to, pith and puissance:
For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd
With one appearing hair, that will not follow
These cull'd and choice-drawn cavaliers to France?
Work, work, your thoughts, and therein see a siege:
Behold the ordnance on their carriages,
With fatal mouths gaping on girded Harfleur.
Suppose, the ambassador from the French comes back
Tells Harry—that the king doth offer him
Katherine his daughter; and with her, to dowry,
Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms.

* Bank. † Their sterns.

The offer likes not: and the nimble gunner
With linstock now the devilish cannon touches,
[*Alarum, and chambers* go off.*
And down goes all before them. Still be kind,
And eke out our performance with your mind. [*Exit.*

*SCENE I.—The same. Before Harfleur.*

*Alarums. Enter* KING HENRY, EXETER, BEDFORD, GLOSTER, *and* SOLDIERS, *with scaling-ladders.*

*K. Hen.* Once more unto the breach, dear friends, once more;
Or close the wall up with our English dead!
In peace, there's nothing so becomes a man
As modest stillness, and humility:
But when the blast of war blows in our ears,
Then imitate the action of the tiger;
Stiffen the sinews, summon up the blood,
Disguise fair nature with hard-favour'd rage:
Then lend the eye a terrible aspect;
Let it pry through the portage of the head,
Like the brass cannon; let the brow o'erwhelm it,
As fearfully, as doth a galled rock
O'erhang and jutty† his confounded‡ base,
Swill'd with the wild and wasteful ocean.
Now set the teeth, and stretch the nostril wide;
Hold hard the breath, and bend up every spirit
To his full height!—On, on, you noblest English,
Whose blood is fet§ from fathers of war-proof!
Fathers, that, like so many Alexanders,
Have, in these parts, from morn till even fought,
And sheath'd their swords for lack of argument.‖
Dishonour not your mothers; now attest,
That those, whom you call'd fathers, did beget you!
Be copy now to men of grosser blood,
And teach them how to war!—And you, good yeomen,
Whose limbs were made in England, show us here
The mettle of your pasture; let us swear
That you are worth your breeding: which I doubt not;
For there is none of you so mean and base,
That hath not noble lustre in your eyes.
I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips,
Straining upon the start. The game's afoot;
Follow your spirit: and, upon this charge,
Cry—God for Harry! England! and Saint George!
[*Exeunt. Alarum, and chambers go off.*

* Small pieces of ordnance. † Jet over.
‡ Worn. § Fetched. ‖ Matter.

## *SCENE II.—The same.*

*Forces pass over; then enter* NYM, BARDOLPH, PISTOL, *and* BOY.

*Bard.* On, on, on, on, on! to the breach, to the breach!

*Nym.* 'Pray thee, corporal, stay; the knocks are too hot; and, for mine own part, I have not a case of lives: the humour of it is too hot, that is the very plain song of it.

*Pist.* The plain song is most just; for humours do abound;
Knocks go and come; God's vassals drop and die;
And sword and shield,
In bloody field,
Doth win immortal fame.

*Boy.* 'Would I were in an alehouse in London! I would give all my fame for a pot of ale, and safety.

*Pist.* And I:
If wishes would prevail with me,
My purpose should not fail with me,
But thither would I hie.

*Boy.* As duly, but not as truly, as bird doth sing on bough.

*Enter* FLUELLEN.

*Flu.* Got's plood!—Up to the preaches, you rascals! will you not up to the preaches? [*Driving them forward.*

*Pist.* Be merciful, great duke, to men of mould!*
Abate thy rage, abate thy manly rage!
Abate thy rage, great duke!
Good bawcock, bate thy rage! use lenity, sweet chuck!

*Nym.* These be good humours!—your honour wins bad humours.

[*Exeunt* NYM, PISTOL, *and* BARDOLPH, *followed by* FLUELLEN.

*Boy.* As young as I am, I have observed three swashers. I am boy to them all three: but all they three, though they would serve me, could not be man to me; for, indeed, three such antics do not amount to a man. For Bardolph,—he is white-livered, and red-faced; by the means whereof, 'a faces it out, but fights not. For Pistol,—he hath a killing tongue, and a quiet sword; by the means whereof 'a breaks words, and keeps whole weapons. For Nym,—he hath heard, that men of few words are the best men; and therefore he scorns to say his prayers, lest 'a should be thought a coward: but his few bad words are matched with as few good deeds; for 'a never broke any man's head but his own; and that was against a post, when he was drunk. They will steal anything, and call it,—purchase. Bardolph stole a lute-case; bore it twelve leagues, and sold it for three halfpence. Nym, and Bardolph, are sworn brothers in filching; and in Calais they stole a fire-shovel: I knew, by that piece of service, the men would carry coals.† They would have me as familiar

* Earth. † Submit to any indignity.

with men's pockets, as their gloves or their handkerchiefs: which makes much against my manhood, if I should take from another's pocket, to put into mine; for it is plain pocketing up of wrongs. I must leave them, and seek some better service: their villany goes against my weak stomach, and therefore I must cast it up.

[*Exit* BOY.

*Re-enter* FLUELLEN, GOWER *following.*

*Gow.* Captain Fluellen, you must come presently to the mines; the duke of Gloster would speak with you.

*Flu.* To the mines! tell you the duke, it is not so good to come to the mines: For, look you, the mines is not according to the disciplines of the war; the concavities of it is not sufficient; for, look you, th' athversary (you may discuss unto the duke, look you), is dight* himself four yards under the countermines: by Cheshu, I think, a' will plough up all, if there is not better directions.

*Gow.* The duke of Gloster, to whom the order of the siege is given, is altogether directed by an Irishman; a very valiant gentleman, i' faith.

*Flu.* It is captain Macmorris, is it not?

*Gow.* I think, it be.

*Flu.* By Cheshu, he is an ass, as in the 'orld: I will verify as much in his peard: he has no more directions in the true disciplines of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines, than is a puppy-dog.

*Enter* MACMORRIS *and* JAMY, *at a distance.*

*Gow.* Here 'a comes; and the Scots captain, captain Jamy, with him.

*Flu.* Captain Jamy is a marvellous falarous gentleman, that is certain; and of great expedition, and knowledge, in the ancient wars, upon my particular knowledge of his directions: by Cheshu, he will maintain his argument as well as any military man in the 'orld, in the disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans.

*Jamy.* I say, gud-day, captain Fluellen.

*Flu.* God-den to your worship, goot captain Jamy.

*Gow.* How, now, captain Macmorris? have you quit the mines? have the pioneers given o'er?

*Mac.* By Chrish la, tish ill done: the work ish give over, the trumpet sound the retreat. By my hand, I swear, and by my father's soul, the work ish ill done; it ish give over: I would have blowed up the town, so Chrish save me, la, in an hour. O, tish ill done, tish ill done; by my hand, tish ill done!

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, I peseech you now, will you voutsafe me, look you, a few disputations with you, as partly touching or concerning the disciplines of the war, the Roman wars, in the way of argument, look you, and friendly communication; partly, to satisfy my opinion, and partly, for the satisfaction, look you, of my mind, as touching the direction of the military discipline; that is the point.

*Jamy.* It sall be very gud, gud feith, gud captains baith: and

* Digged.

I sall quit* you with gud leve, as I may pick occasion; that sall I, marry.

*Mac.* It is no time to discourse, so Chrish save me, the day is hot, and the weather, and the wars, and the king, and the dukes; it is no time to discourse. The town is beseeched, and the trumpet calls us to the breach; and we talk, and, by Chrish, do nothing; 'tis shame for us all: so God sa' me, 'tis shame to stand still; it is shame, by my hand: and there is throats to be cut, and works to be done; and there ish nothing done, so Chrish sa' me, la.

*Jamy.* By the mess, ere theise eyes of mine tak themselves to slumber, aile do gude service, or aile ligge i' the grund for it; ay, or go to death; and aile pay it as valorously as I may, that sall I surely do, that is the breff and the long: Marry, I wad full fain heard some question 'tween you tway.

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, I think, look you, under your correction, there is not many of your nation——

*Mac.* Of my nation? What ish my nation? ish a villain, and a bastard, and a knave, and a rascal? What ish my nation? Who talks of my nation?

*Flu.* Look you, if you take the matter otherwise than is meant, captain Macmorris, peradventure, I shall think you do not use me with that affability as in discretion you ought to use me, look you; being as goot a man as yourself, both in the disciplines of wars, and in the derivation of my birth, and in other particularities.

*Mac.* I do not know you so good a man as myself: so Chrish save me, I will cut off your head.

*Gow.* Gentlemen both, you will mistake each other.

*Jamy.* Au! that's a foul fault. [*A parley sounded.*

*Gow.* The town sounds a parley.

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, when there is more better opportunity to be required, look you, I will be so bold as to tell you, I know the disciplines of war; and there is an end. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—The same. Before the gates of Harfleur.*

*The* GOVERNOR *and some Citizens on the Walls; the English Forces below. Enter* KING HENRY *and his Train.*

*K. Hen.* How yet resolves the governor of the town?
This is the latest parle we will admit:
Therefore, to our best mercy give yourselves;
Or, like to men proud of destruction,
Defy us to our worst: for, as I am a soldier
(A name, that, in my thoughts, becomes me best),
If I begin the battery once again,
I will not leave the half-achieved Harfleur,
Till in her ashes she lie buried.
The gates of mercy shall be all shut up;
And the flesh'd soldier,—rough and hard of heart,—

* Requite, answer.

In liberty of bloody hand, shall range
With conscience wide as hell; mowing like grass
Your fresh fair virgins, and your flowering infants.
What is it then to me, if impious war,—
Array'd in flames, like to the prince of fiends,—
Do, with his smirch'd* complexion, all fell feats
Enlink'd to waste and desolation?
What is't to me, when you yourselves are cause,
If your pure maidens fall into the hand
Of hot and forcing violation?
What rein can hold licentious wickedness,
When down the hill he holds his fierce career?
We may as bootless spend our vain command
Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil,
As send precepts to the Leviathan
To come ashore. Therefore, you men of Harfleur,
Take pity of your town, and of your people,
Whiles yet my soldiers are in my command;
Whiles yet the cool and temperate wind of grace
O'er-blows the filthy and contagious clouds
Of deadly murder, spoil, and villany.
If not, why, in a moment, look to see
The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand
Defile the locks of your shrill-shrieking daughters;
Your fathers taken by the silver beards,
And their most reverend heads dash'd to the walls;
Your naked infants spitted upon pikes;
Whiles the mad mothers with their howls confused
Do break the clouds, as did the wives of Jewry
At Herod's bloody-hunting slaughtermen.
What say you? will you yield, and this avoid?
Or, guilty in defence, be thus destroy'd?

*Gov.* Our expectation hath this day an end:
The Dauphin, whom of sucour we entreated,
Returns us—that his powers are not yet ready
To raise so great a siege. Therefore, dread king,
We yield our town, and lives to thy soft mercy:
Enter our gates; dispose of us, and ours;
For we no longer are defensible.

*K. Hen.* Open your gates.—Come, uncle Exeter,
Go you and enter Harfleur; there remain,
And fortify it strongly against the French:
Use mercy to them all. For us, dear uncle,—
The winter coming on, and sickness growing
Upon our soldiers,—we'll retire to Calais.
To-night in Harfleur will we be your guest;
To-morrow for the march are we addrest.†

[*Flourish. The King, &c. enter the Town.*

* Soiled. † Prepared.

## *SCENE IV.—Roüen. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KATHARINE *and* ALICE.

Kath. *Alice, tu as esté en Angleterre, et tu parles bien le language.*

Alice. *Un peu, madame.*

Kath. *Je te prie, m'enseignez; il faut que j'apprenne à parler. Comment appellez vous la main, en Anglois?*

Alice. *La main? elle est appellée,* de hand.

*Kath.* De hand. *Et les doigts?*

Alice. *Les doigts? ma foy, je oublie les doigts; mais je me souviendray. Les doigts? je pense, qu'ils sont appellé* de fingres; *ouy,* de fingres.

Kath. *La main,* de hand; *les doigts,* de fingres. *Je pense, que je suis le bon escolier. J'ay gagné deux mots d'Anglois vistement. Comment appellez vous les ongles?*

Alice. *Les ongles? les appellons,* de nails.

*Kath.* De nails. *Escoutez; dites moy, si je parle bien:* de hand, de fingres, de nails.

Alice. *C'est bien dit, madame; il est fort bon Anglois.*

Kath. *Dites moy en Anglois, le bras.*

*Alice.* De arm, *madame.*

Kath. *Et le coude?*

*Alice.* De elbow.

*Kath.* De elbow. *Je m'en faitz la repetition de tous les mots, que vous m'avez appris dès à present.*

Alice. *Il est trop difficile, madame, comme je pense.*

Kath. *Excusez moy, Alice; escoutez:* De hand, de fingre, de nails, de arm, de bilbow,

*Alice.* De elbow, *madame.*

Kath. *O Seigneur Dieu! je m'en oublie;* De elbow. *Comment appellez vous le col?*

*Alice.* De neck, *madame.*

*Kath.* De neck: *Et le menton?*

*Alice.* De chin.

*Kath.* De sin. *Le col,* de neck; *le menton,* de sin.

Alice. *Ouy. Sauf vostre honneur: en verité, vous prononces les mots aussi droict que les natifs d'Angleterre.*

Kath. *Je ne doute point d'apprendre par la grace de Dieu; et en peu de temps.*

Alice. *N'avez vous pas deja oublié ce que je vous ay enseignée?*

Kath. *Non, je reciteray à vous promptement.* De hand, de fingre, de mails,—

*Alice.* De nails, *madame.*

*Kath.* De nails, de arme, de ilbow.

Alice. *Sauf vostre honneur,* de elbow.

Kath. *Ainsi dis je;* de elbow, de neck, *et* de sin: *Comment appelez vous le pieds et la robe?*

*Alice.* De foot, *madame; et* de con.

*Kath.* De foot, *et* de con? *O Seigneur Dieu! ces sont mots de son mauvais, corruptible, grosse, et impudique, et non pour les*

*dames d'honneur d'user : Je ne voudrois prononcer ces mots devant les Seigneurs de France, pour tout le monde. Il faut* de foot, *et* de con, *neant-moins. Je reciterai une autre fois ma leçon ensemble :* De hand, de fingre, de nails, de arm, de elbow, de neck, de sin, de foot, de con.

Alice. *Excellent, madame !*

Kath. *C'est assez pour une fois ; allons nous à disner.*

[Exeunt.

*SCENE V.—The same. Another Room in the same.*

*Enter the French* KING, *the* DAUPHIN, *Duke of* BOURBON, *the* CONSTABLE *of France, and others.*

*Fr. King.* 'Tis certain, he hath pass'd the river Some.
*Con.* And if he be not fought withal, my lord,
Let us not live in France ; let us quit all,
And give our vineyards to a barbarous people.
Dau. *O Dieu vivant !* shall a few sprays of us,—
The emptying of our fathers' luxury,*
Our scions, put in wild and savage† stock,
Spirt up so suddenly into the clouds,
And overlook their grafters ?
*Bour.* Normans, but bastard Normans, Norman bastards !
*Mort de ma vie !* if they march along
Unfought withal, but I will sell my dukedom,
To buy a slobbery and a dirty farm
In that nook-shotten‡ isle of Albion.
Con. *Dieu de battailes !* where have they this mettle ?
Is not their climate foggy, raw, and dull ?
On whom, as in despite, the sun looks pale,
Killing their fruit with frowns ! Can sodden water,
A drench for sur-rein'd§ jades, their barley-broth,
Decoct their cold blood to such valiant heat ?
And shall our quick blood, spirited with wine,
Seem frosty ? O, for honour of our land,
Let us not hang like roping icicles
Upon our houses' thatch, whiles a more frosty people
Sweat drops of gallant youth in our rich fields ;
Poor—we may call them, in their native lords.
*Dau.* By faith and honour,
Our madams mock at us ; and plainly say,
Our mettle is bred out ; and they will give
Their bodies to the lust of English youth,
To new-store France with bastard warriors.
*Bour.* They bid us—to the English dancing-schools,
And teach lavoltas‖ high, and swift corantos ;
Saying, our grace is only in our heels,
And that we are most lofty runaways.
*Fr. King.* Where is Montjóy, the herald ? speed him hence ;
Let him greet England with our sharp defiance.—

* Lust. † Sylvan ; *sauvage.* ‡ Projected.
§ Overstrained. ‖ An Italian dance.

Up, princes; and, with spirit of honour edged,
More sharper than your swords, hie to the field:
Charles De-la-bret, high constable of France;
You dukes of Orleans, Bourbon, and of Berry,
Alençon, Brabant, Bar, and Burgundy;
Jaques Chatillion, Rambures, Vaudemont,
Beaumont, Grandpré, Roussi, and Fauconberg,
Foix, Lestrale, Bouciqualt, and Charolois;
High dukes, great princes, barons, lords, and knights,
For your great seats, now quit you of great shames.
Bar Harry England, that sweeps through our land
With pennons* painted in the blood of Harfleur:
Rush on his host, as doth the melted snow
Upon the valleys; whose low vassal seat
The Alps doth spit and void his rheum upon:
Go down upon him,—you have power enough,—
And in a captive chariot, into Roüen
Bring him our prisoner.
*Con.* This becomes the great.
Sorry am I, his numbers are so few,
His soldiers sick, and famish'd in their march;
For, I am sure, when he shall see our army,
He'll drop his heart into the sink of fear,
And, for achievement, offer us his ransom.
*Fr. King.* Therefore, lord constable, haste on Montjóy:
And let him say to England, that we send
To know what willing ransom he will give.—
Prince Dauphin, you shall stay with us in Roüen.
*Dau.* Not so, I do beseech your majesty.
*Fr. King.* Be patient, for you shall remain with us.—
Now, forth, lord constable, and princes all;
And quickly bring us word of England's fall. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VI.—The English Camp in Picardy.*

*Enter* GOWER *and* FLUELLEN.

*Gow.* How now, captain Fluellen? come you from the bridge?
*Flu.* I assure you, there is very excellent service committed at the pridge.
*Gow.* Is the duke of Exeter safe?
*Flu.* The duke of Exeter is as magnanimous as Agamemnon; and a man that I love and honour with my soul, and my heart, and my duty, and my life, and my livings, and my uttermost powers: he is not (God be praised and plessed!) any hurt in the 'orld; but keeps the pridge most valiantly, with excellent discipline. There is an ancient there at the pridge,—I think, in my very conscience, he is as valiant as Mark Antony; and he is a man of no estimation in the 'orld: but I did see him do gallant service.
*Gow.* What do you call him?
*Flu.* He is called—ancient Pistol.
*Gow.* I know him not.

* Pendants, small flags.

*Enter* PISTOL.

*Flu.* Do you not know him? Here comes the man.

*Pist.* Captain, I thee beseech to do me favours:
The duke of Exeter doth love thee well.

*Flu.* Ay, I praise Got; and I have merited some love at his hands.

*Pist.* Bardolph, a soldier, firm and sound of heart,
Of buxom valour,* hath,—by cruel fate
And giddy fortune's furious fickle wheel,
That goddess blind,
That stands upon the rolling restless stone,—

*Flu.* By your patience, ancient Pistol, Fortune is painted plind, with a muffler before her eyes, to signify to you that fortune is plind: And she is painted also with a wheel; to signify to you, which is the moral of it, that she is turning, and inconstant, and variations, and mutabilities: and her foot, look you, is fixed upon a spherical stone, which rolls, and rolls, and rolls;—In good truth, the poet is make a most excellent description of fortune: fortune, look you, is an excellent moral.

*Pist.* Fortune is Bardolph's foe, and frowns on him;
For he hath stol'n a *pix*, and hanged must 'a be.
A damned death!
Let gallows gape for dog, let man go free,
And let not hemp his wind-pipe suffocate:
But Exeter hath given the doom of death,
For *pix* of little price.
Therefore, go speak, the duke will hear thy voice;
And let not Bardolph's vital thread be cut
With edge of penny cord, and vile reproach:
Speak, captain, for his life, and I will thee requite.

*Flu.* Ancient Pistol, I do partly understand your meaning.

*Pist.* Why then rejoice therefore.

*Flu.* Certainly, ancient, it is not a thing to rejoice at: for if, look you, he were my brother, I would desire the duke to use his good pleasure, and put him to executions; for disciplines ought to be used.

*Pist.* Die and be damn'd; and *figo*† for thy friendship!

*Flu.* It is well.

*Pist.* The fig of Spain! [*Exit* PISTOL.

*Flu.* Very good.

*Gow.* Why, this is an arrant counterfeit rascal; I remember him now; a bawd; a cut-purse.

*Flu.* I'll assure you, 'a utter'd as prave 'ords at the pridge, as you shall see in a summer's day: But it is very well; what he has spoke to me, that is well, I warrant you, when time is serve.

*Gow.* Why, 'tis a gull, a fool, a rogue; that now and then goes to the wars, to grace himself, at his return into London, under the form of a soldier. And such fellows are perfect in great commander's names: and they will learn you by rote, where services were done:—at such and such a sconce,‡ at such a breach, at such

* Valour under good command. † Fig.
‡ An intrenchment hastily thrown up.

a convoy; who came off bravely, who was shot, who disgraced, what terms the enemy stood on; and this they con perfectly in the phrase of war, which they trick up with new-tuned oaths: And what a beard of the general's cut, and a horrid suit of the camp, will do among foaming bottles, and ale-washed wits, is wonderful to be thought on! but you must learn to know such slanders of the age, or else you may be marvellous mistook.

*Flu.* I tell you what, captain Gower;—I do perceive, he is not the man that he would gladly make show to the 'orld he is; if I find a hole in his coat, I will tell him my mind. [*Drum heard.*] Hark you, the king is coming; and I must speak with him from the pridge.

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, *and Soldiers.*

*Flu.* Got pless your majesty!

*K. Hen.* How now, Fluellen? camest thou from the bridge?

*Flu.* Ay, so please your majesty. The duke of Exeter has very gallantly maintained the pridge: the French is gone off, look you; and there is gallant and most prave passages: Marry, th' athversary was have possession of the pridge; but he is enforced to retire, and the duke of Exeter is master of the pridge: I can tell your majesty, the duke is a prave man.

*K. Hen.* What men have you lost, Fluellen?

*Flu.* The perdition of th' athversary hath been very great, very reasonable great: marry, for my part, I think the duke hath lost never a man, but one that is like to be executed for robbing a church, one Bardolph, if your majesty know the man: his face is all bubukles, and whelks, and knobs, and flames of fire; and his lips plows at his nose, and it is like a coal of fire, sometimes plue, and sometimes red; but his nose is executed, and his fire's out.

*K. Hen.* We would have all such offenders so cut off:—and we give express charge, that in our marches through the country, there be nothing compelled from the villages, nothing taken but paid for; none of the French upbraided, or abused in disdainful language: For when lenity and cruelty play for a kingdom, the gentler gamester is the soonest winner.

*Tucket sounds. Enter* MONTJOY.

*Mont.* You know me by my habit.*

*K. Hen.* Well then, I know thee; What shall I know of thee?

*Mont.* My master's mind.

*K. Hen.* Unfold it.

*Mont.* Thus says my king:—Say thou to Harry of England, Though we seem'd dead, we did but sleep; Advantage is a better soldier, than rashness. Tell him, we could have rebuked him at Harfleur; but that we thought not good to bruise an injury, till it were full ripe:—now we speak upon our cue,† and our voice is imperial: England shall repent his folly, see his weakness, and admire our sufferance. Bid him, therefore, consider of his ransom; which must proportion the losses we have borne, the

* His herald's coat. † In our turn.

subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested; which, in weight to re-answer, his pettiness would bow under. For our losses, his exchequer is too poor; for the effusion of our blood, the muster of his kingdom too faint a number; and for our disgrace, his own person kneeling at our feet, but a weak and worthless satisfaction. To this add—defiance: and tell him, for conclusion, he hath betrayed his followers, whose condemnation is pronounced. So far my king and master; so much my office.

*K. Hen.* What is thy name? I know thy quality.

*Mont.* Montjoy.

*K. Hen.* Thou dost thy office fairly. Turn thee back;
And tell thy king,—I do not seek him now;
But could be willing to march on to Calais
Without impeachment:* for, to say the sooth
(Though 'tis no wisdom to confess so much
Unto an enemy of craft and vantage),
My people are with sickness much enfeebled;
My numbers lessen'd; and those few I have,
Almost no better than so many French;
Who when they were in health, I tell thee, herald,
I thought upon one pair of English legs
Did march three Frenchmen.—Yet, forgive me, God,
That I do brag thus!—this your air of France
Hath blown that vice in me; I must repent.
Go, therefore, tell thy master, here I am;
My ransom, is this frail and worthless trunk;
My army, but a weak and sickly guard;
Yet, God before,† tell him we will come on,
Though France himself, and such another neighbour,
Stand in our way. There's for thy labour, Montjoy.
Go, bid thy master well advise himself:
If we may pass, we will; if we be hinder'd,
We will your tawny ground with your red blood
Discolour: and so, Montjoy, fare you well.
The sum of all our answer is but this:
We would not seek a battle, as we are;
Nor, as we are, we say, we will not shun it;
So tell your master.

*Mont.* I shall deliver so. Thanks to your highness.

[*Exit* MONTJOY.

*Glo.* I hope they will not come upon us now.

*K. Hen.* We are in God's hand, brother, not in theirs.
March to the bridge; it now draws toward night:—
Beyond the river we'll encamp ourselves;
And on to-morrow bid them march away. [*Exeunt.*

* Hinderance. † God for my guide.

## *SCENE VII.—The French camp, near Agincourt.*

*Enter the* CONSTABLE *of France, the Lord* RAMBURES, *the Duke of* ORLEANS, DAUPHIN, *and others.*

*Con.* Tut! I have the best armour of the world.—'Would, it were day!

*Orl.* You have an excellent armour; but let my horse have his due.

*Con.* It is the best horse of Europe.

*Orl.* Will it never be morning?

*Dau.* My lord of Orleans, and my lord high constable, you talk of horse and armour,—

*Orl.* You are as well provided of both, as any prince in the world.

*Dau.* What a long night is this!——I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pasterns, *Ca ha!* He bounds from the earth, as if his entrails were hairs;* *le cheval volant*, the Pegasus, *qui a les narines de feu!* When I bestride him, I soar, I am a hawk: he trots the air; the earth sings when he touches it; the basest horn of his hoof is more musical than the pipe of Hermes.

*Orl.* He's of the colour of the nutmeg.

*Dau.* And of the heat of the ginger. It is a beast for Perseus: he is pure air and fire; and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him, but only in patient stillness, while his rider mounts him; he is, indeed, a horse; and all other jades you may call—beasts.

*Con.* Indeed, my lord, it is a most absolute and excellent horse.

*Dau.* It is the prince of palfreys; his neigh is like the bidding of a monarch, and his countenance enforces homage.

*Orl.* No more, cousin.

*Dau.* Nay, the man hath no wit, that cannot, from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the lamb, vary deserved praise on my palfrey: it is a theme as fluent as the sea; turn the sands into eloquent tongues, and my horse is argument for them all: 'tis a subject for a sovereign to reason on, and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride on; and for the world (familiar to us, and unknown), to lay apart their particular functions, and wonder at him. I once writ a sonnet in his praise, and began thus: *Wonder of nature,*—

*Orl.* I have heard a sonnet begin so to one's mistress.

*Dau.* Then did they imitate that which I composed to my courser; for my horse is my mistress.

*Orl.* Your mistress bears well.

*Dau.* Me well: which is the prescript praise and perfection of a good and particular mistress.

Con. *Ma foy!* the other day, methought, your mistress shrewdly shook your back.

*Dau.* So, perhaps did yours.

*Con.* Mine was not bridled.

* As if he were a tennis-ball.

*Dau.* O! then, belike, she was old and gentle; and you rode like a kerne of Ireland, your French hose off, and in your strait trossers.*

*Con.* You have good judgment in horsemanship.

*Dau.* Be warned by me then: they that ride so, and ride not warily, fall into foul bogs; I had rather have my horse to my mistress.

*Con.* I had as lief have my mistress a jade.

*Dau.* I tell thee, constable, my mistress wears her own hair.

*Con.* I could make as true a boast as that, if I had a sow to my mistress.

Dau. *Le chien est retourné à son propre vomissement, et la truie lavée au bourbier:* thou makest use of anything.

*Con.* Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress; or any such proverb, so little kin to the purpose.

*Ram.* My lord constable, the armour, that I saw in your tent to-night, are those stars, or suns, upon it?

*Con.* Stars, my lord.

*Dau.* Some of them will fall to-morrow, I hope.

*Con.* And yet my sky shall not want.

*Dau.* That may be, for you bear a many superfluously; and 'twere more honour some were away.

*Con.* Even as your horse bears your praises; who would trot as well, were some of your brags dismounted.

*Dau.* 'Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot to-morrow a mile, and my way shall be paved with English faces.

*Con.* I will not say so, for fear I should be faced out of my way: But I would it were morning, for I would fain be about the ears of the English.

*Ram.* Who will go to hazard with me for twenty English prisoners?

*Con.* You must first go yourself to hazard, ere you have them.

*Dau.* 'Tis midnight, I'll go arm myself. [*Exit.*

*Orl.* The Dauphin longs for morning.

*Ram.* He longs to eat the English.

*Con.* I think, he will eat all he kills.

*Orl.* By the white hand of my lady, he's a gallant prince.

*Con.* Swear by her foot, that she may tread out the oath.

*Orl.* He is, simply, the most active gentleman of France.

*Con.* Doing is activity: and he will still be doing.

*Orl.* He never did harm, that I heard of.

*Con.* Nor will do none to-morrow; he will keep that good name still.

*Orl.* I know him to be valiant.

*Con.* I was told that, by one that knows him better than you.

*Orl.* What's he?

*Con.* Marry, he told me so himself; and he said, he cared not who knew it.

*Orl.* He needs not, it is no hidden virtue in him.

*Con.* By my faith, Sir, but it is; never anybody saw it, but

* Trowsers.

his lackey: 'tis a hooded valour; and, when it appears, it will bate.*

*Orl.* Ill will never said well.

*Con.* I will cap that proverb with—There is flattery in friendship.

*Orl.* And I will take up that with—Give the devil his due.

*Con.* Well placed; there stands your friend for the devil: have at the very eye of that proverb, with—A pox of the devil.

*Orl.* You are the better at proverbs, by how much—A fool's bolt is soon shot.

*Con.* You have shot over.

*Orl.* 'Tis not the first time you were overshot.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord high constable, the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tent.

*Con.* Who hath measured the ground?

*Mess.* The lord Grandpré.

*Con.* A valiant and most expert gentleman.—Would it were day!—Alas, poor Harry of England!—he longs not for the dawning, as we do.

*Orl.* What a wretched and peevish† fellow is this king of England, to mope with his fat-brain'd followers so far out of his knowledge!

*Con.* If the English had any apprehension, they would run away.

*Orl.* That they lack; for if their heads had any intellectual armour, they could never wear such heavy head-pieces.

*Ram.* That island of England breeds very valiant creatures; their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage.

*Orl.* Foolish curs! that run winking into the mouth of a Russian bear, and have their heads crushed like rotten apples: You may as well say,—that's a valiant flea, that dare eat his breakfast on the lip of a lion.

*Con.* Just, just; and the men do sympathize with the mastiffs, in robustious and rough coming on, leaving their wits with their wives: and then give them great meals of beef, and iron, and steel, they will eat like wolves, and fight like devils.

*Orl.* Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of beef.

*Con.* Then we shall find to-morrow—they have only stomachs to eat, and none to fight. Now is it time to arm: Come, shall we about it?

*Orl.* It is now two o'clock: but, let me see,—by ten,
We shall have each a hundred Englishmen. [*Exeunt.*

* Fall off. † Foolish.

# ACT IV.

*Enter* CHORUS.

*Chor.* Now entertain conjecture of a time,
When creeping murmur, and the poring dark,
Fills the wide vessel of the universe.
From camp to camp, through the foul womb of night,
The hum of either army stilly sounds,
That the fix'd sentinels almost receive
The secret whispers of each other's watch:
Fire answers fire; and through their paly flames
Each battle sees the other's umber'd* face:
Steed threatens steed, in high and boastful neighs
Piercing the night's dull ear; and from the tents,
The armourers, accomplishing the knights,
With busy hammers closing rivets up,
Give dreadful note of preparation.
The country cocks do crow, the clocks do toll,
And the third hour of drowsy morning name.
Proud of their numbers, and secure in soul,
The confident and over-lusty† French
Do the low-rated English play‡ at dice;
And chide the cripple tardy-gaited night,
Who, like a foul and ugly witch, doth limp
So tediously away. The poor condemned English,
Like sacrifices, by their watchful fires
Sit patiently, and inly ruminate
The morning's danger; and their gesture sad,
Investing lank-lean cheeks, and war-worn coats,
Presenteth them unto the gazing moon
So many horrid ghosts. O, now, who will behold
The royal captain of this ruin'd band,
Walking from watch to watch, from tent to tent,
Let him cry—Praise and glory on his head!
For forth he goes, and visits all his host;
Bids them good-morrow, with a modest smile;
And calls them—brothers, friends, and countrymen.
Upon his royal face there is no note,
How dread an army hath enrounded him;
Nor doth he dedicate one jot of colour
Unto the weary and all-watched night:
But freshly looks, and over-bears attaint,
With cheerful semblance, and sweet majesty;
That every wretch, pining and pale before,
Beholding him, plucks comfort from his looks:
A largess universal, like the sun,
His liberal eye doth give to every one,
Thawing cold fear. Then, mean and gentle all,

* Coloured by the gleam of the fires.
† Over-saucy. ‡ Gamble for.

Behold, as may unworthiness define,
A little touch of Harry in the night:
And so our scene must to the battle fly;
Where, (O for pity!) we shall much disgrace—
With four or five most vile and ragged foils,
Right ill disposed, in brawl ridiculous,—
The name of Agincourt: Yet, sit and see;
Minding* true things, by what their mockeries be. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE I.—The English Camp at Agincourt.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, BEDFORD, *and* GLOSTER.

*K. Hen.* Gloster, 'tis true, that we are in great danger;
The greater, therefore should our courage be.—
Good morrow, brother Bedford.—God Almighty!
There is some soul of goodness in things evil,
Would men observingly distil it out;
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers,
Which is both healthful, and good husbandry:
Besides, they are our outward consciences,
And preachers to us all; admonishing,
That we should dress us fairly for our end.
Thus may we gather honey from the weed,
And make a moral of the devil himself.

*Enter* ERPINGHAM.

Good morrow, old Sir Thomas Erpingham:
A good soft pillow for that good white head
Were better than a churlish turf of France.
*Erp.* Not so, my liege; this lodging likes me better,
Since I may say—now lie I like a king.
*K. Hen.* 'Tis good for men to love their present pains,
Upon example; so the spirit is eased:
And, when the mind is quicken'd, out of doubt,
The organs, though defunct and dead before,
Break up their drowsy grave, and newly move
With casted slough and fresh legerity.†
Lend me thy cloak, Sir Thomas.—Brothers both,
Commend me to the princes in our camp;
Do my good-morrow to them; and, anon,
Desire them all to my pavilion.
*Glo.* We shall, my liege. [*Exeunt* GLOSTER *and* BEDFORD.
*Erp.* Shall I attend your grace?
*K. Hen.* No, my good knight;
Go with my brothers to my lords of England:
I and my bosom must debate awhile,
And then I would no other company.
*Erp.* The Lord in heaven bless thee, noble Harry!
[*Exit* ERPINGHAM.
*K. Hen.* God-a-mercy, old heart! thou speakest cheerfully.

* Calling to remembrance. † Nimbleness.

*Enter* PISTOL.

Pist. *Qui va là?*
*K. Hen.* A friend.
*Pist.* Discuss unto me; Art thou officer
Or art thou base, common, and popular?
*K. Hen.* I am a gentleman of a company.
*Pist.* Trailest thou the puissant pike?
*K. Hen.* Even so: What are you?
*Pist.* As good a gentleman as the emperor.
*K. Hen.* Then you are a better than the king?
*Pist.* The king 's a bawcock, and a heart of gold,
A lad of life, an imp of fame;
Of parents good, of fist most valiant:
I kiss his dirty shoe, and from my heart-strings
I love the lovely bully. What's thy name?
*K. Hen.* Harry *le Roy.*
Pist. *Le Roy!* a Cornish name: art thou of Cornish crew?
*K. Hen.* No, I am a Welchman.
*Pist.* Knowest thou Fluellen?
*K. Hen.* Yes.
*Pist.* Tell him, I'll knock his leek about his pate,
Upon Saint Davy's day.
*K. Hen.* Do not you wear your dagger in your cap that day, lest he knock that about yours.
*Pist.* Art thou his friend?
*K. Hen.* And his kinsman too.
*Pist.* The *figo* for thee then!
*K. Hen.* I thank you: God be with you!
*Pist.* My name is Pistol called. [*Exit.*
*K. Hen.* It sorts * well with your fierceness.

*Enter* FLUELLEN *and* GOWER, *severally.*

*Gow.* Captain Fluellen!
*Flu.* So! in the name of Cheshu Christ, speak lower. It is the greatest admiration in the universal 'orld, when the true and auncient prerogatifes and laws of the wars is not kept: if you would take the pains but to examine the wars of Pompey the Great, you shall find, I warrant you, that there is no tiddle taddle, or pibble pabble, in Pompey's camp; I warrant you, you shall find the ceremonies of the wars, and the cares of it, and the forms of it, and the sobriety of it, and the modesty of it, to be otherwise.
*Gow.* Why, the enemy is loud; you heard him all night.
*Flu.* If the enemy is an ass and a fool, and a prating coxcomb, is it meet, think you, that we should also, look you, be an ass, and a fool, and a prating coxcomb; in your own conscience now?
*Gow.* I will speak lower.
*Flu.* I pray you, and peseech you, that you will.
[*Exeunt* GOWER *and* FLUELLEN.

* Agrees

*K. Hen.* Though it appear a little out of fashion,
There is much care and valour in this Welshman.

*Enter* BATES, COURT, *and* WILLIAMS.

*Court.* Brother John Bates, is not that the morning which breaks yonder?

*Bates.* I think it be: but we have no great cause to desire the approach of day.

*Will.* We see yonder the beginning of the day, but, I think, we shall never see the end of it.—Who goes there?

*K. Hen.* A friend.

*Will.* Under what captain serve you?

*K. Hen.* Under Sir Thomas Erpingham.

*Will.* A good old commander, and a most kind gentleman: I pray you, what thinks he of our estate?

*K. Hen.* Even as men wrecked upon a sand, that look to be washed off the next tide.

*Bates.* He hath not told his thought to the king?

*K. Hen.* No; nor it is not meet he should. For, though I speak it to you, I think the king is but a man, as I am: the violet smells to him, as it doth to me; the element shows to him, as it doth to me; all his senses have but human conditions;* his ceremonies laid by, in his nakedness he appears but a man; and though his affections are higher mounted than ours, yet, when they stoop, they stoop with the like wing; therefore when he sees reason of fears, as we do, his fears, out of doubt, be of the same relish as ours are: Yet, in reason, no man should possess him with any appearance of fear, lest he, by showing it, should dishearten his army.

*Bates.* He may show what outward courage he will: but, I believe, as cold a night as 'tis, he could wish himself in the Thames up to the neck; and so I would he were, and I by him, at all adventures, so we were quit here.

*K. Hen.* By my troth, I will speak my conscience of the king; I think, he would not wish himself anywhere but where he is.

*Bates.* Then, 'would he were here alone; so should he be sure to be ransomed, and a many poor men's lives saved.

*K. Hen.* I dare say, you love him not so ill, to wish him here alone; howsoever you speak this, to feel other men's minds: Methinks, I could not die anywhere so contented, as in the king's company; his cause being just, and his quarrel honourable.

*Will.* That's more than we know.

*Bates.* Ay, or more than we should seek after; for we know enough, if we know we are the king's subjects; if his cause be wrong, our obedience to the king wipes the crime of it out of us.

*Will.* But if the cause be not good, the king himself hath a heavy reckoning to make; when all those legs, and arms, and heads, chopped off in a battle, shall join together at the Latter Day, and cry all—We died at such a place: some, swearing; some, crying for a surgeon; some, upon their wives left poor

* Qualities.

behind them; some, upon the debts they owe; some, upon their children rawly* left. I am afeard there are few die well, that die in battle; for how can they charitably dispose of anything, when blood is their argument? Now, if these men do not die well, it will be a black matter for the king that led them to it; whom to disobey, were against all proportion of subjection.

*K. Hen.* So, if a son, that is by his father sent about merchandize, do sinfully miscarry upon the sea, the imputation of his wickedness, by your rule, should be imposed upon his father that sent him: or if a servant, under his master's command, transporting a sum of money, be assailed by robbers, and die in many irreconciled iniquities, you may call the business of the master the author of the servant's damnation:—But this is not so: the king is not bound to answer the particular endings of his soldiers, the father of his son, nor the master of his servant; for they purpose not their death, when they purpose their services. Besides, there is no king, be his cause never so spotless, if it come to the arbitrement of swords, can try it out with all unspotted soldiers. Some, peradventure, have on them the guilt of premeditated and contrived murder; some, of beguiling virgins with the broken seals of perjury; some, making the wars their bulwark, that have before gored the gentle bosom of peace with pillage and robbery. Now, if these men have defeated the law, and outrun native punishment,† though they can outstrip men, they have no wings to fly from God: war is his vengeance; so that here men are punished, for before-breach of the king's laws, in now the king's quarrel: where they feared the death, they have borne life away; and where they would be safe, they perish: Then if they die unprovided, no more is the king guilty of their damnation, than he was before guilty of those impieties for the which they are now visited. Every subject's duty is the king's; but every subject's soul is his own. Therefore should every soldier in the wars do as every sick man in his bed, wash every mote out of his conscience; and dying so, death is to him advantage; or not dying, the time was blessedly lost, wherein such preparation was gained: and, in him that escapes, it were not sin to think, that making God so free an offer, he let him outlive that day to see his greatness, and to teach others how they should prepare.

*Will.* 'Tis certain, that every man that dies ill, the ill is upon his own head, the king is not to answer for it.

*Bates.* I do not desire he should answer for me; and yet I determine to fight lustily for him.

*K. Hen.* I myself heard the king say, he would not be ransomed.

*Will.* Ay, he said so, to make us fight cheerfully: but, when our throats are cut, he may be ransomed, and we ne'er the wiser.

*K. Hen.* If I live to see it, I will never trust his word after.

*Will.* 'Mass, you'll pay‡ him then! That's a perilous shot out of an elder gun, that a poor and private displeasure can do

* Suddenly. † Punishment in their native country.
‡ Bring to account, punish.

against a monarch! you may as well go about to turn the sun to ice, with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather. You'll never trust his word after! come, 'tis a fooling saying.

*K. Hen.* Your reproof is something too round;* I should be angry with you, if the time were convenient.

*Will.* Let it be a quarrel between us, if you live.

*K. Hen.* I embrace it.

*Will.* How shall I know thee again?

*K. Hen.* Give me any gage of thine, and I will wear it in my bonnet: then, if ever thou darest acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel.

*Will.* Here's my glove; give me another of thine.

*K. Hen.* There.

*Will.* This will I also wear in my cap: if ever thou come to me and say, after to-morrow, *This is my glove*, by this hand, I will take thee a box on the ear.

*K. Hen.* If ever I live to see it, I will challenge it.

*Will.* Thou darest as well be hanged.

*K. Hen.* Well, I will do it, though I take thee in the king's company.

*Will.* Keep thy word: fare thee well.

*Bates.* Be friends, you English fools, be friends; we have French quarrels enough, if you could tell how to reckon.

*K. Hen.* Indeed, the French may lay twenty French crowns to one, they will beat us; for they bear them on their shoulders: But it is no English treason, to cut French crowns; and, to-morrow, the king himself will be a clipper. [*Exeunt Soldiers.*

Upon the king! let us our lives, our souls,
Our debts, our careful wives, our children, and
Our sins, lay on the king;—we must bear all.
O hard condition: twin-born with greatness,
Subjécted to the breath of every fool,
Whose sense no more can feel but his own wringing!
What infinite heart's ease must kings neglect,
That private men enjoy?
And what have kings, that privates have not too,
Save ceremony, save general ceremony?
And what art thou, thou idol ceremony?
What kind of god art thou, that suffer'st more
Of mortal griefs, than do thy worshippers?
What are thy rents? what are thy comings in?
O ceremony, show me but thy worth!
What is the soul † of adoration?
Art thou aught else but place, degree, and form,
Creating awe and fear in other men?
Wherein thou art less happy being fear'd
Than they in fearing.
What drink'st thou oft, instead of homage sweet,
But poison'd flattery? O, be sick, great greatness,
And bid thy ceremony give thee cure.
Think'st thou, the fiery fever will go out

* Too rough. † Intrinsic value.

With titles blown from adulation?
Will it give place to flexure and low bending?
Canst thou, when thou command'st the beggar's knee,
Command the health of it? No, thou proud dream;
That play'st so subtly with a king's repose;
I am a king, that find thee; and I know,
'Tis not the balm, the sceptre, and the ball,
The sword, the mace, the crown imperial,
The enter-tissued robe of gold and pearl,
The farced* title running 'fore the king,
The throne he sits on, nor the tide of pomp
That beats upon the high shore of this world,
No, not all these, thrice-gorgeous ceremony,
Not all these, laid in bed majestical,
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave,
Who, with a body fill'd, and vacant mind,
Gets him to rest, cramm'd with distressful bread;
Never sees horrid night, the child of hell;
But, like a lackey, from the rise to set,
Sweats in the eye of Phœbus, and all night
Sleeps in Elysium; next day, after dawn,
Doth rise, and help Hyperion to his horse;
And follows so the ever-running year
With profitable labour, to his grave:
And, but for ceremony, such a wretch,
Winding up days with toil, and nights with sleep,
Had the fore-hand and 'vantage of a king.
The slave, a member of the country's peace,
Enjoys it; but in gross brain little wots,
What watch the king keeps to maintain the peace,
Whose hours the peasant best advantages.

*Enter* ERPINGHAM.

*Erp.* My lord, your nobles, jealous of your absence
Seek through your camp to find you.
*K. Hen.* Good old knight,
Collect them all together at my tent:
I'll be before thee.
*Erp.* I shall do't, my lord. [*Exit.*
*K. Hen.* O God of battles! steel my soldiers' hearts!
Possess them not with fear; take from them now
The sense of reckoning, if the opposed numbers
Pluck their hearts from them!—Not to-day, O Lord,
O not to-day, think not upon the fault
My father made in compassing the crown!
I Richard's body have interred new;
And on it have bestow'd more contrite tears,
Than from it issued forced drops of blood.
Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay,
Who twice a day their wither'd hands hold up
Toward heaven, to pardon blood; and I have built

* Stuffed, tumid.

Two chantries, where the sad and solemn priests
Sing still for Richard's soul. More will I do:
Though all that I can do, is nothing worth;
Since that my penitence comes after all,
Imploring pardon.

*Enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* My liege!
*K. Hen.* My brother Gloster's voice?—Ay;
I know thy errand, I will go with thee:—
The day, my friends, and all things stay for me. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—The French Camp.*

*Enter* DAUPHIN, ORLEANS, RAMBURES, *and others.*

*Orl.* The sun doth gild our armour; up, my lords.
Dau. *Montez à cheval:*—My horse! *valet! lacquay!* ha!
*Orl.* O brave spirit!
Dau. *Via!**—*les eaux et la terre*——
Orl. *Rien puis? l'air et le feu*——
Dau. *Ciel!* cousin Orleans.——

*Enter* CONSTABLE.

Now, my lord Constable!
*Con.* Hark, how our steeds for present service neigh.
*Dau.* Mount them, and make incision in their hides;
That their hot blood may spin in English eyes,
And doubt† them with superfluous courage: Ha!
*Ram.* What, will you have them weep our horses' blood?
How shall we then behold their natural tears?

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* The English are embattled, you French peers.
*Con.* To horse, you gallant princes! straight to horse!
Do but behold yon poor and starved band,
And your fair show shall suck away their souls,
Leaving them but the shales and husks of men.
There is not work enough for all our hands;
Scarce blood enough in all their sickly veins,
To give each naked curtle-axe a stain,
That our French gallants shall to-day draw out,
And sheath for lack of sport: let us but blow on them,
The vapour of our valour will o'erturn them.
'Tis positive 'gainst all exceptions, lords,
That our superfluous lackeys, and our peasants,—
Who, in unnecessary action, swarm
About our squares of battle,—were enough
To purge this field of such a hilding‡ foe;
Though we, upon this mountain's basis by

* An encouraging exclamation. † Do them out.
‡ Mean, despicable.

Took stand for idle speculation:
But that our honours must not. What's to say,
A very little little let us do,
And all is done. Then let the trumpets sound
The tucket-sonuance,* and the note to mount:
For our approach shall so much dare the field,
That England shall couch down in fear, and yield.

*Enter* GRANDPRE.

*Grand.* Why do you stay so long, my lords of France?
Yon island carrions, desperate of their bones,
Ill-favour'dly become the morning field:
Their ragged curtains† poorly are let loose,
And our air shakes them passing scornfully.
Big Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd host,
And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps.
Their horsemen sit like fixed candlesticks,
With torch-staves in their hand: and their poor jades
Lob down their heads, dropping the hides and hips;
The gum down-roping from their pale-dead eyes;
And in their pale dull mouths the gimmal‡ bit
Lies foul with chewed grass, still and motionless;
And their executors, the knavish crows,
Fly o'er them all, impatient for their hour.
Description cannot suit itself in words,
To demonstrate the life of such a battle
In life so lifeless as it shows itself.
*Con.* They have said their prayers, and they stay for death.
*Dau.* Shall we go send them dinners, and fresh suits,
And give their fasting horses provender,
And after fight with them?
*Con.* I stay but for my guard; On, to the field:
I will the banner from a trumpet take,
And use it for my haste. Come, come away!
The sun is high, and we outwear the day. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The English Camp.*

*Enter the English Host;* GLOSTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, SALISBURY, *and* WESTMORELAND.

*Glo.* Where is the king?
*Bed.* The king himself is rode to view their battle.
*West.* Of fighting men they have full threescore thousand.
*Exe.* There's five to one; besides, they all are fresh.
*Sal.* God's arm strike with us! 'tis a fearful odds.
God be wi' you, princes all; I'll to my charge:
If we no more meet, till we meet in heaven,
Then, joyfully,—my noble lord of Bedford,—
My dear lord Gloster,—and my good lord Exeter,—
And my kind kinsman,—warriors all, adieu!

* An introductory flourish on the trumpet. † Colours. ‡ Ring.

*Bed.* Farewell, good Salisbury; and good luck go with thee!
*Exe.* Farewell, kind lord; fight valiantly to-day:
And yet I do thee wrong, to mind thee of it,
For thou art framed of the firm truth of valour.
[*Exit* SALISBURY.

*Bed.* He is as full of valour, as of kindness;
Princely in both.
*West.* O that we now had here

*Enter* KING HENRY.

But one ten thousand of those men in England,
That do no work to-day!
*K. Hen.* What's he, that wishes so?
My cousin Westmoreland?—No, my fair cousin;
If we are mark'd to die, we are enough
To do our country loss; and if to live,
The fewer men, the greater share of honour.
God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more.
By Jove, I am not covetous for gold:
Nor care I, who doth feed upon my cost;
It yearns* me not, if men my garments wear;
Such outward things dwell not in my desires:
But, if it be a sin to covet honour,
I am the most offending soul alive.
No, 'faith, my coz, wish not a man from England:
God's peace! I would not lose so great an honour,
As one man more, methinks, would share from me,
For the best hope I have. O, do not wish one more:
Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through my host,
That he, which hath no stomach to this fight,
Let him depart; his passport shall be made,
And crowns for convoy put into his purse:
We would not die in that man's company,
That fears his fellowship to die with us.
This day is call'd—the feast of Crispian;
He, that outlives this day, and comes safe home,
Will stand a tip-toe when this day is named,
And rouse him at the name of Crispian.
He, that shall live this day, and see old age,
Will yearly on the vigil feast his friends,
And say—to-morrow is Saint Crispian:
Then will he strip his sleeve, and show his scars,
And say, these wounds I had on Crispin's day.
Old men forget; yet all shall be forgot,
But he'll remember, with advantages,
What feats he did that day: Then shall our names
Familiar in their mouths as household words,—
Harry the king, Bedford, and Exeter,
Warwick and Talbot, Salisbury and Gloster,—
Be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd:
This story shall the good man teach his son;

* Grieves.

And Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go by,
From this day to the ending of the world,
But we in it shall be remember'd:
We few, we happy few, we band of brothers:
For he, to-day that sheds his blood with me,
Shall be my brother; be he ne'er so vile,
This day shall gentle his condition:
And gentlemen in England, now abed,
Shall think themselves accursed, they were not here;
And hold their manhoods cheap, while any speaks,
That fought with us upon Saint Crispin's day.

*Enter* SALISBURY.

*Sal.* My sovereign lord, bestow yourself with speed:
The French are bravely in their battles* set,
And will with all expedience† charge on us.
*K. Hen.* All things are ready, if our minds be so.
*West.* Perish the man, whose mind is backward now!
*K. Hen.* Thou dost not wish more help from England, cousin?
*West.* God's will, my liege, 'would you and I alone,
Without more help, might fight this battle out!
*K. Hen.* Why, now thou hast unwish'd five thousand men;
Which likes me better, than to wish us one.—
You know your places: God be with you all!

*Tucket.—Enter* MONTJOY.

*Mont.* Once more I come to know of thee, king Harry,
If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound,
Before thy most assured overthrow:
For, certainly, thou art so near the gulf,
Thou needs must be englutted. Besides, in mercy,
The Constable desires thee—thou wilt mind‡
Thy followers of repentance; that their souls
May make a peaceful and a sweet retire
From off these fields, where (wretches) their poor bodies
Must lie and fester.
*K. Hen.* Who hath sent thee now?
*Mont.* The Constable of France.
*K. Hen.* I pray thee, bear my former answer back;
Bid them achieve me, and then sell my bones.
Good God! why should they mock poor fellows thus?
The man that once did sell the lion's skin
While the beast lived, was kill'd with hunting him.
A many of our bodies shall, no doubt,
Find native graves; upon the which I trust,
Shall witness live in brass§ of this day's work:
And those that leave their valiant bones in France,
Dying like men, though buried in your dunghills,
They shall be famed; for there the sun shall greet them,

* Battle array. † Expedition.
‡ Remind. § In brazen plates on our tombs.

And draw their honours reeking up to heaven;
Leaving their earthly parts to choke your clime,
The smell whereof shall breed a plague in France.
Mark, then, a bounding valour in our English;
That, being dead, like to the bullet's grazing,
Break out into a second course of mischief,
Killing in relapse of mortality.
Let me speak proudly;—Tell the Constable,
We are but warriors for the working-day:
Our gayness, and our gilt,* are all besmirch'd
With rainy marching in the painful field;
There's not a piece of feather in our host
(Good argument, I hope, we shall not fly),
And time hath worn us into slovenry:
But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim:
And my poor soldiers tell me—yet ere night
They'll be in fresher robes; or they will pluck
The gay new coats o'er the French soldiers' heads,
And turn them out of service. If they do this
(As, if God please, they shall), my ransom then
Will soon be levied. Herald, save thou thy labour;
Come thou no more for ransom, gentle herald;
They shall have none, I swear, but these my joints:
Which if they have as I will leave 'em to them,
Shall yield them little, tell the Constable.

*Mont.* I shall, king Harry. And so fare thee well:
Thou never shalt hear herald any more. [*Exit.*

*K. Hen.* I fear, thou'lt once more come again for ransom.

*Enter the Duke of* YORK.

*York.* My lord, most humbly on my knee I beg
The leading of the vaward.

*K. Hen.* Take it, brave York.—Now, soldiers, march away:—
And how thou pleasest, God, dispose the day! [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—The Field of Battle.*

*Alarums, Excursions. Enter* FRENCH SOLDIER, PISTOL, *and* BOY.

*Pist.* Yield, cur.

Fr. Sol. *Je pense, que vous estes le gentilhomme de bonne qualité.*

*Pist.* Quality, call you me?—Conster me, art thou a gentleman?
What is thy name? discuss.

Fr. Sol. *O Seigneur Dieu!*

*Pist.* O, signieur Dew should be a gentleman:—
Perpend my words, O signieur Dew, and mark:—
O signieur Dew, thou diest on point of fox,†
Except, O signieur, thou do give to me
Egregious ransom.

Fr. Sol. *O, prennez misericorde! ayez pitié de moy!*

* Ornaments. † Sword.

*Pist.* Moy shall not serve, I will have forty moys;*
For I will fetch thy rim out at thy throat,
In drops of crimson blood.

Fr. Sol. *Est-il impossible d'eschapper la force de ton bras?*

*Pist.* Brass, cur!
Thou damned and luxurious† mountain goat,
Offer'st me brass?

Fr. Sol. *O pardonnez moy!*

*Pist.* Say'st thou me so? is that a ton of moys?—
Come hither, boy; Ask me this slave in French,
What is his name.

Boy. *Escoutez; Comment estes vous appellé?*

Fr. Sol. *Monsieur le Fer.*

*Boy.* He says, his name is—master Fer.

*Pist.* Master Fer! I'll fer him, and firk him, and ferret him: discuss the same in French unto him.

*Boy.* I do not know the French for fer, and ferret, and firk.

*Pist.* Bid him prepare, for I will cut his throat.

Fr. Sol. *Que dit-il, monsieur?*

Boy. *Il me commande de vous dire que vous faites vous prest; car ce soldat icy est disposé tout à cette heure de couper vostre gorge.*

*Pist.* Ouy, couper gorge, par ma foy, peasant,
Unless thou give me crowns, brave crowns;
Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword.

Fr. Sol. *O, je vous supplie pour l'amour de Dieu, me pardonner! Je suis gentilhomme de bonne maison: gardez ma vie, et je vous donneray deux cents escus.*

*Pist.* What are his words?

*Boy.* He prays you to save his life: he is a gentleman of a good house; and, for his ransom, he will give you two hundred crowns.

*Pist.* Tell him,—my fury shall abate, and I
The crowns will take.

Fr. Sol. *Petit monsieur, que dit-il?*

Boy. *Encore qu'il est contre son jurement, de pardonner aucun prisonnier; neantmoins, pour les escus que vous l'avez promis, il est content de vous donner la liberté, le franchisement.*

Fr. Sol. *Sur mes genoux, je vous donne mille remerciemens: et je m'estime heureux que je suis tombé entre les mains d'un chevalier, je pense, le plus brave, valiant, et tres distingué seigneur d'Angleterre.*

*Pist.* Expound unto me, boy.

*Boy.* He gives you, upon his knees, a thousand thanks: and he esteems himself happy that he hath fallen into the hands of (as he thinks) the most brave, valorous, and thrice worthy signieur of England.

*Pist.* As I suck blood, I will some mercy show.—
Follow me, cur. [*Exit* PISTOL.

Boy. *Suivez vous le grand capitaine.*

[*Exit* FRENCH SOLDIER.

* A measure of corn (*muids*). † Lascivious.

I did never know so full a voice issue from so empty a heart: but the saying is true,—The empty vessel makes the greatest sound. Bardolph, and Nym, had ten times more valour than this roaring devil i' the old play, that every one may pare his nails with a wooden dagger; and they are both hanged; and so would this be, if he durst steal anything adventurously. I must stay with the lackeys, with the luggage of our camp: the French might have a good prey of us, if he knew of it; for there is none to guard it, but boys. [*Exit.*

*SCENE V.—Another part of the Field of Battle.*

*Alarums. Enter* DAUPHIN, ORLEANS, BOURBON, CONSTABLE, RAMBURES, *and others.*

Con. *O diable!*
Orl. *O seigneur!—le jour est perdu, tout est perdu!*
Dau. *Mort de ma vie!* all is confounded, all!
Reproach and everlasting shame
Sits mocking in our plumes.—*O meschante fortune!*—
Do not run away. [*A short alarum.*
*Con.* Why, all our ranks are broke.
*Dau.* O perdurable * shame!—let's stab ourselves.
Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice for?
*Orl.* Is this the king we sent to for his ransom?
*Bour.* Shame, and eternal shame, nothing but shame!
Let's die in honour: Once more back again;
And he that will not follow Bourbon now,
Let him go hence, and, with his cap in hand,
Like a base pander, hold the chamber door,
Whilst by a slave, no gentler than my dog,†
His fairest daughter is contaminate.
*Con.* Disorder, that hath spoil'd us, friend us now!
Let us, in heaps go offer up our lives
Unto these English, or else die with fame.
*Orl.* We are enough, yet living in the field,
To smother up the English in our throngs,
If any order might be thought upon.
*Bour.* The devil take order now! I'll to the throng;
Let life be short; else, shame will be too long. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VI.—Another part of the Field.*

*Alarums. Enter* KING HENRY *and Forces;* EXETER, *and others.*

*K. Hen.* Well have we done, thrice-valiant countrymen:
But all's not done, yet keep the French the field.
*Exe.* The duke of York commends him to your majesty.
*K. Hen.* Lives he, good uncle? thrice within this hour,
I saw him down; thrice up again, and fighting;
From helmet to the spur, all blood he was.
*Exe.* In which array (brave soldier), doth he lie,

* Lasting. † Having no more gentility.

Larding the plain: and by his bloody side
(Yoke-fellow to his honour-owing wounds),
The noble earl of Suffolk also lies.
Suffolk first died, and York, all haggled over,
Comes to him, where in gore he lay insteep'd,
And takes him by the beard: kisses the gashes,
That bloodily did yawn upon his face;
And cries aloud,—*Tarry, dear cousin Suffolk!*
*My soul shall thine keep company to heaven:*
*Tarry, sweet soul, for mine, then fly a-breast;*
*As, in this glorious and well-foughten field,*
*We kept together in our chivalry!*
Upon these words I came, and cheer'd him up:
He smiled me in the face, raught* me his hand,
And, with a feeble gripe, says,—*Dear my lord,*
*Commend my service to my sovereign.*
So did he turn, and over Suffolk's neck
He threw his wounded arm, and kiss'd his lips;
And so, espoused to death, with blood he seal'd
A testament of noble-ending love.
The pretty and sweet manner of it forced
Those waters from me, which I would have stopp'd;
But I had not so much of man in me,
But all my mother came into mine eyes,
And gave me up to tears.

*K. Hen.* I blame you not;
For, hearing this, I must perforce compound
With mistful eyes, or they will issue too.— [*Alarum.*
But, hark! what new alarum is this same?—
The French have reinforced their scatter'd men:—
Then every soldier kill his prisoners;
Give the word through. [*Exeunt.*

### *SCENE VII.—Another part of the Field.*

*Alarums. Enter* FLUELLEN *and* GOWER.

*Flu.* Kill the poys and the luggage! 'tis expressly against the law of arms: 'tis as arrant a piece of knavery, mark you now, as can be offered in the 'orld: In your conscience now, is it not?

*Gow.* 'Tis certain, there's not a boy left alive; and the cowardly rascals, that ran from the battle, have done this slaughter: besides, they have burned and carried away all that was in the king's tent; wherefore the king, most worthily, hath caused every soldier to cut his prisoner's throat. O, 'tis a gallant king!

*Flu.* Ay, he was porn at Monmouth, captain Gower: What call you the town's name, where Alexander the pig was born?

*Gow.* Alexander the great.

*Flu.* Why, I pray you, is not pig great? The pig, or the great, or the mighty, or the huge, or the magnanimous, are all one reckonings, save the phrase is a little variations.

* Reached.

*Gow.* I think Alexander the great was born in Macedon; his father was called—Philip of Macedon, as I take it.

*Flu.* I think it is in Macedon, where Alexander is porn. I tell you, captain,—If you look in the maps of the 'orld, I warrant, you shall find, in the comparisons between Macedon and Monmouth, that the situations, look you, is both alike. There is a river in Macedon; and there is also moreover a river at Monmouth: it is called Wye, at Monmouth: but it is out of my prains, what is the name of the other river; but 'tis all one, 'tis so like as my fingers is to my fingers, and there is salmons in both. If you mark Alexander's life well, Harry of Monmouth's life is come after it indifferent well; for there is figures in all things. Alexander (God knows, and you know) in his rages, and his furies, and his wraths, and his cholers, and his moods, and his displeasures, and his indignations, and also being a little intoxicates in his prains, did, in his ales and his angers, look you, kill his pest friend, Clytus.

*Gow.* Our king is not like him in that; he never killed any of his friends.

*Flu.* It is not well done, mark you now, to take tales out of my mouth, ere it is made an end and finished. I speak but in the figures and comparisons of it: As Alexander is kill his friend Clytus, being in his ales and his cups; so also Harry Monmouth, being in right wits and goot judgments, is turn away the fat knight with the great pelly-doublet: he was full of jests, and gipes, and knaveries, and mocks; I am forget his name.

*Gow.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Flu.* That is he: I can tell you, there is goot men born at Monmouth.

*Gow.* Here comes his majesty.

*Alarum. Enter* KING HENRY, *with a part of the English Forces;* WARWICK, GLOSTER, EXETER, *and others.*

*K. Hen.* I was not angry since I came to France,
Until this instant.—Take a trumpet, herald;
Ride thou unto the horsemen on yon hill;
If they will fight with us, bid them come down,
Or void the field; they do offend our sight:
If they'll do neither, we will come to them;
And make them skirr away as swift as stones
Enforced from the old Assyrian slings:
Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have;
And not a man of them, that we shall take,
Shall taste our mercy:—Go, and tell them so.

*Enter* MONTJOY.

*Exe.* Here comes the herald of the French, my liege.

*Glo.* His eyes are humbler than they used to be.

*K. Hen.* How now, what means this, herald? know'st thou not,
That I have fined these bones of mine for ransom?
Com'st thou again for ransom?

*Mont.* No, great king:

I come to thee for charitable license,
That we may wander o'er this bloody field,
To book our dead, and then to bury them;
To sort our nobles from our common men;
For many of our princes (woe the while!)
Lie drown'd and soak'd in mercenary blood;
(So do our vulgar drench their peasant limbs
In blood of princes); and their wounded steeds
Fret fetlock deep in gore, and, with wild rage,
Yerk out their armed heels at their dead masters,
Killing them twice. O, give us leave, great king,
To view the field in safety, and dispose
Of their dead bodies.

*K. Hen.* I tell thee truly, herald,
I know not, if the day be ours, or no;
For yet a many of your horsemen peer,
And gallop o'er the field.

*Mont.* The day is yours.

*K. Hen.* Praised be God, and not our strength, for it!—
What is this castle call'd, that stands hard by?

*Mont.* They call it—Agincourt.

*K. Hen.* Then call we this—the field of Agincourt,
Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

*Flu.* Your grandfather of famous memory, an't please your majesty, and your great-uncle Edward the plack prince of Wales, as I have read in the chronicles, fought a most prave pattle here in France.

*K. Hen.* They did, Fluellen.

*Flu.* Your majesty says very true: If your majesties is remembered of it, the Welshman did goot service in a garden where leeks did grow, wearing leeks in their Monmouth caps; which, your majesty knows, to this hour is an honourable padge of the service; and, I do believe, your majesty takes no scorn to wear the leek upon Saint Tavy's day.

*K. Hen.* I wear it for a memorable honour;
For I am Welsh, you know, good countryman.

*Flu.* All the water in Wye cannot wash your majesty's Welsh plood out of your pody, I can tell you that: Got pless it and preserve it, as long as it pleases his grace, and his majesty too!

*K. Hen.* Thanks, good my countryman.

*Flu.* By Cheshu, I am your majesty's countryman, I care not who know it; I will confess it to all the 'orld: I need not to be ashamed of your majesty, praised be Got, so long as your majesty is an honest man.

*K. Hen.* God keep me so!—Our heralds go with him;
Bring me just notice of the numbers dead
On both our parts.—Call yonder fellow hither.

[*Points to* WILLIAMS. *Exeunt* MONTJOY *and others.*

*Exe.* Soldier, you must come to the king.

*K. Hen.* Soldier, why wear'st thou that glove in thy cap?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, 'tis the gage of one that I should fight withal, if he be alive.

*K. Hen.* An Englishman?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, a rascal, that swaggered with me last night: who, if 'a live, and ever dare to challenge this glove, I have sworn to take him a box o' the ear: or, if I can see my glove in his cap (which he swore, as he was a soldier, he would wear, if alive), I will strike it out soundly.

*K. Hen.* What think you, captain Fluellen? is it fit this soldier keep his oath?

*Flu.* He is a craven and a villain else, an't please your majesty, in my conscience.

*K. Hen.* It may be, his enemy is a gentleman of great sort, quite from the answer of his degree.

*Flu.* Though he be as goot a gentleman as the tevil is, as Lucifer and Belzebub himself, it is necessary, look your grace, that he keep his vow and his oath: if he be perjured, see you now, his reputation is as arrant a villain, and a Jack-sauce, as ever his plack shoe trod upon Got's ground and his earth, in my conscience, la.

*K. Hen.* Then keep thy vow, sirrah, when thou meet'st the fellow.

*Will.* So I will, my liege, as I live.

*K. Hen.* Who servest thou under?

*Will.* Under captain Gower, my liege.

*Flu.* Gower is a goot captain; and is good knowledge and literature in the wars.

*K. Hen.* Call him hither to me, soldier.

*Will.* I will, my liege. [*Exit.*

*K. Hen.* Here, Fluellen; wear thou this favour for me, and stick it in thy cap: When Alençon and myself were down together, I plucked this glove from his helm: if any man challenge this, he is a friend to Alençon and an enemy to our person; if thou encounter any such, apprehend him, an thou dost love me.

*Flu.* Your grace does me as great honours, as can be desired in the hearts of his subjects: I would fain see the man, that has but two legs, that shall find himself aggriefed at this glove, that is all; but I would fain see it once; an please Got of his grace, that I might see it.

*K. Hen.* Knowest thou Gower?

*Flu.* He is my dear friend, an please you.

*K. Hen.* Pray thee, go seek him, and bring him to my tent.

*Flu.* I will fetch him. [*Exit.*

*K. Hen.* My lord of Warwick,—and my brother Gloster,
Follow Fluellen closely at the heels:
The glove, which I have given him for a favour,
May, haply, purchase him a box o' the ear;
It is the soldier's; I, by bargain, should
Wear it myself. Follow, good cousin Warwick:
If that the soldier strike him (as, I judge
By his blunt bearing, he will keep his word),
Some sudden mischief may arise of it;
For I do know Fluellen valiant,
And, touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder,
And quickly will return an injury:
Follow, and see there be no harm between them.—
Go you with me, uncle of Exeter. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VIII.—Before* KING HENRY'S *Pavilion.*

*Enter* GOWER *and* WILLIAMS.

*Will.* I warrant, it is to knight you, captain.

*Enter* FLUELLEN.

*Flu.* Got's will and his pleasure, captain, I peseech you now, come apace to the king: there is more goot toward you, peradventure, than is in your knowledge to dream of.

*Will.* Sir, know you this glove?

*Flu.* Know the glove? I know, the glove is a glove.

*Will.* I know this; and thus I challenge it. [*Strikes him.*

*Flu.* 'Sblud, an arrant traitor, as any's in the universal 'orld, or in France, or in England.

*Gow.* How now, Sir? you villain!

*Will.* Do you think I'll be forsworn?

*Flu.* Stand away, captain Gower; I will give treason his payment into plows, I warrant you.

*Will.* I am no traitor.

*Flu.* That's a lie in thy throat.—I charge you in his majesty's name, apprehend him; he's a friend of the duke Alençon's.

*Enter* WARWICK *and* GLOSTER.

*War.* How now, how now! what's the matter?

*Flu.* My lord of Warwick, here is (praised be Got for it!) a most contagious treason come to light, look you, as you shall desire in a summer's day. Here is his majesty.

*Enter* KING HENRY *and* EXETER.

*K. Hen.* How now! what's the matter?

*Flu.* My liege, here is a villain, and a traitor, that, look your grace, has struck the glove which your majesty is take out of the helmet of Alençon.

*Will.* My liege, this was my glove; here is the fellow of it: and he, that I gave it to in change, promised to wear it in his cap; I promised to strike him, if he did: I met this man with my glove in his cap, and I have been as good as my word.

*Flu.* Your majesty hear now (saving your majesty's manhood), what an arrant, rascally, beggarly, lowsy knave it is: I hope, your majesty is pear me testimony, and witness, and avouchments, that this is the glove of Alençon, that your majesty gave me, in your conscience now.

*K. Hen.* Give me thy glove, soldier; Look, here is the fellow of it. 'Twas I, indeed, thou promised'st to strike; and thou hast given me most bitter terms.

*Flu.* An please your majesty, let his neck answer for it, if there is any martial law in the 'orld.

*K. Hen.* How canst thou make me satisfaction?

*Will.* All offences, my liege, come from the heart: never came any from mine, that might offend your majesty.

*K. Hen.* It was ourself thou didst abuse.

*Will.* Your majesty came not like yourself: you appeared to me but as a common man; witness the night, your garments, your lowliness; and what your highness suffered under that shape, I beseech you, take it for your own fault, and not mine: for had you been as I took you for, I made no offence; therefore, I beseech your highness, pardon me.

*K. Hen.* Here, uncle Exeter, fill this glove with crowns,
And give it to this fellow.—Keep it, fellow;
And wear it for an honour in thy cap,
Till I do challenge it.—Give him the crowns:—
And, captain, you must needs be friends with him.

*Flu.* By this day and this light, the fellow has mettle enough in his pelly:—Hold, there is twelvepence for you, and I pray you to serve Got, and keep out of prawls, and prabbles, and quarrels, and dissensions, and, I warrant you, it is the petter for you.

*Will.* I will none of your money.

*Flu.* It is with a goot will; I can tell you, it will serve you to mend your shoes: Come, wherefore should you be so pashful? your shoes is not so goot: 'tis a goot silling, I warrant you, or I will change it.

*Enter an English* HERALD.

*K. Hen.* Now, herald, are the dead number'd?

*Her.* Here is the number of the slaughter'd French.

[*Delivers a paper.*

*K. Hen.* What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle?

*Exe.* Charles duke of Orleans, nephew to the king;
John duke of Bourbon, and lord Bouciqualt:
Of other lords, and barons, knights, and 'squires,
Full fifteen hundred, besides common men.

*K. Hen.* This note doth tell me of ten thousand French,
That in the field lie slain: of princes, in this number,
And nobles bearing banners, there lie dead
One hundred twenty-six: added to these,
Of knights, esquires, and gallant gentlemen,
Eight thousand and four hundred; of the which,
Five hundred were but yesterday dubb'd knights:
So that, in these ten thousand they have lost,
There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries;
The rest are—princes, barons, lords, knights, 'squires,
And gentlemen of blood and quality.
The names of those their nobles that lie dead,—
Charles De-la-bret, high constable of France;
Jaques of Chatillon, admiral of France;
The master of the cross-bows, lord Rambures;
Great-master of France, the brave Sir Guischard Dauphin;
John duke of Alençon; Antony duke of Brabant,
The brother to the duke of Burgundy;
And Edward duke of Bar: of lusty earls,
Grandpré, and Roussi, Fauconberg, and Foix,
Beaumont, and Marle, Vaudemont, and Lestrale,

Here was a royal fellowship of death!——
Where is the number of our English dead?
[HERALD *presents another paper.*
Edward the duke of York, the earl of Suffolk,
Sir Richard Ketley, Davy Gam, esquire:
None else of name; and, of all other men,
But five and twenty. O God, thy arm was here,
And not to us, but to thy arm alone,
Ascribe we all.—When, without stratagem,
But in plain shock, and even play of battle,
Was ever known so great and little loss,
On one part and on the other?—Take it, God,
For it is only thine!

*Exe.* 'Tis wonderful!

*K. Hen.* Come, go we in procession to the village:
And be it death proclaimed through our host,
To boast of this, or take the praise from God,
Which is his only.

*Flu.* Is it not lawful, an please your majesty, to tell how many is killed?

*K. Hen.* Yes, captain; but with this acknowledgment,
That God fought for us.

*Flu.* Yes, my conscience, he did us great goot.

*K. Hen.* Do we all holy rites;
Let there be sung *Non nobis*, and *Te Deum.*
The dead with charity enclosed in clay,
We'll then to Calais; and to England then;
Where ne'er from France arrived more happy men. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT V.

*Enter* CHORUS.

*Chor.* Vouchsafe to those that have not read the story,
That I may prompt them: and of such as have,
I humbly pray them to admit the excuse
Of time, of numbers, and due course of things,
Which cannot in their huge and proper life
Be here presented. Now we bear the king
Toward Calais: grant him there; there seen,
Heave him away upon your winged thoughts,
Athwart the sea: Behold, the English beach
Pales in the flood with men, with wives, and boys,
Whose shouts and claps out-voice the deep-mouth'd sea,
Which, like a mighty whiffler* 'fore the king,
Seems to prepare his way: so let him land;
And, solemnly, see him set on to London.
So swift a pace hath thought, that even now
You may imagine him upon Blackheath:

* Fifer.

Where that his lords desire him, to have borne
His bruised helmet, and his bended sword,
Before him, through the city: he forbids it,
Being free from vainness and self-glorious pride;
Giving full trophy, signal, and ostent,
Quite from himself, to God. But now behold,
In the quick forge and working-house of thought,
How London doth pour out her citizens!
The mayor, and all his brethren, in best sort,—
Like to the senators of the antique Rome,
With the plebeians swarming at their heels,—
Go forth, and fetch their conquering Cæsar in:
As, by a lower but by loving likelihood,*
Were now the general of our gracious empress†
(As, in good time, he may), from Ireland coming,
Bringing rebellion broached on his sword,
How many would the peaceful city quit,
To welcome him? much more, and much more cause,
Did they this Harry. Now in London place him
(As yet the lamentation of the French
Invites the king of England's stay at home:
The emperor 's coming in behalf of France,
To order peace between them); and omit
All the occurrences, whatever chanced,
Till Harry's back-return again to France;
There must we bring him; and myself have play'd
The interim, by remembering you—'tis past.
Then brook abridgment; and your eyes advance
After your thought, straight back again to France. [*Exit.*

*SCENE I.—France. An English Court of Guard.*

*Enter* FLUELLEN *and* GOWER.

*Gow.* Nay, that's right; but why wear you your leek to-day? Saint Davy's day is past.

*Flu.* There is occasions and causes why and wherefore in all things: I will tell you, as my friend, captain Gower; The rascally, scald, beggarly, lowsy, pragging knave, Pistol,—which you and yourself, and all the 'orld, know to be no petter than a fellow, look you now, of no merits,—he is come to me, and prings me pread and salt yesterday, look you, and bid me eat my leek: it was in a place where I could not breed no contentions with him; but I will be so pold as to wear it in my cap till I see him once again, and then I will tell him a little piece of my desires.

*Enter* PISTOL.

*Gow.* Why, here he comes, swelling like a turkey-cock.

*Flu.* 'Tis no matter for his swellings, nor his turkey-cocks.—Got pless you, ancient Pistol, you scurvy, lowsy knave, Got pless you!

*Pist.* Ha! art thou Bedlam? dost thou thirst, base Trojan,

* Similitude. † The earl of Essex.

To have me fold up Parca's fatal web?*
Hence! I am qualmish at the smell of leek.

*Flu.* I peseech you heartily, scurvy, lowsy knave, at my desires, and my requests, and my petitions, to eat, look you, this leek; because, look you, you do not love it, nor your affections, and your appetites, and your digestions, does not agree with it, I would desire you to eat it.

*Pist.* Not for Cadwallader, and all his goats.

*Flu.* There is one goat for you. [*Strikes him.*] Will you be so goot, scald knave, as eat it?

*Pist.* Base Trojan, thou shalt die.

*Flu.* You say very true, scald knave, when Got's will is: I will desire you to live in the mean time, and eat your victuals; come, there is sauce for it. [*Striking him again.*] You called me yesterday, mountain-squire; but I will make you to-day a squire of low degree. I pray you, fall to; if you can mock a leek, you can eat a leek.

*Gow.* Enough, captain; you have astonished† him.

*Flu.* I say, I will make him eat some part of my leek, or I will peat his pate four days:—Pite, I pray you; it is goot for your green wound, and your ploody coxcomb.

*Pist.* Must I bite?

*Flu.* Yes, certainly; and out of doubt, and out of questions too, and ambiguities.

*Pist.* By this leek, I will most horribly revenge; I eat, and eke I swear—

*Flu.* Eat, I pray you: Will you have some more sauce to your leek; there is not enough leek to swear by.

*Pist.* Quit thy cudgel; thou dost see, I eat.

*Flu.* Much goot do you, scald knave, heartily. Nay, 'pray you, throw none away; the skin is goot for your proken coxcomb. When you take occasions to see leeks hereafter, I pray you, mock at them; that is all.

*Pist.* Good.

*Flu.* Ay, leeks is goot:—Hold you, there is a groat to heal your pate.

*Pist.* Me a groat!

*Flu.* Yes, verily, and in truth, you shall take it; or I have another leek in my pocket, which you shall eat.

*Pist.* I take thy groat, in earnest of revenge.

*Flu.* If I owe you anything, I will pay you in cudgels; you shall be a woodmonger, and buy nothing of me but cudgels. God be wi' you, and keep you, and heal your pate. [*Exit.*

*Pist.* All hell shall stir for this.

*Gow.* Go, go; you are a counterfeit cowardly knave. Will you mock at an ancient tradition—begun upon an honourable respect, and worn as a memorable trophy of predeceased valour,—and dare not avouch in your deeds any of your words? I have seen you gleeking‡ and galling at this gentleman twice or thrice. You thought, because he could not speak English in the native

* Dost thou desire to have me put thee to death?
† Stunned. ‡ Scoffing, sneering.

garb, he could not therefore handle an English cudgel: you find it otherwise; and, henceforth, let a Welsh correction teach you a good English condition.* Fare ye well. [*Exit.*

*Pist.* Doth fortune play the huswife † with me now?
News have I, that my Nell is dead i' the spital
Of malady of France;
And there my rendezvous is quite cut off.
Old I do wax; and from my weary limbs
Honour is cudgell'd. Well, bawd will I turn,
And something lean to cutpurse of quick hand.
To England will I steal, and there I'll steal:
And patches will I get unto these scars,
And swear, I got them in the Gallia wars. [*Exit.*

*SCENE II.—Troyes in Champagne. An Apartment in the French King's Palace.*

*Enter, at one door,* KING HENRY, BEDFORD, GLOSTER, EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND, *and other Lords; at another, the French* KING, QUEEN ISABEL, *the* PRINCESS KATHARINE, *Lords, Ladies, &c.; the Duke of* BURGUNDY, *and his Train.*

*K. Hen.* Peace to this meeting, wherefore we are met!
Unto our brother France,—and to our sister,
Health and fair time of day:—joy and good wishes
To our most fair and princely cousin Katharine;
And (as a branch and member of this royalty,
By whom this great assembly is contrived),
We do salute you, duke of Burgundy;—
And, princes French, and peers, health to you all!

*Fr. King.* Right joyous are we to behold your face,
Most worthy brother England; fairly met:—
So are you, princes English, every one.

*Q. Isa.* So happy be the issue, brother England,
Of this good day, and of this gracious meeting,
As we are now glad to behold your eyes;
Your eyes, which hitherto have borne in them
Against the French, that met them in their bent,
The fatal balls of murdering basilisks:
The venom of such looks, we fairly hope,
Have lost their quality; and that this day
Shall change all griefs, and quarrels, into love.

*K. Hen.* To cry amen to that, thus we appear.

*Q. Isa.* You English princes all, I do salute you.

*Bur.* My duty to you both, on equal love,
Great kings of France and England! That I have labour'd
With all my wits, my pains, and strong endeavours,
To bring your most imperial majesties
Unto this bar‡ and royal interview,
Your mightiness on both parts best can witness.

* Temper. † Jilt. ‡ Place of meeting.

Since then my office hath so far prevail'd,
That, face to face, and royal eye to eye,
You have congreeted; let it not disgrace me,
If I demand, before this royal view,
What rub, or what impediment, there is,
Why that the naked, poor, and mangled peace,
Dear nurse of arts, plenties, and joyful births,
Should not, in this best garden of the world,
Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage?
Alas! she hath from France too long been chased;
And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,
Corrupting in its own fertility.
Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,
Unpruned dies; her hedges even-pleached,—
Like prisoners wildly over-grown with hair,
Put forth disorder'd twigs: her fallow leas,
The darnel, hemlock, and rank fumitory,
Doth root upon; while that the coulter rusts,
That should deracinate * such savagery:
The even mead, that erst brought sweetly forth
The freckled cowslip, burnet, and green clover,
Wanting the scythe, all uncorrected, rank,
Conceives by idleness; and nothing teems,
But hateful docks, rough thistles, kecksies, burs,
Losing both beauty and utility.
And as our vineyards, fallows, meads, and hedges,
Defective in their natures, grow to wildness;
Even so our houses, and ourselves, and children,
Have lost, or do not learn, for want of time,
The sciences that should become our country;
But grow, like savages,—as soldiers will,
That nothing do but meditate on blood,—
To swearing, and stern looks, diffused † attire,
And everything that seems unnatural.
Which to reduce into our former favour, ‡
You are assembled: and my speech entreats,
That I may know the let, § why gentle peace
Should not expel these inconveniences,
And bless us with her former qualities.

*K. Hen.* If, duke of Burgundy, you would the peace,
Whose want gives growth to the imperfections
Which you have cited, you must buy that peace
With full accord to all our just demands;
Whose tenors and particular effects
You have, enschedul'd briefly, in your hands.

*Bur.* The king hath heard them; to the which, as yet,
There is no answer made.

*K. Hen.* Well then, the peace,
Which you before so urged, lies in his answer.

* Uproot. † Extravagant.
‡ Appearance. § Hinderance.

*Fr. King.* I have but with a cursorary eye
O'er-glanced the articles: pleaseth your grace
To appoint some of your council presently
To sit with us once more, with better heed
To re-survey them, we will, suddenly,
Pass our accept, and peremptory answer.

*K. Hen.* Brother, we shall.—Go, uncle Exeter,—
And brother Clarence,—and you, brother Gloster,—
Warwick—and Huntingdon,—go with the king:
And take with you free power, to ratify,
Augment, or alter, as your wisdoms best
Shall see advantageable for our dignity,
Anything in, or out of, our demands;
And we'll consign thereto.—Will you, fair sister,
Go with the princes, or stay here with us?

*Q. Isa.* Our gracious brother, I will go with them;
Haply, a woman's voice may do some good,
When articles, too nicely urged, be stood on.

*K. Hen.* Yet leave our cousin Katharine here with us;
She is our capital demand, comprised
Within the fore-rank of our articles.

*Q. Isa.* She hath good leave.

[*Exeunt all but* HENRY, KATHARINE, *and her Gentlewoman.*

*K. Hen.* Fair Katharine, and most fair!
Will you vouchsafe to teach a soldier terms
Such as will enter at a lady's ear,
And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

*Kath.* Your majesty shall mock at me; I cannot speak your England.

*K. Hen.* O fair Katharine, if you will love me soundly with your French heart, I will be glad to hear you confess it brokenly with your English tongue. Do you like me, Kate?

Kath. *Pardonnez moy*, I cannot tell vat is—like me.

*K. Hen.* An angel is like you, Kate; and you are like an angel.

Kath. *Que dit-il? que je suis semblable à les anges?*

Alice. *Ouy, vrayment* (*sauf vostre grace*), *ainsi dit-il.*

*K. Hen.* I said so, dear Katharine; and I must not blush to affirm it.

Kath. *O bon Dieu! les langues des hommes sont pleines des tromperies.*

*K. Hen.* What says she, fair one? that the tongues of men are full of deceits?

Alice. *Ouy;* dat de tongues of de mans is be full of deceits: dat is de princess.

*K. Hen.* The princess is the better Englishwoman. I' faith, Kate, my wooing is fit for thy understanding: I am glad, thou canst speak no better English; for, if thou couldst, thou wouldst find me such a plain king, that thou wouldst think, I had sold my farm to buy my crown. I know no ways to mince it in love, but directly to say—I love you: then, if you urge me further

than to say—Do you in faith? I wear out my suit. Give me your answer; i' faith, do; and so clap hands and a-bargain: How say you, lady?

Kath. *Sauf vostre honneur*, me understand well.

*K. Hen.* Marry, if you would put me to verses, or to dance for your sake, Kate, why you undid me: for the one, I have neither words nor measure; and for the other, I have no strength in measure,* yet a reasonable measure in strength. If I could win a lady at leap-frog, or by vaulting into my saddle with my armour on my back, under the correction of bragging be it spoken, I should quickly leap into a wife. Or, if I might buffet for my love, or bound my horse for her favours, I could lay on like a butcher, and sit like a jack-an-apes, never off: but, before God, I cannot look greenly,† nor gasp out my eloquence, nor I have no cunning in protestation; only downright oaths, which I never use till urged, nor never break for urging. If thou canst love a fellow of this temper, Kate, whose face is not worth sunburning, that never looks in his glass for love of anything he sees there, let thine eye be thy cook. I speak to thee plain soldier: If thou canst love me for this, take me: if not, to say to thee—that I shall die, is true; but—for thy love, by the Lord, no; yet I love thee too. And while thou livest, dear Kate, take a fellow of plain and uncoined‡ constancy; for he perforce must do thee right, because he hath not the gift to woo in other places; for these fellows of infinite tongue, that can rhyme themselves into ladies' favours,—they do always reason themselves out again. What! a speaker is but a prater; a rhyme is but a ballad. A good leg will fall:§ a straight back will stoop; a black beard will turn white; a curled pate will grow bald; a fair face will wither; a full eye will wax hollow: but a good heart, Kate, is the sun and moon; or, rather, the sun, and not the moon; for it shines bright, and never changes, but keeps his course truly. If thou would have such a one, take me: And take me, take a soldier; take a soldier, take a king: And what sayest thou then to my love? speak, my fair, and fairly, I pray thee.

*Kath.* Is it possible dat I should love de enemy of France?

*K. Hen.* No; it is not possible, you should love the enemy of France, Kate: but, in loving me, you should love the friend of France; for I love France so well, that I will not part with a village of it; I will have it all mine: and, Kate, when France is mine, and I am yours, then yours is France, and you are mine.

*Kath.* I cannot tell vat is dat.

*K. Hen.* No, Kate? I will tell thee in French; which, I am sure, will hang upon my tongue like a new-married wife about her husband's neck, hardly to be shook off. *Quand j'ay la possession de France, et quand vous avez la possession de moi* (let me see, what then? Saint Dennis be my speed!)—*donc vostre est France, et vous estes mienne.* It is as easy for me, Kate, to

* In dancing. † Awkwardly.
‡ Which has not yet received any impression. § Fall away.

conquer the kingdom, as to speak so much more French: I shall never move thee in French: unless it be to laugh at me.

Kath. *Sauf vostre honneur, le François que vous parlez, est meilleur que l'Anglois lequel je parle.*

*K. Hen.* No, 'faith, 'tis not, Kate; but thy speaking of my tongue, and I thine, most truly falsely, must needs be granted to be much at one. But, Kate, dost thou understand thus much English? Canst thou love me?

*Kath.* I cannot tell.

*K. Hen.* Can any of your neighbours tell, Kate? I'll ask them. Come, I know, thou lovest me: and at night when you come into your closet, you'll question this gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will, to her, dispraise those parts in me, that you love with your heart: but, good Kate, mock me mercifully; the rather, gentle princess, because I love thee cruelly. If ever thou be'st mine, Kate (as I have a saving faith within me, tells me,—thou shalt), I get thee with scambling, and thou must therefore needs prove a good soldier-breeder: shall not thou and I, between Saint Dennis and Saint George, compound a boy, half French, half English, that shall go to Constantinople, and take the Turk by the beard? shall we not? what sayest thou, my fair flower-de-luce?

*Kath.* I do not know dat.

*K. Hen.* No; 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise: do but now promise, Kate, you will endeavour, for your French part of such a boy; and for my English moiety, take the word of a king and a bachelor. How answer you, *la plus belle Katharine du monde, mon tres chere et divine deesse?*

*Kath.* Your *majesté* 'ave *fausse* French enough to deceive de most *sage demoiselle* dat is *en France.*

*K. Hen.* Now, fie upon my false French! By mine honour, in true English, I love thee, Kate: by which honour I dare not swear, thou lovest me; yet my blood begins to flatter me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and untempering* effect of my visage. Now beshrew my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me; therefore was I created with a stubborn outside, with an aspect of iron, that, when I come to woo ladies, I fright them. But, in faith, Kate, the elder I wax, the better I shall appear: my comfort is, that old age, that ill layer-up of beauty, can do no more spoil upon my face: thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better; And therefore tell me, most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes; avouch the thoughts of your heart with the looks of an empress; take me by the hand, and say—Harry of England, I am thine: which word thou shalt no sooner bless mine ear withal, but I will tell thee aloud—England is thine, Ireland is thine, France is thine, and Henry Plantagenet is thine; who, though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king, thou shalt

* Unsoftening.

find the best king of good fellows. Come, your answer in broken music; for thy voice is music, and thy English broken: therefore, queen of all, Katharine, break thy mind to me in broken English. Wilt thou have me?

*Kath.* Dat is, as it shall please de *roy mon pere.*

*K. Hen.* Nay, it will please him well, Kate; it shall please him, Kate.

*Kath.* Den it shall also content me.

*K. Hen.* Upon that I will kiss your hand, and I call you—my queen.

Kath. *Laissez, mon seigneur, laissez, laissez: ma foy, je ne veux point que vous abbaissez vostre grandeur, en baisant la main d'une vostre indigne serviteure; excusez moy, je vous supplie, mon tres puissant seigneur.*

*K. Hen.* Then I will kiss your lips, Kate.

Kath. *Les dames, et damoiselles, pour estre baisées devant leur nopces, ill n'est pas le coûtume de France.*

*K. Hen.* Madam, my interpreter, what says she?

*Alice.* Dat it is not be de fashion *pour les* ladies of France,—I cannot tell what is, *baiser, en* English.

*K. Hen.* To kiss.

*Alice.* Your majesty *entendre* bettre *que moy.*

*K. Hen.* It is not the fashion for the maids in France to kiss before they are married, would she say?

Alice. *Ouy, vrayment.*

*K. Hen.* O, Kate, nice customs curt'sy to great kings. Dear Kate, you and I cannot be confined within the weak list * of a country's fashion: we are the makers of manners, Kate; and the liberty that follows our places, stops the mouths of all find-faults; as I will do yours, for upholding the nice fashion of your country, in denying me a kiss: therefore, patiently, and yielding. [*Kissing her.*] You have witchcraft in your lips, Kate: there is more eloquence in a sugar touch of them, than in the tongues of the French council; and they should sooner persuade Harry of England, than a general petition of monarchs. Here comes your father.

*Enter the* FRENCH KING *and* QUEEN, BURGUNDY, BEDFORD, GLOSTER, EXETER, WESTMORELAND, *and other French and English Lords.*

*Bur.* God save your majesty! my royal cousin, teach you our princess English?

*K. Hen.* I would have her learn, my fair cousin, how perfectly I love her; and that is good English.

*Bur.* Is she not apt?

*K. Hen.* Our tongue is rough, coz; and my condition † is not smooth: so that, having neither the voice nor the heart of flattery about me, I cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her, that he will appear in his true likeness.

*Bur.* Pardon the frankness of my mirth, if I answer you for that. If you would conjure in her, you must make a circle: if

* Slight barrier. † Temper.

conjure up love in her in his true likeness, he must appear naked, and blind: Can you blame her then, being a maid yet rosed over with the virgin crimson of modesty, if she deny the appearance of a naked blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were, my lord, a hard condition for a maid to consign to.

*K. Hen.* Yet they do wink and yield; as love is blind, and enforces.

*Bur.* They are then excused, my lord, when they see not what they do.

*K. Hen.* Then, good my lord, teach your cousin to consent to winking.

*Bur.* I will wink on her to consent, my lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for maids, well summered and warm kept, are like flies at Bartholomew-tide, blind, though they have their eyes; and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.

*K. Hen.* This moral* ties me over to time, and a hot summer; and so I will catch the fly, your cousin, in the latter end, and she must be blind too.

*Bur.* As love is, my lord, before it loves.

*K. Hen.* It is so, and you may, some of you, thank love for my blindness; who cannot see many a fair French city, for one fair French maid that stands in my way.

*Fr. King.* Yes, my lord, you see them perspectively, the cities turned into a maid; for they are all girdled with maiden walls, that war hath never entered.

*K. Hen.* Shall Kate be my wife?

*Fr. King.* So please you.

*K. Hen.* I am content; so the maiden cities you talk of, may wait on her; so the maid, that stood in the way of my wish, shall show me the way to my will.

*Fr. King.* We have consented to all terms of reason.

*K. Hen.* Is't so, my lords of England?

*West.* The king hath granted every article:
His daughter, first; and then, in sequel, all,
According to their firm proposed natures.

*Exe.* Only he hath not yet subscribed this:—Where your majesty demands,—That the king of France, having any occasion to write for matter of grant, shall name your highness in this form, and with this addition, in French,—*Notre tres cher filz Henry roy d'Angleterre, heretier de France;* and thus in Latin,—*Præclarissimus filius noster Henricus, rex Angliæ, et hæres Franciæ.*

*Fr. King.* Nor this I have not, brother, so denied,
But your request shall make me let it pass.

*K. Hen.* I pray you then, in love and dear alliance,
Let that one article rank with the rest:
And, thereupon, give me your daughter.

*Fr. King.* Take her, fair son; and from her blood raise up
Issue to me: that the contending kingdoms
Of France and England, whose very shores look pale

* Application.

With envy of each other's happiness,
May cease their hatred; and this dear conjunction
Plant neighbourhood and Christian-like accord
In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance
His bleeding sword 'twixt England and fair France.

*All.* Amen!

*K. Hen.* Now, welcome, Kate:—and bear me witness all,
That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen. [*Flourish.*

*Q. Isa.* God, the best maker of all marriages,
Combine your hearts in one, your realms in one!
As man and wife, being two, are one in love,
So be there 'twixt your kingdoms such a spousal,
That never may ill office, or fell jealousy,
Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage,
Thrust in between the paction of these kingdoms,
To make divorce of their incorporate league;
That English may as French, French Englishmen,
Receive each other!—God speak this, Amen!

*All.* Amen!

*K. Hen.* Prepare we for our marriage:—on which day,
My lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath,
And all the peers', for surety of our leagues.—
Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me;
And may our oaths well kept and prosperous be! [*Exeunt.*

*Enter* CHORUS.

Thus far, with rough, and all unable pen,
Our bending* author hath pursued the story,
In little room confining mighty men,
Mangling by starts the full course of their glory.
Small time, but in that small, most greatly lived
This star of England: fortune made his sword;
By which the world's best garden † he achieved,
And of it left his son imperial lord.
Henry the sixth, in infant bands crown'd king
Of France and England did this king succeed;
Whose state so many had the managing,
That they lost France, and made his England bleed:
Which oft our stage hath shown; and, for their sake,
In your fair minds let this acceptance take. [*Exit.*

* *I.e.* unequal to the weight of the subject. † France.

# FIRST PART

OF

# KING HENRY VI.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.
DUKE OF GLOSTER, *Uncle to the King, and Protector.*
DUKE OF BEDFORD, *Uncle to the King, and Regent of France.*
THOMAS BEAUFORT, *Duke of Exeter, great Uncle to the King.*
HENRY BEAUFORT, *great Uncle to the King, Bishop of Winchester; and afterwards Cardinal.*
JOHN BEAUFORT, *Earl of Somerset; afterwards Duke.*
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *eldest Son of Richard, late Earl of Cambridge; afterwards Duke of York.*
EARL OF WARWICK.
EARL OF SALISBURY.
EARL OF SUFFOLK.
LORD TALBOT, *afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.*
JOHN TALBOT, *his Son.*
EDMUND MORTIMER, *Earl of March.*
MORTIMER'S KEEPER, and a LAWYER.
SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.
SIR WILLIAM LUCY.
SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE.
SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE.
MAYOR OF LONDON.
WOODVILLE, *Lieutenant of the Tower.*
VERNON, *of the White Rose, or York Faction.*
BASSET, *of the Red Rose, or Lancaster Faction.*
CHARLES, *Dauphin, and afterwards King of France.*
REIGNIER, *Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.*
DUKE OF BURGUNDY.
DUKE OF ALENCON.
GOVERNOR OF PARIS.
BASTARD OF ORLEANS.
MASTER-GUNNER OF ORLEANS, and his SON.
GENERAL OF THE FRENCH FORCES in Bordeaux.
A FRENCH SERGEANT.
A PORTER.
AN OLD SHEPHERD, *Father to Joan la Pucelle.*

---

MARGARET, *Daughter to Reignier; afterwards married to King Henry.*
COUNTESS OF AUVERGNE.
JOAN LA PUCELLE, *commonly called Joan of Arc.*

FIENDS appearing to La Pucelle, LORDS, WARDERS OF THE TOWER, HERALDS, OFFICERS, SOLDIERS, MESSENGERS, and several ATTENDANTS both on the English and French.

SCENE; partly in England, and partly in France.

## ACT I.

### *SCENE I.—Westminster Abbey.*

*Dead march. Corpse of* KING HENRY *the Fifth discovered, lying in state; attended on by the Dukes of* BEDFORD, GLOSTER, *and* EXETER; *the Earl of* WARWICK, *the Bishop of* WINCHESTER, *Heralds, &c.*

*Bed.* Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!
Comets, importing change of times and states,
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky;

And with them scourge the bad revolting stars,
That have consented unto Henry's death!
Henry the fifth, too famous to live long!
England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.

*Glo.* England ne'er had a king, until his time.
Virtue he had, deserving to command:
His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams;
His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings:
His sparkling eyes replete with wrathful fire,
More dazzled and drove back his enemies,
Than mid-day sun, fierce bent against their faces.
What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech:
He ne'er lift up his hand, but conquered.

*Exe.* We mourn in black; Why mourn we not in blood?
Henry is dead, and never shall revive:
Upon a wooden coffin we attend;
And death's dishonourable victory
We with our stately presence glorify,
Like captives bound to a triumphant car.
What? shall we curse the planets of mishap,
That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?
Or shall we think the subtle-witted French
Conjurers and sorcerers, that, afraid of him,
By magic verses have contrived his end?

*Win.* He was a king bless'd of the King of Kings.
Unto the French the dreadful judgment day
So dreadful will not be, as was his fight.
The battles of the Lord of Hosts he fought:
The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

*Glo.* The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray'd,
His thread of life had not so soon decay'd:
None do you like but an effeminate prince,
Whom, like a school-boy, you may overawe.

*Win.* Gloster, whate'er we like, thou art protector;
And lookest to command the prince, and realm,
Thy wife is proud; she holdeth thee in awe,
More than God, or religious churchmen, may.

*Glo.* Name not religion, for thou lov'st the flesh!
And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'st,
Except it be to pray against thy foes.

*Bed.* Cease, cease these jars, and rest your minds in peace!
Let's to the altar:—Heralds, wait on us:—
Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms;
Since arms avail not, now that Henry 's dead.—
Posterity, await for wretched years,
When at their mothers' moist eyes babes shall suck;
Our isle be made a marish* of salt tears,
And none but women left to wail the dead.—
Henry the fifth! thy ghost I invocate;
Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils!

* Marsh.

Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!
A far more glorious star thy soul will make,
Than Julius Cæsar's orb.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Right honourable lords, health to you all!
Sad tidings bring I to you out of France,
Of loss, of slaughter, and discomfiture:
Guienne, Champaigne, Rheims, Orleans,
Paris, Guysors, Poictiers, are all quite lost.
*Bed.* What say'st thou, man, before dead Henry's corse?
Speak softly; or the loss of those great towns
Will make him burst his lead, and rise from death.
*Glo.* Is Paris lost? is Roüen yielded up?
If Henry were recall'd to life again,
These news would cause him once more yield the ghost.
*Exe.* How were they lost? what treachery was used?
*Mess.* No treachery; but want of men and money.
Among the soldiers this is muttered,—
That here you maintain several factions;
And, whilst a field should be despatch'd and fought,
You are disputing of your generals.
One would have lingering wars, with little cost;
Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings;
A third man thinks, without expense at all,
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.
Awake, awake, English nobility!
Let not sloth dim your honours, new-begot:
Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms;
Of England's coat one-half is cut away.
*Exe.* Were our tears wanting to this funeral,
These tidings would call forth her* flowing tides.
*Bed.* Me they concern; regent I am of France:—
Give me my steeled coat, I'll fight for France.—
Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!
Wounds I will lend the French, instead of eyes,
To weep their intermissive miseries.†

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

2 *Mess.* Lords, view these letters, full of bad mischance,
France is revolted from the English quite;
Except some petty towns of no import:
The Dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims;
The bastard of Orleans with him is join'd;
Reignier, duke of Anjou, doth take his part;
The duke of Alençon flieth to his side.
*Exe.* The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!
O, whither shall we fly from this reproach?
*Glo.* We will not fly, but to our enemies' throats:
Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out.

* England's. † Having only short intermissions.

*Bed.* Gloster, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness?
An army have I muster'd in my thoughts,
Wherewith already France is over-run.

*Enter a third* MESSENGER.

3 *Mess.* My gracious lords,—to add to your laments,
Wherewith you now bedew king Henry's hearse,—
I must inform you of a dismal fight,
Betwixt the stout lord Talbot and the French.

*Win.* What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't so?

3 *Mess.* O, no; wherein lord Talbot was o'erthrown:
The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.
The tenth of August last, this dreadful lord,
Retiring from the siege of Orleans,
Having scarce six thousand in his troop,
By three and twenty thousand of the French
Was round encompassed and set upon:
No leisure had he to enrank his men;
He wanted pikes to set before his archers;
Instead whereof, sharp stakes, pluck'd out of hedges,
They pitched in the ground confusedly,
To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.
More than three hours the fight continued;
Where valiant Talbot, above human thought,
Enacted wonders with his sword and lance.
Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand him;
Here, there, and everywhere, enraged he slew:
The French exclaim'd, The devil was in arms;
All the whole army stood agazed on him:
His soldiers, spying his undaunted spirit,
A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out amain,
And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.
Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up,
If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward;
He being in the vaward (placed behind,
With purpose to relieve and follow them),
Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke,
Hence grew the general wreck and massacre;
Enclosed were they with their enemies:
A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,
Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back;
Whom all France, with their chief assembled strength,
Durst not presume to look once in the face.

*Bed.* Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,
For living idly here, in pomp and ease,
Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,
Unto his dastard foe-man is betray'd.

3 *Mess.* O no, he lives; but is took prisoner,
And lord Scales with him, and lord Hungerford:
Most of the rest slaughter'd, or took, likewise.

*Bed.* His ransom there is none but I shall pay
I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne,
His crown shall be the ransom of my friend;

Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.—
Farewell, my masters; to my task will I;
Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,
To keep our great Saint George's feast withal:
Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,
Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake.
*3 Mess.* So you had need; for Orleans is besieged;
The English army is grown weak and faint:
The earl of Salisbury craveth supply,
And hardly keeps his men from mutiny,
Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.
*Exe.* Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry sworn;
Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,
Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.
*Bed.* I do remember it; and here take leave
To go about my preparation. [*Exit.*
*Glo.* I'll to the Tower, with all the haste I can,
To view the artillery and munition;
And then I will proclaim young Henry king. [*Exit.*
*Exe.* To Eltham will I, where the young king is,
Being ordain'd his special governor;
And for his safety there I'll best advise. [*Exit.*
*Win.* Each hath his place and function to attend:
I am left out; for me nothing remains.
But long I will not be Jack-out-of-office;
The king from Eltham I intend to send,
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal. [*Exit. Scene closes.*

## *SCENE II.—France. Before Orleans.*

*Enter* CHARLES, *with his Forces;* ALENÇON, REIGNIER, *and others.*

*Char.* Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens,
So in the earth, to this day is not known:
Late did he shine upon the English side;
Now we are victors, upon us he smiles.
What towns of any moment, but we have?
At pleasure here we lie, near Orleans;
Otherwhiles, the famish'd English, like pale ghosts,
Faintly besiege us one hour in a month.
*Alen.* They want their porridge, and their fat bull-beeves:
Either they must be dieted like mules,
And have their provender tied to their mouths,
Or piteous they will look, like drowned mice.
*Reig.* Let's raise the siege; Why live we idly here?
Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear:
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury;
And he may well in fretting spend his gall,
Nor men, nor money, hath he to make war.
*Char.* Sound, sound alarum; we will rush on them.
Now for the honour of the forlorn French:—

Him I forgive my death, that killeth me,
When he sees me go back one foot, or fly. [*Exeunt.*

*Alarums; Excursions; afterwards a Retreat.*

*Re-enter* CHARLES, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, *and others.*

*Char.* Who ever saw the like? what men have I?—
Dogs! cowards! dastards!—I would ne'er have fled,
But that they left me 'midst my enemies.
*Reig.* Salisbury is a desperate homicide;
He fighteth as one weary of his life.
The other lords, like lions wanting food,
Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.*
*Alen.* Froissard, a countryman of ours, records,
England all Olivers and Rowlands bred,
During the time Edward the third did reign,
More truly now may this be verified;
For none but Samsons, and Goliasses,
It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!
Lean raw-boned rascals! who would e'er suppose
They had such courage and audacity?
*Char.* Let's leave this town; for they are hair-brain'd slaves,
And hunger will enforce them to be more eager:
Of old I know them; rather with their teeth
The walls they'll tear down, than forsake the siege.
*Reig.* I think, by some odd gimmals† or device,
Their arms are set, like clocks, still to strike on;
Else ne'er could they hold out so, as they do.
By my consent, we'll e'en let them alone.
*Alen.* Be it so.

*Enter the* BASTARD *of Orleans.*

*Bast.* Where's the prince Dauphin? I have news for him.
*Char.* Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.
*Bast.* Methinks, your looks are sad, your cheer‡ appall'd;
Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?
Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand:
A holy maid hither with me I bring,
Which, by a vision sent to her from heaven,
Ordained is to raise this tedious siege,
And drive the English forth the bounds of France.
The spirit of deep prophecy she hath,
Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome;
What's past, and what's to come, she can descry.
Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words,
For they are certain and unfallible.
*Char.* Go, call her in [*Exit* BASTARD]: But, first, to try her skill,
Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place:
Question her proudly, let thy looks be stern:—
By this means shall we sound what skill she hath. [*Retires.*

* For which they are hungry. † Machinery. ‡ Countenance.

*Enter* LA PUCELLE, BASTARD *of Orleans, and others.*

*Reig.* Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these wond'rous feats?
*Puc.* Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to beguile me?—
Where is the Dauphin?—come, come from behind;
I know thee well, though never seen before.
Be not amazed, there's nothing hid from me:
In private will I talk with thee apart:—
Stand back, you lords, and give us leave a while.
*Reig.* She takes upon her bravely at first dash.
*Puc.* Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter,
My wit untrain'd in any kind of art.
Heaven, and our lady gracious, hath it pleased
To shine on my contemptible estate:
Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,
And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks,
God's mother deigned to appear to me;
And, in a vision full of majesty,
Will'd me to leave my base vocation,
And free my country from calamity;
Her aid she promised, and assured success:
In complete glory she reveal'd herself;
And, whereas I was black and swart before,
With those clear rays which she infused on me,
That beauty am I bless'd with, which you see.
Ask me what question thou canst possible,
And I will answer unpremeditated:
My courage try by combat, if thou dar'st,
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.
Resolve on this:* Thou shalt be fortunate,
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.
*Char.* Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high terms;
Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,—
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me;
And, if thou vanquishest, thy words are true;
Otherwise, I renounce all confidence.
*Puc.* I am prepared: here is my keen-edged sword,
Deck'd with five fleur-de-luces on each side;
The which at Touraine, in St. Katharine's church-yard,
Out of a deal of old iron I chose forth.
*Char.* Then come o' God's name, I fear no woman.
*Puc.* And, while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man. [*They fight.*
*Char.* Stay, stay thy hands; thou art an Amazon,
And fightest with the sword of Deborah.
*Puc.* Christ's mother helps me, else I were too weak.
*Char.* Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that must help me:
Impatiently I burn with thy desire;
My heart and hands thou hast at once subdued.
Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so,
Let me thy servant, and not sovereign, be;
'Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

* Be firmly persuaded of it.

*Puc.* I must not yield to any rites of love,
For my profession's sacred from above:
When I have chased all thy foes from hence,
Then will I think upon a recompense.
*Char.* Meantime, look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.
*Reig.* My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.
*Alen.* Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock;
Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech.
*Reig.* Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean?
*Alen.* He may mean more than we poor men do know;
These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues.
*Reig.* My lord, where are you? what devise you on?
Shall we give over Orleans or no?
*Puc.* Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants!
Fight till the last gasp; I will be your guard.
*Char.* What she says, I'll confirm; we'll fight it out.
*Puc.* Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise:
Expect Saint Martin's summer,* halcyon days,
Since I have entered into these wars.
Glory is like a circle in the water,
Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself,
Till, by broad spreading, it disperse to nought.
With Henry's death, the English circle ends;
Dispersed are the glories it included.
Now am I like that proud insulting ship,
Which Cæsar and his fortune bear at once.
*Char.* Was Mahomet inspired with a dove?
Thou with an eagle art inspired then.
Helen, the mother of great Constantine,
Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters,† were like thee.
Bright star of Venus, fallen down on the earth,
How may I reverently worship thee enough?
*Alen.* Leave off delays, and let us raise the siege.
*Reig.* Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours;
Drive them from Orleans, and be immortalized.
*Char.* Presently we'll try:—come let's away about it:
No prophet will I trust, if she prove false. [*Exeunt.*

### *SCENE III.—London. Hill before the Tower.*

*Enter, at the Gates, the Duke of* GLOSTER, *with his Servingmen in blue coats.*

*Glo.* I am come to survey the Tower this day; Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance.‡—Where be these warders, that they wait not here? Open the gates; Gloster it is that calls. [*Servants knock.*
1 Ward. [*within*]. Who is there that knocks so imperiously?
1 *Serv.* It is the noble duke of Gloster.

* Expect prosperity after misfortune.
† The four daughters of Philip mentioned in Acts xxi. 9. ‡ Theft.

2 Ward. [*within*]. Whoe'er he be, you may not be let in.
1 *Serv.* Answer you so the lord protector, villains?
1 Ward. [*within*]. The Lord protect him! so we answer him:
We do no otherwise than we are will'd.
*Glo.* Who will'd you? or whose will stands but mine?
There's none protector of the realm but I.—
Break up* the gates, I'll be your warrantize:
Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

SERVANTS *rush at the Tower gates. Enter, to the gates,* WOODVILLE, *the Lieutenant.*

Wood. [*within*]. What noise is this? what traitors have we here?
*Glo.* Lieutenant, is it you, whose voice I hear?
Open the gates; here's Gloster that would enter.
Wood. [*within*]. Have patience, noble duke: I may not open;
The cardinal of Winchester forbids:
From him I have express commandment,
That thou, nor none of thine, shall be let in.
*Glo.* Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him 'fore me?
Arrogant Winchester? that haughty prelate,
Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?
Thou art no friend to God, or to the king:
Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.
1 *Serv.* Open the gates unto the lord protector;
Or we'll burst them open, if that you come not quickly.

*Enter* WINCHESTER, *attended by a Train of Servants in tawny coats.*

*Win.* How now, ambitious Humphrey? what means this?
*Glo.* Piel'd priest,† dost thou command me to be shut out?
*Win.* I do, thou most usurping proditor,‡
And not protector of the king or realm.
*Glo.* Stand back, thou manifest conspirator;
Thou, that contriv'dst to murder our dead lord;
Thou, that giv'st whores indulgences to sin:
I'll canvas§ thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.
*Win.* Nay, stand thou back, I will not budge a foot;
This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain,
To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt.‖
*Glo.* I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee back:
Thy scarlet robes, as a child's bearing-cloth
I'll use, to carry thee out of this place.
*Win.* Do what thou dar'st; I beard thee to thy face.
*Glo.* What? am I dared, and bearded to my face?—

* Break open. † Alluding to his shaven crown.
‡ Traitor. § Sift.
‖ Cain is said to have slain Abe on an eminence four miles from Damascus.

Draw, men, for all this privileged place;
Blue-coats to tawny-coats. Priest, beware your beard;
[GLOSTER *and his men attack the Bishop.*
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly:
Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal's hat;
In spite of pope or dignities of church,
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.
*Win.* Gloster, thou'lt answer this before the pope.
*Glo.* Winchester goose!* I cry—a rope! a rope!
Now beat them hence. Why do you let them stay?
Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's array.—
Out, tawny coats! out scarlet hypocrite!

*Here a great tumult. In the midst of it, Enter the* MAYOR *of London and Officers.*

*May.* Fie, lords! that you, being supreme magistrates,
Thus contumeliously should break the peace!
*Glo.* Peace, mayor; thou know'st little of my wrongs:
Here's Beaufort, that regards nor God nor king,
Hath here distrain'd the Tower to his use.
*Win.* Here's Gloster, too, a foe to citizens;
One that still motions war, and never peace,
O'ercharging your free purses with large fines;
That seeks to overthrow religion,
Because he is protector of the realm;
And would have armour here out of the Tower,
To crown himself king, and suppress the prince.
*Glo.* I will not answer thee with words, but blows.
[*Here they skirmish again.*
*May.* Nought rests for me, in this tumultuous strife,
But to make open proclamation:—
Come, officer; as loud as e'er thou canst.
Off. *All manner of men, assembled here in arms this day, against God's peace and the king's, we charge and command you, in his highness' name, to repair to your several dwelling-places; and not to wear, handle, or use, any sword, weapon, or dagger, henceforward, upon pain of death.*
*Glo.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:
But we shall meet, and break our minds at large.
*Win.* Gloster, we'll meet; to thy dear cost, be sure:
Thy heart-blood I will have for this day's work.
*May.* I'll call for clubs,† if you will not away:—
This cardinal is more haughty than the devil.
*Glo.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what thou mayst.
*Win.* Abominable Gloster! guard thy head;
For I intend to have it, ere long. [*Exit.*
*May.* See the coast clear'd, and then we will depart.—
Good God! that nobles should such stomachs‡ bear!
I myself fight not once in forty year. [*Exeunt.*

* An allusion to the bishop's licentious manners.
† That is, for peace-officers armed with clubs or staves.
‡ Pride.

## *SCENE IV.—France. Before Orleans.*

*Enter, on the walls, the* MASTER GUNNER *and his* SON.

*M. Gun.* Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans is besieged;
And how the English have the suburbs won.
*Son.* Father, I know; and oft have shot at them,
Howe'er, unfortunate, I miss'd my aim.
*M. Gun.* But now thou shalt not. Be thou ruled by me:
Chief master-gunner am I of this town;
Something I must do to procure me grace:
The prince's espials * have informed me,
How the English, in the suburbs close intrench'd,
Wont, through a secret gate of iron bars
In yonder tower, to overpeer the city;
And thence discover, how, with most advantage,
They may vex us, with shot, or with assault.
To intercept this inconvenience,
A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have placed;
And fully even these three days have I watch'd,
If I could see them. Now, boy, do thou watch,
For I can stay no longer.
If thou spy'st any, run and bring me word;
And thou shalt find me at the governor's. [*Exit.*
*Son.* Father, I warrant you; take you no care;
I'll never trouble you, if I may spy them.

*Enter, in an upper chamber of a tower, the Lords* SALISBURY *and* TALBOT, SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE, SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE, *and others.*

*Sal.* Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd!
How wert thou handled, being prisoner?
Or by what means got'st thou to be released?
Discourse, I pr'ythee, on this turret's top.
*Tal.* The duke of Bedford had a prisoner,
Called—the brave lord Ponton de Santrailles;
For him I was exchanged and ransomed.
But with a baser man of arms by far,
Once, in contempt, they would have barter'd me:
Which I, disdaining, scorn'd; and craved death
Rather than I would be so piled esteem'd.†
In fine, redeem'd I was as I desired.
But, O! the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my heart!
Whom with my bare fists I would execute,
If I now had him brought into my power.
*Sal.* Yet tell'st thou not, how thou wert entertain'd.
*Tal.* With scoffs, and scorns, and contumelious taunts.
In open market-place produced they me,
To be a public spectacle to all;
Here, said they, is the terror of the French,

* Spies. † Stripped of honours.

The scare-crow, that affrights our children so.
Then broke I from the officers that led me;
And with my nails digg'd stones out of the ground,
To hurl at the beholders of my shame.
My grisly countenance made others fly;
None durst come near for fear of sudden death.
In iron walls they deem'd me not secure;
So great fear of my name 'mongst them was spread,
That they supposed, I could rend bars of steel,
And spurn in pieces posts of adamant:
Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had,
That walk'd about me every minute-while;
And if I did but stir out of my bed,
Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

*Sal.* I grieve to hear what torments you endured;
But we will be revenged sufficiently.
Now it is supper-time in Orleans:
Here, through this grate, I can count every one,
And view the Frenchmen how they fortify;
Let us look in, the sight will much delight thee.
Sir Thomas Gargrave, and Sir William Glansdale,
Let me have your express opinions,
Where is best place to make our battery next.

*Gar.* I think at the north gate; for there stand lords.

*Glan.* And I, here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

*Tal.* For aught I see, this city must be famish'd,
Or with light skirmishes enfeebled.

[*Shot from the town.* SALISBURY *and* SIR THO. GARGRAVE *fall.*

*Sal.* O Lord, have mercy on us, wretched sinners!

*Gar.* O Lord, have mercy on me, woeful man!

*Tal.* What chance is this, that suddenly hath cross'd us—
Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak;
How far'st thou, mirror of all martial men?
One of thy eyes, and thy cheek's side struck off!—
Accursed tower! accursed fatal hand,
That have contrived this woeful tragedy!
In thirteen battles Salisbury o'ercame;
Henry the fifth he first train'd to the wars;
Whilst any trump did sound, or drum struck up,
His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field.—
Yet liv'st thou, Salisbury? though thy speech doth fail,
One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace:
The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.—
Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive,
If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!—
Bear hence his body, I will help to bury it.—
Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life?
Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him.
Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort;
Thou shalt not die, whiles——
He beckons with his hand, and smiles on me:
As who should say, *When I am dead and gone,*

*Remember to avenge me on the French.*—
Plantagenet, I will; and Nero-like,
Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn:
Wretched shall France be only in my name.
[*Thunder heard; afterwards an alarum.*
What stir is this? What tumult 's in the heavens?
Whence cometh this alarum, and the noise?

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord, my lord, the French have gather'd head:
The Dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle join'd,—
A holy prophetess, new risen up,—
Is come with a great power to raise the siege.
[SALISBURY *groans.*

*Tal.* Hear, hear, how dying Salisbury doth groan!
It irks his heart, he cannot be revenged.—
Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you:—
Pucelle or puzzle,* dolphin or dogfish,
Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels,
And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.—
Convey me Salisbury into his tent,
And then we'll try what these dastardly Frenchmen dare.
[*Exeunt, bearing out the bodies.*

## *SCENE V.—The same. Before one of the Gates.*

*Alarum. Skirmishings.* TALBOT *pursueth the* DAUPHIN, *and driveth him in: then enter* JOAN LA PUCELLE, *driving English men before her. Then enter* TALBOT.

*Tal.* Where is my strength, my valour, and my force?
Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them;
A woman, clad in armour, chaseth them.

*Enter* LA PUCELLE.

Here, here she comes:——I'll have a bout with thee;
Devil, or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee:
Blood will I draw on thee,† thou art a witch,
And straightway give thy soul to him thou serv'st.

*Puc.* Come, come, 'tis only I that must disgrace thee;
[*They fight.*

*Tal.* Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail?
My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage,
And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,
But I will chástise this high-minded strumpet.

*Puc.* Talbot, farewell; thy hour is not yet come:
I must go victual Orleans forthwith.
O'ertake me, if thou canst; I scorn thy strength.
Go, go, cheer up thy hunger-starved men;

* Dirty wench.

† The superstition of those times taught, that he who could draw a witch's blood was free from her power.

Help Salisbury to make his testament:
This day is ours, as many more shall be.
[PUCELLE *enters the town, with Soldiers.*
*Tal.* My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel;
I know not where I am, nor what I do:
A witch, by fear, not force, like Hannibal,
Drives back our troops, and conquers, as she lists:
So bees with smoke, and doves with noisome stench,
Are from their hives, and houses, driven away.
They call'd us, for our fierceness, English dogs;
Now, like to whelps, we crying run away. [*A short alarum.*
Hark, countrymen! either renew the fight,
Or tear the lions out of England's coat;
Renounce your soil, give sheep in lion's stead:
Sheep run not half so timorous from the wolf,
Or horse, or oxen, from the leopard,
As you fly from your oft-subdued slaves.
[*Alarum. Another skirmish.*
It will not be:—Retire into your trenches:
You all consented unto Salisbury's death,
For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.—
Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,
In spite of us, or aught that we could do.
O, would I were to die with Salisbury!
The shame hereof will make me hide my head.
[*Alarum. Retreat. Exeunt* TALBOT *and his Forces, &c.*

## *SCENE VI.—The same.*

*Enter, on the walls,* PUCELLE, CHARLES, REIGNIER, ALENÇON, *and Soldiers.*

*Puc.* Advance our waving colours on the walls;
Rescued is Orleans from the English wolves:—
Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.
*Char.* Divinest creature, bright Astræa's daughter,
How shall I honour thee for this success?
Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens,
That one day bloom'd, and fruitful were the next.—
France, triumph in thy glorious prophetess!—
Recover'd is the town of Orleans:
More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state
*Reig.* Why ring not out the bells throughout the town?
Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires,
And feast and banquet in the open streets,
To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.
*Alen.* All France will be replete with mirth and joy,
When they shall hear how we have play'd the men.
*Char.* 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day is won;
For which, I will divide my crown with her:
And all the priests and friars in my realm
Shall, in procession, sing her endless praise.

A statelier pyramis to her I'll rear,
Than Rhodope's, or Memphis', ever was:
In memory of her, when she is dead,
Her ashes, in an urn more precious
Than the rich-jewell'd coffer of Darius,
Transported shall be at high festivals
Before the kings and queens of France.
No longer on Saint Dennis will we cry,
But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.
Come in; and let us banquet royally,
After this golden day of victory. [*Flourish. Exeunt*

---

# ACT II.

## *SCENE I.—The same.*

*Enter to the gates, a French* SERGEANT, *and two* SENTINELS.

*Serg.* Sirs, take your places, and be vigilant:
If any noise, or soldier, you perceive,
Near to the walls, by some apparent sign,
Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.*
1 *Sent.* Sergeant, you shall. [*Exit* SERGEANT.] Thus are poor servitors
(When others sleep upon their quiet beds)
Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain, and cold.

*Enter* TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, *and Forces, with scaling-ladders; their drums beating a dead march.*

*Tal.* Lord regent,—and redoubted Burgundy,—
By whose approach, the regions of Artois,
Walloon, and Picardy, are friends to us,—
This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,
Having all day caroused and banqueted:
Embrace we then this opportunity;
As fitting best to quittance their deceit,
Contrived by art, and baleful sorcery.
*Bed.* Coward of France!—how much he wrongs his fame,
Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,
To join with witches, and the help of hell.
*Bur.* Traitors have never other company.—
But what's that Pucelle, whom they term so pure?
*Tal.* A maid, they say.
*Bed.* A maid! and be so martial!
*Bur.* Pray God, she prove not masculine ere long;
If underneath the standard of the French,
She carry armour, as she hath begun.
*Tal.* Well, let them practise and converse with spirits:

* Guard-room.

God is our fortress; in whose conquering name,
Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.
*Bed.* Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.
*Tal.* Not altogether: better far, I guess,
That we do make our entrance several ways;
That, if it chance the one of us do fail,
The other yet may rise against their force.
*Bed.* Agreed; I'll to yon corner.
*Bur.* And I to this.
*Tal.* And here will Talbot mount, or make his grave.—
Now, Salisbury! for thee, and for the right
Of English Henry, shall this night appear
How much in duty I am bound to both.

[*The English scale the walls, crying* St. George! a Talbot! *and all enter by the Town.*

Sent. [*within*]. Arm! arm! the enemy doth make assault!

*The French leap over the walls in their shirts. Enter, several ways,* BASTARD, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, *half ready, and half unready.*

*Alen.* How now, my lords? what, all unready* so?
*Bast.* Unready? ay, and glad we 'scaped so well.
*Reig.* 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,
Hearing alarums at our chamber-doors.
*Alen.* Of all exploits, since first I follow'd arms,
Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprize
More venturous, or desperate than this.
*Bast.* I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.
*Reig.* If not of hell, the heavens, sure, favour him.
*Alen.* Here cometh Charles, I marvel, how he sped.

*Enter* CHARLES, *and* LA PUCELLE.

*Bast.* Tut! holy Joan was his defensive guard.
*Char.* Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame?
Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,
Make us partakers of a little gain,
That now our loss might be ten times so much?
*Puc.* Wherefore is Charles impatient with his friend?
At all times will you have my power alike?
Sleeping or waking, must I still prevail,
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?—
Improvident soldiers! had your watch been good,
This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.
*Char.* Duke of Alençon, this was your default;
That, being captain of the watch to-night,
Did look no better to that weighty charge.
*Alen.* Had all your quarters been as safely kept
As that whereof I had the government,
We had not been thus shamefully surprised.
*Bast.* Mine was secure.

* Undressed.

*Reig.* And so was mine, my lord.
*Char.* And, for myself, most part of all this night,
Within her quarter, and mine own precinct,
I was employ'd in passing to and fro,
About relieving of the sentinels:
Then how, or which way, should they first break in?
*Puc.* Question, my lords, no further of the case,
How, or which way; 'tis sure, they found some place
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.
And now there rests no other shift but this,—
To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispersed,
And lay new platforms* to endamage them.

*Alarum. Enter an English* SOLDIER, *crying,* a Talbot! a Talbot! *They fly, leaving their clothes behind.*

*Sold.* I'll be so bold to take what they have left.
The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword;
For I have loaden me with many spoils,
Using no other weapon but his name. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE II.—Orleans. Within the Town.*

*Enter* TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, *a* CAPTAIN, *and others.*

*Bed.* The day begins to break, and night is fled,
Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.
[*Retreat sounded.*

*Tal.* Bring forth the body of old Salisbury;
And here advance it in the market-place,
The middle centre of this cursed town.—
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul;
For every drop of blood was drawn from him,
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.
And that hereafter ages may behold
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect
A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:
Upon the which, that every one may read,
Shall be engraved the sack of Orleans;
The treacherous manner of his mournful death,
And what a terror he had been to France.
But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,
I muse,† we met not with the Dauphin's grace;
His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc;
Nor any of his false confederates.
*Bed.* 'Tis thought, lord Talbot, when the fight began,
Roused on the sudden from their drowsy beds,
They did, amongst the troops of armed men,
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.
*Bur.* Myself (as far as I could well discern,

* Plans, schemes. † Wonder.

For smoke, and dusky vapours of the night)
Am sure, I scared the Dauphin, and his trull;
When arm in arm they both came swiftly running,
Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves,
That could not live asunder day or night.
After that things are set in order here,
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* All hail, my lords! which of this princely train
Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts
So much applauded through the realm of France?
*Tal.* Here is the Talbot; who would speak with him?
*Mess.* The virtuous lady, countess of Auvergne,
With modesty admiring thy renown,
By me entreats, good lord, thou wouldst vouchsafe
To visit her poor castle where she lies;*
That she may boast, she hath beheld the man
Whose glory fills the world with loud report.
*Bur.* Is it even so? Nay, then, I see, our wars
Will turn into a peaceful comic sport,
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.—
You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.
*Tal.* Ne'er trust me then; for, when a world of men
Could not prevail with all their oratory,
Yet hath a woman's kindness over-ruled:—
And therefore tell her, I return great thanks;
And in submission will attend on her.—
Will not your honours bear me company?
*Bed.* No, truly; it is more than manners will:
And I have heard it said,—Unbidden guests
Are often welcomest when they are gone.
*Tal.* Well, then, alone, since there's no remedy,
I mean to prove this lady's courtesy.
Come hither, captain. [*Whispers.*]—You perceive my mind.
*Capt.* I do, my lord; and mean accordingly. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—Auvergne. Court of the Castle.*

*Enter the* COUNTESS *and her* PORTER.

*Count.* Porter, remember what I gave in charge;
And, when you have done so, bring the keys to me.
*Port.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*
*Count.* The plot is laid: if all things fall out right,
I shall as famous be by this exploit,
As Scythian Thomyris by Cyrus' death.
Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,
And his achievements of no less account:
Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,
To give their censure† of these rare reports.

* Dwells. † For opinion.

*Enter* MESSENGER *and* TALBOT.

*Mess.* Madam,
According as your ladyship desired,
My message craved, so is lord Talbot come.
*Count.* And he is welcome. What! is this the man?
*Mess.* Madam, it is.
*Count.* Is this the scourge of France?
Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad,
That with his name the mothers still their babes?
I see, report is fabulous and false:
I thought I should have seen some Hercules,
A second Hector, for his grim aspéct,
And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.
Alas! this is a child, a silly dwarf:
It cannot be, this weak and writhled * shrimp
Should strike such terror to his enemies.
*Tal.* Madam, I have been bold to trouble you:
But, since your ladyship is not at leisure,
I'll sort some other time to visit you.
*Count.* What means he now?—Go ask him, whither he goes.
*Mess.* Stay, my lord Talbot; for my lady craves
To know the cause of your abrupt departure.
*Tal.* Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,
I go to certify her, Talbot's here.

*Re-enter* PORTER, *with keys.*

*Count.* If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.
*Tal.* Prisoner! to whom?
*Count.* To me, blood-thirsty lord;
And for that cause I train'd thee to me house.
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:
But now the substance shall endure the like;
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,
That hast by tyranny, these many years,
Wasted our country, slain our citizens,
And sent our sons and husbands captivate.
*Tal.* Ha, ha, ha!
*Count.* Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn to moan.
*Tal.* I laugh to see your ladyship so fond,†
To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow
Whereon to practise your severity.
*Count.* Why, art not thou the man?
*Tal.* I am indeed.
*Count.* Then have I substance too.
*Tal.* No, no, I am but shadow of myself:
You are deceived, my substance is not here;
For what you see, is but the smallest part
And least proportion of humanity:
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,

* Wrinkled. † Foolish.

It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,
Your roof were not sufficient to contain it.
*Count.* This is a riddling merchant for the nonce; *
He will be here, and yet he is not here:
How can these contrarieties agree?
*Tal.* That will I show you presently.

*He winds a Horn. Drums heard; then a Peal of Ordnance. The Gates being forced, enter Soldiers.*

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded,
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?
These are his substance, sinews, arms, and strength,
With which he yoketh your rebellious necks;
Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns,
And in a moment makes them desolate.
*Count.* Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:
I find, thou art no less than fame hath bruited,†
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath;
For I am sorry, that with reverence
I did not entertain thee as thou art.
*Tal.* Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor misconstrue
The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake
The outward composition of his body.
What you have done, hath not offended me:
No other satisfaction do I crave,
But only (with your patience) that we may
Taste of your wine, and see what cates you have;
For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.
*Count.* With all my heart: and think me honoured
To feast so great a warrior in my house. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—London. The Temple Garden.*

*Enter the Earls of* SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, *and* WARWICK; RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VERNON, *and another* LAWYER.

*Plan.* Great lords, and gentlemen, what means this silence?
Dare no man answer in a case of truth?
*Suff.* Within the Temple hall we were too loud;
The garden here is more convenient.
*Plan.* Then say at once, if I maintain'd the truth;
Or else, was wrangling Somerset in the error?
*Suff.* 'Faith, I have been a truant in the law;
And never yet could frame my will to it;
And therefore, frame the law unto my will.
*Som.* Judge you, my lord of Warwick, then between us.
*War.* Between two hawks, which flies the higher pitch,
Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth,
Between two blades, which bears the better temper,
Between two horses, which doth bear him best,

* Occasion. † Reported.

Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye,
I have, perhaps, some shallow spirit of judgment:
But in these nice sharp quillets of the law,
Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.
*Plan.* Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance:
The truth appears so naked on my side,
That any purblind eye may find it out.
*Som.* And on my side it is so well apparell'd,
So clear, so shining, and so evident,
That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.
*Plan.* Since you are tongue-tied, and so loath to speak,
In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts:
Let him, that is a true-born gentleman,
And stands upon the honour of his birth,
If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,
From off this brier pluck a white rose with me.
*Som.* Let him that is no coward, nor no flatterer,
But dare maintain the party of the truth,
Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.
*War.* I love no colours;* and, without all colour
Of base insinuating flattery,
I pluck this white rose, with Plantagenet.
*Suff.* I pluck this red rose, with young Somerset;
And say withal, I think he held the right.
*Ver.* Stay, lords, and gentlemen; and pluck no more,
Till you conclude—that he, upon whose side
The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree,
Shall yield the other in the right opinion.
*Som.* Good master Vernon, it is well objected;†
If I have fewest, I subscribe in silence.
*Plan.* And I.
*Ver.* Then, for the truth and plainness of the case,
I pluck this pale, and maiden blossom here,
Giving my verdict on the white rose side.
*Som.* Prick not your finger as you pluck it off;
Lest, bleeding, you do paint the white rose red,
And fall on my side so against your will.
*Ver.* If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,
Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt,
And keep me on the side where still I am.
*Som.* Well, well, come on: Who else?
*Law.* Unless my study and my books be false,
The argument you held, was wrong in you; [*To* SOMERSET.
In sign whereof, I pluck a white rose too.
*Plan.* Now, Somerset, where is your argument?
*Som.* Here, in my scabbard; meditating that,
Shall die your white rose in a bloody red.
*Plan.* Meantime, your cheeks do counterfeit our roses;
For pale they look with fear, as witnessing
The truth on our side.
*Som.* No, Plantagenet,

* Tints and deceits: a play on the word. † Proposed.

'Tis not for fear; but anger,—that thy cheeks
Blush for pure shame, to counterfeit our roses;
And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.
*Plan.* Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset?
*Som.* Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet?
*Plan.* Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain his truth;
Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood.
*Som.* Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding roses,
That shall maintain what I have said is true,
Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.
*Plan.* Now, by this maiden blossom in my hand,
I scorn thee and thy fashion, peevish boy.
*Suff.* Turn not thy scorns this way, Plantagenet.
*Plan.* Proud Poole, I will; and scorn both him and thee.
*Suff.* I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.
*Som.* Away, away, good William De-la-Poole!
We grace the yeoman, by conversing with him.
*War.* Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st him, Somerset;
His grandfather was Lionel, duke of Clarence,
Third son to the third Edward king of England;
Spring crestless yeomen * from so deep a root?
*Plan.* He bears him on the place's privilege,†
Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.
*Som.* By him that made me, I'll maintain my words
On any plot of ground in Christendom:
Was not thy father, Richard, earl of Cambridge,
For treason executed in our late king's days?
And, by his treason, stand'st not thou attainted,
Corrupted, and exempt ‡ from ancient gentry?
His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood;
And, till thou be restored, thou art a yeoman.
*Plan.* My father was attached, not attainted;
Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor;
And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset,
Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.
For your partaker § Poole, and you yourself,
I'll note you in my book of memory,
To scourge you for this apprehension: ‖
Look to it well; and say you are well warn'd.
*Som.* Ay, thou shalt find us ready for thee still:
And know us, by these colours, for thy foes:
For these my friends, in spite of thee, shall wear.
*Plan.* And, by my soul, this pale and angry rose,
As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,
Will I for ever, and my faction, wear;
Until it wither with me to the grave,
Or flourish to the height of my degree.
*Suff.* Go forward, and be choked with thy ambition!
And so farewell, until I meet thee next. [*Exit.*

* *I. e.* those who have no right to arms.
† The Temple, being a religious house, was a sanctuary.
‡ Excluded. § Confederate. ‖ Opinion.

*Som.* Have with thee, Poole.—Farewell, ambitious Richard.
[*Exit.*

*Plan.* How I am braved, and must perforce endure it!
*War.* This blot, that they object against your house,
Shall be wiped out in the next parliament,
Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Gloster:
And, if thou be not then created York,
I will not live to be accounted Warwick.
Meantime, in signal of my love to thee,
Against proud Somerset, and William Poole,
Will I upon thy party wear this rose:
And here I prophesy.—This brawl to-day,
Grown to this faction, in the Temple garden,
Shall send, between the red rose and the white,
A thousand souls to death and deadly night.
*Plan.* Good master Vernon, I am bound to you,
That you on my behalf would pluck a flower.
*Ver.* In your behalf still will I wear the same.
*Law.* And so will I.
*Plan.* Thanks, gentle Sir.
Come let us four to dinner: I dare say,
This quarrel will drink blood another day. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE V.—The same. A room in the Tower.*

*Enter* MORTIMER, *brought in a chair by two Keepers.*

*Mor.* Kind keepers of my weak decaying age,
Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.—
Even like a man new haled from the rack,
So fare my limbs with long imprisonment:
And these grey locks, the pursuivants of death,
Nestor-like aged: in an age of care,
Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer.
These eyes—like lamps whose wasting oil is spent,—
Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent:*
Weak shoulders, overborne with burd'ning grief;
And pithless arms, like to a wither'd vine
That droops his sapless branches to the ground:
Yet are these feet—whose strengthless stay is numb,
Unable to support this lump of clay,—
Swift-winged with desire to get a grave,
As witting I no other comfort have.—
But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?
1 *Keep.* Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will come:
We sent unto the Temple, to his chamber;
And answer was return'd, that he will come.
*Mor.* Enough, my soul shall then be satisfied.—
Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine.
Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign
(Before whose glory I was great in arms),

* End.

This loathsome sequestration have I had;
And even since then hath Richard been obscured,
Deprived of honour and inheritance:
But now, the arbitrator of despairs,
Just death, kind umpire of men's miseries,
With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence;
I would, his troubles likewise were expired,
That so he might recover what was lost.

*Enter* RICHARD PLANTAGENET.

1 *Keep.* My lord, your loving nephew now is come.
*Mor.* Richard Plantagenet, my friend? Is he come?
*Plan.* Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly used,
Your nephew, late-despised Richard, comes.
*Mor.* Direct mine arms, I may embrace his neck,
And in his bosom spend my latter gasp:
O, tell me, when my lips do touch his cheeks,
That I may kindly give one fainting kiss.—
And now declare, sweet stem from York's great stock,
Why didst thou say—of late thou wert despised?
*Plan.* First, lean thine aged back against mine arm;
And, in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease.*
This day, in argument upon a case,
Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and me:
Among which terms he used his lavish tongue,
And did upbraid me with my father's death;
Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,
Else with the like I had requited him:
Therefore, good uncle,—for my father's sake,
In honour of a true Plantagenet,
And for alliance' sake,—declare the cause
My father, earl of Cambridge, lost his head.
*Mor.* That cause, fair nephew, that imprison'd me,
And hath detain'd me all my flow'ring youth,
Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,
Was cursed instrument of his decease,
*Plan.* Discover more at large what cause that was;
For I am ignorant, and cannot guess.
*Mor.* I will; if that my fading breath permit,
And death approach not ere my tale be done.
Henry the fourth, grandfather to this king,
Deposed his nephew Richard; Edward's son,
The first-begotten and the lawful heir
Of Edward king, the third of that descent:
During whose reign, the Percies of the north,
Finding his usurpation most unjust,
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne
The reason moved these warlike lords to this.
Was—for that (young king Richard thus removed,
Leaving no heir begotten of his body)

* Uneasiness, discontent.

I was the next by birth and parentage;
For by my mother I derived am
From Lionel duke of Clarence, the third son
To king Edward the third, whereas he,
From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,
Being but fourth of that heroic line.
But mark; as, in this haughty * great attempt,
They laboured to plant the rightful heir,
I lost my liberty, and they their lives.
Long after this, when Henry the fifth,—
Succeeding his father Bolingbroke,—did reign,
Thy father, earl of Cambridge,—then derived
From famous Edmund Langley, duke of York,—
Marrying my sister, that thy mother was,
Again, in pity of my hard distress,
Levied an army; weening † to redeem,
And have install'd me in the diadem:
But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl,
And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,
In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

*Plan.* Of which, my lord, your honour is the last.

*Mor.* True; and thou seest, that I no issue have;
And that my fainting words do warrant death:
Thou art my heir; the rest, I wish thee gather;
But yet be wary in thy studious care.

*Plan.* Thy grave admonishments prevail with me:
But yet, methinks, my father's execution
Was nothing less than bloody tyranny.

*Mor.* With silence, nephew, be thou politic;
Strong-fixed is the house of Lancaster,
And, like a mountain, not to be removed.
But now thy uncle is removing hence;
As princes do their courts when they are cloy'd
With long continuance in a settled place.

*Plan.* O, uncle, would some part of my young years
Might but redeem the passage of your age!

*Mor.* Thou dost then wrong me; as the slaughterer doth,
Which giveth many wounds, when one will kill.
Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good;
Only, give order for my funeral;
And so farewell; and fair be all thy hopes!
And prosperous be thy life, in peace, and war! [*Dies.*

*Plan.* And peace, no war, befall thy parting soul!
In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage,
And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.—
Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast;
And what I do imagine, let that rest.—
Keepers, convey him hence; and I myself
Will see his burial better than his life.—

[*Exeunt* KEEPERS, *bearing out* MORTIMER.

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,

* High. † Thinking.

Choked with ambition of the meaner sort:—
And, for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,
Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,—
I doubt not, but with honour to redress:
And therefore haste I to the parliament;
Either to be restored to my blood,
Or make my ill* the advantage of my good. [*Exit.*

---

## ACT III.

*SCENE I.—The same. The Parliament-house.*

*Flourish. Enter* KING HENRY, EXETER, GLOSTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, *and* SUFFOLK; *the Bishop of* WINCHESTER, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *and others.* GLOSTER *offers to put up a Bill;*† WINCHESTER *snatches it, and tears it.*

*Win.* Com'st thou with deep premeditated lines,
With written pamphlets studiously devised,
Humphrey of Gloster? if thou canst accuse,
Or aught intend'st to lay unto my charge,
Do it without invention suddenly;
As I with sudden and extemporal speech
Purpose to answer what thou canst object.
*Glo.* Presumptuous priest! this place commands my patience,
Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour'd me.
Think not, although in writing I preferr'd
The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,
That therefore I have forged, or am not able
*Verbatim* to rehearse the method of my pen:
No, prelate; such is thy audacious wickedness,
Thy lewd, pestiferous, and dissentious pranks,
As very infants prattle of thy pride.
Thou art a most pernicious usurer;
Froward by nature, enemy to peace;
Lascivious, wanton, more than well beseems
A man of thy profession, and degree;
And for thy treachery, What's more manifest?
In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,
As well at London-bridge, as at the Tower?
Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted,
The king, thy sovereign, is not quite exempt
From envious malice of thy swelling heart.
*Win.* Gloster, I do defy thee.—Lords, vouchsafe
To give me hearing what I shall reply.
If I were covetous, ambitious, or perverse,
As he will have me, How am I so poor?
Or how haps it, I seek not to advance
Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling:

* Ill-usage. † *I.e.* articles of accusation.

And for dissension, Who preferreth peace
More than I do,—except I be provoked?
No, my good lords, it is not that offends;
It is not that, that hath incensed the duke:
It is, because no one should sway but he;
No one but he, should be about the king;
And that engenders thunder in his breast,
And makes him roar these accusations forth.
But he shall know, I am as good——

*Glo.* As good?
Thou bastard of my grandfather!

*Win.* Ay, lordly sir; For what are you, I pray,
But one imperious in another's throne?

*Glo.* Am I not the protector, saucy priest?

*Win.* And am I not a prelate of the church?

*Glo.* Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps,
And useth it to patronage his theft.

*Win.* Unreverent Gloster!

*Glo.* Thou art reverent
Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

*Win.* This Rome shall remedy.

*War.* Roam thither then.

*Som.* My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

*War.* Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

*Som.* Methinks, my lord should be religious,
And know the office that belongs to such.

*War.* Methinks his lordship should be humbler;
It fitteth not a prelate so to plead.

*Som.* Yes, when his holy state is touch'd so near.

*War.* State holy, or unhallow'd, what of that?
Is not his grace protector to the king?

*Plan.* Plantagenet, I see must hold his tongue;
Lest it be said, *Speak, sirrah, when you should;*
*Must your bold verdict enter talk with lords?*
Else would I have a fling at Winchester. [*Aside.*

*K. Hen.* Uncles of Gloster, and of Winchester,
The special watchmen of our English weal;
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,
To join your hearts in love and amity.
O, what a scandal is it to our crown,
That two such noble peers as ye, should jar!
Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell,
Civil dissension is a viperous worm,
That knaws the bowels of the commonwealth.—
[*A noise within;* Down with the tawny coats!
What tumult 's this?

*War.* An uproar, I dare warrant,
Begun through malice of the bishop's men.
[*A noise again;* Stones! Stones!

*Enter the* MAYOR *of London, attended.*

*May.* O, my good lords,—and virtuous Henry,—
Pity the city of London, pity us!

The bishop and the duke of Gloster's men,
Forbidden late to carry any weapon,
Have fill'd their pockets full of pebble-stones;
And, banding themselves in contrary parts,
Do pelt so fast at one another's pate,
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:
Our windows are broke down in every street,
And we, for fear, compell'd to shut our shops.

*Enter, skirmishing, the Retainers of* GLOSTER *and* WINCHESTER, *with bloody pates.*

*K. Hen.* We charge you, on allegiance to ourself,
To hold your slaughtering hands, and keep the peace.
Pray, uncle Gloster, mitigate this strife.
1 *Serv.* Nay, if we be
Forbidden stones, we'll fall to it with our teeth.
2 *Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as resolute. [*Skirmish again.*
*Glo.* You of my household, leave this peevish broil,
And set this unaccustom'd * fight aside.
1 *Serv.* My lord, we know your grace to be a man
Just and upright; and, for your royal birth,
Inferior to none, but his majesty:
And ere that we will suffer such a prince,
So kind a father of the commonweal,
To be disgraced by an inkhorn mate,†
We, and our wives, and children, all will fight,
And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.
2 *Serv.* Ay, and the very parings of our nails
Shall pitch a field, when we are dead. [*Skirmish again.*
*Glo.* Stay, stay, I say!
And, if you love me, as you say you do,
Let me persuade you to forbear awhile.
*K. Hen.* O, how this discord doth afflict my soul!—
Can you, my lord of Winchester, behold
My sighs and tears, and will not once relent?
Who should be pitiful, if you be not?
Or who should study to prefer a peace,
If holy churchmen take delight in broils?
*War.* My lord protector, yield;—yield Winchester;—
Except you mean, with obstinate repulse,
To slay your sovereign, and destroy the realm.
You see what mischief, and what murder too,
Hath been enacted through your enmity;
Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.
*Win.* He shall submit, or I will never yield.
*Glo.* Compassion on the king commands me stoop;
Or, I would see his heart out, ere the priest
Should ever get that privilege of me.
*War.* Behold, my lord of Winchester, the duke
Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,

* Unseemly, indecent. † Book-worm.

As by his smoothed brows it doth appear:
Why look you still so stern, and tragical?
*Glo.* Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.
*K. Hen.* Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard you preach,
That malice was a great and grievous sin:
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,
But prove a chief offender in the same?
*War.* Sweet king!—The bishop hath a kindly gird.*
For shame, my lord of Winchester! relent;
What, shall a child instruct you what to do?
*Win.* Well, duke of Gloster, I will yield to thee;
Love for thy love, and hand for hand I give.
*Glo.* Ay; but, I fear me, with a hollow heart.—
See here, my friends, and loving countrymen;
This token serveth for a flag of truce,
Betwixt ourselves, and all our followers:
So help me God, as I dissemble not!
*Win.* So help me God, as I intend it not! [*Aside.*
*K. Hen.* O loving uncle, kind duke of Gloster,
How joyful am I made by this contract!—
Away, my masters! trouble us no more;
But join in friendship, as your lords have done.
1 *Serv.* Content; I'll to the surgeon's.
2 *Serv.* And so will I.
3 *Serv.* And I will see what physic the tavern affords.
[*Exeunt* SERVANTS, MAYOR, *&c.*
*War.* Accept this scroll, most gracious sovereign;
Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet,
We do exhibit to your majesty.
*Glo.* Well urged, my lord of Warwick;—for, sweet prince
An if your grace mark every circumstance,
You have great reason to do Richard right:
Especially, for those occasions
At Eltham-place I told your majesty.
*K. Hen.* And those occasions, uncle, were of force:
Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is,
That Richard be restored to his blood.
*War.* Let Richard be restored to his blood;
So shall his father's wrongs be recompensed.
*Win.* As will the rest, so willeth Winchester.
*K. Hen.* If Richard will be true, not that alone,
But all the whole inheritance I give,
That doth belong unto the house of York,
From whence you spring by lineal descent.
*Plan.* Thy humble servant vows obedience,
And humble service, till the point of death.
*K. Hen.* Stoop then, and set your knee against my foot:
And, in reguerdon† of that duty done,
I girt thee with the valiant sword of York:
Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet;
And rise created princely duke of York.

* A gentle reproof. † Recompense.

*Plan.* And so thrive Richard, as thy foes may fall!
And as my duty springs, so perish they
That grudge one thought against your majesty!
*All.* Welcome, high prince, the mighty duke of York!
*Som.* Perish, base prince, ignoble duke of York! [*Aside.*
*Glo.* Now will it best avail your majesty,
To cross the seas, and to be crown'd in France:
The presence of a king engenders love
Amongst his subjects, and his loyal friends;
As it disanimates his enemies.
*K. Hen.* When Gloster says the word, king Henry goes;
For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.
*Glo.* Your ships already are in readiness.
[*Exeunt all but* EXETER.
*Exe.* Ay, we may march in England, or in France,
Not seeing what is likely to ensue:
This late dissension, grown betwixt the peers,
Burns under feigned ashes of forged love,
And will at last break out into a flame:
As fester'd members rot but by degrees,
Till bones, and flesh, and sinews, fall away,
So will this base and envious discord breed.
And now I fear that fatal prophecy,
Which, in the time of Henry, named the fifth,
Was in the mouth of every sucking babe,—
That Henry, born at Monmouth, should win all;
And Henry, born at Windsor, should lose all:
Which is so plain, that Exeter doth wish
His days may finish ere that hapless time. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE II.—France. Before Roüen.*

*Enter* LA PUCELLE *disguised, and* SOLDIERS *dressed like Countrymen, with sacks upon their backs.*

*Puc.* These are the city gates, the gates of Roüen,
Through which our policy must make a breach:
Take heed, be wary how you place your words;
Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men,
That come to gather money for their corn.
If we have entrance (as, I hope, we shall),
And that we find the slothful watch but weak,
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter them.
1 *Sold.* Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city,
And we be lords and rulers over Roüen;
Therefore we'll knock. [*Knocks.*
*Guard* [within]. *Qui est là?*
Puc. *Paisans, pauvres gens de France:*
Poor market-folks, that come to sell their corn.
*Guard.* Enter, go in; the market-bell is wrung.
[*Opens the gates.*

*Puc.* Now, Roüen, I'll shake thy bulwarks to the ground.
[PUCELLE, *&c. enter the city.*

*Enter* CHARLES, BASTARD *of Orleans*, ALENÇON, *and Forces.*

*Char.* Saint Dennis bless this happy stratagem!
And once again we'll sleep secure in Roüen.
*Bast.* Here enter'd Pucelle, and her practisants;*
Now she is there, how will she specify
Where is the best and safest passage in?
*Alen.* By thrusting out a torch from yonder tower;
Which, once discern'd, shows, that her meaning is,—
No way to that,† for weakness, which she enter'd.

*Enter* LA PUCELLE *on a Battlement; holding out a torch burning.*

*Puc.* Behold, this is the happy wedding torch,
That joineth Roüen unto her countrymen:
But burning fatal to the Talbotites.
*Bast.* See, noble Charles! the beacon of our friend,
The burning torch in yonder turret stands.
*Char.* Now shine it like a comet of revenge,
A prophet to the fall of all our foes!
*Alen.* Defer no time, Delays have dangerous ends;
Enter, and cry—*The Dauphin!*—presently,
And then do execution on the watch. [*They enter.*

*Alarums. Enter* TALBOT, *and certain English.*

*Tal.* France, thou shalt rue this treason with thy tears,
If Talbot but survive thy treachery.—
Pucelle, that witch, that damned sorceress,
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,
That hardly we escaped the pride‡ of France.
[*Exeunt to the town.*

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter from the town,* BEDFORD *brought in sick, in a chair, with* TALBOT, BURGUNDY, *and the English Forces. Then, enter on the walls,* LA PUCELLE, CHARLES, BASTARD, ALENÇON, *and others.*

*Puc.* Good morrow, gallants! want ye corn for bread?
I think, the duke of Burgundy will fast,
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:
'Twas full of darnel; Do you like the taste?
*Bur.* Scoff on, vile fiend, and shameless courtezan!
I trust, ere long, to choke thee with thine own,
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.
*Char.* Your grace may starve, perhaps, before that time.
*Bed.* O, let no words, but deeds, revenge this treason!

* Confederates in stratagem. † Equal to that.
‡ Haughty power.

*Puc.* What will you do, good grey-beard? break a lance,
And run a tilt at death within a chair?
*Tal.* Foul fiend of France, and hag of all despite,
Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!
Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,
And twit with cowardice a man half dead?
Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,
Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.
*Puc.* Are you so hot, Sir?—Yet, Pucelle, hold thy peace;
If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.—
[TALBOT, *and the rest, consult together.*
God speed the parliament! who shall be the speaker?
*Tal.* Dare ye come forth, and meet us in the field?
*Puc.* Belike, your lordship takes us then for fools,
To try if that our own be ours, or no.
*Tal.* I speak not to that railing Hecate,
But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest;
Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?
*Alen.* Signior, no.
*Tal.* Signior, hang!—base muleteers of France!
Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls,
And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.
*Puc.* Captains, away: let's get us from the walls;
For Talbot means no goodness, by his looks.—
God be wi' you, my lord! we came, Sir, but to tell you
That we are here. [*Exeunt* LA PUCELLE, *&c. from the walls.*
*Tal.* And there will we be too, ere it be long,
Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!—
Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house
(Prick'd on by public wrongs, sustain'd in France),
Either to get the town again, or die:
And I,—as sure as English Henry lives,
And as his father here was conqueror;
And sure as in this late-betrayed town
Great Cœur-de-Lion's heart was buried
So sure I swear, to get the town, or die.
*Bur.* My vows are equal partners with thy vows.
*Tal.* But, ere we go, regard this dying prince,
The valiant duke of Bedford:—Come, my lord,
We will bestow you in some better place,
Fitter for sickness, and for crazy age.
*Bed.* Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me:
Here will I sit before the walls of Roüen,
And will be partner of your weal, or woe.
*Bur.* Courageous Bedford, let us now persuade you.
*Bed.* Not to be gone from hence; for once I read,
That stout Pendragon, in his litter, sick,
Came to the field, and vanquished his foes:
Methinks, I should revive the soldiers' hearts,
Because I ever found them as myself.
*Tal.* Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!—
Then be it so:—Heavens keep old Bedford safe!—
And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,

But gather we our forces out of hand,
And set upon our boasting enemy.
[*Exeunt* BURGUNDY, TALBOT, *and Forces, leaving* BEDFORD, *and others.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* SIR JOHN FASTOLFE, *and a* CAPTAIN.

*Cap.* Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste?
*Fast.* Whither away? to save myself by flight;
We are like to have the overthrow again.
*Cap.* What! will you fly, and leave lord Talbot?
*Fast.* Ay,
All the Talbots in the world, to save my life. [*Exit.*
*Cap.* Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee! [*Exit.*

*Retreat. Excursions. Enter from the Town,* LA PUCELLE, ALENÇON, CHARLES, *&c., and Exeunt, flying.*

*Bed.* Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven please;
For I have seen our enemies' overthrow.
What is the trust or strength of foolish man?
They, that of late were daring with their scoffs,
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.
[*Dies, and is carried off in his chair.*

*Alarum. Enter* TALBOT, BURGUNDY, *and others.*

*Tal.* Lost, and recover'd in a day again!
This is a double honour, Burgundy:
Let heavens have glory for this victory!
*Bur.* Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy
Enshrines thee in his heart; and there erects
Thy noble deeds, as valour's monument.
*Tal.* Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now?
I think, her old familiar is asleep:
Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his gleeks?*
What, all a-mort?† Roüen hangs her head for grief,
That such a valiant company are fled.
Now will we take some order‡ in the town,
Placing therein some expert officers;
And then depart to Paris, to the king;
For there young Harry, with his nobles, lies.
*Bur.* What wills lord Talbot, pleaseth Burgundy.
*Tal.* But yet, before we go, let's not forget
The noble duke of Bedford, late deceased,
But see his exequies§ fulfill'd in Roüen;
A braver soldier never couched lance,
A gentler heart did never sway in court:
But kings and mightiest potentates must die;
For that's the end of human misery. [*Exeunt.*

* Scoffs. † Dispirited.
‡ Make arrangements. § Obsequies.

*SCENE III.—The same. The Plains near the City.*

*Enter* CHARLES, *the* BASTARD, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE, *and Forces.*

*Puc.* Dismay not, princes, at this accident,
Nor grieve that Roüen is so recovered:
Care is no cure, but rather corrosive,
For things that are not to be remedied.
Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while,
And like a peacock sweep along his tail;
We'll pull his plumes, and take away his train,
If Dauphin, and the rest, will be but ruled.
*Char.* We have been guided by thee hitherto,
And of thy cunning had no diffidence;
One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.
*Bast.* Search out thy wit for secret policies,
And we will make thee famous through the world.
*Alen.* We'll set thy statue in some holy place,
And have thee reverenced like a blessed saint;
Employ thee then, sweet virgin, for our good.
*Puc.* Then thus it must be; this doth Joan devise:
By fair persuasions, mix'd with sugar'd words,
We will entice the duke of Burgundy
To leave the Talbot, and to follow us.
*Char.* Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,
France were no place for Henry's warriors;
Nor should that nation boast it so with us,
But be extirped* from our provinces.
*Alen.* For ever should they be expulsed from France,
And not have title to an earldom here.
*Puc.* Your honours shall perceive how I will work,
To bring this matter to the wished end. [*Drums heard.*
Hark! by the sound of drum, you may perceive
Their powers are marching unto Paris-ward.

*An English March. Enter, and pass over at a distance,* TALBOT *and his Forces.*

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread:
And all the troops of English after him.

*A French March. Enter the Duke of* BURGUNDY, *and Forces.*

Now, in the rearward, comes the duke, and his;
Fortune, in favour, make him lag behind.
Summon a parley, we will talk with him. [*A parley sounded.*
*Char.* A parley with the duke of Burgundy.
*Bur.* Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?
*Puc.* The princely Charles of France, thy countryman.
*Bur.* What say'st thou, Charles? for I am marching hence.
*Char.* Speak, Pucelle; and enchant him with thy words.

* Extirpated.

*Puc.* Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France!
Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.
*Bur.* Speak on; but be not over-tedious.
*Puc.* Look on thy country, look on fertile France,
And see the cities and the towns defaced
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe!
As looks the mother on her lowly babe,
When death doth close his tender dying eyes,
See, see, the pining malady of France;
Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds,
Which thou thyself hast given her woeful breast!
O, turn thy edged sword another way;
Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help!
One drop of blood, drawn from thy country's bosom,
Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign gore;
Return thee, therefore, with a flood of tears,
And wash away thy country's stained spots!
*Bur.* Either she hath bewitch'd me with her words,
Or nature makes me suddenly relent.
*Puc.* Besides, all French and France exclaims on thee,
Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.
Who join'st thou with, but with a lordly nation,
That will not trust thee, but for profit's sake?
When Talbot hath set footing once in France,
And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill,
Who then, but English Henry, will be lord,
And thou be thrust out, like a fugitive?
Call we to mind,—and mark but this, for proof;—
Was not the duke of Orleans thy foe?
And was he not in England prisoner?
But, when they heard he was thine enemy,
They set him free, without his ransom paid,
In spite of Burgundy, and all his friends.
See then! thou fight'st against thy countrymen,
And join'st with them will be thy slaughtermen;
Come, come, return; return, thou wand'ring lord;
Charles, and the rest, will take thee in their arms.
*Bur.* I am vanquished; these haughty* words of hers
Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,
And made me almost yield upon my knees.—
Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen!
And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:
My forces and my power of men are yours;—
So, farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.
*Puc.* Done like a Frenchman; turn, and turn again!
*Char.* Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship makes us fresh.
*Bast.* And doth beget new courage in our breasts.
*Alen.* Pucelle hath bravely play'd her part in this,
And doth deserve a coronet of gold.
*Char.* Now let us on, my lords, and join our powers;
And seek how we may prejudice the foe. [*Exeunt.*

* Elevated.

*SCENE IV.—Paris. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, *and other Lords*, VERNON, BASSET, *&c. To them* TALBOT, *and some of his Officers.*

*Tal.* My gracious prince,—and honourable peers,—
Hearing of your arrival in this realm,
I have a while given truce unto my wars,
To do my duty to my sovereign:
In sign whereof, this arm,—that hath reclaim'd
To your obedience fifty fortresses,
Twelve cities, and seven walled towns of strength,
Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,—
Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet;
And, with submissive loyalty of heart,
Ascribes the glory of his conquest got,
First to my God, and next unto your grace.
*K. Hen.* Is this the lord Talbot, uncle Gloster,
That hath so long been resident in France?
*Glo.* Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege.
*K. Hen.* Welcome, brave captain, and victorious lord!
When I was young (as yet I am not old),
I do remember how my father said,
A stouter champion never handled sword.
Long since we were resolved* of your truth,
Your faithful service, and your toil in war;
Yet never have you tasted our reward,
Or been reguerdon'd† with so much as thanks,
Because till now we never saw your face:
Therefore stand up; and, for these good deserts,
We here create you earl of Shrewsbury;
And in our coronation take your place.
[*Exeunt* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, TALBOT, *and Nobles.*
*Ver.* Now, Sir, to you, that were so hot at sea,
Disgracing of these colours, that I wear
In honour of my noble lord of York,—
Dar'st thou maintain the former words thou spak'st?
*Bas.* Yes, Sir; as well as you dare patronage
The envious barking of your saucy tongue
Against my lord the duke of Somerset.
*Ver.* Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.
*Bas.* Why, what is he? as good a man as York.
*Ver.* Hark ye; not so: in witness, take ye that. [*Strikes him.*
*Bas.* Villain, thou know'st, the law of arms is such,
That, whoso draws a sword, 'tis present death;
Or else this blow should broach thy dearest blood.
But I'll unto his majesty, and crave
I may have liberty to 'venge this wrong;
When thou shalt see, I'll meet thee to thy cost.
*Ver.* Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as you;
And, after, meet you sooner than you would. [*Exeunt.*

* Confirmed in opinion. † Rewarded.

# ACT IV.

## *SCENE I.—The same. A Room of State.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, EXETER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WINCHESTER, WARWICK, TALBOT, *the* GOVERNOR *of Paris, and others.*

*Glo.* Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head.
*Win.* God save king Henry, of that name the sixth!
*Glo.* Now, Governor of Paris, take your oath,—
[GOVERNOR *kneels.*
That you elect no other king but him:
Esteem none friends, but such as are his friends;
And none your foes, but such as shall pretend*
Malicious practices against his state:
This shall ye do, so help you righteous God!
[*Exeunt* GOVERNOR *and his Train.*

*Enter* SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.

*Fast.* My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais,
To haste unto your coronation,
A letter was deliver'd to my hands,
Writ to your grace from the duke of Burgundy.
*Tal.* Shame to the duke of Burgundy, and thee!
I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next,
To tear the garter from thy craven's leg [*Plucking it off.*
(Which I have done), because unworthily
Thou wast installed in that high degree.—
Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:
This dastard, at the battle of Patay,
When but in all I was six thousand strong,
And that the French were almost ten to one,—
Before we met, or that a stroke was given,
Like to a trusty squire, did run away;
In which assault we lost twelve hundred men;
Myself and divers gentlemen beside,
Were there surprised, and taken prisoners.
Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss;
Or whether that such cowards ought to wear
This ornament of knighthood, yea or no.
*Glo.* To say the truth, this fact was infamous,
And ill beseeming any common man;
Much more a knight, a captain, and a leader.
*Tal.* When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,
Knights of the garter were of noble birth;
Valiant, and virtuous, full of haughty courage,
Such as were grown to credit by the wars;
Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress,
But always resolute in most extremes.†
He then, that is not furnish'd in this sort,
Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight,

* Design. † Greatest extremities.

Profaning this most honourable order;
And should (if I were worthy to be judge)
Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain
That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.
*K. Hen.* Stain to thy countrymen! thou hear'st thy doom:
Be packing therefore, thou that wast a knight;
Henceforth we banish thee, on pain of death.— [*Exit* FASTOLFE.
And now, my lord protector, view the letter
Sent from our uncle, duke of Burgundy.
*Glo.* What means his grace, that he hath changed his style?
[*Viewing the superscription.*
No more but, plain and bluntly,—*To the King?*
Hath he forgot, he is his sovereign?
Or doth this churlish superscription
Pretend* some alteration in good will?
What's here?—*I have, upon especial cause,*— [Reads.
*Moved with compassion of my country's wreck,*
*Together with the pitiful complaints*
*Of such as your oppression feeds upon,*—
*Forsaken your pernicious faction,*
*And join'd with Charles, the rightful king of France.*
O monstrous treachery! Can this be so;
That in alliance, amity, and oaths,
There should be found such false dissembling guile?
*K. Hen.* What! doth my uncle Burgundy revolt?
*Glo.* He doth, my lord; and is become your foe.
*K. Hen.* Is that the worst this letter doth contain?
*Glo.* It is the worst, and all, my lord, he writes.
*K. Hen.* Why then, lord Talbot there shall talk with him,
And give him chastisement for this abuse:—
My lord, how say you? are not you content?
*Tal.* Content, my liege? Yes; but that I am prevented,†
I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd.
*K. Hen.* Then gather strength, and march unto him straight:
Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason;
And what offence it is to flout his friends.
*Tal.* I go, my lord; in heart desiring still,
You may behold confusion of your foes. [*Exit.*

*Enter* VERNON *and* BASSET.

*Ver.* Grant me the combat, gracious sovereign!
*Bas.* And me, my lord, grant me the combat too!
*York.* This is my servant; Hear him, noble prince!
*Som.* And this is mine; sweet Henry, favour him!
*K. Hen.* Be patient, lords; and give them leave to speak.—
Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim;
And wherefore crave you combat? or with whom?
*Ver.* With him, my lord; for he hath done me wrong.
*Bas.* And I with him; for he hath done me wrong.
*K. Hen.* What is that wrong, whereof you both complain?
First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

* Indicate. † Anticipated.

*Bas.* Crossing the sea from England into France,
This fellow here, with envious carping tongue,
Upbraided me about the rose I wear;
Saying—the sanguine colour of the leaves
Did represent my master's blushing cheeks,
When stubbornly he did repugn* the truth,
About a certain question in the law,
Argued betwixt the duke of York and him;
With other vile and ignominious terms:
In confutation of which rude reproach,
And in defence of my lord's worthiness,
I crave the benefit of law of arms.

*Ver.* And that is my petition, noble lord:
For though he seem, with forged quaint conceit,
To set a gloss upon his bold intent,
Yet know, my lord, I was provoked by him;
And he first took exceptions at this badge,
Pronouncing—that the paleness of this flower
Bewray'd† the faintness of my master's heart.

*York.* Will not this malice, Somerset, be left?

*Som.* Your private grudge, my lord of York, will out,
Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it.

*K. Hen.* Good lord! what madness rules in brain-sick men;
When for so slight and frivolous a cause,
Such factious emulations shall arise!—
Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,
Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace.

*York.* Let this dissension first be tried by fight,
And then your highness shall command a peace.

*Som.* The quarrel toucheth none but us alone;
Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then.

*York.* There is my pledge; accept it, Somerset.

*Ver.* Nay, let it rest where it began at first.

*Bas.* Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.

*Glo.* Confirm it so? confounded be your strife!
And perish ye, with your audacious prate!
Presumptuous vassals! are you not ashamed,
With this immodest clamorous outrage
To trouble and disturb the king and us?
And you, my lords,—methinks, you do not well,
To bear with their perverse objections;
Much less, to take occasion from their mouths
To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves;
Let me persuade you take a better course.

*Exe.* It grieves his highness;—Good my lords, be friends.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, you that would be combatants;
Henceforth, I charge you, as you love our favour,
Quite to forget this quarrel, and the cause.—
And you, my lords,—remember where we are;
In France amongst a fickle wavering nation:
If they perceive dissension in our looks,

* Resist. † Betrayed.

And that within ourselves we disagree,
How will their grudging stomachs be provoked
To wilful disobedience, and rebel?
Beside, What infamy will there arise,
When foreign princes shall be certified,
That, for a toy, a thing of no regard,
King Henry's peers, and chief nobility,
Destroy'd themselves, and lost the realm of France?
O, think upon the conquest of my father,
My tender years; and let us not forego
That for a trifle, that was bought with blood!
Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.
I see no reason, if I wear this rose, [*Putting on a red rose.*
That any one should therefore be suspicious
I more incline to Somerset, than York:
Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both:
As well they may upbraid me with my crown,
Because, forsooth, the king of Scots is crown'd.
But your discretions better can persuade,
Than I am able to instruct or teach:
And therefore, as we hither came in peace,
So let us still continue peace and love.—
Cousin of York, we institute your grace
To be our regent in these parts of France:—
And good my lord of Somerset, unite
Your troops of horsemen with his bands of foot;—
And, like true subjects, sons of your progenitors,
Go cheerfully together, and digest
Your angry choler on your enemies.
Ourself, my lord protector, and the rest,
After some respite, will return to Calais;
From thence to England; where I hope ere long
To be presented, by your victories,
With Charles, Alençon, and that traitorous rout.
[*Flourish. Exeunt* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, SOMERSET, WINCHESTER, SUFFOLK, *and* BASSET.

*War.* My lord of York, I promise you, the king
Prettily, methought, did play the orator.

*York.* And so he did; but yet I like it not,
In that he wears the badge of Somerset.

*War.* Tush! that was but his fancy, blame him not;
I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no harm.

*York.* And, if I wist, he did,—But let it rest;
Other affairs must now be managed.
[*Exeunt* YORK, WARWICK, *and* VERNON.

*Exe.* Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress thy voice:
For, had the passions of thy heart burst out,
I fear we should have seen decipher'd there
More rancorous spite, more furious raging broils,
Than yet can be imagined or supposed.
But howsoe'er, no simple man that sees
This jarring discord of nobility,
This shouldering of each other in the court,

This factious bandying of their favourites,
But that it doth presage some ill event.
'Tis much,* when sceptres are in children's hands;
But more, when envy† breeds unkind‡ division;
There comes the ruin, there begins confusion. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE II.—France. Before Bourdeaux.*

*Enter* TALBOT, *with his Forces.*

*Tal.* Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trumpeter,
Summon their general unto the wall.

*Trumpet sounds a Parley. Enter, on the walls, the* GENERAL *of the French Forces, and others.*

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,
Servant in arms to Harry king of England;
And thus he would,—Open your city gates,
Be humble to us; call my sovereign yours,
And do him homage as obedient subjects,
And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power:
But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,
You tempt the fury of my three attendants,
Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing fire;
Who, in a moment, even with the earth
Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,
If you forsake the offer of their love.

*Gen.* Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,
Our nation's terror, and their bloody scourge!
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.
On us thou canst not enter, but by death:
For, I protest, we are well fortified,
And strong enough to issue out and fight:
If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,
Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee:
On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd,
To wall thee from the liberty of flight;
And no way canst thou turn thee for redress,
But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,
And pale destruction meets thee in the face.
Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament,
To rive§ their dangerous artillery
Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot.
*Lo*! there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant man,
Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit:
This is the latest glory of thy praise,
That I, thy enemy, due‖ thee withal;
For ere the glass, that now begins to run,
Finish the process of his sandy hour,
These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,

* 'Tis strange, or wonderful. † Enmity.
‡ Unnatural. § Fire. ‖ Endue.

Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale, and dead. [*Drum afar off.*
Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum, a warning bell,
Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul;
And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.
[*Exeunt* GENERAL, *&c. from the walls.*

*Tal.* He fables not, I hear the enemy;—
Out, some light horsemen, and peruse their wings.—
O, negligent and heedless discipline!
How are we park'd, and bounded in a pale;
A little herd of England's timorous deer,
Mazed with a yelping kennel of French curs!
If we be English deer, be then in blood:*
Not rascal-like,† to fall down with a pinch;
But rather moody-mad, and desperate stags,
Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel,
And make the cowards stand aloof at bay:
Sell every man his life as dear as mine,
And they shall find dear deer of us, my friends.—
God, and Saint George! Talbot, and England's right!
Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight! [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—Plains in Gascony.*

*Enter* YORK, *with Forces; to him a* MESSENGER.

*York.* Are not the speedy scouts return'd again,
That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin?
*Mess.* They are return'd, my lord; and give it out,
That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his power,
To fight with Talbot: As he march'd along,
By your espials‡ were discovered
Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led;
Which join'd with him, and made their march for Bourdeaux.
*York.* A plague upon that villain Somerset,
That thus delays my promised supply
Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege.
Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid;
And I am lowted§ by a traitor villain,
And cannot help the noble chevalier:
God comfort him in this necessity!
If he miscarry, farewell wars in France.

*Enter* SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

*Lucy.* Thou princely leader of our English strength,
Never so needful on the earth of France,
Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot;
Who now is girdled with a waist of iron,
And hemm'd about with grim destruction:
To Bourdeaux, warlike duke! to Bourdeaux, York!
Else, farewell Talbot, France, and England's honour.

* In high spirits. † Lean deer. ‡ Spies.
§ Treated with contempt.

*York.* O God! that Somerset—who in proud heart
Doth stop my cornets—were in Talbot's place!
So should we save a valiant gentleman,
By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.
Mad ire, and wrathful fury, makes me weep,
That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.
*Lucy.* O, send some succour to the distress'd lord!
*York.* He dies, we lose; I break my warlike word:
We mourn, France smiles; we lose, they daily get;
All 'long of this vile traitor Somerset.
*Lucy.* Then, God take mercy on brave Talbot's soul!
And on his son, young John; whom two hours since,
I met in travel toward his warlike father!
This seven years did not Talbot see his son;
And now they meet where both their lives are done.*
*York.* Alas! what joy shall noble Talbot have,
To bid his young son welcome to his grave?
Away! vexation almost stops my breath,
That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death.—
Lucy, farewell: no more my fortune can,
But curse the cause I cannot aid the man.—
Maine, Blois, Poictiers, and Tours, are won away,
'Long all of Somerset, and his delay. [*Exit.*
*Lucy.* Thus, while the vulture† of sedition
Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,
Sleeping neglection doth betray to loss
The conquest of our scarce-cold conqueror,
That ever-living man of memory,
Henry the fifth:—Whiles they each other cross,
Lives, honours, lands, and all, hurry to loss. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE IV.—Other Plains of Gascony.*

*Enter* SOMERSET, *with his Forces; an* OFFICER *of* TALBOT'S *with him.*

*Som.* It is too late; I cannot send them now;
This expedition was by York, and Talbot,
Too rashly plotted; all our general force
Might with a sally of the very town
Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot
Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour,
By this unheedful, desperate, wild adventure:
York set him on to fight, and die in shame,
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the name.
*Offi.* Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me
Set from our o'er-match'd forces forth for aid.

*Enter* SIR WILLIAM LUCY.

*Som.* How now, Sir William? whither were you sent?
*Lucy.* Whither, my lord? from bought and sold lord Talbot;

* Expended. † Alluding to the tale of Prometheus.

Who, ring'd about with bold adversity,
Cries out for noble York and Somerset,
To beat assailing death from his weak legions.
And whiles the honourable captain there
Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,
And, in advantage ling'ring, looks for rescue,
You, his false hopes, the trust of England's honour,
Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.
Let not your private discord keep away
The levied succours that should lend him aid,
While he, renowned noble gentleman,
Yields up his life unto a world of odds:
Orleans the Bastard, Charles, and Burgundy,
Alençon, Reignier, compass him about,
And Talbot perisheth by your default.

*Som.* York set him on, York should have sent him aid.

*Lucy.* And York as fast upon your grace exclaims;
Swearing that you withhold his levied host,
Collected for this expedition.

*Som.* York lies; he might have sent and had the horse:
I owe him little duty, and less love;
And take foul scorn, to fawn on him by sending.

*Lucy.* The fraud of England, not the force of France,
Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot:
Never to England shall he bear his life;
But dies, betray'd to fortune by your strife.

*Som.* Come, go; I will despatch the horsemen straight:
Within six hours they will be at his aid.

*Lucy.* Too late comes rescue: he is ta'en or slain:
For fly he could not, if he would have fled;
And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

*Som.* If he be dead, brave Talbot then adieu!

*Lucy.* His fame lives in the world, his shame in you.

[*Exeunt.*

*SCENE V.—The English Camp, near Bourdeaux.*

*Enter* TALBOT *and* JOHN *his Son.*

*Tal.* O young John Talbot! I did send for thee,
To tutor thee in stratagems of war;
That Talbot's name might be in thee revived,
When sapless age, and weak unable limbs,
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.
But,—O malignant and ill-boding stars!
Now thou art come unto a feast of death,
A terrible and unavoided* danger:
Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest horse;
And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape
By sudden flight: come, dally not, be gone.

*John.* Is my name Talbot? and am I your son?
And shall I fly? O, if you love my mother,

* Unavoidable.

Dishonour not her honourable name,
To make a bastard and a slave of me:
The world will say—He is not Talbot's blood,
That basely fled, when noble Talbot stood.

*Tal.* Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.

*John.* He, that flies so, will ne'er return again.

*Tal.* If we both stay, we both are sure to die.

*John.* Then let me stay; and, father, do you fly:
Your loss is great, so your regard* should be;
My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.
Upon my death the French can little boast;
In yours they will, in you all hopes are lost.
Flight cannot stain the honour you have won;
But mine it will, that no exploit have done:
You fled for vantage, every one will swear;
But, if I bow, they'll say—it was for fear.
There is no hope that ever I will stay,
If the first hour, I shrink, and run away.
Here, on my knee, I beg mortality,
Rather than life preserved with infamy.

*Tal.* Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one tomb?

*John.* Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's womb.

*Tal.* Upon my blessing I command thee go.

*John.* To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

*Tal.* Part of thy father may be saved in thee.

*John.* No part of him, but will be shame in me.

*Tal.* Thou never hadst renown, nor canst not lose it.

*John.* Yes, your renowned name; Shall flight abuse it?

*Tal.* Thy father's charge shall clear thee from that stain.

*John.* You cannot witness for me, being slain.
If death be so apparent, then both fly.

*Tal.* And leave my followers here, to fight and die?
My age was never tainted with such shame.

*John.* And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?
No more can I be sever'd from your side,
Than can yourself yourself in twain divide:
Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;
For live I will not, if my father die.

*Tal.* Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,
Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.
Come, side by side together live and die;
And soul with soul from France to heaven fly. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VI.—A Field of Battle.*

*Alarum: Excursions, wherein* TALBOT'S *Son is hemmed about, and* TALBOT *rescues him.*

*Tal.* Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight:
The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,
And left us to the rage of France his sword.

* Your care of your own safety.

Where is John Talbot?—pause, and take thy breath;
I gave thee life, and rescued thee from death.
*John.* O twice my father! twice am I thy son:
The life, thou gav'st me first, was lost and done;
Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,
To my determined* time thou gav'st new date.
*Tal.* When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck fire,
It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire
Of bold-faced victory. Then leaden age,
Quicken'd with youthful spleen, and warlike rage,
Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,
And from the pride of Gallia rescued thee.
The ireful bastard Orleans—that drew blood
From thee, my boy; and had the maidenhood
Of thy first fight—I soon encountered;
And, interchanging blows, I quickly shed
Some of his bastard blood; and, in disgrace,
Bespoke him thus: *Contaminated, base,*
*And misbegotten blood I spill of thine,*
*Mean, and right poor; for that pure blood of mine,*
*Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy:—*
Here, purposing the bastard to destroy,
Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's care;
Art not thou weary, John? How dost thou fare?
Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,
Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?
Fly, to revenge my death, when I am dead;
The help of one stands me in little stead.
O, too much folly is it, well I wot,
To hazard all our lives in one small boat.
If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,
To-morrow I shall die with mickle age:
By me they nothing gain, an if I stay,
'Tis but the short'ning of my life one day:
In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,
My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's fame:
All these, and more, we hazard by thy stay;
All these are saved, if thou wilt fly away.
*John.* The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart,
These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart:
On that advantage, bought with such a shame
(To save a paltry life, and slay bright fame),
Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,
The coward horse, that bears me, fall and die:
And like† me to the peasant boys of France;
To be shame's scorn, and subject of mischance!
Surely, by all the glory you have won,
An if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:
Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;
If son to Talbot, die at Talbot's foot.

* Ended. † Liken.

*Tal.* Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,
Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet:
If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;
And, commendable proved, let's die in pride. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VII.—Another part of the same.*

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter* TALBOT *wounded, supported by a Servant.*

*Tal.* Where is my other life?—mine own is gone;—
O, where's young Talbot? where is valiant John?—
Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity!*
Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:
When he perceived me shrink, and on my knee,
His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,
And, like a hungry lion, did commence
Rough deeds of rage, and stern impatience;
But when my angry guardant stood alone,
Tend'ring my ruin,† and assail'd of none,
Dizzy-eyed fury, and great rage of heart,
Suddenly made him from my side to start
Into the clustering battle of the French:
And in that sea of blood my boy did drench
His overmounting spirit; and there died
My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

*Enter Soldiers, bearing the Body of* JOHN TALBOT.

*Serv.* O my dear lord! lo, where your son is borne!
*Tal.* Thou antic death, which laugh'st us here to scorn,
Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,
Two Talbots, winged through the lither‡ sky,
In thy despite, shall 'scape mortality.—
O thou whose wounds become hard-favour'd death,
Speak to thy father, ere thou yield thy breath:
Brave death by speaking, whether he will, or no;
Imagine him a Frenchman, and thy foe.—
Poor boy! he smiles, methinks; as who should say—
Had death been French, then death had died to-day.
Come, come, and lay him in his father's arms;
My spirit can no longer bear these harms.
Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,
Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave. [*Dies.*

*Alarums. Exeunt Soldiers and Servant, leaving the two Bodies. Enter* CHARLES, ALENÇON, BURGUNDY, BASTARD, LA PUCELLE, *and Forces.*

*Char.* Had York and Somerset brought rescue in,
We should have found a bloody day of this.

* Stained and dishonoured with captivity.
† Watching me with tenderness in my fall. ‡ Yielding.

*Bast.* How the young whelp of Talbot's, raging wood,*
Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood!
*Puc.* Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said,
*Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a maid:*
But—with a proud, majestical high scorn,—
He answer'd thus; *Young Talbot was not born*
*To be the pillage of a giglot† wench:*
So, rushing in the bowels of the French,
He left me proudly as unworthy fight.
*Bur.* Doubtless, he would have made a noble knight:
See, where he lies inhersed in the arms
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms.
*Bast.* Hew them to pieces, hack their bones asunder;
Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder.
*Char.* O, no; forbear: for that which we have fled
During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

*Enter* SIR WILLIAM LUCY, *attended; a French Herald preceding.*

*Lucy.* Herald,
Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent; to know
Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.
*Char.* On what submissive message art thou sent?
*Lucy.* Submission, Dauphin? 'tis a mere French word;
We English warriors wot not what it means.
I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en,
And to survey the bodies of the dead.
*Char.* For prisoners ask'st thou? hell our prison is.
But tell me whom thou seek'st.
*Lucy.* Where is the great Alcides of the field,
Valiant lord Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury?
Created, for his rare success in arms,
Great earl of Washford, Waterford, and Valence;
Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchingfield,
Lord Strange of Blackmere, lord Verdun of Alton,
Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, lord Furnival of Sheffield,
The thrice victorious lord of Falconbridge;
Knight of the noble order of Saint George,
Worthy saint Michael, and the golden fleece;
Great mareschal to Henry the sixth,
Of all his wars within the realm of France?
*Puc.* Here is a silly stately style indeed!
The Turk, that two and fifty kingdoms hath,
Writes not so tedious a style as this.—
Him, that thou magnifiest with all these titles,
Stinking, and fly blown, lies here at our feet.
*Lucy.* Is Talbot slain; the Frenchmen's only scourge,
Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?
O, were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,
That I, in rage, might shoot them at your faces!
O, that I could but call these dead to life!

* Mad. † Wanton.

It were enough to fright the realm of France:
Were but his picture left among you here,
It would amaze* the proudest of you all.
Give me their bodies; that I may bear them hence,
And give them burial as beseems their worth.
*Puc.* I think, this upstart is old Talbot's ghost,
He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit.
For God's sake, let him have 'em; to keep them here,
They would but stink, and putrefy the air.
*Char.* Go, take their bodies hence.
*Lucy.* I'll bear them hence:
But from their ashes shall be rear'd
A phœnix that shall make all France afeard.
*Char.* So we be rid of them, do with 'em what thou wilt.
And now to Paris, in this conquering vein;
All will be ours, now bloody Talbot 's slain. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT V.

### *SCENE I.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, GLOSTER, *and* EXETER.

*K. Hen.* Have you perused the letters from the pope,
The emperor, and the earl of Armagnac?
*Glo.* I have my lord; and their intent is this,—
They humbly sue unto your excellence,
To have a godly peace concluded of,
Between the realms of England and of France.
*K. Hen.* How doth your grace affect their motion?
*Glo.* Well, my good lord; and as the only means
To stop effusion of our Christian blood,
And 'stablish quietness on every side.
*K. Hen.* Ay, marry, uncle; for I always thought,
It was both impious and unnatural,
That such immanity† and bloody strife
Should reign among professors of one faith.
*Glo.* Beside, my lord,—the sooner to effect,
And surer bind, this knot of amity,—
The earl of Armagnac—near knit to Charles,
A man of great authority in France,—
Proffers his only daughter to your grace
In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry.
*K. Hen.* Marriage, uncle! alas! my years are young;
And fitter is my study and my books,
Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.
Yet, call the ambassadors; and, as you please,
So let them have their answers every one:

* Confound. † Barbarity, savageness.

I shall be well content with any choice,
Tends to God's glory, and my country's weal.

*Enter a* LEGATE, *and two* AMBASSADORS, *with* WINCHESTER, *in a Cardinal's habit.*

*Exe.* What! is my lord of Winchester install'd,
And call'd unto a cardinal's degree!
Then, I perceive, that will be verified,
Henry the fifth did sometime prophesy,—
*If once he come to be a cardinal,*
*He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.*

*K. Hen.* My lords ambassadors, your several suits
Have been consider'd and debated on.
Your purpose is both good and reasonable:
And, therefore, are we certainly resolved
To draw conditions of a friendly peace;
Which, by my lord of Winchester, we mean
Shall be transported presently to France.

*Glo.* And for the proffer of my lord your master,—
I have inform'd his highness so at large,
As—liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,
Her beauty, and the value of her dower,—
He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

*K. Hen.* In argument and proof of which contract,
Bear her this jewel [*To the* AMB.], pledge of my affection.
And so, my lord protector, see them guarded,
And safely brought to Dover; where, inshipp'd,
Commit them to the fortune of the sea.

[*Exeunt* KING HENRY *and Train;* GLOSTER, EXETER, *and* AMBASSADORS.

*Win.* Stay, my lord legate; you shall first receive
The sum of money, which I promised
Should be deliver'd to his holiness,
For clothing me in these grave ornaments.

*Leg.* I will attend upon your lordship's leisure.

*Win.* Now, Winchester will not submit, I trow,
Or be inferior to the proudest peer.
Humphrey of Gloster, thou shalt well perceive,
That, neither in birth, or for authority,
The bishop will be overborne by thee:
I'll either make thee stoop, and bend thy knee,
Or sack this country with a mutiny. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—France. Plains in Anjou.*

*Enter* CHARLES, BURGUNDY, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE, *and Forces marching.*

*Char.* These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping spirits:
'Tis said, the stout Parisians do revolt,
And turn again unto the warlike French.

*Alen.* Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France,
And keep not back your powers in dalliance.

*Puc.* Peace be amongst them, if they turn to us;
Else, ruin combat with their palaces!

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Success unto our valiant general,
And happiness to his accomplices!
*Char.* What tidings send our scouts? I pr'ythee, speak.
*Mess.* The English army, that divided was
Into two parts, is now conjoin'd in one;
And means to give you battle presently.
*Char.* Somewhat too sudden, sirs, the warning is;
But we will presently provide for them.
*Bur.* I trust, the ghost of Talbot is not there;
Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.
*Puc.* Of all base passions, fear is most accursed:—
Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be thine;
Let Henry fret, and all the world repine.
*Char.* Then on, my lords; And France be fortunate! [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The same. Before Angiers.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* LA PUCELLE.

*Puc.* The regent conquers, and the Frenchmen fly.—
Now help, ye charming spells, and periapts;*
And ye choice spirits that admonish me,
And give me signs of future accidents! [*Thunder.*
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes
Under the lordly monarch of the north,†
Appear, and aid me in this enterprize!

*Enter Fiends.*

This speedy quick appearance argues proof
Of your accustom'd diligence to me.
Now, ye familiar spirits, that are cull'd
Out of the powerful regions under earth,
Help me this once, that France may get the field.
[*They walk about, and speak not.*
O, hold me not with silence over-long!
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,
I'll lop a member off, and give it you,
In earnest of a further benefit;
So you do condescend to help me now.—
[*They hang their heads.*
No hope to have redress?—My body shall
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.
[*They shake their heads.*
Cannot my body, nor blood-sacrifice,
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?

* Charms sewed up and worn about the neck.
† Zimimar, king-devil of the northern.

Then take my soul; my body, soul, and all,
Before that England give the French the foil. [*They depart.*
See! they forsake me. Now the time is come,
That France must vail* her lofty-plumed crest,
And let her head fall into England's lap.
My ancient incantations are too weak,
And hell too strong for me to buckle with:
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust. [*Exit.*

*Alarums. Enter French and English, fighting.* LA PUCELLE *and* YORK *fight hand to hand.* LA PUCELLE *is taken. The French fly.*

*York.* Damsel of France, I think, I have you fast:
Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms,
And try if they can gain your liberty.—
A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!
See, how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,
As if, with Circe, she would change my shape.
*Puc.* Changed to a worser shape thou canst not be.
*York.* O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;
No shape but his can please your dainty eye.
*Puc.* A plaguing mischief light on Charles, and thee!
And may you both be suddenly surprised
By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!
*York.* Fell, banning† hag! enchantress, hold thy tongue.
*Puc.* I pr'ythee, give me leave to curse a while.
*York.* Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake.
[*Exeunt.*

*Alarums. Enter* SUFFOLK, *leading in* LADY MARGARET.

*Suff.* Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner. [*Gazes on her.*
O fairest beauty, do not fear, nor fly;
For I will touch thee but with reverent hands,
And lay them gently on thy tender side.
I kiss these fingers [*Kissing her hand*] for eternal peace:
Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee.
*Mar.* Margaret my name; and daughter to a king,
The king of Naples, whosoe'er thou art.
*Suff.* An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.
Be not offended, nature's miracle,
Thou art allotted to be ta'en by me:
So doth the swan her downy cygnets save,
Keeping them prisoners underneath her wings.
Yet, if this servile usage once offend,
Go, and be free again as Suffolk's friend.
[*She turns away as going.*
O, stay!—I have no power to let her pass;
My hand would free her, but my heart says—no.
As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,

* Lower. † To ban is to curse.

Twinkling another counterfeited beam,
So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.
Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak:
I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind:
Fie, De la Poole! disable not thyself;*
Hast not a tongue? is she not here thy prisoner?
Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?
Ay; beauty's princely majesty is such,
Confounds the tongue, and makes the senses rough.
*Mar.* Say, earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be so,—
What ransom must I pay before I pass?
For, I perceive, I am thy prisoner.
*Suff.* How canst thou tell, she will deny thy suit,
Before thou make a trial of her love? [*Aside.*
*Mar.* Why speak'st thou not? what ransom must I pay?
*Suff.* She's beautiful; and therefore to be woo'd:
She is a woman; therefore to be won. [*Aside.*
*Mar.* Wilt thou accept of ransom, yea, or no?
*Suff.* Fond man! remember, that thou hast a wife;
Then how can Margaret be thy paramour? [*Aside.*
*Mar.* I were best leave him, for he will not hear.
*Suff.* There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling card.
*Mar.* He talks at random; sure, the man is mad.
*Suff.* And yet a dispensation may be had.
*Mar.* And yet I would that you would answer me.
*Suff.* I'll win this lady Margaret. For whom?
Why, for my king: Tush! that's a wooden thing.†
*Mar.* He talks of wood: It is some carpenter.
*Suff.* Yet so my fancy‡ may be satisfied,
And peace established between these realms.
But there remains a scruple in that too:
For though her father be the king of Naples,
Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor,
And our nobility will scorn the match. [*Aside.*
*Mar.* Hear ye, captain? Are you not at leisure?
*Suff.* It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so much:
Henry is youthful, and will quickly yield.—
Madam, I have a secret to reveal.
*Mar.* What though I be enthrall'd? he seems a knight,
And will not any way dishonour me. [*Aside.*
*Suff.* Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.
*Mar.* Perhaps, I shall be rescued by the French;
And then I need not crave his courtesy. [*Aside.*
*Suff.* Sweet madam, give me hearing in a cause——
*Mar.* Tush! women have been captivate ere now. [*Aside.*
*Suff.* Lady, wherefore talk you so?
*Mar.* I cry you mercy, 'tis but *quid* for *quo*.
*Suff.* Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose
Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

* Do not represent thyself so weak.
† A difficult business. ‡ Love.

*Mar.* To be a queen in bondage, is more vile
Than is a slave in base servility;
For princes should be free.
*Suff.* And so shall you,
If happy England's royal king be free.
*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?
*Suff.* I'll undertake to make thee Henry's queen;
To put a golden sceptre in thy hand,
And set a precious crown upon thy head,
If thou wilt condescend to be my——
*Mar.* What?
*Suff.* His love.
*Mar.* I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.
*Suff.* No, gentle madam; I unworthy am
To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,
And have no portion in the choice myself.
How say you, madam; are you so content?
*Mar.* An if my father please, I am content.
*Suff.* Then call our captains, and our colours forth:
And, madam, at your father's castle walls
We'll crave a parley, to confer with him. [*Troops come forward.*

*A Parley sounded. Enter* REIGNIER, *on the walls.*

*Suff.* See, Reignier, see, thy daughter prisoner.
*Reig.* To whom?
*Suff.* To me.
*Reig.* Suffolk, what remedy?
I am a soldier; and unapt to weep,
Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.
*Suff.* Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord:
Consent (and for thy honour give consent),
Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king;
Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;
And this her easy-held imprisonment
Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty.
*Reig.* Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?
*Suff.* Fair Margaret knows,
That Suffolk doth not flatter, face,* or feign.
*Reig.* Upon thy princely warrant, I descend,
To give thee answer of thy just demand. [*Exit, from the walls.*
*Suff.* And here I will expect thy coming.

*Trumpets sounded. Enter* REIGNIER, *below.*

*Reig.* Welcome, brave earl, into our territories;
Command in Anjou what your honour pleases.
*Suff.* Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,
Fit to be made companion with a king:
What answer makes your grace unto my suit?
*Reig.* Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth,
To be the princely bride of such a lord;
Upon condition I may quietly
Enjoy mine own, the county Maine, and Anjou,

* Play the hypocrite.

Free from oppression, or the stroke of war,
My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.
*Suff.* That is her ransom, I deliver her;
And those two counties, I will undertake,
Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.
*Reig.* And I again,—in Henry's royal name,
As deputy unto that gracious king,
Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.
*Suff.* Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks,
Because this is in traffic of a king:
And yet, methinks, I could be well content
To be mine own attorney in this case. [*Aside.*
I'll over then to England with this news,
And make this marriage to be solemnized;
So, farewell, Reignier! Set this diamond safe
In golden palaces, as it becomes.
*Reig.* I do embrace thee, as I would embrace
The Christian prince, king Henry, were he here.
*Mar.* Farewell, my lord! Good wishes, praise, and prayers,
Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [*Going.*
*Suff.* Farewell, sweet madam! But hark you, Margaret;
No princely commendations to my king?
*Mar.* Such commendations as become a maid,
A virgin, and his servant, say to him.
*Suff.* Words sweetly placed and modestly directed.
But, madam, I must trouble you again,—
No loving token to his majesty?
*Mar.* Yes, my good lord; a pure unspotted heart,
Never yet taint with love, I send the king.
*Suff.* And this withal. [*Kisses her.*
*Mar.* That for thyself;—I will not so presume,
To send such peevish* tokens to a king.
[*Exeunt* REIGNIER *and* MARGARET.
*Suff.* O, wert thou for myself!—But, Suffolk, stay;
Thou mayst not wander in that labyrinth;
There Minotaurs, and ugly treasons, lurk.
Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise:
Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount;
Mad,† natural graces that extinguish art;
Repeat their semblance often on the seas,
That, when thou com'st to kneel at Henry's feet,
Thou mayst bereave him of his wits with wonder. [*Exit.*

*SCENE IV.—Camp of the Duke of* YORK, *in Anjou.*

*Enter* YORK, WARWICK, *and others.*

*York.* Bring forth that sorceress, condemn'd to burn.

*Enter* LA PUCELLE, *guarded, and a* SHEPHERD.

*Shep.* Ah, Joan! this kills thy father's heart outright!
Have I sought every country far and near,

* Childish. † Wild.

And, now it is my chance to find thee out,
Must I behold thy timeless* cruel death?
Ah, Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with thee!
*Puc.* Decrepit miser!† base ignoble wretch!
I am descended of a gentler blood;
Thou art no father, nor no friend, of mine.
*Shep.* Out, out!—My lords, an please you, 'tis not so;
I did beget her, all the parish knows:
Her mother liveth yet, can testify,
She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.
*War.* Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parentage?
*York.* This argues what her kind of life hath been;
Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes.
*Shep.* Fie, Joan! that thou wilt be so obstacle!‡
God knows, thou art a collop of my flesh;
And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:
Deny me not, I pr'ythee, gentle Joan.
*Puc.* Peasant, avaunt!—You have suborn'd this man,
Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.
*Shep.* 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest,
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.—
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl.
Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time
Of thy nativity! I would, the milk
Thy mother gave thee, when thou suck'dst her breast,
Had been a little ratsbane, for thy sake!
Or else when thou didst keep my lambs a-field,
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!
Dost thou deny thy father, cursed drab?
O, burn her, burn her; hanging is too good. [*Exit.*
*York.* Take her away; for she hath lived too long,
To fill the world with vicious qualities.
*Puc.* First, let me tell you whom you have condemn'd:
Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,
But issued from the progeny of kings;
Virtuous and holy; chosen from above,
By inspiration of celestial grace,
To work exceeding miracles on earth.
I never had to do with wicked spirits:
But you,—that are polluted with your lusts,
Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,
Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,—
Because you want the grace that others have,
You judge it straight a thing impossible
To compass wonders, but by help of devils.
No, misconceived!§ Joan of Arc hath been
A virgin from her tender infancy,
Chaste and immaculate in every thought;
Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effused,
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

* Untimely. † Miserable creature.
‡ Obstinate. § Misconceivers.

*York.* Ay, ay;—away with her to execution.
*War.* And hark ye, sirs; because she is a maid,
Spare for no faggots, let there be enough:
Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,
That so her torture may be shortened.
*Puc.* Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts?—
Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity;
That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.—
I am with child, ye bloody homicides:
Murder not then the fruit within my womb,
Although ye hale me to a violent death.
*York.* Now heaven forfend! the holy maid with child?
*War.* The greatest miracle that e'er ye wrought:
Is all your strict preciseness come to this?
*York.* She and the Dauphin have been juggling:
I did imagine what would be her refuge.
*War.* Well, go to; we will have no bastards live;
Especially, since Charles must father it.
*Puc.* You are deceived; my child is none of his;
It was Alençon, that enjoy'd my love.
*York.* Alençon, that notorious Machiavel!
It dies, an if it had a thousand lives.
*Puc.* O, give me leave, I have deluded you;
'Twas neither Charles, nor yet the duke I named,
But Reignier, king of Naples, that prevail'd.
*War.* A married man! that's most intolerable.
*York.* Why, here's a girl! I think, she knows not well,
There were so many, whom she may accuse.
*War.* It's sign, she hath been liberal and free.
*York.* And, yet, forsooth, she is a virgin pure.—
Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat, and thee:
Use no entreaty, for it is in vain.
*Puc.* Then lead me hence;—with whom I leave my curse:
May never glorious sun reflex his beams
Upon the country where you make abode!
But darkness and the gloomy shade of death
Environ you; till mischief, and despair,
Drive you to break your necks, or hang yourselves!
[*Exit, guarded.*
*York.* Break thou in pieces, and consume to ashes,
Thou foul accursed minister of hell!

*Enter* CARDINAL BEAUFORT, *attended.*

*Car.* Lord regent, I do greet your excellence
With letters of commission from the king.
For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,
Moved with remorse* of these outrageous broils,
Have earnestly implored a general peace
Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French;
And here at hand the Dauphin, and his train,
Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

* Compassion.

*York.* Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?
After the slaughter of so many peers,
So many captains, gentlemen, and soldiers,
That in this quarrel have been overthrown,
And sold their bodies for their country's benefit,
Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?
Have we not lost most part of all the towns,
By treason, falsehood, and by treachery,
Our great progenitors had conquered?—
O, Warwick, Warwick! I foresee with grief
The utter loss of all the realm of France.
*War.* Be patient, York: If we conclude a peace,
It shall be with such strict and severe covenants
As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

*Enter* CHARLES, *attended;* ALENÇON, BASTARD, REIGNIER, *and others.*

*Char.* Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed,
That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France,
We come to be informed by yourselves
What the conditions of that league must be.
*York.* Speak, Winchester; for boiling choler chokes
The hollow passage of my poison'd voice,
By sight of these our baleful enemies.
*Win.* Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:
That—in regard king Henry gives consent,
Of mere compassion, and of lenity,
To ease your country of distressful war,
And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,—
You shall become true liegemen to his crown:
And, Charles, upon condition thou wilt swear
To pay him tribute, and submit thyself,
Thou shalt be placed as viceroy under him,
And still enjoy thy regal dignity.
*Alen.* Must he be then as shadow of himself?
Adorn his temples with a coronet:
And yet, in substance and authority,
Retain but privilege of a private man?
This proffer is absurd and reasonless.
*Char.* 'Tis known already that I am possess'd
With more than half the Gallian territories,
And therein reverenced for their lawful king
Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,
Detract so much from that prerogative,
As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?
No, lord ambassador; I'll rather keep
That which I have, than, coveting for more,
Be cast from possibility of all.
*York.* Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret means
Used intercession to obtain a league;
And, now the matter grows to compromise,
Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?

Either accept the title thou usurp'st,
Of benefit* proceeding from our king,
And not of any challenge of desert,
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.
*Reig.* My lord, you do not well in obstinacy
To cavil in the course of this contract:
If once it be neglected, ten to one,
We shall not find like opportunity.
*Alen.* To say the truth, it is your policy,
To save your subjects from such massacre,
And ruthless slaughters, as are daily seen
By our proceeding in hostility:
And therefore take this compact of a truce,
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.
[*Aside, to* CHARLES.
*War.* How say'st thou, Charles? shall our condition stand?
*Char.* It shall:
Only reserved, you claim no interest
In any of our towns of garrison.
*York.* Then swear allegiance to his majesty;
As thou art knight, never to disobey,
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.—
[CHARLES, *and the rest, give tokens of fealty.*
So, now dismiss your army when ye please;
Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,
For here we entertain a solemn peace. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE V.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, *in conference with* SUFFOLK; GLOSTER *and* EXETER *following.*

*K. Hen.* Your wondrous rare description, noble earl,
Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me:
Her virtues, graced with external gifts,
Do breed love's settled passions in my heart:
And like as rigour in tempestuous gusts
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide;
So am I driven, by breath of her renown,
Either to suffer shipwreck, or arrive
Where I may have fruition of her love.
*Suff.* Tush! my good lord! this superficial tale
Is but a preface of her worthy praise:
The chief perfections of that lovely dame
(Had I sufficient skill to utter them)
Would make a volume of enticing lines,
Able to ravish any dull conceit.
And, which is more, she is not so divine,
So full replete with choice of all delights,

* "Be content to live as the beneficiary of our king."

But, with as humble lowliness of mind,
She is content to be at your command;
Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,
To love and honour Henry as her lord.
*K. Hen.* And otherwise will Henry ne'er presume.
Therefore, my lord protector, give consent,
That Margaret may be England's royal queen.
*Glo.* So should I give consent to flatter sin.
You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd
Unto another lady of esteem;
How shall we then dispense with that contract,
And not deface your honour with reproach?
*Suff.* As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths;
Or one, that, at a triumph* having vow'd
To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists
By reason of his adversary's odds:
A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,
And therefore may be broke without offence.
*Glo.* Why, what I pray, is Margaret more than that?
Her father is no better than an earl,
Although in glorious titles he excel.
*Suff.* Yes, my good lord, her father is a king,
The king of Naples, and Jerusalem;
And of such great authority in France,
As his alliance will confirm our peace,
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.
*Glo.* And so the earl of Armagnac may do,
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.
*Exe.* Beside, his wealth doth warrant liberal dower;
While Reignier sooner will receive, than give.
*Suff.* A dower, my lords! disgrace not so your king,
That he should be so abject, base, and poor,
To choose for wealth, and not for perfect love.
Henry is able to enrich his queen,
And not to seek a queen to make him rich:
So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,
As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.
Marriage is a matter of more worth,
Than to be dealt in by attorneyship;
Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,
Must be companion of his nuptial bed:
And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,
It most of all these reasons bindeth us,
In our opinions she should be preferr'd.
For what is wedlock forced, but a hell,
An age of discord and continual strife?
Whereas the contrary bringeth forth bliss,
And is a pattern of celestial peace.
Whom should we match, with Henry, being a king,
But Margaret, that is daughter to a king?
Her peerless feature, joined with her birth,

* Public exhibition.

Approves her fit for none, but for a king:
Her valiant courage, and undaunted spirit
(More than in women commonly is seen),
Will answer our hope in issue of a king;
For Henry, son unto a conqueror,
Is likely to beget more conquerors,
If with a lady of so high resolve,
As is fair Margaret, he be link'd in love.
Then yield, my lords; and here conclude with me,
That Margaret shall be queen, and none but she.

*K. Hen.* Whether it be through force of your report,
My noble lord of Suffolk; or for that
My tender youth was never yet attaint
With any passion of inflaming love,
I cannot tell; but this I am assured,
I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,
Such fierce alarums both of hope and fear,
As I am sick with working of my thoughts.
Take, therefore, shipping; post, my lord to France;
Agree to any covenants; and procure
That lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come
To cross the seas to England, and be crown'd
King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:
For your expenses and sufficient charge,
Among the people gather up a tenth.
Be gone, I say; for, till you do return,
I rest perplexed with a thousand cares.—
And you, good uncle, banish all offence:
If you do censure* me by what you were,
Not what you are, I know it will excuse
This sudden execution of my will.
And so conduct me, where from company,
I may revolve and ruminate my grief. [*Exit.*

*Glo.* Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and last.
[*Exeunt* GLOSTER *and* EXETER.

*Suff.* Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd: and thus he goes,
As did the youthful Paris once to Greece;
With hope to find the like event in love,
But prosper better than the Trojan did.
Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king;
But I will rule both her, the king, and realm. [*Exit*

* Judge.

# SECOND PART

OF

# KING HENRY VI.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.
HUMPHREY, *Duke of Gloster, his Uncle.*
CARDINAL BEAUFORT, *Bishop of Winchester, Great Uncle to the King.*
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *Duke of York.*
EDWARD and RICHARD, *his Sons.*
DUKE OF SOMERSET, DUKE OF SUFFOLK, DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM, LORD CLIFFORD, YOUNG CLIFFORD, his Son, } *Of the King's Party.*
EARL OF SALISBURY, EARL OF WARWICK, } *Of the York Faction.*
LORD SCALES, *Governor of the Tower.*
LORD SAY.
SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and his Brother.
SIR JOHN STANLEY.
A SEA-CAPTAIN, MASTER, MASTER'S MATE, and WALTER WHITMORE.
TWO GENTLEMEN, *Prisoners with Suffolk.*
A HERALD.—VAUX.

HUME and SOUTHWELL, *two Priests.*
BOLINGBROKE, *a Conjurer.*
A SPIRIT raised by Bolingbroke.
THOMAS HORNER, *an Armourer.*
PETER, *his Man.*
CLERK OF CHATHAM.
MAYOR OF ST. ALBAN'S.
SIMPCOX, *an Impostor.*
TWO MURDERERS.
JACK CADE, *a Rebel.*
GEORGE, JOHN, DICK, SMITH, the Weaver, MICHAEL, &c. his Followers.
ALEXANDER IDEN, *a Kentish Gentleman.*

---

MARGARET, *Queen to King Henry.*
ELEANOR, *Duchess of Gloster.*
MARGERY JOURDAIN, *a Witch.*
WIFE TO SIMPCOX.

LORDS, LADIES, and ATTENDANTS; PETITIONERS, ALDERMEN, a BEADLE, SHERIFF, and OFFICERS; CITIZENS, 'PRENTICES, FALCONERS, GUARDS, SOLDIERS, MESSENGERS, &c.

SCENE; dispersedly in various parts of England.

## ACT I.

*SCENE I.—London. A Room of State in the Palace.*

*Flourish of Trumpets: then Hautboys. Enter, on one side,* KING HENRY, *Duke of* GLOSTER, SALISBURY, WARWICK, *and* CARDINAL BEAUFORT; *on the other,* QUEEN MARGARET, *led in by* SUFFOLK; YORK, SOMERSET, BUCKINGHAM, *and others, following.*

*Suff.* As by your high imperial majesty,
I had in charge at my depart for France,
As procurator to your excellence,

To marry princess Margaret for your grace;
So, in the famous ancient city, Tours,—
In presence of the kings of France and Sicil,
The dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretaigne, and Alençon,
Seven earls, twelve barons, twenty reverend bishops,—
I have perform'd my task, and was espoused:
And humbly now upon my bended knee,
In sight of England and her lordly peers,
Deliver up my title in the queen
To your most gracious hands, that are the substance
Of that great shadow I did represent;
The happiest gift that ever marquis gave,
The fairest queen that ever king received.

*K. Hen.* Suffolk, arise.—Welcome, queen Margaret:
I can express no kinder sign of love,
Than this kind kiss.—O Lord, that lends me life,
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness!
For thou hast given me, in this beauteous face,
A world of earthly blessings to my soul,
If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

*Q. Mar.* Great king of England, and my gracious lord;
The mutual conference that my mind hath had—
By day, by night; waking, and in my dreams;
In courtly company, or at my beads,—
With you mine alder-liefest* sovereign,
Makes me the bolder to salute my king
With ruder terms; such as my wit affords,
And over-joy of heart doth minister.

*K. Hen.* Her sight did ravish: but her grace in speech,
Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,
Makes me, from wondering fall to weeping joys,
Such is the fulness of my heart's content.—
Lords, with one cheerful voice, welcome my love.

*All.* Long live queen Margaret, England's happiness!

*Q. Mar.* We thank you all. [*Flourish.*

*Suf.* My lord protector, so it please your grace,
Here are the articles of contracted peace,
Between our sovereign and the French king Charles,
For eighteen months concluded by consent.

Glo. [*Reads*]. Imprimis, *It is agreed between the French King, Charles, and William de la Poole, marquis of Suffolk, ambassador for Henry, King of England,—that the said Henry shall espouse the Lady Margaret, daughter unto Reignier, king of Naples, Sicilia, and Jerusalem; and crown her queen of England, ere the thirtieth of May next ensuing.*——Item,—*That the dutchy of Anjou and the county of Maine, shall be released and delivered to the king her father*——

*K. Hen.* Uncle, how now?

*Glo.* Pardon me, gracious lord;
Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the heart,
And dimm'd mine eyes, that I can read no further.

* Beloved above all things.

*K. Hen.* Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read on.

*Win.* Item,—*It is further agreed between them,—that the dutchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to the king her father; and she sent over of the king of England's own proper cost and charges, without having dowry.*

*K. Hen.* They please us well.—Lord marquis, kneel down;
We here create thee the first duke of Suffolk,
And girt thee with the sword.—
Cousin of York, we here discharge your grace
From being regent in the parts of France,
Till term of eighteen months be full expired.—
Thanks, uncle Winchester, Gloster, York, and Buckingham,
Somerset, Salisbury, and Warwick;
We thank you all for this great favour done,
In entertainment to my princely queen.
Come, let us in; and with all speed provide
To see her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt* KING, QUEEN, *and* SUFFOLK.

*Glo.* Brave peers of England, pillars of the state,
To you duke Humphrey must unload his grief,
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.
What! did my brother Henry spend his youth,
His valour, coin, and people in the wars?
Did he so often lodge in open field,
In winter's cold, and summer's parching heat,
To conquer France, his true inheritance?
And did my brother Bedford toil his wits,
To keep by policy what Henry got?
Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham,
Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious Warwick,
Received deep scars in France and Normandy?
Or hath my uncle Beaufort, and myself,
With all the learned counsel of the realm,
Studied so long, sat in the council-house,
Early and late, debating to and fro
How France and Frenchmen might be kept in awe?
And hath his highness in his infancy
Been crown'd in Paris, in despite of foes?
And shall these labours, and these honours die?
Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,
Your deeds of war, and all our counsel, die?
O peers of England, shameful is this league!
Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame:
Blotting your names from books of memory:
Razing the characters of your renown;
Defacing monuments of conquer'd France;
Undoing all, as all had never been!

*Car.* Nephew, what means this passionate discourse?
This peroration with such circumstance?*
For France, 'tis ours; and we will keep it still.

*Glo.* Ay, uncle, we will keep it if we can;

* Circumstances of aggravation.

But now it is impossible we should:
Suffolk, the new made duke, that rules the roast,
Hath given the dutchies of Anjou and Maine
Unto the poor king Reignier, whose large style
Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

*Sal.* Now, by the death of him that died for all,
These counties were the keys of Normandy:—
But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son?

*War.* For grief that they are past recovery:
For, were there hope to conquer them again,
My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes no tears.
Anjou and Maine! myself did win them both;
Those provinces these arms of mine did conquer:
And are the cities, that I got with wounds,
Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?
Mort Dieu!

*York.* For Suffolk's duke—may he be suffocate,
That dims the honour of this warlike isle!
France should have torn and rent my very heart,
Before I would have yielded to this league.
I never read but England's kings have had
Large sums of gold, and dowries with their wives
And our king Henry gives away his own,
To match with her that brings no vantages.

*Glo.* A proper jest, and never heard before,
That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth,
For costs and charges in transporting her!
She should have staid in France, and starved in France,
Before——

*Car.* My lord of Gloster, now you grow too hot;
It was the pleasure of my lord the king.

*Glo.* My lord of Winchester, I know your mind;
'Tis not my speeches that you do mislike,
But 'tis my presence that doth trouble you.
Rancour will out: Proud prelate, in thy face
I see thy fury: if I longer stay,
We shall begin our ancient bickerings.—
Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,
I prophesied—France will be lost ere long. [*Exit.*

*Car.* So, there goes our protector in a rage.
'Tis known to you he is mine enemy:
Nay, more, an enemy unto you all;
And no great friend, I fear me, to the king.
Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,
And heir apparent to the English crown;
Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,
And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,
There's reason he should be displeased at it.
Look to it, lords; let not his smoothing words
Bewitch your hearts; be wise, and circumspect,
What though the common people favour him.
Calling him—*Humphrey, the good duke of Gloster;*
Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice—

*Jesu maintain your royal excellence!*
With—*God preserve the good duke Humphrey!*
I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,
He will be found a dangerous protector.
*Buck.* Why should he then protect our sovereign,
He being of age to govern of himself?—
Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,
And all together—with the duke of Suffolk,—
We'll quickly hoise duke Humphrey from his seat.
*Car.* This weighty business will not brook delay;
I'll to the Duke of Suffolk presently. [*Exit.*
*Som.* Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride,
And greatness of his place be grief to us,
Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal;
His insolence is more intolerable
Than all the princes in the land beside;
If Gloster be displaced, he'll be protector.
*Buck.* Or thou, or I, Somerset, will be protector,
Despight duke Humphrey, or the cardinal.
[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM *and* SOMERSET.
*Sal.* Pride went before, ambition follows him.
While these do labour for their own preferment,
Behoves it us to labour for the realm.
I never saw but Humphrey duke of Gloster
Did bear him like a noble gentleman.
Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal—
More like a soldier, than a man o' the church,
As stout, and proud, as he were lord of all,—
Swear like a ruffian, and demean himself
Unlike the ruler of a common-weal.—
Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age!
Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy house-keeping,
Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,
Excepting none but good duke Humphrey.—
And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,
In bringing them to civil discipline;
Thy late exploits, done in the heart of France,
When thou wert regent for our sovereign,
Have made thee fear'd, and honoured, of the people:—
Join we together for the public good;
In what we can to bridle and suppress
The pride of Suffolk, and the cardinal,
With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition;
And, as we may, cherish duke Humphrey's deeds,
While they do tend the profit of the land.
*War.* So God help Warwick, as he loves the land,
And common profit of his country!
*York.* And so says York, for he hath greatest cause.
*Sal.* Then let's make haste away, and look unto the main.
*War.* Unto the main! O father, Maine is lost;
That Maine, which by main force Warwick did win,
And would have kept, so long as breath did last:

Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant Maine;
Which I will win from France, or else be slain.
[*Exeunt* WARWICK *and* SALISBURY.

*York.* Anjou and Maine are given to the French;
Paris is lost; the state of Normandy
Stands on a tickle* point, now they are gone:
Suffolk concluded on the articles;
The peers agreed; and Henry was well pleas'd,
To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair daughter.
I cannot blame them all; what is't to them?
'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.
Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage,
And purchase friends, and give to courtezans,
Still revelling, like lords, till all be gone:
While as the silly owner of the goods
Weeps over them, and rings his hapless hands,
And shakes his head, and trembling stands aloof,
While all is shared, and all is borne away;
Ready to starve, and dare not touch his own.
So York must sit, and fret, and bite his tongue,
While his own lands are bargain'd for, and sold.
Methinks, the realms of England, France, and Ireland,
Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood,
As did the fatal brand Althea burn'd,
Unto the prince's heart of Calydon,†
Anjou and Maine, both given unto the French!
Cold news for me; for I had hope of France,
Even as I have of fertile England's soil.
A day will come, when York shall claim his own;
And therefore I will take the Nevil's parts,
And make a show of love to proud duke Humphrey,
And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,
For that's the golden mark I seek to hit:
Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right,
Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist,
Nor wear the diadem upon his head,
Whose church-like humours fit not for a crown.
Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:
Watch thou, and wake, when others be asleep,
To pry into the secrets of the state;
Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love,
With his new bride, and England's dear-bought queen,
And Humphrey with the peers be fallen at jars:
Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfum'd;
And in my standard bear the arms of York,
To grapple with the house of Lancaster;
And, force perforce, I'll make him yield the crown,
Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down. [*Exit.*

* For ticklish. † Meleager.

*SCENE II.—The same. A Room in the Duke of* GLOSTER'S *House.*

*Enter* GLOSTER *and the* DUCHESS.

*Duch.* Why droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn,
Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load?
Why doth the great duke Humphrey knit his brows,
As frowning at the favours of the world?
Why are thine eyes fixed to the sullen earth,
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?
What see'st thou there? king Henry's diadem,
Enchased with all the honours of the world?
If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,
Until thy head be circled with the same.
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold:—
What, is't too short? I'll lengthen it with mine:
And, having both together heav'd it up,
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven;
And never more abase our sight so low,
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.

*Glo.* O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord,
Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts:
And may that thought, when I imagine ill
Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,
Be my last breathing in this mortal world!
My troublous dream this night doth make me sad.

*Duch.* What dream'd my lord? tell me, and I'll requite it
With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

*Glo.* Methought, this staff, mine office-badge in court,
Was broke in twain, by whom, I have forgot,
But, as I think, it was by the cardinal;
And on the pieces of the broken wand
Were placed the heads of Edmund duke of Somerset,
And William de la Poole first duke of Suffolk.
This was my dream; what it doth bode, God knows.

*Duch.* Tut, this was nothing but an argument,
That he that breaks a stick of Gloster's grove,
Shall lose his head for his presumption.
But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke:
Methought, I sat in seat of majesty,
In the cathedral church of Westminster,
And in that chair where kings and queens are crown'd;
Where Henry, and dame Margaret, kneel'd to me,
And on my head did set the diadem.

*Glo.* Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide outright:
Presumptuous dame, ill-nurtured* Eleanor!
Art thou not second woman in the realm;
And the protector's wife, beloved of him?
Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,
Above the reach or compass of thy thought?

* Ill-educated.

And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,
To tumble down thy husband and thyself,
From top of honour to disgrace's feet?
Away from me, and let me hear no more.
*Duch.* What, what, my lord! are you so choleric
With Eleanor, for telling but her dream?
Next time, I'll keep my dreams unto myself,
And not be check'd.
*Glo.* Nay, be not angry, I am pleased again.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure,
You do prepare to ride unto Saint Albans,
Whereas* the king and queen do mean to hawk.
*Glo.* I go.—Come, Nell, thou wilt ride with us?
*Duch.* Yes, good my lord, I'll follow presently.
[*Exeunt* GLOSTER *and* MESSENGER.
Follow I must, I cannot go before,
While Gloster bears this base and humble mind.
Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,
I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks,
And smooth my way upon their headless necks:
And, being a woman, I will not be slack
To play my part in fortune's pageant.
Where are you there? Sir John! † nay, fear not, man,
We are alone; here none but thee, and I.

*Enter* HUME.

*Hume.* Jesu preserve your royal majesty!
*Duch.* What say'st thou, majesty! I am but grace.
*Hume.* But by the grace of God, and Hume's advice,
Your grace's title shall be multiplied.
*Duch.* What say'st thou, man? hast thou as yet conferr'd
With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch;
And Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?
And will they undertake to do me good?
*Hume.* This they have promised,—to show your highness
A spirit raised from depth of under ground,
That shall make answer to such questions,
As by your grace shall be propounded him.
*Duch.* It is enough; I'll think upon the questions:
When from Saint Albans we do make return,
We'll see these things effected to the full.
Here, Hume, take this reward; make merry, man,
With thy confederates in this weighty cause. [*Exit* DUCHESS.
*Hume.* Hume must make merry with the duchess' gold;
Marry, and shall. But how now, Sir John Hume?
Seal up your lips, and give no words but—mum!
The business asketh silent secrecy.
Dame Eleanor gives gold, to bring the witch:

* Where. † A title frequently bestowed on the clergy.

Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil.
Yet have I gold, flies from another coast:
I dare not say, from the rich cardinal,
And from the great and new-made duke of Suffolk;
Yet I do find it so: for, to be plain,
They, knowing dame Eleanor's aspiring humour,
Have hired me to undermine the duchess,
And buz these conjurations in her brain.
They say, A crafty knave does need no broker;
Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker.
Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go near
To call them both—a pair of crafty knaves.
Well, so it stands: And thus, I fear, at last,
Hume's knavery will be the duchess' wreck;
And her attainture will be Humphrey's fall:
Sort how it will,* I shall have gold for all. [*Exit.*

*SCENE III.—The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* PETER, *and others, with Petitions.*

1 *Pet.* My masters, let's stand close; my lord protector will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver our supplications in the quill.†

2 *Pet.* Marry, the Lord protect him, for he's a good man! Jesu bless him!

*Enter* SUFFOLK *and* QUEEN MARGARET.

1 *Pet.* Here 'a comes, methinks, and the queen with him: I'll be the first, sure.

2 *Pet.* Come back, fool: this is the duke of Suffolk, and not my lord protector,

*Suf.* How now, fellow? would'st anything with me?

1 *Pet.* I pray, my lord, pardon me! I took ye for my lord protector.

*Q. Mar.* [Reading the superscription.] *To my lord protector!* are your supplications to his lordship? Let me see them: What is thine?

1 *Pet.* Mine is, an't please your grace, against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's man, for keeping my house, and lands, and wife and all, from me.

*Suf.* Thy wife too? that is some wrong, indeed.—What's your's?—What's here! [*Reads.*] *Against the duke of Suffolk, for enclosing the commons of Melford.*—How now, sir knave?

2 *Pet.* Alas, sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township.

Peter. [*Presenting his Petition.*] Against my master, Thomas Horner, for saying, That the duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

* End how it will. † Written petitions.

*Q. Mar.* Why say'st thou? Did the duke of York say, he was rightful heir to the crown?

*Peter.* That my master was? No, forsooth: my master said, That he was; and that the king was an usurper.

*Suf.* Who is there? [*Enter Servants.*]—Take this fellow in, and send for his master with a pursuivant presently:—we'll hear more of your matter before the king.

[*Exeunt Servants, with* PETER.

*Q. Mar.* And as for you, that love to be protected
Under the wings of our protector's grace,
Begin your suits anew, and sue to him. [*Tears the Petition.*
Away, base cullions!—Suffolk, let them go.

*All.* Come, let's be gone. [*Exeunt* PETITIONERS.

*Q. Mar.* My lord of Suffolk, say, is this the guise,
Is this the fashion in the court of England?
Is this the government of Britain's isle,
And this the royalty of Albion's king?
What, shall king Henry be a pupil still,
Under the surly Gloster's governance?
Am I a queen in title and in style,
And must be made a subject to a duke?
I tell thee, Poole, when in the city Tours
Thou ran'st a tilt in honour of my love,
And stol'st away the ladies' hearts of France;
I thought king Henry had resembled thee,
In courage, courtship, and proportion:
But all his mind is bent to holiness,
To number *Ave-Maries* on his beads:
His champions are—the prophets and apostles:
His weapons, holy saws of sacred writ;
His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves
Are brazen images of canonized saints.
I would, the college of cardinals
Would choose him pope, and carry him to Rome,
And set the triple crown upon his head;
That were a state fit for his holiness.

*Suf.* Madam, be patient: as I was cause
Your highness came to England, so will I
In England work your grace's full content.

*Qu. Mar.* Beside the haught protector, have we Beaufort,
The imperious churchman; Somerset, Buckingham,
And grumbling York: and not the least of these,
But can do more in England than the king.

*Suf.* And he of these, that can do most of all,
Cannot do more in England than the Nevils:
Salisbury, and Warwick, are no simple peers.

*Q. Mar.* Not all these lords do vex me half so much,
As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.
She sweeps it through the court with troops of ladies,
More like an empress than duke Humphrey's wife;
Strangers in court do take her for the queen:
She bears a duke's revenues on her back,

And in her heart she scorns her poverty:
Shall I not live to be avenged on her?
Contemptuous base-born callat* as she is,
She vaunted 'mongst her minions t'other day,
The very train of her worst wearing-gown
Was better worth than all my father's lands,
Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter.
*Suf.* Madam, myself have limed a bush for her;
And placed a quire of such enticing birds,
That she will light to listen to the lays,
And never mount to trouble you again.
So, let her rest: And, madam, list to me;
For I am bold to counsel you in this.
Although we fancy not the cardinal,
Yet we must join with him, and with the lords,
Till we have brought duke Humphrey in disgrace.
As for the duke of York,—this late complaint†
Will make but little for his benefit:
So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last.
And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

*Enter* KING HENRY, YORK, *and* SOMERSET, *conversing with him; Duke and Duchess of* GLOSTER, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, BUCKINGHAM, SALISBURY, *and* WARWICK.

*K. Hen.* For my part, noble lords, I care not which;
Or Somerset, or York, all's one to me.
*York.* If York have ill demean'd himself in France,
Then let him be denay'd‡ the regentship.
*Som.* If Somerset be unworthy of the place,
Let York be regent, I will yield to him.
*War.* Whether your grace be worthy, yea, or no,
Dispute not that: York is the worthier.
*Car.* Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters speak.
*War.* The cardinal 's not my better in the field.
*Buck.* All in this presence are thy betters, Warwick,
*War.* Warwick may live to be the best of all.
*Sal.* Peace, son;——and show some reason, Buckingham,
Why Somerset should be preferred in this.
*Q. Mar.* Because the king, forsooth, will have it so.
*Glo.* Madam, the king is old enough himself
To give his censure:§ these are no women's matters.
*Q. Mar.* If he be old enough, what needs your grace
To be protector of his excellence?
*Glo.* Madam, I am protector of the realm;
And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.
*Suf.* Resign it then, and leave thine insolence.
Since thou wert king, (as who is king, but thou?)
The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck:
The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas

* Trull. † Of Peter, the armourer's man against his master.
‡ Deny. § Opinion.

And all the peers and nobles of the realm
Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty.
*Car.* The Commons hast thou rack'd; the clergy's bags
Are lank and lean with thy extortions.
*Som.* Thy sumptuous buildings, and thy wife's attire,
Have cost a mass of public treasury.
*Buck.* Thy cruelty in execution,
Upon offenders, hath exceeded law,
And left thee to the mercy of the law.
*Q. Mar.* Thy sale of offices, and towns in France,—
If they were known, as the suspect is great,—
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head.
[*Exit* GLOSTER. *The* QUEEN *drops her Fan.*
Give me my fan: What, minion! can you not?
[*Gives the* DUCHESS *a box on the Ear.*
I cry you mercy, madam; Was it you?
*Duch.* Was't I? yea, I it was, proud Frenchwoman:
Could I come near your beauty with my nails,
I'd set my ten commandments in your face.*
*K. Hen.* Sweet aunt, be quiet; 'twas against her will.
*Duch.* Against her will! Good king, look to 't in time;
She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby:
Though in this place most master wear no breeches,
She shall not strike dame Eleanor unrevenged. [*Exit* DUCHESS.
*Buck.* Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor,
And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:
She 's tickled now: her fume can need no spurs,
She'll gallop fast enough to her destruction.
[*Exit* BUCKINGHAM.

*Re-enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Now, lords, my choler being over-blown,
With walking once about the quadrangle,
I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.
As for your spiteful false objections,
Prove them, and I lie open to the law:
But God in mercy so deal with my soul,
As I in duty love my king and country!
But, to the matter that we have in hand:—
I say, my sovereign, York is meetest man
To be your regent in the realm of France.
*Suf.* Before we make election, give me leave
To show some reason, of no little force,
That York is most unmeet of any man.
*York.* I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet.
First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride:
Next, if I be appointed for the place,
My lord of Somerset will keep me here,
Without discharge, money, or furniture,
Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands.

* The marks of her fingers.

Last time, I danced attendance on his will,
Till Paris was besieged, famish'd, and lost.
*War.* That I can witness; and a fouler fact
Did never traitor in the land commit.
*Suf.* Peace, headstrong Warwick!
*War.* Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

*Enter Servants of* SUFFOLK, *bringing in* HORNER *and* PETER.

*Suf.* Because here is a man accused of treason:
Pray God, the duke of York excuse himself!
*York.* Doth any one accuse York for a traitor?
*K. Hen.* What mean'st thou, Suffolk? tell me: What are these?
*Suf.* Please it your majesty, this is the man
That doth accuse his master of high treason:
His words were these;—that Richard, duke of York,
Was rightful heir unto the English crown;
And that your majesty was an usurper.
*K. Hen.* Say, man, were these thy words?
*Hor.* An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor thought any such matter: God is my witness, I am falsely accused by the villain.
*Pet.* By these ten bones, my lords [*Holding up his Hands*], he did speak them to me in the garret one night, as we were scouring my lord of York's armour.
*York.* Base dunghill villain, and mechanical,
I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech:—
I do beseech your royal majesty,
Let him have all the rigour of the law.
*Hor.* Alas, my lord, hang me, if ever I spake the words. My accuser is my prentice; and when I did correct him for his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would be even with me: I have good witness of this; therefore, I beseech your majesty, do not cast away an honest man for a villain's accusation.
*K. Hen.* Uncle, what shall we say to this in law?
*Glo.* This doom, my lord, if I may judge.
Let Somerset be regent o'er the French,
Because in York this breeds suspicion;
And let these have a day appointed them
For single combat in convenient place;
For he hath witness of his servant's malice:
This is the law, and this duke Humphrey's doom.
*K. Hen.* Then be it so. My lord of Somerset,
We make your grace lord regent o'er the French.
*Som.* I humbly thank your royal majesty.
*Hor.* And I accept the combat willingly.
*Pet.* Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for God's sake, pity my case! the spite of man prevaileth against me. O, Lord, have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow: O Lord, my heart!
*Glo.* Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang'd.

*K. Hen.* Away with them to prison: and the day
Of combat shall be the last of the next month.
Come, Somerset, we'll see thee sent away. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—The same. The Duke of* GLOSTER'S *Garden.*

*Enter* MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTHWELL, *and* BOLINGBROKE.

*Hume.* Come, my masters; the duchess, I tell you, expects performance of your promises.

*Boling.* Master Hume, we are therefore provided: Will her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms?

*Hume.* Ay; what else? fear you not her courage.

*Boling.* I have heard her reported to be a woman of an invincible spirit: But it shall be convenient, master Hume, that you be by her aloft, while we be busy below; and so, I pray you, go in God's name, and leave us. [*Exit* HUME.] Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate, and grovel on the earth:—John Southwell, read you; and let us to our work.

*Enter* DUCHESS, *above.*

*Duch.* Well said, my masters; and welcome all. To this geer;* the sooner the better.

*Boling.* Patience, good lady; wizards know their times:
Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night,
The time of night when Troy was set on fire;
The time when screech-owls cry, and ban dogs howl,
And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their graves,
That time best fits the work we have in hand.
Madam, sit you, and fear not; whom we raise,
We will make fast within a hallow'd verge.

[*Here they perform the Ceremonies appertaining, and make the Circle;* BOLINGBROKE, *or* SOUTHWELL, *reads,* Conjuro, te, &c. *It thunders and lightens terribly; then the* SPIRIT *riseth.*

*Spir.* Adsum.

*M. Jourd.* Asmath.
By the eternal God, whose name and power
Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;
For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

*Spir.* Ask what thou wilt:†—That I had said and done!

Boling. *First, of the king. What shall of him become?* [Reading out of a paper.

*Spir.* The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;
But him outlive, and die a violent death.

[*As the* SPIRIT *speaks,* SOUTHWELL *writes the answer.*

Boling. *What fate awaits the duke of Suffolk?*

*Spir.* By water shall he die, and take his end.

Boling. *What shall befall the duke of Somerset?*

*Spir.* Let him shun castles;
Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains,

* Matter. † (Would).

Than where castles mounted stand.
Have done, for more I hardly can endure.
*Boling.* Descend to darkness, and the burning lake:
False fiend, avoid! [*Thunder and lightning.* SPIRIT *descends.*

*Enter* YORK *and* BUCKINGHAM, *hastily, with their Guards, and others.*

*York.* Lay hands upon these traitors, and their trash.
Beldame, I think, we watch'd you at an inch.—
What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal
Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains;
My lord protector will, I doubt it not,
See you well guerdon'd* for these good deserts.
*Duch.* Not half so bad as thine to England's king,
Injurious duke; that threat'st where is no cause.
*Buck.* True, madam, none at all. What call you this?
[*Showing her the papers.*
Away with them; let them be clapp'd up close,
And kept asunder:—You, madam, shall with us:
Stafford, take her to thee.— [*Exit* DUCHESS *from above.*
We'll see your trinkets here all forth-coming;
All.—Away! [*Exeunt Guards, with* SOUTH., BOLING., *&c.*
*York.* Lord Buckingham, methinks, you watch'd her well:
A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon!
Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ.
What have we here? [*Reads.*
*The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;*
*But him outlive, and die a violent death.*
Why, this is just,
*Aio te, Æacida, Romanos vincere posse.*
Well, to the rest:
*Tell me what fate awaits the duke of Suffolk?*
*By water shall he die, and take his end.—*
*What shall betide the duke of Somerset?*
*Let him shun castles;*
*Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains,*
*Than where castles mounted stand.*
Come, come, my lords;
These oracles are hardily attain'd,
And hardly understood.
The king is now in progress toward Saint Albans.
With him the husband of this lovely lady:
Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them;
A sorry breakfast for my lord protector.
*Buck.* Your grace shall give me leave, my lord of York,
To be the post, in hope of his reward.
*York.* At your pleasure, my good lord.—
Who's within there, ho!

*Enter a* SERVANT.

Invite my lords of Salisbury, and Warwick,
To sup with me to-morrow night.—Away! [*Exeunt.*

* Rewarded.

# ACT II.

## *SCENE I.—St. Albans.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, GLOSTER, CARDINAL, *and* SUFFOLK, *with Falconers hollaing.*

*Q. Mar.* Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook,*
I saw not better sport these seven years' day:
Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high;
And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.
*K. Hen.* But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,
And what a pitch she flew above the rest!—
To see how God in all his creatures works!
Yea, man and birds, are fain† of climbing high.
*Suf.* No marvel, an it like your majesty,
My lord protector's hawks do tower so well;
They know their master loves to be aloft,
And bears his thoughts above his falcon's pitch.
*Glo.* My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind
That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.
*Car.* I thought as much; he'd be above the clouds.
*Glo.* Ay, my lord cardinal; How think you by that?
Were it not good, your grace could fly to heaven?
*K. Hen.* The treasury of everlasting joy!
*Car.* Thy heaven is on earth: thine eyes and thoughts
Beat‡ on a crown, the treasure of thy heart;
Pernicious protector, dangerous peer,
That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal!
*Glo.* What, cardinal, is your priesthood grown peremptory?
*Tantæne animis cœlestibus iræ?*
Churchmen so hot? good uncle, hide such malice;
With such holiness can you do it?
*Suf.* No malice, Sir; no more than well becomes
So good a quarrel, and so bad a peer.
*Glo.* As who, my lord?
*Suf.* Why, as you, my lord;
An't like your lordly lord-protectorship.
*Glo.* Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence.
*Q. Mar.* And thy ambition, Gloster.
*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee, peace,
Good queen; and whet not on these furious peers,
For blessed are the peacemakers on earth.
*Car.* Let me be blessed for the peace I make,
Against this proud protector, with my sword!
*Glo.* 'Faith, holy uncle, 'would 'twere come to that!
[*Aside to the* CARDINAL.
*Car.* Marry, when thou dar'st. [*Aside.*

* Hawking at water fowl. † Fond. ‡ Flutter.

*Glo.* Make up no factious numbers for the matter,
In thine own person answer thy abuse. [*Aside.*
*Car.* Ay, where thou dar'st not peep: an if thou dar'st,
This evening on the east side of the grove. [*Aside.*
*K. Hen.* How now, my lords?
*Car.* Believe me, cousin Gloster,
Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly,
We had had more sport.—Come with thy two-hand sword.
[*Aside, to* GLO.
*Glo.* True, uncle.
*Car.* Are you advised?—the east side of the grove?
*Glo.* Cardinal, I am with you. [*Aside.*
*K. Hen.* Why, how now, uncle Gloster?
*Glo.* Talking of hawking; nothing else, my lord.—
Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave your crown for this,
Or all my fence* shall fail. [*Aside.*
Car. *Medice teipsum;*
Protector, see to't well, protect yourself. [*Aside.*
*K. Hen.* The winds grow high; so do your stomachs, lords.
How irksome is this music to my heart!
When such strings jar, what hope of harmony?
I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

*Enter an* INHABITANT *of Saint Albans, crying,* A Miracle!

*Glo.* What means this noise?
Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim?
*Inhab.* A miracle! a miracle!
*Suf.* Come to the king, and tell him what miracle.
*Inhab.* Forsooth, a blind man at Saint Alban's shrine,
Within this half-hour, hath received his sight;
A man that ne'er saw in his life before.
*K. Hen.* Now, God be praised! that to believing souls
Gives light in darkness, comfort in despair!

*Enter the* MAYOR *of Saint Albans, and his Brethren; and* SIMPCOX, *borne between two persons in a Chair; his Wife, and a great multitude following.*

*Car.* Here come the townsmen on procession,
To present your highness with the man.
*K. Hen.* Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,
Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.
*Glo.* Stand by, my masters, bring him near the king,
His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.
*K. Hen.* Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,
That we for thee may glorify the Lord.
What, hast thou been long blind, and now restored?
*Simp.* Born blind, an't please your grace.
*Wife.* Ay, indeed, was he.
*Suf.* What woman is this?
*Wife.* His wife, an't like your worship.

* Fence is the art of defence.

*Glo.* Hadst thou been his mother, thou couldst have better
told.
*K. Hen.* Where wert thou born?
*Simp.* At Berwick in the north, an't like your grace.
*K. Hen.* Poor soul! God's goodness hath been great to thee!
Let never day nor night unhallow'd pass,
But still remember what the Lord hath done.
*Q. Mar.* Tell me, good fellow, cam'st thou here by chance?
Or of devotion, to this holy shrine?
*Simp.* God knows, of pure devotion; being call'd
A hundred times, and oftener, in my sleep
By good Saint Alban; who said,—*Simpcox, come;*
*Come, offer at my shrine, and I will help thee.*
*Wife.* Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft
Myself have heard a voice to call him so.
*Car.* What, art thou lame?
*Simp.* Ay, God Almighty help me!
*Suf.* How cam'st thou so?
*Simp.* A fall off of a tree.
*Wife.* A plum-tree, master.
*Glo.* How long hast thou been blind?
*Simp.* O, born so, master.
*Glo.* What, and wouldst climb a tree?
*Simp.* But that in all my life, when I was a youth.
*Wife.* Too true; and bought his climbing very dear.
*Glo.* 'Mass, thou lov'dst plums well, that wouldst venture so.
*Simp.* Alas, good master, my wife desired some damsons,
And made me climb, with danger of my life.
*Glo.* A subtle knave; but yet it shall not serve.—
Let me see thine eyes:—wink now;—now open them:
In my opinion, yet thou see'st not well.
*Simp.* Yes, master, clear as day; I thank
God, and Saint Alban.
*Glo.* Say'st thou me so? What colour is this cloak of?
*Simp.* Red, master, red as blood.
*Glo.* Why, that's well said; What colour is my gown of?
*Simp.* Black, forsooth; coal-black as jet.
*K. Hen.* Why then, thou know'st what colour jet is of?
*Suf.* And yet, I think, jet did he never see.
*Glo.* But cloaks, and gowns, before this day, a many.
*Wife.* Never, before this day, in all his life.
*Glo.* Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?
*Simp.* Alas, master, I know not.
*Glo.* What's his name?
*Simp.* I know not.
*Glo.* Nor his?
*Simp.* No, indeed, master.
*Glo.* What's thine own name?
*Simp.* Saunder Simpcox, an if it please you, master.
*Glo.* Then, Saunder, sit thou there, the lyingest knave
In Christendom. If thou hadst been born blind,
Thou mightst as well have known our names as thus
To name the several colours we do wear.

Sight may distinguish of colours; but suddenly
To nominate them all's impossible.——
My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle;
And would ye not think that cunning to be great,
That could restore this cripple to his legs?

*Simp.* O, master, that you could!

*Glo.* My masters of Saint Albans, have you not beadles in your town, and things called whips?

*May.* Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.

*Glo.* Then send for one presently.

*May.* Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither straight.

[*Exit an* ATTENDANT.

*Glo.* Now fetch me a stool hither by-and-by.
[*A stool brought out.*] Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap me over this stool, and run away.

*Simp.* Alas, master, I am not able to stand alone: You go about to torture me in vain.

*Re-enter* ATTENDANT, *with the* BEADLE.

*Glo.* Well, Sir, we must have you find your legs. Sirrah, beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

*Bead.* I will, my lord.—Come on, sirrah, off with your doublet quickly.

*Simp.* Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand.

[*After the* BEADLE *hath hit him once, he leaps over the stool, and runs away; and the people follow, and cry,* A miracle!

*K. Hen.* O God, see'st thou this, and bear'st so long!

*Q. Mar.* It made me laugh to see the villain run.

*Glo.* Follow the knave; and take this drab away.

*Wife.* Alas, Sir, we did it for pure need.

*Glo.* Let them be whipped through every market-town, till they come to Berwick, whence they came.

[*Exeunt* MAYOR, BEADLE, WIFE, *&c.*

*Car.* Duke Humphrey has done a miracle to-day.

*Suf.* True; made the lame to leap and fly away.

*Glo.* But you have done more miracles than I;
You made, in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM.

*K. Hen.* What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

*Buck.* Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold.
A sort * of naughty persons, lewdly † bent,—
Under the countenance and confederacy
Of lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,
The ringleader and head of all this rout,—
Have practised dangerously against your state,
Dealing with witches, and with conjurers:
Whom we have apprehended in the fact;
Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,
Demanding of king Henry's life and death,

* A company. † Wickedly.

And other of your highness' privy council,
As more at large your grace shall understand.
*Car.* And so, my lord protector, by this means
Your lady is forthcoming* yet at London.
This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge;
'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.
[*Aside to* GLOSTER
*Glo.* Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart!
Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers:
And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,
Or to the meanest groom.
*K. Hen.* O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones;
Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby!
*Q. Mar.* Gloster, see here the tainture of thy nest;
And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.
*Glo.* Madam, for myself, to heaven I do appeal,
How I have loved my king, and commonweal:
And, for my wife, I know not how it stands;
Sorry I am to hear what I have heard:
Noble she is; but if she have forgot
Honour, and virtue, and conversed with such
As, like to pitch, defile nobility,
I banish her my bed, and company;
And give her, as a prey, to law, and shame,
That hath dishonour'd Gloster's honest name.
*K. Hen.* Well, for this night, we will repose us here:
To-morrow, toward London, back again,
To look into this business thoroughly,
And call these foul offenders to their answers;
And poise the cause in justice' equal scales,
Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause prevails.
[*Flourish. Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—London. The Duke of* YORK'S *Garden.*

*Enter* YORK, SALISBURY, *and* WARWICK.

*York.* Now, my good lords of Salisbury and Warwick,
Our simple supper ended, give me leave,
In this close walk, to satisfy myself,
In craving your opinion of my title,
Which is infallible to England's crown.
*Sal.* My lord, I long to hear it at full.
*War.* Sweet York, begin: and if thy claim be good,
The Nevils are thy subjects to command.
*York.* Then thus:—
Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons:
The first, Edward the Black Prince, prince of Wales;
The second, William of Hatfield; and the third,
Lionel, duke of Clarence; next to whom,
Was John of Gaunt, the duke of Lancaster:
The fifth, was Edmund Langley, duke of York;

* *I.e.* your lady is in custody.

The sixth, was Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Gloster;
William of Windsor was the seventh, and last.
Edward, the Black Prince, died before his father;
And left behind him Richard, his only son,
Who, after Edward the Third's death, reign'd as king;
Till Henry Bolingbroke, duke of Lancaster,
The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt,
Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth,
Seized on the realm, deposed the rightful king;
Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,
And him to Pomfret; where, as all you know,
Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously.

*War.* Father, the duke hath told the truth;
Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.

*York.* Which now they hold by force, and not by right
For Richard, the first son's heir, being dead,
The issue of the next son should have reign'd.

*Sal.* But William of Hatfield died without an heir.

*York.* The third son, duke of Clarence (from whose line
I claim the crown), had issue—Philippe, a daughter,
Who married Edmund Mortimer, earl of March,
Edmund had issue—Roger, earl of March;
Roger had issue—Edmund, Anne, and Eleanor.

*Sal.* This Edmund, in the reign of Bolingbroke,
As I have read, laid claim unto the crown;
And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king,
Who kept him in captivity, till he died.
But, to the rest.

*York.* His eldest sister, Anne,
My mother, being heir unto the crown,
Married Richard, earl of Cambridge; who was son
To Edmund Langley, Edward the Third's fifth son.
By her I claim the kingdom: she was heir
To Roger, earl of March; who was the son
Of Edmund Mortimer; who married Philippe,
Sole daughter unto Lionel, duke of Clarence:
So, if the issue of the elder son
Succeed before the younger, I am king.

*War.* What plain proceedings are more plain than this?
Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,
The fourth son; York claims it from the third.
Till Lionel's issue fails, his should not reign:
It fails not yet; but flourishes in thee,
And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.—
Then, father Salisbury, kneel we both together;
And, in this private plot,* be we the first
That shall salute our rightful sovereign
With honour of his birthright to the crown.

*Both.* Long live our sovereign Richard, England's king!

*York.* We thank you, lords. But I am not your king
Till I be crown'd; and that my sword be stain'd

* Sequestered spot.

With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster
And that's not suddenly to be perform'd;
But with advice, and silent secrecy.
Do you, as I do, in these dangerous days,
Wink at the duke of Suffolk's insolence,
At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,
At Buckingham, and all the crew of them,
Till they have snared the shepherd of the flock,
That virtuous prince, the good duke Humphrey:
'Tis that they seek; and they in seeking that,
Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.
*Sal.* My lord, break we off; we know your mind at full.
*War.* My heart assures me, that the earl of Warwick
Shall one day make the duke of York a king.
*York.* And, Nevil, this I do assure myself,—
Richard shall live to make the earl of Warwick
The greatest man in England, but the king. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The same. A Hall of Justice.*

*Trumpets sounded. Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, GLOSTER, YORK, SUFFOLK, *and* SALISBURY; *the Duchess of* GLOSTER, MARGERY JOURDAIN, SOUTHWELL, HUME, *and* BOLINGBROKE, *under guard.*

*K. Hen.* Stand forth, dame Eleanor Cobham, Gloster's wife:
In sight of God, and us, your guilt is great;
Receive the sentence of the law, for sins
Such as by God's book are adjudged to death.—
You four, from hence to prison back again; [*To* JOURDAIN, *&c.*
From thence, unto the place of execution:
The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to ashes,
And you three shall be strangled on the gallows.—
You, madam, for you are more nobly born,
Despoiled of your honour in your life,
Shall, after three days' open penance done,
Live in your country here, in banishment,
With Sir John Stanley, in the Isle of Man.
*Duch.* Welcome is banishment, welcome were my death.
*Glo.* Eleanor, the law, thou seest, hath judged thee;
I cannot justify whom the law condemns.—
[*Exeunt the* DUCHESS, *and the other prisoners, guarded.*
Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.
Ah, Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age
Will bring thy head with sorrow to the ground!—
I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go;
Sorrow would* solace, and mine age would* ease.
*K. Hen.* Stay, Humphrey duke of Gloster: ere thou go,
Give up thy staff; Henry will to himself
Protector be: and God shall be my hope,
My stay, my guide, and lantern to my feet;

* (Have.)

And go in peace, Humphrey; no less beloved,
Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

*Q. Mar.* I see no reason, why a king of years
Should be to be protected like a child.—
God and king Henry govern England's helm:
Give up your staff, Sir, and the king his realm.

*Glo.* My staff?—here, noble Henry, is my staff:
As willingly do I the same resign,
As e'er thy father Henry made it mine;
And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it,
As others would ambitiously receive it.
Farewell, good king: when I am dead and gone,
May honourable peace attend thy throne! [*Exit.*

*Q. Mar.* Why, now is Henry king, and Margaret queen;
And Humphrey, duke of Gloster, scarce himself,
That bears so shrewd a maim; two pulls at once,—
His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off;
This staff of honour raught:*—There let it stand,
Where it best fits to be, in Henry's hand.

*Suff.* Thus droops this lofty pine, and hangs his sprays;
Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest days.

*York.* Lords, let him go.—Please it your majesty,
This is the day appointed for the combat;
And ready are the appellant and defendant,
The armourer and his man, to enter the lists,
So please your highness to behold the fight.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord: for purposely therefore
Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried.

*K. Hen.* O' God's name, see the lists and all things fit;
Here let them end it, and God defend the right!

*York.* I never saw a fellow worse bested,†
Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant,
The servant of this armourer, my lords.

*Enter, on one side,* HORNER, *and his neighbours, drinking to him so much that he is drunk; and he enters bearing his staff with a sand-bag fastened to it; a drum before him; at the other side,* PETER, *with a drum and a similar staff, accompanied by 'prentices drinking to him.*

1 *Neigh.* Here, neighbour Horner, I drink to you in a cup of sack; and fear not, neighbour, you shall do well enough.

2 *Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup of charneco.‡

3 *Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double beer, neighbour: drink, and fear not your man.

*Hor.* Let it come, i' faith, and I'll pledge you all; And a fig for Peter.

1 *Pren.* Here, Peter, I drink to thee; and be not afraid.

2 *Pren.* Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy master; fight for credit of the 'prentices.

*Peter.* I thank you all: drink, and pray for me, I pray you; for, I think, I have taken my last draught in this world.—Here,

* Reached. † In a worse plight. ‡ A sort of sweet wine.

Robin, an if I die, I give thee my apron; and, Will, thou shalt have my hammer; and here, Tom, take all the money that I have.—O Lord, bless me, I pray God! for I am never able to deal with my master, he hath learnt so much fence already.

*Sal.* Come, leave your drinking, and fall to blows.—Sirrah, what's thy name?

*Peter.* Peter, forsooth.

*Sal.* Peter! what more?

*Peter.* Thump.

*Sal.* Thump! then see thou thump thy master well.

*Hor.* Masters, I am come hither, as it were, upon my man's instigation, to prove him a knave, and myself an honest man: and touching the duke of York,—will take my death, I never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the queen: And therefore, Peter, have at thee with a downright blow, as Bevis of Southampton fell upon Ascapart.

*York.* Despatch:—this knave's tongue begins to double.
Sound, trumpets, alarum to the combatants.

[*Alarum. They fight, and* PETER *strikes down his Master.*

*Hor.* Hold, Peter, hold! I confess, I confess treason. [*Dies.*

*York.* Take away his weapon:—Fellow,
Thank God, and the good wine in thy master's way.

*Peter.* O God! have I overcome mine enemies in this presence? O Peter, thou hast prevailed in right!

*K. Hen.* Go, take hence that traitor from our sight;
For, by his death, we do perceive his guilt:
And God, in justice, hath reveal'd to us
The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrongfully.—
Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—The same. A Street.*

*Enter* GLOSTER *and* SERVANTS, *in mourning-cloaks.*

*Glo.* Thus, sometimes, hath the brightest day a cloud;
And, after summer, evermore succeeds
Barren winter, with his wrathful nipping cold:
So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet.
Sirs, what's o'clock?

*Serv.* Ten, my lord.

*Glo.* Ten is the hour that was appointed me
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess:
Uneath* may she endure the flinty streets,
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.
Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind abrook
The abject people, gazing on thy face,
With envious† looks, still laughing at thy shame;
That erst did follow thy proud chariot wheels,
When thou didst ride in triumph through the streets.
But soft! I think she comes; and I'll prepare
My tear-stain'd eyes to see her miseries.

* Not easily. † Malicious.

*Enter the Duchess of* GLOSTER, *in a white sheet, with papers pinned upon her back, her feet bare, and a taper burning in her hand;* SIR JOHN STANLEY, *a* SHERIFF, *and Officers.*

*Serv.* So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff.
*Glo.* No, stir not, for your lives; let her pass by.
*Duch.* Come you, my lord, to see my open shame?
Now thou dost penance too. Look, how they gaze!
See, how the giddy multitude do point,
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee!
Ah, Gloster, hide thee from their hateful looks;
And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame,
And ban* thine enemies, both mine and thine.
*Glo.* Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief.
*Duch.* Ah, Gloster, teach me to forget myself:
For, whilst I think I am thy married wife,
And thou a prince, protector of this land,
Methinks, I should not thus be led along,
Mail'd up in shame,† with papers on my back;
And follow'd with a rabble, that rejoice
To see my tears, and hear my deep-fet‡ groans.
The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet;
And, when I start, the envious people laugh,
And bid me be advised how I tread.
Ah, Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke?
Trow'st thou, that e'er I'll look upon the world;
Or count them happy, that enjoy the sun?
No; dark shall be my light, and night my day;
To think upon my pomp, shall be my hell.
Sometime I'll say, I am duke Humphrey's wife;
And he a prince, and ruler of the land:
Yet so he ruled, and such a prince he was,
As he stood by, whilst I, his forlorn duchess,
Was made a wonder, and a pointing-stock,
To every idle rascal follower.
But be thou mild, and blush not at my shame,
Nor stir at nothing, till the axe of death
Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will.
For Suffolk,—he that can do all in all
With her, that hateth thee, and hates us all,—
And York, and impious Beaufort, that false priest,
Have all limed bushes to betray thy wings,
And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle thee:
But fear not thou, until thy foot be snared,
Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.
*Glo.* Ah, Nell, forbear; thou aimest all awry;
I must offend, before I be attainted:
And had I twenty times so many foes,
And each of them had twenty times their power,
All these could not procure me any scathe,§

* Curse.
† As a hawk *mailed*, bound in a cloth.
‡ Deep-fetched.
§ Harm, mischief.

So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeless.
Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach?
Why, yet thy scandal were not wiped away,
But I in danger for the breach of law.
Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell:
I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience;
These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

*Enter a* HERALD.

*Her.* I summon your grace to his maiesty's parliament, holden at Bury the first of this next month.

*Glo.* And my consent ne'er ask'd herein before!
This is close dealing.—Well, I will be there. [*Exit* HERALD.
My Nell, I take my leave:—and, master sheriff,
Let not her penance exceed the king's commission.

*Sher.* An't please your grace, here my commission stays:
And Sir John Stanley is appointed now
To take her with him to the Isle of Man.

*Glo.* Must you, Sir John, protect my lady here?

*Stan.* So am I given in charge, may't please your grace.

*Glo.* Entreat her not the worse, in that I pray
You use her well: the world may laugh again;*
And I may live to do you kindness, if
You do it her. And so, Sir John, farewell.

*Duch.* What gone, my lord; and bid me not farewell?

*Glo.* Witness my tears, I cannot stay to speak,
[*Exeunt* GLOSTER *and Servants.*

*Duch.* Art thou gone too? All comfort go with thee!
For none abides with me: my joy is—death;
Death, at whose name I oft have been afeard,
Because I wish'd this world's eternity.—
Stanley, I pr'ythee, go, and take me hence;
I care not whither, for I beg no favour,
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

*Stan.* Why, madam, that is to the Isle of Man;
There to be used according to your state.

*Duch.* That's bad enough, for I am but reproach:
And shall I then be used reproachfully?

*Stan.* Like to a duchess, and duke Humphrey's lady,
According to that state you shall be used.

*Duch.* Sheriff, farewell, and better than I fare;
Although thou hast been conduct† of my shame!

*Sher.* It is my office; and, madam, pardon me.

*Duch.* Ay, ay, farewell; thy office is discharged.—
Come, Stanley, shall we go?

*Stan.* Madam, your penance done, throw off this sheet,
And go we to attire you for our journey.

*Duch.* My shame will not be shifted with my sheet:
No, it will hang upon my richest robes,
And show itself, attire me how I can.
Go, lead the way; I long to see my prison. [*Exeunt.*

* May look again favourably on me. † For conductor.

# ACT III.

## *SCENE I.—The Abbey at Bury.*

*Enter to the Parliament,* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, CARDINAL BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK, YORK, BUCKINGHAM, *and others.*

*K. Hen.* I muse, my lord of Gloster is not come:
'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.
*Q. Mar.* Can you not see? or will you not observe
The strangeness of his alter'd countenance?
With what a majesty he bears himself;
How insolent of late he is become,
How proud, perémptory, and unlike himself?
We know the time, since he was mild and affable
And, if we did but glance a far-off look,
Immediately he was upon his knee,
That all the court admired him for submission.
But, meet him now, and, be it in the morn,
When every one will give the time of day,
He knits his brow, and shows an angry eye,
And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,
Disdaining duty that to us belongs.
Small curs are not regarded, when they grin,
But great men tremble, when the lion roars;
And Humphrey is no little man in England.
First, note, that he is near you in descent;
And should you fall, he is the next will mount.
Me seemeth then, it is no policy,—
Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears,
And his advantage following your decease,—
That he should come about your royal person,
Or be admitted to your highness' council.
By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts;
And, when he please to make commotion,
'Tis to be fear'd, they all will follow him.
Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted;
Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the garden,
And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.
The reverent care, I bear unto my lord,
Made me collect* these dangers in the duke.
If it be fond,† call it a woman's fear;
Which fear, if better reasons can supplant,
I will subscribe and say—I wrong'd the duke.
My lord of Suffolk,—Buckingham,—and York,—
Reprove my allegation, if you can;
Or else conclude my words effectual.

* Assemble by observation. † Foolish.

*Suf.* Well hath your highness seen into this duke;
And, had I first been put to speak my mind,
I think, I should have told your grace's tale.
The duchess, by his subornation,
Upon my life, began her devilish practices:
Or if he were not privy to those faults,
Yet, by reputing of his high descent*
(As next the king, he was successive heir)
And such high vaunts of his nobility,
Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick duchess,
By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall.
Smooth runs the water, where the brook is deep;
And in his simple show he harbours treason.
The fox barks not, when he would steal the lamb.
No, no, my sovereign; Gloster is a man
Unsounded yet, and full of deep deceit.
*Car.* Did he not, contrary to form of law,
Devise strange deaths for small offences done?
*York.* And did he not, in his protectorship,
Levy great sums of money through the realm,
For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it?
By means whereof, the towns each day revolted.
*Buck.* Tut! these are petty faults to faults unknown,
Which time will bring to light in smooth duke Humphrey.
*K. Hen.* My lords, at once: The care you have of us,
To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,
Is worthy praise: But shall I speak my conscience?
Our kinsman Gloster is as innocent
From meaning treason to our royal person,
As is the sucking lamb, or harmless dove:
The duke is virtuous, mild; and too well given,
To dream on evil, or to work my downfall.
*Q. Mar.* Ah, what's more dangerous than this fond affiance!
Seems he a dove? his feathers are but borrow'd,
For he's disposed as the hateful raven.
Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,
For he's inclined as are the ravenous wolves.
Who cannot steal a shape, that means deceit?
Take heed, my lord; the welfare of us all
Hangs on the cutting short that fraudful man.

*Enter* SOMERSET.

*Som.* All health unto my gracious sovereign!
*K. Hen.* Welcome, lord Somerset. What news from France?
*Som.* That all your interest in those territories
Is utterly bereft you; all is lost.
*K. Hen.* Cold news, lord Somerset: But God's will be done!
*York.* Cold news for me; for I had hopes of France,
As firmly as I hope for fertile England.
Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud,

* Valuing himself on his high descent.

And caterpillars eat my leaves away:
But I will remedy this gear ere long,
Or sell my title for a glorious grave. [*Aside.*

*Enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* All happiness unto my lord the king!
Pardon, my liege, that I have staid so long.
*Suf.* Nay, Gloster, know that thou art come too soon,
Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art:
I do arrest thee of high treason here.
*Glo.* Well, Suffolk, yet thou shalt not see me blush,
Nor change my countenance for this arrest;
A heart unspotted is not easily daunted.
The purest spring is not so free from mud,
As I am clear from treason to my sovereign:
Who can accuse me? wherein am I guilty?
*York.* 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took bribes of France,
And being protector, stayed the soldiers' pay;
By means whereof, his highness hath lost France.
*Glo.* Is it but thought so? What are they that think it?
I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay,
Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.
So help me God, as I have watch'd the night,
Ay, night by night,—in studying good for England!
That doit that e'er I wrested from the king,
Or any groat I hoarded to my use,
Be brought against me at my trial day!
No! many a pound of mine own proper store,
Because I would not tax the needy commons,
Have I dispursed to the garrisons,
And never ask'd for restitution.
*Car.* It serves you well, my lord, to say so much.
*Glo.* I say no more than truth, so help me God!
*York.* In your protectorship, you did devise
Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of,
That England was defamed by tyranny.
*Glo.* Why, 'tis well known, that whiles I was protector,
Pity was all the fault that was in me;
For I should melt at an offender's tears,
And lowly words were ransom for their fault.
Unless it were a bloody murderer,
Or foul felonious thief that fleeced poor passengers,
I never gave them condign punishment:
Murder, indeed, that bloody sin I tortured
Above the felon, or what trespass else.
*Suf.* My lord, these faults are easy,* quickly answer'd:
But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,
Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself.
I do arrest you in his highness' name;
And here commit you to my lord cardinal
To keep, until your further time of trial.

* For easily.

*K. Hen.* My lord of Gloster, 'tis my special hope,
That you will clear yourself from all suspects;
My conscience tells me, you are innocent.
*Glo.* Ah, gracious lord, these days are dangerous!
Virtue is choked with foul ambition,
And charity chased hence by rancour's hand;
Foul subornation is predominant,
And equity exiled your highness' land.
I know, their complot is to have my life;
And, if my death might make this island happy,
And prove the period of their tyranny,
I would expend it with all willingness:
But mine is made the prologue to their play:
For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,
Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.
Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,
And Suffolk's cloudy brow, his stormy hate;
Sharp Buckingham unburdens with his tongue
The envious load that lies upon his heart;
And dogged York, that reaches at the moon,
Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,
By false accuse* doth level at my life:—
And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest,
Causeless have laid disgraces on my head;
And, with your best endeavour, have stirr'd up
My liefest† liege to be mine enemy:—
Ay, all of you have laid your heads together;
Myself had notice of your conventicles.
I shall not want false witness to condemn me,
Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt;
The ancient proverb will be well affected,—
A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.
*Car.* My liege, his railing is intolerable:
If those that care to keep your royal person
From treason's secret knife, and traitor's rage,
Be thus upbraided, chid, and rated at,
And the offender granted scope of speech,
'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.
*Suf.* Hath he not twit our sovereign lady here,
With ignominious words, though clerkly couch'd,
As if she had suborned some to swear
False allegations to o'erthrow his state?
*Q. Mar.* But I can give the loser leave to chide.
*Glo.* Far truer spoke than meant: I lose indeed;—
Beshrew the winners, for they play'd me false!
And well such losers may have leave to speak.
*Buck.* He'll wrest the sense, and hold us here all day;—
Lord cardinal, he is your prisoner.
*Car.* Sirs, take away the duke, and guard him sure.
*Glo.* Ah, thus king Henry throws away his crutch,
Before his legs be firm to bear the body:

* Accusation. † Dearest

Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side,
And wolves are gnarling who shall gnaw thee first.
Ah, that my fear were false! ah, that it were!
For, good king Henry, thy decay I fear.
[*Exeunt Attendants, with* GLOSTER.

*K. Hen.* My lords, what to your wisdoms seemeth best,
Do, or undo, as if ourself were here.

*Q. Mar.* What, will your highness leave the parliament?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Margaret, my heart is drown'd with grief,
Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes;
My body round engirt with misery;
For what's more miserable than discontent?—
Ah, uncle Humphrey! in thy face I see
The map of honour, truth, and loyalty;
And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to come,
That e'er I proved thee false, or fear'd thy faith.
What low'ring star now envies thy estate,
That these great lords, and Margaret, our queen,
Do seek subversion of thy harmless life?
Thou never didst them wrong, nor no man wrong;
And as the butcher takes away the calf,
And binds the wretch, and beats it when it strays,
Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house;
Even so, remorseless have they borne him hence.
And as the dam runs lowing up and down,
Looking the way her harmless young one went,
And can do nought but wail her darling's loss;
Even so myself bewails good Gloster's case,
With sad unhelpful tears; and with dimm'd eyes
Look after him, and cannot do him good;
So mighty are his vowed enemies.
His fortunes I will weep; and 'twixt each groan,
Say—*Who's a traitor?* Gloster *he is none.* [*Exit.*

*Q. Mar.* Free* lords, cold snow melts with the sun's hot beams.
Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,
Too full of foolish pity; and Gloster's show
Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile
With sorrow snares relenting passengers;
Or as the snake, roll'd in a flowering bank,
With shining checker'd slough, doth sting a child,
That, for the beauty, thinks it excellent.
Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I
(And yet, herein, I judge mine own wit good),
This Gloster should be quickly rid the world,
To rid us from the fear we have of him.

*Car.* That he should die, is worthy policy;
But yet we want a colour for his death:
'Tis meet, he be condemn'd by course of law.

*Suf.* But, in my mind, that were no policy:
The king will labour still to save his life,
The commons haply rise to save his life;

* Liberal-minded.

And yet we have but trivial argument,
More than mistrust, that shows him worthy death.
*York.* So that, by this, you would not have him die.
*Suf.* Ah, York, no man alive so fain as I.
*York.* 'Tis York that hath more reason for his death.—
But, my lord Cardinal, and you, my lord of Suffolk,—
Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,—
Wer't not all one, an empty eagle were set
To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,
As place duke Humphrey for the king's protector?
*Q. Mar.* So the poor chicken should be sure of death.
*Suf.* Madam, 'tis true: And wer't not madness then,
To make the fox surveyor of the fold?
Who being accused a crafty murderer,
His guilt should be but idly posted over,
Because his purpose is not executed.
No; let him die, in that he is a fox,
By nature proved an enemy to the flock,
Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood;
As Humphrey, proved by reasons, to my liege,
And do not stand on quillets, how to slay him:
Be it by gins, by snares, by subtlety,
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,
So he be dead; for that is good deceit
Which mates* him first, that first intends deceit.
*Q. Mar.* Thrice noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely spoke.
*Suf.* Not resolute, except so much were done;
For things are often spoke, and seldom meant:
But, that my heart accordeth with my tongue,—
Seeing the deed is meritorious,
And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,—
Say but the word, and I will be his priest.†
*Car.* But I would have him dead, my lord of Suffolk,
Ere you can take due orders for a priest:
Say, you consent, and censure well‡ the deed,
And I'll provide his executioner,
I tender so the safety of my liege.
*Suf.* Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.
*Q. Mar.* And so say I.
*York.* And I: and now we three have spoke it,
It skills not greatly § who impugns our doom.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Great lords, from Ireland am I come amain,
To signify—that rebels there are up,
And put the Englishmen unto the sword:
Send succours, lords, and stop the rage betime,
Before the wound do grow incurable;
For, being green, there is great hope of help.

* Mates, checks, as at chess.
† The last man with him.
‡ Approve of.
§ It is of no importance.

*Car.* A breach, that craves a quick expedient* stop!
What counsel give you in this weighty cause?
*York.* That Somerset be sent as regent thither:
'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd;
Witness the fortune he hath had in France.
*Som.* If York, with all his far-fet† policy,
Had been the regent there instead of me,
He never would have staid in France so long.
*York.* No, not to lose it all, as thou hast done:
I rather would have lost my life betimes,
Than bring a burden of dishonour home,
By staying there so long, till all were lost.
Show me one scar character'd on thy skin:
Men's flesh preserved so whole do seldom win.
*Q. Mar.* Nay then, this spark will prove a raging fire,
If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with:
No more, good York;—sweet Somerset, be still;—
Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent there,
Might happily have proved far worse than his.
*York.* What, worse than naught? nay, then a shame take all!
*Som.* And, in the number, thee, that wishest shame!
*Car.* My lord of York, try what your fortune is.
The uncivil kernes of Ireland are in arms,
And temper clay with blood of Englishmen:
To Ireland will you lead a band of men,
Collected choicely, from each county some,
And try your hap against the Irishmen?
*York.* I will, my lord, so please his majesty.
*Suf.* Why, our authority is his consent;
And, what we do establish, he confirms:
Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand.
*York.* I am content: Provide me soldiers, lords,
Whiles I take order for mine own affairs.
*Suf.* A charge, lord York, that I will see perform'd.
But now return we to the false duke Humphrey.
*Car.* No more of him; for I will deal with him.
That, henceforth he shall trouble us no more.
And so break off; the day is almost spent:
Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event.
*York.* My lord of Suffolk, within fourteen days,
At Bristol I expect my soldiers;
For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.
*Suf.* I'll see it truly done, my lord of York.
[*Exeunt all but* YORK.

*York.* Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts.
And change misdoubt to resolution:
Be that thou hop'st to be; or what thou art
Resign to death, it is not worth the enjoying:
Let pale-faced fear keep with the mean-born man,
And find no harbour in a royal heart.

* Expeditious. † Far-fetched.

Faster than spring-time showers, comes thought on thought;
And not a thought, but thinks on dignity.
My brain, more busy than the labouring spider,
Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies.
Well, nobles, well, it's politicly done,
To send me packing with a host of men:
I fear me, you but warm the starved snake,
Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts.
'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me:
I take it kindly; yet, be well assured
You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands.
Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band.
I will stir up in England some black storm,
Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven, or hell:
And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage
Until the golden circuit on my head,
Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,
Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw.*
And, for a minister of my intent,
I have seduced a head-strong Kentishman,
John Cade of Ashford,
To make commotion, as full well he can,
Under the title of John Mortimer.
In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade
Oppose himself against a troop of kernes;†
And fought so long, till that his thighs with darts
Were almost like a sharp quill'd porpentine:‡
And, in the end being rescued, I have seen him
Caper upright like a wild Morisco,§
Shaking the bloody darts, as he his bells.
Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty kerne,
Hath he conversed with the enemy;
And undiscover'd come to me again,
And given me notice of their villanies.
This devil here shall be my substitute;
For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,
In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble:
By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,
How they affect the house and claim of York,
Say, he be taken, rack'd, and tortured:
I know, no pain, they can inflict upon him,
Will make him say—I moved him to those arms.
Say, that he thrive, (as 'tis great like he will,)
Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength,
And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd;
For, Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,
And Henry put apart, the next for me. [*Exit.*

* A violent gust of wind.
‡ Porcupine.
† Light-armed soldiers.
§ Morris dancer.

*SCENE II.—Bury. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter certain* MURDERERS, *hastily.*

1 *Mur.* Run to my lord of Suffolk; let him know,
We have dispatch'd the duke, as he commanded.
2 *Mur.* O, that it were to do!—What have we done?
Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

*Enter* SUFFOLK.

1 *Mur.* Here comes my Lord.
*Suf.* Now, Sirs, have you
Despatch'd this thing?
1 *Mur.* Ay, my good lord, he's dead.
*Suf.* Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house;
I will reward you for this venturous deed.
The king and all the peers are here at hand:—
Have you laid fair the bed? are all things well,
According as I gave directions?
1 *Mur.* 'Tis, my good lord.
*Suf.* Away, be gone! [*Exeunt* MURDERERS.

*Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, *Cardinal* BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, *Lords, and others.*

*K. Hen.* Go, call our uncle to our presence straight:
Say, we intend to try his grace to-day,
If he be guilty, as 'tis published.
*Suf.* I'll call him presently, my noble lord. [*Exit.*
*K. Hen.* Lords, take your places;—And, I pray you all,
Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloster,
Than from true evidence, of good esteem,
He be approved in practice culpable.
*Q. Mar.* God forbid any malice should prevail,
That faultless may condemn a nobleman!
Pray God, he may acquit him of suspicion!
*K. Hen.* I thank thee, Margaret; these words content me much.—

*Re-enter* SUFFOLK.

How now? why look'st thou pale? why tremblest thou?
Where is our uncle? what is the matter, Suffolk?
*Suff.* Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloster is dead.
*Q. Mar.* Marry, God forefend!
*Car.* God's secret judgment:—I did dream to-night,
The duke was dumb, and could not speak a word.
[*The King swoons.*
*Q. Mar.* How fares my lord?—Help, lords! the king is dead.
*Som.* Rear up his body; wring him by the nose.
*Q. Mar.* Run, go, help, help!—O, Henry, ope thine eyes!
*Suff.* He doth revive again;—Madam, be patient.
*K. Hen.* O heavenly God!
*Q. Mar.* How fares my gracious lord?
*Suff.* Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry, comfort!

*K. Hen.* What, doth my lord of Suffolk comfort me?
Came he right now* to sing a raven's note,
Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;
And thinks he, that the chirping of a wren,
By crying comfort from a hollow breast,
Can chase away the first-conceived sound?
Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words,
Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say;
Their touch affrights me, as a serpent's sting.
Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!
Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny
Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world.
Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding:—
Yet do not go away:—Come, basilisk,
And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight:
For in the shade of death I shall find joy;
In life, but double death, now Gloster's dead.

*Q. Mar.* Why do you rate my lord of Suffolk thus?
Although the duke was enemy to him,
Yet he, most Christian-like, laments his death:
And for myself,—foe as he was to me,
Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans,
Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,
I would be blind with weeping, sick with groans,
Look pale as primrose, with blood-drinking sighs,
And all to have the noble duke alive.
What know I how the world may deem of me?
For it is known, we were but hollow friends;
It may be judged, I made the duke away:
So shall my name with slander's tongue be wounded,
And princes' courts be filled with my reproach.
This get I by his death: Ah me, unhappy!
To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!

*K. Hen.* Ah, woe is me for Gloster, wretched man!

*Q. Mar.* Be woe for me, more wretched than he is.
What, dost thou turn away, and hide thy face?
I am no loathsome leper, look on me.
What, art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?
Be poisonous too, and kill thy forlorn queen.
Is all thy comfort shut in Gloster's tomb?
Why, then dame Margaret was ne'er thy joy:
Erect his statue then, and worship it,
And make my image but an alehouse sign.
Was I, for this, nigh wreck'd upon the sea;
And twice by awkward wind from England's bank
Drove back again unto my native clime?
What boded this, but well-forewarning wind
Did seem to say,—Seek not a scorpion's nest,
Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?
What did I then, but cursed the gentle gusts,
And he that loosed them from their brazen caves;

* Just now.

And bid them blow towards England's blessed shore,
Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?
Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,
But left that hateful office unto thee:
The pretty vaulting sea refused to drown me;
Knowing, that thou would'st have me drown'd on shore,
With tears as salt as sea through thy unkindness:
The splitting rocks cow'rd in the sinking sands,
And would not dash me with their ragged sides;
Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,
Might in thy palace perish* Margaret.
As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,
When from the shore the tempest beat us back,
I stood upon the hatches in the storm:
And when the dusky sky began to rob
My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view,
I took a costly jewel from my neck,—
A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,—
And threw it towards thy land;—the sea received it;
And so, I wish'd, thy body might my heart:
And even with this, I lost fair England's view,
And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart;
And call'd them blind and dusky spectacles,
For losing ken of Albion's wished coast.
How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue
(The agent of thy foul inconstancy,)
To sit and witch me, as Ascanius did,
When he to madding Dido would unfold
His father's acts, commenced in burning Troy?
Am I not witch'd like her? or thou not false like him?
Ah me, I can no more! Die, Margaret!
For Henry weeps, that thou dost live so long.

*Noise within. Enter* WARWICK *and* SALISBURY. *The Commons press to the door.*

*War.* It is reported, mighty sovereign,
That good duke Humphrey traitorously is murder'd
By Suffolk and the cardinal Beaufort's means,
The commons, like an angry hive of bees,
That want their leader, scatter up and down,
And care not who they sting in his revenge.
Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny,
Until they hear the order of his death.

*K. Hen.* That he is dead, good Warwick, 'tis too true;
But how he died, God knows, not Henry:
Enter his chamber, view his breathless corpse,
And comment then upon his sudden death.

*War.* That I shall do, my liege:—Stay, Salisbury,
With the rude multitude, till I return.

[WARWICK *goes into an inner room, and* SALISBURY *retires.*

* Destroy.

*K. Hen.* O thou that judgest all things, stay my thoughts:
My thoughts, that labour to persuade my soul,
Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's life!
If my suspect be false, forgive me, God;
For judgment only doth belong to thee!
Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips
With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears;
To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling:
But all in vain are these mean obsequies;
And, to survey his dead and earthly image,
What were it but to make my sorrow greater?

*The folding-doors of an inner Chamber are thrown open, and* GLOSTER *is discovered dead in his bed:* WARWICK *and others standing by it.*

*War.* Come hither, gracious sovereign, view this body.
*K. Hen.* That is to see how deep my grave is made:
For, with his soul, fled all my worldly solace;
For seeing him, I see my life in death.*
*War.* As surely as my soul intends to live
With that dread King, that took our state upon him
To free us from his Father's wrathful curse,
I do believe that violent hands were laid
Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke.
*Suff.* A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue!
What instance gives lord Warwick for his vow?
*War.* See, how the blood is settled in his face!
Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,†
Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale, and bloodless,
Being all descended to the labouring heart;
Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,
Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy;
Which with the heart there cools and ne'er returneth
To blush and beautify the cheek again.
But, see, his face is black, and full of blood;
His eye-balls farther out than when he lived,
Staring full ghastly like a strangled man:
His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretch'd with struggling;
His hands abroad display'd,‡ as one that grasp'd
And tugg'd for life, and was by strength subdued.
Look, on the sheets his hair, you see, is sticking;
His well-proportioned beard made rough and rugged,
Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodged.
It cannot be, but he was murder'd here;
The least of all these signs were probable.
*Suff.* Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death?
Myself, and Beaufort, had him in protection;
And we, I hope, Sir, are no murderers.

* *I. e.* I see my life destroyed or endangered by his death.
† Legitimately deceased corpse.
‡ The fingers widely distended.

*War.* But both of you were vow'd duke Humphrey's foes;
And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep:
'Tis like, you would not feast him like a friend;
And 'tis well seen he found an enemy.
*Q. Mar.* Then you, belike, suspect these noblemen
As guilty of duke Humphrey's timeless death.
*War.* Who finds the heifer dead, and bleeding fresh,
And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,
But will suspect, 'twas he that made the slaughter?
Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,
But may imagine how the bird was dead,
Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak?
Even so suspicious is this tragedy.
*Q. Mar.* Are you the butcher, Suffolk; where's your knife?
Is Beaufort term'd a kite? where are his talons?
*Suff.* I wear no knife, to slaughter sleeping men;
But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,
That shall be scoured in his rancorous heart,
That slanders me with murder's crimson badge:
Say, if thou darest, proud lord of Warwickshire,
That I am faulty in duke Humphrey's death.
[*Exeunt* CARDINAL, SOMERSET, *and others.*
*War.* What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare him?
*Q. Mar.* He dares not calm his contumelious spirit,
Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,
Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.
*War.* Madam, be still; with reverence may I say;
For every word, you speak in his behalf,
Is slander to your royal dignity.
*Suff.* Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour!
If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,
Thy mother took unto her blameful bed
Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock
Was graft with crab-tree slip; whose fruit thou art,
And never of the Nevils' noble race.
*War.* But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,
And I should rob the deathsman of his fee,
Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames;
And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild,
I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee,
Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech,
And say—it was thy mother that thou mean'st,
That thou thyself wast born in bastardy:
And, after all this fearful homage done,
Give thee thy hire, and send thy soul to hell,
Pernicious bloodsucker of sleeping men!
*Suff.* Thou shalt be waking, while I shed thy blood,
If from this presence thou dar'st go with me.
*War.* Away even now, or I will drag thee hence:
Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee,
And do some service to duke Humphrey's ghost.
[*Exeunt* SUFFOLK *and* WARWICK.

*K. Hen.* What stronger breast-plate than a heart untainted?
Thrice is he arm'd, that hath his quarrel just;
And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted. [*A noise within.*
*Q. Mar.* What noise is this?

*Re-enter* SUFFOLK *and* WARWICK, *with their weapons drawn.*

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, lords? your wrathful weapons drawn
Here in our presence? dare you be so bold?—
Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?
*Suff.* The traitorous Warwick, with the men of Bury,
Set all upon me, mighty sovereign.

*Noise of a crowd within. Re-enter* SALISBURY.

*Sal.* Sirs, stand apart; the king shall know your mind.—
[*Speaking to those within*
Dread lord, the commons send you word by me,
Unless false Suffolk straight be done to death,
Or banished fair England's territories,
They will by violence tear him from your palace,
And torture him with grievous ling'ring death.
They say, by him the good duke Humphrey died;
They say, in him they fear your highness' death;
And mere instinct of love, and loyalty,—
Free from a stubborn opposite intent,
As being thought to contradict your liking,—
Makes them thus forward in his banishment.
They say, in care of your most royal person,
That, if your highness should intend to sleep,
And charge—that no man should disturb your rest,
In pain of your dislike, or pain of death;
Yet notwithstanding such a strait edict,
Were there a serpent seen, with forked tongue,
That slily glided towards your majesty,
It were but necessary, you were waked;
Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,
The mortal worm* might make the sleep eternal:
And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,
That they will guard you, whe'r you will, or no,
From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is;
With whose envenomed and fatal sting,
Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,
They say, is shamefully bereft of life.
Commons. [*Within.*] An answer from the king, my lord of Salisbury.
*Suf.* 'Tis like, the commons, rude unpolish'd hinds,
Could send such message to their sovereign:
But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,
To show how quaint† an orator you are:

* Deadly serpent. † Dexterous.

But all the honour Salisbury hath won,
Is—that he was the lord ambassador,
Sent from a sort* of tinkers to the king.

Commons. [*Within.*] An answer from the king, or we'll all break in.

*K. Hen.* Go, Salisbury, and tell them all from me,
I thank them for their tender loving care:
And had I not been 'cited so by them,
Yet did I purpose as they do entreat;
For sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy
Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means.
And therefore,—by His majesty I swear,
Whose far unworthy deputy I am,—
He shall not breathe infection in this air
But three days longer, on the pain of death. [*Exit* SALISBURY.

*Q. Mar.* O Henry, let me plead for gentle Suffolk!

*K. Hen.* Ungentle queen, to call him gentle Suffolk.
No more, I say; if thou dost plead for him,
Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath.
Had I but said, I would have kept my word;
But, when I swear, it is irrevocable:—
If, after three days space, thou here be'st found
On any ground that I am ruler of,
The world shall not be ransom for thy life.—
Come, Warwick, come, good Warwick, go with me;
I have great matters to impart to thee.

[*Exeunt* KING HENRY, WARWICK, *Lords, &c.*

*Q. Mar.* Mischance, and sorrow, go along with you!
Heart's discontent, and sour affliction,
Be playfellows to keep you company!
There's two of you; the devil make a third!
And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!

*Suf.* Cease, gentle queen, these execrations,
And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

*Q. Mar.* Fie, coward woman, and soft-hearted wretch!
Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemies?

*Suf.* A plague upon them! wherefore should I curse them?
Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's groan,
I would invent as bitter-searching terms,
As curst, as harsh, and horrible to hear,
Deliver'd strongly through my fixed teeth,
With full as many signs of deadly hate,
As lean-faced Envy in her loathsome cave:
My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words·
Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint;
My hair be fix'd on end, as one distract;
Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban:
And even now my burden'd heart would break,
Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink!
Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they taste!
Their sweetest shade, a grove of cypress trees!

* A company.

Their chiefest prospect, murdering basilisks!
Their softest touch, as smart as lizards' stings!
Their music, frightful as the serpent's hiss;
And boding screech-owls make the concert full!
All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell—

*Q. Mar.* Enough, sweet Suffolk; thou torment'st thyself;
And these dread curses—like the sun 'gainst glass,
Or like an overcharged gun,—recoil,
And turn the force of them upon thyself.

*Suf.* You bade me ban,* and will you bid me leave?
Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from,
Well could I curse away a winter's night,
Though standing naked on a mountain top,
Where biting cold would never let grass grow,
And think it but a minute spent in sport.

*Q. Mar.* O, let me entreat thee, cease! Give me thy hand,
That I may dew it with my mournful tears;
Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,
To wash away my woeful monuments.
O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand; [*Kisses his hand.*
That thou might'st think upon these† by the seal,
Through whom a thousand sighs are breath'd for thee!
So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief;
'Tis but surmised whilst thou art standing by,
As one that surfeits thinking on a want.
I will repeal thee, or, be well assured,
Adventure to be banished myself:
And banished I am, if but from thee.
Go, speak not to me; even now be gone.—
O, go not yet!—Even thus two friends condemn'd
Embrace, and kiss, and take ten thousand leaves,
Loather a hundred times to part than die.
Yet now farewell; and farewell life with thee!

*Suf.* Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banished,
Once by the king, and three times thrice by thee.
'Tis not the land I care for; wert thou hence;
A wilderness is populous enough,
So Suffolk had thy heavenly company:
For where thou art, there is the world itself,
With every several pleasure in the world;
And where thou art not, desolation.
I can no more:—Live thou to joy thy life;
Myself no joy in naught, but that thou livest.

*Enter* VAUX.

*Q. Mar.* Whither goes Vaux so fast? What news, I pry'thee?

*Vaux.* To signify unto his majesty,
That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death:
For suddenly a grievous sickness took him,
That makes him gasp and stare, and catch the air,
Blaspheming God, and cursing men on earth.

* Curse. † These lips.

Sometime, he talks as if duke Humphrey's ghost
Were by his side: sometime, he calls the king
And whispers to his pillow, as to him,
The secrets of his overcharged soul:
And I am sent to tell his majesty,
That even now he cries aloud for him.

*Q. Mar.* Go, tell this heavy message to the king. [*Exit* VAUX.
Ah me! what is this world? What news are these?
But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,
Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?
Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,
And with the southern clouds contend in tears;
Theirs for the earth's increase, mine for my sorrows?
Now, get thee hence: the king thou know'st is coming;
If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.

*Suf.* If I depart from thee, I cannot live:
And in thy sight to die, what were it else,
But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap?
Here could I breathe my soul into the air,
As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe,
Dying with mother's dug between its lips:
Where,* from thy sight, I should be raging mad,
And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes.
To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;
So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,
Or I should breathe it so into thy body,
And then it lived in sweet Elysium.
To die by thee, were but to die in jest;
From thee to die, were torture more than death:
O, let me stay, befall what may befall.

*Q. Mar.* Away! Though parting be a fretful corrosive,
It is applied to a deathful wound.
To France, sweet Suffolk: Let me hear from thee;
For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,
I'll have an Iris that shall find you out.

*Suf.* I go.

*Q. Mar.* And take my heart with thee.

*Suf.* A jewel lock'd into the woeful'st cask
That ever did contain a thing of worth.
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we:
This way fall I to death.

*Q. Mar.* This way for me. [*Exeunt severally.*

*SCENE III.—London.* CARDINAL BEAUFORT'S *Bedchamber.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, SALISBURY, WARWICK, *and others. The Cardinal in bed; Attendants with him.*

*K. Hen.* How fares my lord? Speak, Beaufort, to thy sovereign.

*Car.* If thou be'st death, I'll give thee England's treasure,
Enough to purchase such another island,

* Whereas.

So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.
*K. Hen.* Ah, what a sign it is of evil life,
When death's approach is seen so terrible!
*War.* Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks to thee.
*Car.* Bring me unto my trial when you will.
Died he not in his bed? Where should he die?
Can I make men live, whe'r they will or no?
O! torture me no more, I will confess.—
Alive again? Then show me where he is;
I'll give a thousand pounds to look upon him.—
He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.—
Comb down his hair; look! look! it stands upright,
Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul!—
Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary
Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.
*K. Hen.* O thou eternal mover of the heavens,
Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch!
O, beat away the busy meddling fiend,
That lays strong siege upon this wretch's soul,
And from his bosom purge this black despair!
*War.* See, how the pangs of death do make him grin.
*Sal.* Disturb him not, let him pass peaceably.
*K. Hen.* Peace to his soul, if God's pleasure be!
Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,
Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.—
He dies, and makes no sign; O God, forgive him!
*War.* So bad a death argues a monstrous life.
*K. Hen.* Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.—
Close up his eyes, and draw the curtain close;
And let us all to meditation. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT IV.

### *SCENE I.—Kent. The Sea-shore near Dover.*

*Firing heard at Sea.—Then enter from a Boat, a* CAPTAIN, *a* MASTER, *a* MASTER'S-MATE, WALTER WHITMORE, *and others; with them* SUFFOLK, *and other Gentlemen, Prisoners*

*Cap.* The gaudy, blabbing, and remorseful* day
Is crept into the bosom of the sea;
And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades
That drag the tragic melancholy night;
Who with their drowsy, slow, and flagging wings
Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty jaws
Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.
Therefore, bring forth the soldiers of our prize;
For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs,
Here shall they make their ransom on the sand,

* Pitiful.

Or with their blood stain this discolour'd shore.—
Master, this prisoner freely give I thee:—
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this:—
The other [*Pointing to Suffolk.*] Walter Whitmore, is thy share.
1 *Gent.* What is my ransom, master? Let me know.
*Mast.* A thousand crowns, or else lay down your head.
*Mate.* And so much shall you give, or off goes yours.
*Cap.* What, think you much to pay two thousand crowns,
And bear the name and port of gentlemen?—
Cut both the villains' throats;—for die you shall;
The lives of those which we have lost in fight,
Cannot be counterpoised with such a petty sum.
1 *Gent.* I'll give it, Sir; and therefore spare my life.
2 *Gent.* And so will I, and write home for it straight.
*Whit.* I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard,
And therefore, to revenge it, shalt thou die; [*To* SUFFOLK.
And so should these, if I might have my will.
*Cap.* Be not so rash; take ransom, let him live.
*Suf.* Look on my George, I am a gentleman;
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.
*Whit.* And so am I; my name is Walter Whitmore.
How now? Why start'st thou? What, doth death affright?
*Suf.* Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is death.
A cunning man did calculate my birth,
And told me—that by *Water* I should die:
Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded;
Thy name is *Gualtier*, being rightly sounded.
Whit. *Gualtier*, or *Walter*, which it is, I care not;
Ne'er yet did base dishonour blur our name,
But with our sword we wiped away the blot;
Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,
Broke be my sword, my arms torn and defaced,
And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!
[*Lays hold on* SUFFOLK.
*Suf.* Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is a prince,
The duke of Suffolk, William de la Poole.
*Whit.* The duke of Suffolk, muffled up in rags!
*Suf.* Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke:
Jove sometime went disguised, and why not I?
*Cap.* But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.
*Suf.* Obscure and lowly swain, king Henry's blood,
The honourable blood of Lancaster,
Must not be shed by such a jaded groom,*
Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand, and held my stirrup?
Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule,
And thought thee happy when I shook my head?
How often hast thou waited at my cup,
Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,
When I have feasted with Queen Margaret?
Remember it, and let it make thee crest-fallen;
Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride:†

* A low fellow. † Pride born too soon.

How in our voiding lobby hast thou stood,
And duly waited for my coming forth?
This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,
And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue.
*Whit.* Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?
*Cap.* First let my words stab him, as he hath me.
*Suf.* Base slave! thy words are blunt, and so art thou.
*Cap.* Convey him hence, and on our long-boat's side
Strike off his head.
*Suf.* Thou dar'st not for thy own.
*Cap.* Yes, Poole.
*Suf.* Poole?
*Cap.* Poole? Sir Poole? lord?
Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and dirt
Troubles the silver spring where England drinks.
Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth,
For swallowing the treasure of the realm:
Thy lips, that kiss'd the queen, shall sweep the ground;
And thou, that smil'dst at good duke Humphrey's death,
Against the senseless winds shall grin in vain,
Who, in contempt, shall hiss at thee again:
And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,
For daring to affy * a mighty lord
Unto the daughter of a worthless king,
Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.
By devilish policy art thou grown great,
And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorged
With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart.
By thee Anjou and Maine were sold to France:
The false revolting Normans, thorough thee,
Disdain to call us lord; and Picardy
Hath slain our governors, surprised our forts,
And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home.
The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,—
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in vain;
As hating thee, are rising up in arms:
And now the house of York—thrust from the crown,
By shameful murder of a guiltless king,
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,—
Burns with revenging fire; whose hopeful colours
Advance our half-faced sun, striving to shine,
Under the which is writ—*Invitis nubibus.*
The commons here in Kent are up in arms:
And, to conclude, reproach, and beggary,
Is crept into the palace of our king,
And all by thee:—Away! convey him hence.
*Suf.* O that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder
Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges!
Small things make base men proud: this villain here,
Being captain of a pinnace, † threatens more
Than Burgulus the strong Illyrian pirate.

* To betroth. † A ship of small burden.

Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob beehives.
It is impossible that I should die
By such a lowly vassal as thyself.
Thy words move rage, and not remorse in me:
I go of message from the queen to France;
I charge thee, waft me safely cross the channel.

*Cap.* Walter,——

*Whit.* Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death

Suf. *Gelidus timor occupat artus*:—'Tis thee I fear.

*Whit.* Thou shalt have cause to fear, before I leave thee.
What, are ye daunted now? Now will ye stoop?

1 *Gent.* My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him fair.

*Suf.* Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,
Used to command, untaught to plead for favour.
Far be it, we should honour such as these
With humble suit: no, rather let my head
Stoop to the block, than these knees bow to any,
Save to the God of heaven, and to my king;
And sooner dance upon a bloody pole,
Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.
True nobility is exempt from fear:—
More can I bear than you dare execute.

*Cap.* Hale him away, and let him talk no more.

*Suf.* Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can,
That this my death may never be forgot!
Great men oft die by vile bezonians:*
A Roman sworder and banditto slave,
Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand
Stabb'd Julius Cæsar; savage islanders,
Pompey the great: and Suffolk dies by pirates.

[*Exit* SUF. *with* WHITMORE *and others.*

*Cap.* And as for these whose ransom we have set,
It is our pleasure, one of them depart:—
Therefore come you with us, and let him go.

[*Exeunt all but the first* GENTLEMAN.

*Re-enter* WHITMORE, *with* SUFFOLK'S *Body.*

*Whit.* There let his head and lifeless body lie,
Until the queen his mistress bury it. [*Exit.*

1 *Gent.* O barbarous and bloody spectacle!
His body will I bear unto the king:
If he revenge it not, yet will his friends;
So will the queen, that living held him dear.

[*Exit with the Body.*

## *SCENE II. Blackheath.*

*Enter* GEORGE BEVIS *and* JOHN HOLLAND.

*Geo.* Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a lath; they have been up these two days.

* *Bisognosi*, low, needy men.

*John.* They have the more need to sleep now then.

*Geo.* I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to dress the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

*John.* So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say, it was never merry world in England, since gentlemen came up.*

*Geo.* O miserable age! Virtue is not regarded in handycraftsmen.

*John.* The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

*Geo.* Nay more, the king's council are no good workmen.

*John.* True: and yet it is said,—Labour in thy vocation: which is as much to say, as,—let the magistrates be labouring men: and therefore should we be magistrates.

*Geo.* Thou hast hit it: for there's no better sign of a brave mind, than a hard hand.

*John.* I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham;—

*Geo.* He shall have the skins of our enemies, to make dog's leather of.

*John.* And Dick the butcher,—

*Geo.* Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf.

*John.* And Smith the weaver:—

Geo. *Argo*, their thread of life is spun.

*John.* Come, come, let's fall in with them.

*Drum—Enter* CADE, DICK *the Butcher*, SMITH *the Weaver; and others in great number.*

*Cade.* We John Cade, so term'd of our supposed father,——

*Dick.* Or rather, of stealing a cade† of herrings. [*Aside.*

*Cade.*—for our enemies shall fall‡ before us, inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes,—Command silence.

*Dick.* Silence!

*Cade.* My father was a Mortimer,—

*Dick.* He was an honest man, and a good bricklayer. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* My mother a Plantagenet,—

*Dick.* I knew her well, she was a midwife. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* My wife descended of the Lacies,—

*Dick.* She was, indeed, a pedlar's daughter, and sold many laces. [*Aside.*

*Smith.* But, now of late, not able to travel with her furred pack,§ she washes bucks here at home. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Therefore am I of an honourable house.

*Dick.* Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there was he born, under a hedge; for his father had never a house, but the cage. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Valiant I am.

*Smith.* 'A must needs; for beggary is valiant. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* I am able to endure much.

*Dick.* No question of that; for I have seen him whipp'd three market days together. [*Aside.*

* Came into fashion. † A barrel.
‡ *Cadere*, to fall. § Wallet.

*Cade.* I fear neither sword nor fire.

*Smith.* He need not fear the sword, his coat is of proof.* [*Aside.*

*Dick.* But, methinks, he should stand in fear of fire, being burnt i' the hand for stealing of sheep. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* Be brave then; for your captain is brave, and vows reformation. There shall be, in England, seven halfpenny loaves sold for a penny: the three-hoop'd pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony, to drink small beer: all the realm shall be in common, and in Cheapside shall my palfry go to grass. And, when I am king (as king I will be)—

*All.* God save your majesty!

*Cade.* I thank you, good people:—There shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score; and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worship me their lord.

*Dick.* The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

*Cade.* Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? That parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say, the bee stings: but I say, 'tis the bee's-wax: for I did but seal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since. How now? Who's there?

*Enter some, bringing in the* CLERK *of Chatham.*

*Smith.* The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read, and cast accompt.

*Cade.* O monstrous!

*Smith.* We took him setting of boys' copies.

*Cade.* Here's a villain!

*Smith.* H'as a book in his pocket, with red letters in't.

*Cade.* Nay, then he is a conjurer.

*Dick.* Nay, he can make obligations,† and write court-hand.

*Cade.* I am sorry for't: the man is a proper man, on mine honour; unless I find him guilty, he shall not die.—Come hither, sirrah, I must examine thee: What is thy name?

*Clerk.* Emmanuel.

*Dick.* They use to write it on the top of letters:‡—'Twill go hard with you.

*Cade.* Let me alone:—Dost thou use to write thy name? or hast thou a mark to thyself, like a honest plain-dealing man?

*Clerk.* Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up, that I can write my name.

*All.* He hath confess'd: away with him; he's a villain, and a traitor.

*Cade.* Away with him, I say: hang him with his pen and ink-horn about his neck. [*Exeunt some with the* CLERK.

*Enter* MICHAEL.

*Mich.* Where's our general?

* Proved by long wear. † Bonds. ‡ *I. e.* letters missive.

*Cade.* Here I am, thou particular fellow.

*Mich.* Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the king's forces.

*Cade.* Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee down: he shall be encounter'd with a man as good as himself: he is but a knight, is 'a?

*Mich.* No.

*Cade.* To equal him, I will make myself a knight presently; rise up Sir John Mortimer. Now have at him.

*Enter* SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, *and* WILLIAM *his Brother, with drum and forces.*

*Staf.* Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum of Kent,
Mark'd for the gallows,—lay your weapons down,
Home to your cottages, forsake this groom:
The king is merciful if you revolt.

*W. Staf.* But angry, wrathful, and inclined to blood.
If you go forward: therefore yield, or die.

*Cade.* As for these silken-coated slaves, I pass not;*
It is to you, good people, that I speak,
O'er whom, in time to come, I hope to reign;
For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

*Staf.* Villain, thy father was a plasterer;
And thou, thyself, a shearman, art thou not?

*Cade.* And Adam was a gardener.

*W. Staf.* And what of that?

*Cade.* Marry, this:—Edmund Mortimer, earl of March,
Married the duke of Clarence's daughter; did he not?

*Staf.* Ay, Sir.

*Cade.* By her he had two children at one birth.

*W. Staf.* That's false.

*Cade.* Ay, there's the question; but, I say, 'tis true:
The elder of them, being put to nurse,
Was by a beggar-woman stolen away;
And, ignorant of his birth and parentage,
Became a bricklayer, when he came to age:
His son am I; deny it, if you can.

*Dick.* Nay, 'tis too true; therefore, he shall be king.

*Smith.* Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house, and the bricks are alive at this day to testify it; therefore, deny it not.

*Staf.* And will you credit this base drudge's words,
That speaks he knows not what?

*All.* Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

*W. Staf.* Jack Cade, the duke of York hath taught you this.

*Cade.* He lies, for I invented it myself. [*Aside.*]—Go to, sirrah, tell the king from me, that—for his father's sake, Henry the Fifth,—in whose time boys went to span-counter for French crowns,—I am content he shall reign; but I'll be protector over him.

*Dick.* And, furthermore, we'll have the lord Say's head, for selling the dukedom of Maine.

* I pay them no regard.

*Cade.* And good reason; for thereby is England maim'd, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up. Fellow kings, I tell you, that that lord Say hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it a eunuch; and more than that, he can speak French, and therefore he is a traitor.

*Staf.* O gross and miserable ignorance!

*Cade.* Nay, answer, if you can: the Frenchmen are our enemies: go to then, I ask but this; can he that speaks with the tongue of an enemy, be a good counsellor, or no?

*All.* No, no: and therefore, we'll have his head.

*W. Staf.* Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail,
Assail them with the army of the king.

*Staf.* Herald, away: and, throughout every town,
Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade;
That those, which fly before the battle ends,
May, even in their wives' and children's sight,
Be hang'd up for example at their doors:—
And you, that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two* STAFFORDS, *and forces.*

*Cade.* And you, that love the commons, follow me.—
Now show yourselves men, 'tis for liberty.
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman:
Spare none, but such as go in clouted shoon;*
For they are thrifty honest men, and such
As would (but that they dare not) take out parts.

*Dick.* They are all in order, and march towards us.

*Cade.* But then are we in order, when we are most out of order. Come, march forward. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—Another part of Blackheath.*

*Alarums. The two parties enter, and fight, and both the* STAFFORDS *are slain.*

*Cade.* Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?

*Dick.* Here, Sir.

*Cade.* They fell before thee, like sheep and oxen, and thou behavedst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house: therefore thus will I reward thee,—The Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a licence to kill for a hundred, lacking one.

*Dick.* I desire no more.

*Cade.* And, to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear; and the bodies shall be dragg'd at my horse' heels, till I do come to London, where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us.

*Dick.* If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the gaols, and let out the prisoners.

*Cade.* Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come, let's march towards London. [*Exeunt.*

* Shoes.

## *SCENE IV.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, *reading a supplication; the Duke of* BUCKINGHAM, *and* LORD SAY *with him: at a distance,* QUEEN MARGARET, *mourning over* SUFFOLK'S *head.*

*Q. Mar.* Oft have I heard—that grief softens the mind,
And makes it fearful and degenerate;
Think therefore on revenge, and cease to weep.
But who can cease to weep, and look on this?
Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast:
But where's the body that I should embrace?

*Buck.* What answer makes your grace to the rebel's supplication?

*K. Hen.* I'll send some holy bishop to entreat:
For God forbid, so many simple souls
Should perish by the sword! And I myself,
Rather than bloody war shall cut them short,
Will parley with Jack Cade their general.—
But stay, I'll read it over once again.

*Q. Mar.* Ah, barbarous villains! Hath this lovely face
Ruled like a wandering planet over me:*
And could it not enforce them to relent,
That were unworthy to behold the same?

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy head.

*Say.* Ay, but I hope, your highness shall have his.

*K. Hen.* How now, madam? Still
Lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?
I fear, my love, if that I had been dead,
Thou wouldst not have mourn'd so much for me.

*Q. Mar.* No, my love, I should not mourn, but die for thee.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*K. Hen.* How now! What news? Why comest thou in such haste?

*Mes.* The rebels are in Southwark; Fly, my lord!
Jack Cade proclaims himself lord Mortimer,
Descended from the duke of Clarence' house;
And calls your grace usurper, openly,
And vows to crown himself in Westminster.
His army is a ragged multitude
Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless:
Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death
Hath given them heart and courage to proceed:
All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,
They call—false caterpillars, and intend their death.

*K. Hen.* O graceless men!—They know not what they do.

*Buck.* My gracious lord, retire to Killingworth,
Until a power be raised to put them down.

* Predominated irresistibly over my passions; as the planets over those born under their influence.

*Q. Mar.* Ah! were the duke of Suffolk now alive,
These Kentish rebels would be soon appeased.
*K. Hen.* Lord Say, the traitors hate thee,
Therefore away with us to Killingworth.
*Say.* So might your grace's person be in danger:
The sight of me is odious in their eyes:
And therefore in this city will I stay,
And live alone as secret as I may.

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

2 *Mes.* Jack Cade hath gotten London-bridge; the citizens
Fly and forsake their houses:
The rascal people, thirsting after prey,
Join with the traitor; and they jointly swear,
To spoil the city, and your royal court.
*Buck.* Then linger not, my lord; away, take horse!
*K. Hen.* Come, Margaret; God, our hope, will succour us.
*Q. Mar.* My hope is gone, now Suffolk is deceased.
*K. Hen.* Farewell, my lord; [*To* LORD SAY.] trust not the Kentish rebels.
*Buck.* Trust nobody, for fear you be betray'd.
*Say.* The trust I have is in mine innocence,
And therefore am I bold and resolute. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE V.—The same. The Tower.*

*Enter* LORD SCALES, *and others, on the walls. Then enter certain* CITIZENS, *below.*

*Scales.* How now? Is Jack Cade slain?
1 *Cit.* No, my lord, nor likely to be slain; for they have won the bridge, killing all those that withstand them: the lord mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower, to defend the city from the rebels.
*Scales.* Such aid as I can spare, you shall command;
But I am troubled here with them myself,
The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower.
But get you to Smithfield, and gather head,
And thither I will send you Matthew Gough:
Fight for your king, your country, and your lives;
And so farewell, for I must hence again. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VI.—The same. Cannon Street.*

*Enter* JACK CADE, *and his followers. He strikes his staff on London-stone.*

*Cade.* Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge and command, that of the city's cost, the pissing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now, henceforward, it shall be treason for any that calls me other than—lord Mortimer.

*Enter a* SOLDIER, *running.*

*Sold.* Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

*Cade.* Knock him down there. [*They kill him.*

*Smith.* If this fellow be wise, he'll never call you Jack Cade more; I think, he hath a very fair warning.

*Dick.* My lord, there's an army gather'd together in Smithfield.

*Cade.* Come them, let's go fight with them: but first, go and set London-bridge on fire; and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let's away. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VII.—The same. Smithfield.*

*Alarum. Enter, on one side,* CADE *and his company; on the other, Citizens, and the King's forces, headed by* MATTHEW GOUGH. *They fight; the Citizens are routed, and* MATTHEW GOUGH *is slain.*

*Cade.* So, Sirs:—Now go some and pull down the Savoy; others to the inns of court; down with them all.

*Dick.* I have a suit unto your lordship.

*Cade.* Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that word.

*Dick.* Only, that the laws of England may come out of your mouth.

*John.* Mass, 'twill be sore law then; for he was thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis not whole yet. [*Aside.*

*Smith.* Nay, John, it will be stinking law; for his breath stinks with eating toasted cheese. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away, burn all the records of the realm; my mouth shall be the parliament of England.

*John.* Then we are like to have biting statutes, unless his teeth be pulled out. [*Aside.*

*Cade.* And henceforward all things shall be in common.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mes.* My lord, a prize, a prize! Here's the lord Say, which sold the towns in France; he that made us pay one and twenty fifteens,* and one shilling to the pound, the last subsidy.

*Enter* GEORGE BEVIS, *with the* LORD SAY.

*Cade.* Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times.—Ay, thou say,† thou serge, nay, thou buckram lord! Now art thou within point blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst thou answer to my majesty, for giving up of Normandy unto monsieur Basimecu, the dauphin of France? Be it known unto thee by these presence, even the presence of lord Mortimer, that I am

* A fifteen was the fifteenth part of all the moveables, or personal property, of each subject.

† Say was a kind of serge.

the besom that must sweep the court clean of such filth as thou art. Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm, in erecting a grammar-school: and whereas, before, our forefathers had no other books but the score and the tally, thou hast caused printing to be used; and, contrary to the king, his crown and dignity, thou hast built a paper-mill. It will be proved to thy face, that thou hast men about thee, that usually talk of a noun, and a verb; and such abominable words, as no Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put them in prison; and, because they could not read, thou hast hanged them;* when, indeed, only for that cause they have been most worthy to live. Thou dost ride on a foot-cloth,† dost thou not?

*Say.* What of that?

*Cade.* Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy horse wear a cloak, when honester men than thou go in their hose and doublets.

*Dick.* And work in their shirt too; as myself, for example, that am a butcher.

*Say.* You men of Kent,——

*Dick.* What say you of Kent?

*Say.* Nothing but this: 'Tis *bona terra, mala gens.*

*Cade.* Away with him, away with him! he speaks Latin.

*Say.* Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.
Kent, in the commentaries Cæsar writ,
Is term'd the civil'st place of all this isle:
Sweet is the country, because full of riches;
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;
Which makes me hope you are not void of pity.
I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy;
Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.
Justice with favour have I always done;
Prayers and tears have moved me, gifts could never.
When have I aught exacted at your hands,
Kent to maintain, the king, the realm, and you?
Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks,
Because my book preferr'd me to the king:
And—seeing ignorance is the curse of God,
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven,—
Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,
You cannot but forbear to murder me.
This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings
For your behoof,——

*Cade.* Tut! When struck'st thou one blow in the field?

*Say.* Great men have reaching hands: oft have I struck
Those that I never saw, and struck them dead.

*Geo.* O monstrous coward! what, to come behind folks?

*Say.* These cheeks are pale for‡ watching for your good.

* *I. e.* they were hanged because they could not claim the benefit of the clergy.

† The housing of a horse. ‡ From.

*Cade.* Give him a box o' the ear, and that will make 'em red again.

*Say.* Long sitting to determine poor men's causes
Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

*Cade.* Ye shall have a hempen caudle then, and the pap of a hatchet.

*Dick.* Why dost thou quiver, man?

*Say.* The palsy, and not fear, provoketh me.

*Cade.* Nay, he nods at us; as who should say, I'll be even with you. I'll see if his head will stand steadier on a pole, or no: Take him away, and behead him.

*Say.* Tell me, wherein I have offended most?
Have I affected wealth, or honour, speak?
Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold?
Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?
Whom have I injured, that ye seek my death?
These hands are free from guiltless blood-shedding.*
This breast from harbouring foul deceitful thoughts.
O, let me live!

*Cade.* I feel remorse in myself with his words: but I'll bridle it; he shall die, an it be but for pleading so well for his life. Away with him! he has a familiar† under his tongue; he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him away, I say, and strike off his head presently: and then break into his son-in-law's house, Sir James Cromer, and strike off his head, and bring them both upon two poles hither.

*All.* It shall be done.

*Say.* Ah, countrymen! if when you make your prayers,
God should be so obdurate as yourselves,
How would it fare with your departed souls?
And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

*Cade.* Away with him, and do as I command ye. [*Exeunt some with* LORD SAY.] The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a head on his shoulders, unless he pay me tribute; there shall not a maid be married, but she shall pay to me her maidenhead ere they have it: men shall hold of me *in capite*; and we charge and command, that their wives be as free as heart can wish, or tongue can tell.

*Dick.* My lord, when shall we go to Cheapside, and take up commodities upon our bills?‡

*Cade.* Marry, presently.

*All.* O brave!

*Re-enter Rebels, with the heads of* LORD SAY *and his Son-in-law.*

*Cade.* But is not this braver?—Let them kiss one another, for they loved well, when they were alive. Now part them again, lest they consult about the giving up of some more towns in

* From shedding guiltless blood.
† A demon who was supposed to attend at call.
‡ *I. e.* on our brown-bills (halberds).

France. Soldiers, defer the spoil of the city until night: for with these borne before us, instead of maces, will we ride through the streets; and, at every corner have them kiss.—Away! [*Exeunt.*

### *SCENE VIII.—Southwark.*

*Alarum.—Enter* CADE, *and all his rabblement.*

*Cade.* Up Fish-street! Down Saint Magnus'-corner! Kill and knock down! Throw them into Thames. [*A parley sounded, then a retreat.*] What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley, when I command them kill?

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM *and old* CLIFFORD, *with forces.*

*Buck.* Ay, here they be that dare and will disturb thee:
Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king
Unto the commons, whom thou hast misled;
And here pronounce free pardon to them all,
That will forsake thee, and go home in peace.
*Clif.* What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent,
And yield to mercy whilst 'tis offer'd you?
Or let a rabble lead you to your deaths?
Who loves the king, and will embrace his pardon,
Fling up his cap, and say—God save his majesty!
Who hateth him, and honours not his father,
Henry the Fifth, that made all France to quake,
Shake he his weapon at us, and pass by.
*All.* God save the king! God save the king!
*Cade.* What, Buckingham, and Clifford, are ye so brave?—And you, base peasants, do ye believe him? Will you needs be hang'd with your pardons about your necks? Hath my sword therefore broke through London gates, that you should leave me at the White Hart in Southwark? I thought, ye would never have given out these arms, till you had recover'd your ancient freedom: but you are all recreants, and dastards; and delight to live in slavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs with burdens, take your houses over your heads, ravish your wives and daughters before your faces: For me,—I will make shift for one, and so—God's curse light upon you all!
*All.* We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade.
*Clif.* Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth,
That thus you do exclaim—you'll go with him?
Will he conduct you through the heart of France,
And make the meanest of you earls and dukes?
Alas! he hath no home, no place to fly to;
Nor knows he how to live, but by the spoil,
Unless by robbing of your friends, and us.
Wer't not a shame, that, whilst you live at jar,
The fearful French, whom you late vanquished,
Should make a start o'er seas, and vanquish you?
Methinks, already, in this civil broil,
I see them lording it in London streets,
Crying—*Villageois!* unto all they meet.

Better, ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry,
Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's mercy.
To France, to France, and get what you have lost;
Spare England, for it is your native coast:
Henry hath money, you are strong and manly;
God on our side, doubt not of victory.

*All.* A Clifford! A Clifford! We'll follow the king, and Clifford.

*Cade.* Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro, as this multitude? The name of Henry the Fifth hales them to a hundred mischiefs, and makes them leave me desolate. I see them lay their heads together, to surprise me: my sword make way for me, for here is no staying.—In despight of the devils and hell, have through the very midst of you! And heavens and honour be witness, that no want of resolution in me, but only my followers' base and ignominious treasons, makes me betake me to my heels. [*Exit.*

*Buck.* What, is he fled! Go some, and follow him;
And he, that brings his head unto the king,
Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.—
[*Exeunt some of them.*
Follow me, soldiers; we'll devise a mean
To reconcile you all unto the king. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IX.—Kenelworth Castle.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, *and* SOMERSET, *on the terrace of the castle.*

*K. Hen.* Was ever king, that joy'd an earthly throne,
And could command no more content than I?
No sooner was I crept out of my cradle,
But I was made a king, at nine months old:
Was never subject long'd to be a king,
As I do long and wish to be a subject.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM *and* CLIFFORD.

*Buck.* Health, and glad tidings, to your majesty!

*K. Hen.* Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surprised?
Or is he but retired to make him strong?

*Enter, below, a great number of* CADE'S *followers, with halters about their necks.*

*Clif.* He's fled, my lord, and all his powers do yield;
And humbly thus with halters on their necks,
Expect your highness' doom, of life, or death.

*K. Hen.* Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates,
To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!—
Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives,
And show'd how well you love your prince and country:
Continue still in this so good a mind,
And Henry, though he be infortunate,

Assure yourselves, will never be unkind:
And so, with thanks, and pardon to you all,
I do dismiss you to your several countries.
*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mes.* Please it your grace to be advértised,
The duke of York is newly come from Ireland:
And with a puissant and a mighty power,
Of Gallowglasses, and stout Kernes,*
Is marching hitherward in proud array;
And still proclaimeth, as he comes along,
His aims are only to remove from thee
The duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor.
*K. Hen.* Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade and York distress'd;
Like to a ship, that, having escaped a tempest,
Is straightway calm'd, and boarded with a pirate:
But now† is Cade driven back, his men dispersed;
And now is York in arms, to second him.—
I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him;
And ask him, what's the reason of these arms.
Tell him, I'll send duke Edmund to the Tower;—
And Somerset, we will commit thee thither,
Until his army be dismiss'd from him.
*Som.* My lord,
I'll yield myself to prison willingly,
Or unto death, to do my country good.
*K. Hen.* In any case, be not too rough in terms;
For he is fierce, and cannot brook hard language.
*Buck.* I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal
As all things shall redound unto your good.
*K. Hen.* Come, wife, let's in, and learn to govern better;
For yet may England curse my wretched reign. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE X.—Kent.* IDEN'S *Garden.*

*Enter* CADE.

*Cade.* Fie on ambition! Fie on myself; that have a sword, and yet am ready to famish! These five days have I hid me in these woods; and durst not peep out, for all the country is layed for me; but now am I so hungry, that if I might have a lease of my life for a thousand years, I could stay no longer. Wherefore, on a brick wall have I climbed into this garden; to see if I can eat grass, or pick a sallet another while, which is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this hot weather. And, I think, this word sallet was born to do me good: for, many a time, but for a sallet,‡ my brain-pan had been cleft with a brown-bill; and, many a time, when I have been dry, and bravely marching, it hath served me

* Heavy and light-armed soldiers. † Only just now.
‡ A kind of helmet.

instead of a quart-pot to drink in; and now the word sallet must serve me to feed on.

*Enter* IDEN, *with Servants.*

*Iden.* Lord, who would live turmoiled in the court,
And may enjoy such quiet walks as these,
This small inheritance, my father left me,
Contenteth me, and is worth a monarchy.
I seek not to wax great by other's waning;
Or gather wealth, I care not with what envy;
Sufficeth, that I have maintains my state,
And sends the poor well pleased from my gate.

*Cade.* Here's the lord of the soil come to seize me for a stray, for entering his fee-simple without leave. Ah, villain, thou wilt betray me, and get a thousand crowns of the king for carrying my head to him; but I'll make thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swallow my sword like a great pin, ere thou and I part.

*Iden.* Why, rude companion, whatsoe'er thou be,
I know thee not; why then should I betray thee?
Is't not enough to break into my garden,
And, like a thief, to come to rob my grounds,
Climbing my walls, in spite of me the owner,
But thou wilt brave me with these saucy terms?

*Cade.* Brave thee? Ay, by the best blood that ever was broach'd, and beard thee too. Look on me well: I have eat no meat these five days; yet, come thou and thy five men, and if I do not leave you all as dead as a door-nail, I pray God, I may never eat grass more.

*Iden.* Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while England stands,
That Alexander Iden, an esquire of Kent,
Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.
Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine,
See if thou canst outface me with thy looks.
Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;
Thy hand is but a finger to my fist;
Thy leg a stick compared with this truncheon;
My foot shall fight with all the strength thou hast;
And if mine arm be heaved in the air,
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.
As for more words, whose greatness answers words,
Let this my sword report what speech forbears.

*Cade.* By my valour, the most complete champion that ever I heard.—Steel, if thou turn the edge, or cut not out the burly-boned clown in chines of beef ere thou sleep in thy sheath, I beseech God on my knees, thou mayst be turn'd to hobnails. [*They fight,* CADE *falls.*] O, I am slain! Famine, and no other, hath slain me: let ten thousand devils come against me, and give me but the ten meals I have lost, and I'd defy them all. Wither, garden; and be henceforth a burying-place to all that do dwell in this house, because the unconquered soul of Cade is fled.

*Iden.* Is't Cade that I have slain, that monstrous traitor?
Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed.

And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead:
Ne'er shall this blood be wiped from thy point;
But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat,
To emblaze the honour that thy master got.

*Cade.* Iden, farewell; and be proud of thy victory: Tell Kent from me, she hath lost her best man, and exhort all the world to be cowards; for I, that never fear'd any, am vanquish'd by famine, not by valour. [*Dies.*

*Iden.* How much thou wrong'st me,* heaven be my judge.
Die, damned wretch, the curse of her that bare thee!
And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,
So wish I, I might thrust thy soul in hell.
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels
Unto a dunghill, which shall be thy grave,
And there cut off thy most ungracious head;
Which I will bear in triumph to the king,
Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon.
[*Exit, dragging out the Body.*

---

## ACT V.

### *SCENE I.—The same. Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.*

*The King's Camp on one side.—On the other, enter* YORK, *attended, with Drum and Colours: his Forces at some distance.*

*York.* From Ireland thus comes York, to claim his right,
And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's head:
Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and bright,
To entertain great England's lawful king.
Ah, *sancta majestas!* who would not buy thee dear?
Let them obey, that know not how to rule;
This hand was made to handle nought but gold:
I cannot give due action to my words,
Except a sword, or sceptre balance it.†
A sceptre shall it have, have I a soul;
On which I'll toss the the flower-de-luce of France.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM.

Whom have we here? Buckingham to disturb me?
The king hath sent him, sure: I must dissemble.

*Buck.* York, if thou meanest well, I greet thee well.

*York.* Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept thy greeting.
Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?

*Buck.* A messenger from Henry, our dread liege,
To know the reason of these arms in peace;

* In supposing that I am proud of my victory.
† Balance my hand.

Or why, thou—being a subject as I am,—
Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn,
Shouldst raise so great a power without his leave,
Or dare to bring thy force so near the court.
York [*aside*]. Scarce can I speak, my choler is so great.
O, I could hew up rocks, and fight with flint,
I am so angry at these abject terms;
And now, like Ajax Telamonius,
On sheep or oxen could I spend my fury!
I am far better born than is the king;
More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts:
But I must make fair weather yet awhile,
Till Henry be more weak, and I more strong. [*Aside.*
O Buckingham, I pr'ythee pardon me,
That I have given no answer all this while;
My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.
The cause why I have brought this army hither,
Is—to remove proud Somerset from the king,
Seditious to his grace, and to the state.
*Buck.* That is too much presumption on thy part:
But if thy arms be to no other end,
The king hath yielded unto thy demand;
The duke of Somerset is in the Tower.
*York.* Upon thine honour, is he prisoner?
*Buck.* Upon mine honour, he is prisoner.
*York.* Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my powers.
Soldiers, I thank you all; disperse yourselves;
Meet me to-morrow, in St. George's field,
You shall have pay, and everything you wish.—
And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,
Command my eldest son,—nay, all my sons,
As pledges of my fealty and love,
I'll send them all as willing as I live;
Lands, goods, horse, armour, anything I have
Is his to use, so Somerset may die.
*Buck.* York, I commend this kind submission:
We twain will go into his highness' tent.

*Enter* KING HENRY, *attended.*

*K. Hen.* Buckingham, doth York intend to harm us,
That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm?
*York.* In all submission and humility,
York doth present himself unto your highness.
*K. Hen.* Then what intend these forces thou dost bring?
*York.* To heave the traitor Somerset from hence;
And fight against that monstrous rebel, Cade,
Who since I heard to be discomfited.

*Enter* IDEN *with* CADE'S *head.*

*Iden.* If one so rude, and of so mean condition,
May pass into the presence of a king,
Lo, I present your grace a traitor's head,
The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

*K. Hen.* The head of Cade?—Great God, how just art thou!—
O, let me view his visage being dead,
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble.
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?
*Iden.* I was, an't like your majesty.
*K. Hen.* How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?
*Iden.* Alexander Iden, that's my name;
A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.
*Buck.* So please it you, my lord, 'twere not amiss
He were created knight for his good service.
*K. Hen.* Iden, kneel down; [*He kneels.*] Rise up a knight.
We give thee for reward a thousand marks;
And will, that thou henceforth attend on us.
*Iden.* May Iden live to merit such a bounty,
And never live but true unto his liege!
*K. Hen.* See, Buckingham! Somerset comes with the queen;
Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.

*Enter* QUEEN MARGARET *and* SOMERSET.

*Q. Mar.* For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,
But boldly stand, and front him to his face.
*York.* How now! is Somerset at liberty?
Then, York, unloose thy long imprison'd thoughts,
And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.
Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?—
False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?
King did I call thee? no, thou art not king;
Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,
Which dar'st not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor.
That head of thine doth not become a crown;
Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,
And not to grace an awful princely sceptre.
That gold must round engirt these brows of mine;
Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,
Is able with the change to kill and cure.
Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,
And with the same to act controlling laws.
Give place; by heaven, thou shalt rule no more
O'er him, whom heaven created for thy ruler.
*Som.* O monstrous traitor!—I arrest thee, York,
Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:
Obey, audacious traitor; kneel for grace.
*York.* Wouldst have me kneel? first let me ask of these,
If they can brook I bow a knee to man.—
Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail; [*Exit an* ATTENDANT.
I know, ere they will have me go to ward,*
They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchisement.
*Q. Mar.* Call hither Clifford; bid him come amain,
To say, if that the bastard boys of York
Shall be the surety for their traitor father.

* Custody, confinement.

*York.* O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,
Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!
The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,
Shall be their father's bail; and bane to those
That for my surety will refuse the boys.

*Enter* EDWARD *and* RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *with Forces, at one side; at the other, with Forces also, old* CLIFFORD *and his Son.*

See, where they come; I'll warrant they'll make it good.
*Q. Mar.* And here comes Clifford, to deny their bail.
*Clif.* Health and all happiness to my lord the king! [*Kneels.*
*York.* I thank thee, Clifford: Say, what news with thee?
Nay, do not fright us with an angry look:
We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;
For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee.
*Clif.* This is my king, York, I do not mistake;
But thou mistak'st me much, to think I do:—
To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?
*K. Hen.* Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious humour
Makes him oppose himself against his king.
*Clif.* He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,
And chop away that factious pate of his.
*Q. Mar.* He is arrested, but will not obey;
His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.
*York.* Will you not, sons?
*Edw.* Ay, noble father, if our words will serve.
*Rich.* And if words will not, then our weapons shall.
*Clif.* Why, what a brood of traitors have we here!
*York.* Look in a glass, and call thy image so;
I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor.—
Call hither to the stake my two brave bears,*
That with the very shaking of their chains,
They may astonish these fell lurking curs;
Bid Salisbury, and Warwick, come to me.

*Drums. Enter* WARWICK *and* SALISBURY, *with Forces.*

*Clif.* Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death,
And manacle the bear-ward† in their chains,
If thou dar'st bring them to the baiting-place.
*Rich.* Oft have I seen a hot o'erweening cur
Run back and bite, because he was withheld;
Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,
Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs, and cried:
And such a piece of service will you do,
If you oppose yourselves to match lord Warwick.
*Clif.* Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested lump,
As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

* The Nevils, earls of Warwick, had a bear and ragged staff for their crest.

† Bear-keeper.

*York.* Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon.
*Clif.* Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.
*K. Hen.* Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow?—
Old Salisbury,—shame to thy silver hair,
Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!—
What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,
And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?
O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?
If it be banish'd from the frosty head,
Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?—
Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,
And shame thine honourable age with blood?
Why art thou old, and want'st experience?
Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?
For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me,
That bows unto the grave with mickle age.
*Sal.* My lord, I have consider'd with myself
The title of this most renowned duke;
And in my conscience do repute his grace
The rightful heir to England's royal seat.
*K. Hen.* Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?
*Sal.* I have.
*K. Hen.* Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an oath?
*Sal.* It is great sin, to swear unto a sin;
But greater sin, to keep a sinful oath.
Who can be bound by any solemn vow
To do a murderous deed, to rob a man,
To force a spotless virgin's chastity,
To reave the orphan of his patrimony,
To wring the widow from her custom'd right;
And have no other reason for this wrong,
But that he was bound by a solemn oath?
*Q. Mar.* A subtle traitor needs no sophister.
*K. Hen.* Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.
*York.* Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast,
I am resolved for death, or dignity.
*Clif.* The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true.
*War.* You were best to go to bed, and dream again,
To keep thee from the tempest of the field.
*Clif.* I am resolved to bear a greater storm,
Than any thou canst conjure up to-day;
And that I'll write upon thy burgonet,
Might I but know thee by thy household badge.
*War.* Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,
The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,
This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet*
(As on a mountain-top the cedar shows,
That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm),
Even to affright thee with the view thereof.
*Clif.* And from thy burgonet I'll rend thy bear,

* Helmet.

And tread it underfoot with all contempt,
Despight the bear-ward that protects the bear.
*Y. Clif.* And so to arms, victorious father,
To quell the rebels, and their 'complices.
*Rich.* Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite,
For you shall sup with Jesu Christ to-night.
*Y. Clif.* Foul stigmatic,* that's more than thou canst tell.
*Rich.* If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell.
[*Exeunt severally.*

## *SCENE II.—Saint Albans.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* WARWICK.

*War.* Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls!
And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear,
Now,—when the angry trumpet sounds alarm,
And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,—
Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me!
Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland,
Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.

*Enter* YORK.

How now, my noble lord? what, all a-foot?
*York.* The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed!
But match to match I have encounter'd him,
And made a prey for carrion kites and crows
Even of the bonny beast he loved so well.

*Enter* CLIFFORD.

*War.* Of one or both of us the time is come.
*York.* Hold, Warwick, seek thee out some other chace,
For I myself must hunt this deer to death.
*War.* Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st.—
As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,
It grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd. [*Exit* WARWICK.
*Clif.* What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou pause?
*York.* With thy brave bearing should I be in love,
But that thou art so fast mine enemy.
*Clif.* Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem,
But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason.
*York.* So let it help me now against thy sword,
As I in justice and true right express it!
*Clif.* My soul and body on the action both!—
*York.* A dreadful lay!†—address thee instantly.
[*They fight, and* CLIFFORD *falls.*
Clif. *La fin couronne les œuvres.* [*Dies.*
*York.* Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art still.
Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! [*Exit.*

* Stigmatized by deformity. † Stake.

*Enter young* CLIFFORD.

*Y. Clif.* Shame and confusion! all is on the rout;
Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds
Where it should guard. O war, thou son of hell,
Whom angry heavens do make their minister,
Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part
Hot coals of vengeance!—Let no soldier fly:
He that is truly dedicate to war,
Hath no self-love; nor he, that loves himself,
Hath not essentially, but by circumstance,
The name of valour.—O, let the vile world end,
[*Seeing his dead Father.*
And the premised* flames of the last day
Knit earth and heaven together!
Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,
Particularities and petty sounds
To cease!†—Wast thou ordain'd, dear father,
To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve‡
The silver livery of advised § age;
And, in thy reverence, and thy chair-days, thus
To die in ruffian battle?—Even at this sight,
My heart is turn'd to stone: and, while 'tis mine,
It shall be stony. York not our old men spares;
No more will I their babes: tears virginal
Shall be to me even as the dew to fire;
And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclaims,
Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.
Henceforth, I will not have to do with pity:
Meet I an infant of the house of York,
Into as many gobbets will I cut it,
As wild Medea young Absyrtus did:
In cruelty will I seek out my fame.
Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house;
[*Taking up the body.*
As did Æneas old Anchises bear,
So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;
But then Æneas bare a living load,
Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine. [*Exit.*

*Enter* RICHARD PLANTAGENET *and* SOMERSET, *fighting, and* SOMERSET *is killed.*

*Rich.* So, lie thou there;—
For, underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,
The Castle in Saint Albans, Somerset
Hath made the wizard famous in his death.—
Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful still:
Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill. [*Exit.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, *and others retreating.*

*Q. Mar.* Away, my lord! you are slow; for shame away!

* Sent before their time. † Stop. ‡ Obtain. § Experienced.

*K. Hen.* Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret, stay.
*Q. Mar.* What are you made of? you'll not fight, nor fly:
Now is it manhood, wisdom, and defence,
To give the enemy way: and to secure us
By what we can, which can no more but fly. [*Alarum afar off.*
If you be ta'en, we then should see the bottom
Of all our fortunes: but if we haply scape
(As well we may, if not through your neglect),
We shall to London get; where you are loved;
And where this breach, now in our fortunes made,
May readily be stopp'd.

*Enter young* CLIFFORD.

*Y. Clif.* But that my heart 's on future mischief set,
I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly;
But fly you must; uncurable discomfit
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.*
Away, for your relief! and we will live
To see their day, and them our fortune give:
Away, my lord, away! [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—Fields near Saint Albans.*

*Alarum: Retreat. Flourish! then enter* YORK, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, WARWICK, *and Soldiers, with Drum and Colours.*

*York.* Of Salisbury, who can report of him;
That winter lion, who, in rage forgets
Aged contusions and all brush† of time;
And, like a gallant in the brow‡ of youth,
Repairs him with occasion? this happy day
Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,
If Salisbury be lost.
*Rich.* My noble father,
Three times to-day I holp him to his horse,
Three times bestrid him,§ thrice I led him off,
Persuaded him from any further act:
But still, where danger was, still there I met him;
And like rich hangings in a homely house,
So was his will in his old feeble body.
But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

*Enter* SALISBURY.

*Sal.* Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought to-day;
By the mass, so did we all.—I thank you, Richard;
God knows, how long it is I have to live;
And it hath pleased him, that three times to-day
You have defended me from imminent death.—
Well, lords, we have not got‖ that which we have

* Parties. † Detrition. ‡ The height.
§ *I. e.* defending him against his assailants. ‖ Secured.

'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,
Being opposites of such repairing nature.*

*York.* I know, our safety is to follow them;
For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,
To call a present court of parliament.
Let us pursue him, ere the writs go forth:
What says lord Warwick; shall we after them?

*War.* After them! nay, before them, if we can.
Now by my faith, lords, 'twas a glorious day:
Saint Albans battle, won by famous York,
Shall be eternized in all age to come.—
Sound, drums and trumpets;—and to London all:
And more such days as these to us befall! [*Exeunt.*

* Enemies likely soon to recover.

# THIRD PART

OF

# KING HENRY VI.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.
EDWARD, Prince of Wales, *his Son.*
LEWIS XI., *King of France.*
DUKE OF SOMERSET,
DUKE OF EXETER,
EARL OF OXFORD,
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND,
EARL OF WESTMORELAND,
LORD CLIFFORD,
*Lords on King Henry's side.*
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *Duke of York.*
EDWARD, Earl of March, afterwards King Edward IV.
EDMUND, Earl of Rutland,
GEORGE, afterwards Duke of Clarence,
RICHARD, afterwards Duke of Gloucester,
*his Sons.*
DUKE OF NORFOLK,
MARQUIS OF MONTAGUE,
EARL OF WARWICK,
EARL OF PEMBROKE,
LORD HASTINGS,
LORD STAFFORD,
*Of the Duke of York's Party.*
SIR JOHN MORTIMER,
SIR HUGH MORTIMER,
*Uncles to the Duke of York.*
HENRY, Earl of Richmond, *a Youth.*
LORD RIVERS, *Brother to Lady Grey.*
SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.
SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.
SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.
TUTOR to Rutland.
MAYOR OF YORK.
LIEUTENANT OF THE TOWER.
A NOBLEMAN.
TWO KEEPERS.
A HUNTSMAN.
A SON that has killed his Father.
A FATHER that has killed his Son.

QUEEN MARGARET.
LADY GREY, *afterwards Queen to Edward IV.*
BONA, *Sister to the French Queen.*

SOLDIERS, and other attendants on King Henry and King Edward; MESSENGERS, WATCHMEN, &c.

SCENE, during part of the third Act, in France; during all the rest of the Play, in England.

## ACT I.

*SCENE I.—London. The Parliament-House.*

*Drums. Some Soldiers of* YORK'S *party break in. Then, Enter the Duke of* YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, *and others, with White Roses in their Hats.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escaped our hands.
*York.* While we pursued the horsemen of the north,
He slily stole away, and left his men:

Whereat the great lord of Northumberland,
Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat,
Cheer'd up the drooping army; and himself,
Lord Clifford, and lord Stafford, all abreast,
Charged our main battle's front, and, breaking in,
Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

*Edw.* Lord Stafford's father, duke of Buckingham,
Is either slain, or wounded dangerous:
I cleft his beaver with a downright blow;
That this is true, father, behold his blood.
[*Showing his bloody sword.*

*Mont.* And, brother, here's the earl of Wiltshire's blood,
[*To* YORK, *showing his.*
Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did.
[*Throwing down the Duke of* SOMERSET'S *head.*

*York.* Richard hath best deserved of all my sons.—
What, is your grace dead, my lord of Somerset?

*Norf.* Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt?

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake king Henry's head.

*War.* And so do I.—Victorious prince of York,
Before I see thee seated in that throne
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,
I vow by heaven, these eyes shall never close.
This is the palace of the fearful king,
And this the regal seat: possess it, York:
For this is thine, and not king Henry's heirs.

*York.* Assist me then, sweet Warwick, and I will;
For hither we have broken in by force.

*Norf.* We'll all assist you; he, that flies, shall die.

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk,—Stay by me, my lords;—
And, soldiers, stay, and lodge by me this night.

*War.* And when the king comes, offer him no violence,
Unless he seek to thrust you out by force. [*They retire.*

*York.* The queen, this day, here holds her parliament,
But little thinks we shall be of her council:
By words, or blows, here let us win our right.

*Rich.* Arm'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be call'd,
Unless Plantagenet, duke of York, be king;
And bashful Henry deposed, whose cowardice
Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords; be resolute;
I mean to take possession of my right.

*War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,
The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,
Dares stir a wing, if Warwick shake his bells.*
I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares:—
Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English crown.
[WARWICK *leads* YORK *to the Throne, who seats himself.*

* Hawks had sometimes little bells hung on them, perhaps to *dare* the birds.

*Flourish. Enter* KING HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, WESTMORELAND, EXETER, *and others, with red Roses in their hats.*

*K. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,
Even in the chair of state! belike he means
(Backd by the power of Warwick, that false peer)
To aspire unto the crown, and reign as king.—
Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father;—
And thine, lord Clifford; and you both have vow'd revenge
On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends.
*North.* If I be not, heavens, be revenged on me!
*Clif.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in steel.
*West.* What, shall we suffer this? let's pluck him down:
My heart for anger burns, I cannot brook it.
*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle earl of Westmoreland.
*Clif.* Patience is for poltroons, and such as he:
He durst not sit there had your father lived.
My gracious lord, here in the parliament
Let us assail the family of York.
*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin; be it so.
*K. Hen.* Ah, know you not, the city favours them,
And they have troops of soldiers at their beck?
*Exe.* But when the duke is slain, they'll quickly fly.
*K. Hen.* Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,
To make a shambles of the parliament-house!
Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words, and threats,
Shall be the war that Henry means to use.—
[*They advance to the Duke.*
Thou factious duke of York, descend my throne,
And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet;
I am thy sovereign.
*York.* Thou art deceived, I am thine.
*Exe.* For shame, come down; he made thee duke of York.
*York.* 'Twas my inheritance, as the earldom was.
*Exe.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.
*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown,
In following this usurping Henry.
*Clif.* Whom should he follow, but his natural king?
*War.* True, Clifford, and that's Richard, duke of York.
*K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne?
*York.* It must, and shall be so. Content thyself.
*War.* Be duke of Lancaster, let him be king.
*West.* He is both king and duke of Lancaster:
And that the lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.
*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget,
That we are those, which chased you from the field,
And slew your fathers, and with colours spread
March'd through the city to the palace gates.
*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief;
And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.
*West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons,
Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more lives,
Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more; lest that, instead of words,
I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger,
As shall revenge his death, before I stir.
*War.* Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats!
*York.* Will you, we show our title to the crown?
If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.
*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor to the crown?
Thy father was, as thou art, duke of York;
Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, earl of March:
I am the son of Henry the fifth,
Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,
And seized upon their towns and provinces.
*War.* Talk not of France, sith * thou hast lost it all.
*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and not I;
When I was crown'd I was but nine months old.
*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet, methinks you lose:—
Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.
*Edw.* Sweet father, do so; set it on your head.
*Mont.* Good brother, [*To* YORK.] as thou lov'st and honour'st arms,
Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.
*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.
*York.* Sons, peace!
*K. Hen.* Peace thou! and give king Henry leave to speak.
*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first:—hear him, lords;
And be you silent and attentive too,
For he, that interrupts him, shall not live.
*K. Hen.* Think'st thou that I will leave my kingly throne,
Wherein my grandsire, and my father, sat?
No, first shall war unpeople this my realm;
Ay, and their colours—often borne in France;
And now in England, to our heart's great sorrow,—
Shall be my winding-sheet.—Why faint you, lords?
My title 's good, and better far than his.
*War.* But prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.
*K. Hen.* Henry the fourth by conquest got the crown.
*York.* 'Twas by rebellion against his king.
*K. Hen.* I know not what to say; my title 's weak. [*Aside.*
Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?
*York.* What then?
*K. Hen.* An if he may, then am I lawful king:
For Richard, in the view of many lords,
Resign'd the crown to Henry the fourth;
Whose heir my father was, and I am his.
*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,
And made him to resign his crown perforce.
*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,
Think you, 'twere prejudicial to his crown?
*Exe.* No; for he could not so resign his crown,
But that the next heir should succeed and reign.
*K. Hen.* Art thou against us, duke of Exeter?

* Since.

*Exe.* He is the right, and therefore pardon me.
*York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?
*Exe.* My conscience tells me he is lawful king.
*K. Hen.* All will revolt from me, and turn to him.
*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,
Think not that Henry shall be so deposed.
*War.* Deposed he shall be, in despite of all.
*North.* Thou art deceived: 'tis not thy southern power,
Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,—
Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,—
Can set the duke up in despite of me.
*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,
Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:
May that ground gape, and swallow me alive,
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!
*K. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!
*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown:—
What mutter you, or what conspire you, lords?
*War.* Do right unto this princely duke of York;
Or I will fill the house with armed men,
And, o'er the chair of state where now he sits,
Write up his title with usurping blood.
[*He stamps, and the Soldiers show themselves.*
*K. Hen.* My lord of Warwick, hear me but one word;
Let me, for this my lifetime, reign as king.
*York.* Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,
And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv'st.
*K. Hen.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet,
Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.
*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son?
*War.* What good is this to England, and himself?
*West.* Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!
*Clif.* How hast thou injured both thyself and us!
*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.
*North.* Nor I.
*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.
*West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king,
In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.
*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of York,
And die in bands for this unmanly deed!
*Clif.* In dreadful war mayst thou be overcome!
Or live in peace, abandon'd and despised!
[*Exeunt* NORTHUMBERLAND, CLIFFORD, *and* WESTMORELAND.
*War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.
*Exe.* They seek revenge, and therefore will not yield.
*K. Hen.* Ah, Exeter.
*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord?
*K. Hen.* Not for myself, lord Warwick, but my son,
Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.
But, be it as it may:—I here entail
The crown to thee and to thine heirs for ever;
Conditionally, that here thou take an oath
To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,

To honour me as thy king and sovereign;
And neither by treason, nor hostility,
To seek to put me down, and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take, and will perform.
[*Coming from the Throne.*

*War.* Long live king Henry!—Plantagenet, embrace him.

*K. Hen.* And long live thou, and these thy forward sons!

*York.* Now York and Lancaster are reconciled.

*Exe.* Accursed be he that seeks to make them foes!
[*Senet. The Lords come forward.*

*York.* Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my castle.

*War.* And I'll keep London with my soldiers.

*Norf.* And I to Norfolk, with my followers.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea, from whence I came.
[*Exeunt* YORK, *and his Sons,* WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, *Soldiers, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court.

*Enter* QUEEN MARGARET *and the Prince of* WALES.

*Exe.* Here comes the queen, whose looks bewray* her anger:
I'll steal away.

*K. Hen.* Exeter, so will I. [*Going.*

*Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me, I will follow thee.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

*Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes?
Ah, wretched man, would I had died a maid,
And never seen thee, never borne thee son,
Seeing thou hast proved so unnatural a father.
Hath he deserved to lose his birthright thus?
Hadst thou but loved him half so well as I;
Or felt that pain which I did for him once;
Or nourish'd him, as I did with my blood;
Thou wouldst have left thy dearest heart blood there,
Rather than made that savage duke thine heir,
And disinherited thine only son.

*Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me:
If you be king, why should not I succeed?

*K. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret;—pardon me, sweet son;—
The earl of Warwick, and the duke, enforced me.

*Q. Mar.* Enforced thee! art thou king, and wilt be forced?
I shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous wretch!
Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me;
And given unto the house of York such head,
As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.
To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,
What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,
And creep into it far before thy time?
Warwick is chancellor, and the lord of Calais;
Stern Faulconbridge commands the narrow seas;
The duke is made protector of the realm;
And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds

* Disclose.

The trembling lamb, environed with wolves.
Had I been there, which am a silly woman,
The soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes,
Before I would have granted to that act.
But thou preferr'st thy life before thine honour:
And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself,
Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,
Until that act of parliament be repeal'd,
Whereby my son is disinherited.
The northern lords, that have forsworn thy colours,
Will follow mine, if once they see them spread:
And spread they shall be; to thy foul disgrace,
And utter ruin of the house of York.
Thus do I leave thee:—Come, son, let's away;
Our army's ready; come, we'll after them.

*K. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already; get thee gone.

*K. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.

*Prince.* When I return with victory from the field,
I'll see your grace: till then, I'll follow her.

*Q. Mar.* Come, son, away; we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt* QUEEN MARGARET *and the* PRINCE.

*K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me, and to her son,
Hath made her break out into terms of rage!
Revenged may she be on that hateful duke;
Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,
Will cost my crown, and, like an empty eagle,
Tire* on the flesh of me, and of my son!
The loss of those three lords torments my heart:
I'll write unto them, and entreat them fair;—
Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

*Exe.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—A Room in Sandal Castle, near Wakefield, in Yorkshire.*

*Enter* EDWARD, RICHARD, *and* MONTAGUE.

*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.

*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.

*Enter* YORK.

*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother, at a strife?
What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what?

*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace and us;
The crown of England, father, which is yours.

*York.* Mine, boy? not till king Henry be dead.

* Peck.

*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life, or death.
*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:
By giving the house of Lancaster leave to breathe,
It will outrun you, father, in the end.
*York.* I took an oath, that he should quietly reign.
*Edw.* But, for a kingdom, any oath may be broken:
I'd break a thousand oaths, to reign one year.
*Rich.* No; God forbid, your grace should be forsworn.
*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.
*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me speak.
*York.* Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.
*Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not took
Before a true and lawful magistrate,
That hath authority over him that swears:
Henry had none, but did usurp the place;
Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,
Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.
Therefore, to arms. And, father, do but think,
How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;
Within whose circuit is Elysium,
And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.
Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest,
Until the white rose, that I wear, be dyed
Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.
*York.* Richard, enough; I will be king, or die.—
Brother, thou shalt to London presently,
And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.—
Thou, Richard, shalt unto the duke of Norfolk,
And tell him privily of our intent.—
You, Edward, shall unto my lord Cobham,
With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:
In them I trust; for they are soldiers,
Witty* and courteous, liberal, full of spirit.—
While you are thus employ'd, what resteth more,
But that I seek occasion how to rise;
And yet the king not privy to my drift,
Nor any of the house of Lancaster.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

But, stay; What news? Why com'st thou in such post?
*Mess.* The queen, with all the northern earls and lords,
Intend here to besiege you in your castle:
She is hard by with twenty thousand men;
And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.
*York.* Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou, that we fear them?—
Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;—
My brother Montague shall post to London:
Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,
Whom we have left protectors of the king,

* Wise.

With powerful policy strengthen themselves,
And trust not simple Henry, nor his oaths.
*Mont.* Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not:
And thus most humbly I do take my leave. [*Exit.*

*Enter* SIR JOHN *and* SIR HUGH MORTIMER.

*York.* Sir John and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles!
You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;
The army of the queen mean to besiege us.
*Sir John.* She shall not need, we'll meet her in the field.
*York.* What, with five thousand men?
*Rich.* Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need.
A woman's general; What should we fear? [*A march afar off.*
*Edw.* I hear their drums; let's set our men in order;
And issue forth, and bid them battle straight.
*York.* Five men to twenty!—though the odds be great,
I doubt not, uncle, of our victory.
Many a battle have I won in France,
When as the enemy hath been ten to one;
Why should I not now have the like success? [*Alarum. Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—Plains near Sandal Castle.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* RUTLAND, *and his* TUTOR.

*Rut.* Ah, whither shall I fly to 'scape their hands!
Ah, tutor! look where bloody Clifford comes!

*Enter* CLIFFORD, *and Soldiers.*

*Clif.* Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves thy life.
As for the brat of this accursed duke,
Whose father slew my father,—he shall die.
*Tut.* And I, my lord, will bear him company.
*Clif.* Soldiers, away with him.
*Tut.* Ah, Clifford! murder not this innocent child,
Lest thou be hated both of God and man.
[*Exit, forced off by Soldiers.*
*Clif.* How now! is he dead already? Or, is it fear,
That makes him close his eyes?—I'll open them.
*Rut.* So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch
That trembles under his devouring paws:
And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey;
And so he comes to rend his limbs asunder.—
Ah, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,
And not with such a cruel threat'ning look.
Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die;—
I am too mean a subject for thy wrath,
Be thou revenged on men, and let me live.
*Clif.* In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my father's blood
Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter.
*Rut.* Then let my father's blood open it again;
He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

*Clif.* Had I thy brethren here, their lives and thine,
Were not revenge sufficient for me;
No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,
It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.
The sight of any of the house of York
Is as a fury to torment my soul;
And till I root out their accursed line,
And leave not one alive, I live in hell.
Therefore—— [*Lifting his hand.*
*Rut.* O, let me pray before I take my death:—
To thee I pray; Sweet Clifford, pity me!
*Clif.* Such pity as my rapier's point affords.
*Rut.* I never did thee harm; Why wilt thou slay me?
*Clif.* Thy father hath.
*Rut.* But 'twas ere I was born.
Thou hast one son, for his sake pity me;
Lest, in revenge thereof,—sith* God is just,—
He be as miserably slain as I.
Ah, let me live in prison all my days;
And when I give occasion of offence,
Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause.
*Clif.* No cause?
Thy father slew my father; therefore, die.
[CLIFFORD *stabs him.*
Rut. *Dii faciant, laudis summa sit ista tuæ!*† [*Dies.*
*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!
And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade,
Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,
Congeal'd with this, do make me wipe off both. [*Exit.*

*SCENE IV.—The same.*

*Alarum.—Enter* YORK.

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field:
My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;
And all my followers to the eager foe
Turn back, and fly, like ships before the wind,
Or lambs pursued by hunger-starved wolves.
My sons—God knows, what hath bechanced them:
But this I know,—they have demean'd themselves
Like men born to renown, by life, or death.
Three times did Richard make a lane to me;
And thrice cried,—*Courage, father! fight it out!*
And full as oft came Edward to my side,
With purple faulchion, painted to the hilt
In blood of those that had encounter'd him:
And when the hardiest warriors did retire,
Richard cried,—*Charge! and give no foot of ground!*
And cried,—*A crown, or else a glorious tomb!*

* Since. † Heaven grant this may be your greatest boast!

*A sceptre! or an earthly sepulchre!*
With this, we charged again: but, out, alas!
We bodged* again; as I have seen a swan
With bootless labour swim against the tide,
And spend her strength with over-matching waves.
[*A short alarum within.*
Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue;
And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury:
And, were I strong, I would not shun their fury:
The sands are number'd, that make up my life;
Here must I stay, and here my life must end.

*Enter* QUEEN MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, *and Soldiers.*

Come, bloody Clifford,—rough Northumberland,—
I dare your quenchless fury to more rage:
I am your butt, and I abide your shot.
*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plantagenet.
*Clif.* Ay, to such mercy, as his ruthless arm,
With downright payment, show'd unto my father.
Now Phaëton hath tumbled from his car,
And made an evening at the noontide prick.†
*York.* My ashes, as the Phœnix, may bring forth
A bird that will revenge upon you all:
And, in that hope, I throw mine eyes to heaven,
Scorning whate'er you can afflict me with.
Why come you not? what! multitudes, and fear?
*Clif.* So cowards fight, when they can fly no farther;
So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;
So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,
Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.
*York.* O, Clifford, but bethink thee once again,
And in thy thought o'er-run my former time:
And, if thou canst for blushing, view this face;
And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice,
Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this.
*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for word;
But buckle with thee blows twice two for one. [*Draws.*
*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes,
I would prolong awhile the traitor's life:—
Wrath makes him deaf: speak thou, Northumberland.
*North.* Hold, Clifford; do not honour him so much,
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart:
What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,
When he might spurn him with his foot away?
It is war's prize to take all vantages;
And ten to one is no impeach of valour.
[*They lay hands on* YORK, *who struggles.*
*Clif.* Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with the gin.
*North.* So doth the coney struggle in the net.
[YORK *is taken prisoner.*

* Boggled, bungled. † Point on the dial.

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;
So true* men yield, with robbers so o'ermatch'd.
*North.* What would your grace have done unto him now?
*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,
Come make him stand upon this molehill here;
That raught† at mountains with outstretched arms,
Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.—
What! was it you, that would be England's king?
Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,
And made a preachment of your high descent?
Where are your mess of sons to back you now?
The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?
And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,
Dicky, your boy, that, with his grumbling voice,
Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?
Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?
Look, York: I stain'd this napkin‡ with the blood
That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point,
Made issue from the bosom of the boy:
And, if thine eyes can water for his death,
I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.
Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,
I should lament thy miserable state.
I pr'ythee grieve, to make me merry, York;
Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance.
What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails,
That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?
Why art thou patient, man? thou shouldst be mad;
And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.
Thou wouldst be fee'd, I see, to make me sport;
York cannot speak unless he wear a crown.—
A crown for York;—and, lords, bow low to him.—
Hold you his hands, whilst I do set it on.—
[*Putting a paper crown on his head.*
Ay, marry. Sir, now looks he like a king!
Ay, this is he that took king Henry's chair;
And this is he was his adopted heir.—
But how is it that great Plantagenet
Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath?
As I bethink me, you should not be king,
Till our king Henry had shook hands with death.
And will you pale§ your head in Henry's glory,
And rob his temples of the diadem,
Now in his life, against your holy oath?
O, 'tis a fault too, too unpardonable!—
Off with the crown; and with the crown, his head;
And, whilst we breathe, take time to do him dead.
*Clif.* That is my office, for my father's sake.
*Q. Mar.* Nay, stay; let's hear the orisons he makes.
*York.* She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of France,

* Honest. † Reached. ‡ Handkerchief.
§ Impale, encircle with a crown.

Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's tooth!
How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex,
To triumph like an Amazonian trull,
Upon their woes, whom fortune captivates?
But that thy face is, visor-like, unchanging,
Made impudent with use of evil deeds,
I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush:
To tell thee whence thou cam'st, of whom derived,
Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not shameless.
Thy father bears the type* of king of Naples,
Of both the Sicils, and Jerusalem;
Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.
Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?
It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen;
Unless the adage must be verified,—
That beggars, mounted, run their horse to death.
'Tis beauty, that doth oft make women proud;
But, God he knows, thy share thereof is small:
'Tis virtue, that doth make them most admired;
The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at:
'Tis government† that makes them seem divine;
The want thereof makes thee abominable:
Thou art as opposite to every good,
As the Antipodes are unto us,
Or as the south to the septentrion.‡
O, tiger's heart, wrapp'd in a woman's hide!
How couldst thou drain the life-blood of the child,
To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,
And yet be seen to bear a woman's face?
Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible;
Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless,
Bid'st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy wish:
Wouldst have me weep? why, now thou hast thy will:
For raging wind blows up incessant showers,
And, when the rage allays, the rain begins.
These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies;
And every drop cries vengeance for his death,—
'Gainst thee, fell Clifford,—and thee, false French-woman.

*North.* Beshrew me, but his passions§ move me so,
That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

*York.* That face of his the hungry cannibals
Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd with blood:
But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,—
O, ten times more,—than tigers of Hyrcania.
See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:
This cloth thou dipp'dst in blood of my sweet boy,
And I with tears do wash the blood away.
Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this:
[*He gives back the handkerchief.*
And, if thou tell'st the heavy story right,

* The distinguishing mark.
‡ The north.
† Self-government.
§ Sufferings.

Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;
Yea, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears;
And say,—Alas, it was a piteous deed!—
There, take the crown, and with the crown, my curse;
And, in thy need, such comfort come to thee,
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!—
Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world;
My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads!

*North.* Had he been slaughter-man to all my kin,
I should not for my life but weep with him,
To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.

*Q. Mar.* What, weeping-ripe, my lord Northumberland?
Think but upon the wrong he did us all,
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

*Clif.* Here's for my oath, here's for my father's death.
[*Stabbing him.*

*Q. Mar.* And here's to right our gentle-hearted king.
[*Stabbing him.*

*York.* Open thy gate of mercy, gracious God!
My soul flies through these wounds to seek out thee. [*Dies.*

*Q. Mar.* Off with his head, and set it on York gates;
So York may overlook the town of York. [*Exeunt*

---

# ACT II.

*SCENE I.—A plain near* MORTIMER'S *Cross in Herefordshire.*

*Drums.—Enter* EDWARD, *and* RICHARD, *with their forces, marching.*

*Edw.* I wonder how our princely father 'scaped,
Or whether he be 'scaped away or no,
From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit;
Had he been ta'en, we would have heard the news;
Had he been slain, we should have heard the news;
Or, had he 'scaped, methinks we should have heard
The happy tidings of his good escape.—
How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

*Rich.* I cannot joy, until I be resolved
Where our right valiant father is become.
I saw him in the battle range about;
And watch'd him how he singled Clifford forth.
Methought he bore him in the thickest troop,
As doth a lion in a herd of neat:*
Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs;
Who having pinch'd a few, and made them cry
The rest stand all aloof, and bark at him.
So fared our father with his enemies;

* Neat cattle.

So fled his enemies my warlike father;
Methinks, 'tis prize enough to be his son.
See, how the morning opes her golden gates,
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun!
How well resembles it the prime of youth,
Trimm'd like a younker, prancing to his love!
*Edw.* Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three suns?
*Rich.* Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun;
Not separated with the racking clouds.*
But sever'd in a pale, clear, shining sky.
See, see! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,
As if they vow'd some league inviolable:
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.
In this the heaven figures some event.
*Edw.* 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet never heard of.
I think, it cites us, brother, to the field;
That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet,
Each one already blazing by our meeds,†
Should, notwithstanding, join our lights together,
And over-shine the earth, as this the world.
Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear
Upon my target three fair shining suns.
*Rich.* Nay, bear three daughters;—By your leave I speak it,
You love the breeder better than the male.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?
*Mess.* Ah, one that was a woeful looker-on,
When as the noble duke of York was slain,
Your princely father, and my loving lord.
*Edw.* O, speak no more! for I have heard too much.
*Rich.* Say how he died, for I will hear it all.
*Mess.* Environed he was with many foes;
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy
Against the Greeks, that would have enter'd Troy.
But Hercules himself must yield to odds;
And many strokes, though with a little axe,
Hew down and fell the hardest-timber'd oak.
By many hands your father was subdued;
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm
Of unrelenting Clifford, and the queen:
Who crown'd the gracious duke, in high despight;
Laugh'd in his face; and when with grief he wept,
The ruthless queen gave him, to dry his cheeks,
A napkin steeped in the harmless blood
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford slain:
And, after many scorns, many foul taunts,
They took his head, and on the gates of York
They set the same; and there it doth remain,
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

* The clouds in rapid tumultuary motion. † Merit.

*Edw.* Sweet duke of York, our prop to lean upon;
Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no stay!—
O Clifford, boist'rous Clifford, thou hast slain
The flower of Europe for his chivalry;
And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,
For, hand to hand, he would have vanquish'd thee!—
Now my soul's palace is become a prison:
Ah, would she break from hence! that this my body
Might in the ground be closed up in rest:
For never henceforth shall I joy again,
Never, O never, shall I see more joy.

*Rich.* I cannot weep: for all my body's moisture
Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning heart:
Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burden;
For self-same wind, that I should speak withal,
Is kindling coals, that fire all my breast,
And burn me up with flames, that tears would quench.
To weep, is to make less the depth of grief:
Tears, then, for babes; blows, and revenge, for me!—
Richard, I bear thy name, I'll venge thy death,
Or die renowned by attempting it.

*Edw.* His name that valiant duke hath left with thee;
His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

*Rich.* Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's bird,
Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun;
For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom say;
Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

*March.—Enter* WARWICK *and* MONTAGUE, *with Forces.*

*War.* How now, fair lords? What fare? What news abroad?

*Rich.* Great lord of Warwick, if we should recount
Our baleful news, at each word's deliverance,
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,
The words would add more anguish than the wounds.
O valiant lord, the duke of York is slain.

*Edw.* O Warwick! Warwick! that Plantagenet,
Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption,
Is by the stern lord Clifford done to death.

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears:
And now, to add more measure to your woes,
I come to tell you things since then befall'n.
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,
Where your brave father breathed his latest gasp,
Tidings, as swiftly as the post could run,
Were brought me of your loss, and his depart.
I then in London, keeper of the king,
Muster'd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,
And very well appointed, as I thought,
March'd towards Saint Albans to intercept the queen,
Bearing the king in my behalf along:

For by my scouts I was advertised,
That she was coming with a full intent
To dash our late decree in parliament,
Touching king Henry's oath, and your succession.
Short tale to make,—we at St. Albans met,
Our battles join'd, and both sides fiercely fought:
But, whether 'twas the coldness of the king,
Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,
That robb'd my soldiers of their hated spleen;
Or whether 'twas report of her success;
Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,
Who thunders to his captives—blood and death,
I cannot judge: but, to conclude with truth,
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;
Our soldiers—like the night-owl's lazy flight,
Or like a lazy thrasher with a flail,—
Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.
I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,
With promise of high pay, and great rewards:
But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,
And we, in them, no hope to win the day,
So that we fled: the king, unto the queen;
Lord George, your brother, Norfolk, and myself,
In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;
For in the marches here, we heard, you were,
Making another head to fight again.

*Edw.* Where is the duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick?
And when came George from Burgundy to England?

*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers;
And for your brother,—he was lately sent
From your kind aunt, duchess of Burgundy,
With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled:
Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,
But ne'er till now, his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear;
For thou shalt know, this strong right hand of mine
Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,
And wring the awful sceptre from his fist;
Were he as famous and as bold in war,
As he is famed for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, lord Warwick; blame me not:
'Tis love, I bear thy glories, makes me speak.
But, in this troublous time, what's to be done?
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,
Numb'ring our Ave-Maries with our beads?
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?
If for the last, say—Ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out:
And therefore comes my brother Montague.

Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,
With Clifford, and the haught* Northumberland,
And of their feather, many more proud birds,
Have wrought the easy melting king, like wax.
He swore consent to your succession,
His oath enrolled in the parliament;
And now to London all the crew are gone,
To frustrate both his oath, and what beside
May make against the house of Lancaster.
Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong:
Now, if the help of Norfolk, and myself,
With all the friends that thou, brave earl of March,
Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure,
Will but amount to five and twenty thousand,
Why, *Via!* To London will we march amain;
And once again bestride our foaming steeds,
And once again cry—Charge upon our foes!
But never once again turn back, and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now, methinks, I hear great Warwick speak:
Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,
That cries—Retire, if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edw.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean;
And when thou fall'st, (as God forbid the hour!)
Must Edward fall, which peril heaven forefend!

*War.* No longer earl of March, but duke of York;
The next degree is, England's royal throne:
For king of England shalt thou be proclaim'd
In every borough as we pass along;
And he, that throws not up his cap for joy,
Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.
King Edward,—valiant Richard,—Montague,—
Stay we no longer dreaming of renown,
But sound the trumpets, and about our task.

*Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel
(As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds),
I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine.

*Edw.* Then strike up, drums;—God, and Saint George for us!

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*War.* How now? What news?

*Mess.* The duke of Norfolk sends you word by me,
The queen is coming with a puissant host;
And craves your company for speedy counsel.

*War.* Why then it sorts,† brave warriors: Let's away.
[*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—Before York.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, *the Prince of* WALES, CLIFFORD, *and* NORTHUMBERLAND, *with Forces.*

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York:—
Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy,

* Haughty. † Things are as they should be.

That sought to be encompass'd with your crown:
Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord?
*K. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their wreck;—
To see this sight, it irks my very soul.—
Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault,
Not wittingly have I infringed my vow.
*Clif.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity,
And harmful pity, must be laid aside.
To whom do lions cast their gentle looks?
Not to the beast that would usurp their den.
Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?
Not his, that spoils her young before her face.
Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?
Not he, that sets his foot upon her back.
The smallest worm will turn, being trodden on;
And doves will peck, in safeguard of their brood.
Ambitious York did level at thy crown,
Thou smiling, while he knit his angry brows:
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,
And raise his issue, like a loving sire;
Thou, being a king, blessed with a goodly son,
Didst yield consent to disinherit him,
Which argued thee a most unloving father.
Unreasonable creatures feed their young:
And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,
Yet, in protection of their tender ones,
Who hath not seen them (even with those wings
Which sometime they have used with fearful flight),
Make war with him that climb'd unto their nest,
Offering their own lives in their young's defence?
For shame, my liege, make them your precedent!
Were it not pity, that this goodly boy
Should lose his birthright by his father's fault;
And long hereafter say unto his child,—
*What my great-grandfather and grand-sire got,*
*My careless father fondly* gave away?*
Ah, what a shame were this! Look on the boy;
And let his manly face, which promiseth,
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart,
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with him.
*K. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the orator,
Inferring arguments of mighty force.
But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear,—
That things ill got had ever bad success?
And happy always was it for that son,
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?
I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind;
And 'would my father had left me no more!
For all the rest is held at such a rate,
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep,
Than in possession any jot of pleasure.

* Foolishly.

Ah, cousin York! 'would thy best friends did know,
How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!
*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits! Our foes are nigh,
And this soft courage makes your followers faint.
You promised knighthood to our forward son;
Unsheath your sword, and dub him presently.
Edward, kneel down.
*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight;
And learn this lesson,—Draw thy sword in right.
*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kingly leave,
I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,
And in that quarrel use it to the death.
*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a toward prince.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness;
For, with a band of thirty thousand men,
Comes Warwick, backing of the duke of York;
And, in the towns as they do march along,
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him:
Darraign your battle,* for they are at hand.
*Clif.* I would, your highness would depart the field;
The queen hath best success when you are absent.
*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord, and leave us to our fortune.
*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too; therefore I'll stay.
*North.* Be it with resolution then to fight.
*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these noble lords,
And hearten those that fight in your defence:
Unsheath your sword, good father; cry *St. George!*

*March.—Enter* EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, *and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now, perjured Henry! Wilt thou kneel for grace,
And set thy diadem upon my head;
Or bide the mortal fortune of the field?
*Q. Mar.* Go rate thy minions, proud insulting boy!
Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms,
Before thy sovereign, and thy lawful king?
*Edw.* I am his king, and he should bow his knee;
I was adopted heir by his consent:
Since when, his oath is broke; for, as I hear,
You—that are king, though he do wear the crown,—
Have caused him, by new act of parliament,
To blot out me, and put his own son in.
*Clif.* And reason, too:
Who should succeed the father, but the son?
*Rich.* Are you there, butcher?—O, I cannot speak.
*Clif.* Ay, crook-back; here I stand, to answer thee,
Or any he, the proudest of thy sort.
*Rich.* 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland, was it not?
*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied.

* *I. e.* arrange your army in battle array.

*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal to the fight.
*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou yield the crown?
*Q. Mar.* Why, how now, long-tongued Warwick? Dare you speak?
When you and I met at St. Albans last,
Your legs did better service than your hands.
*War.* Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 'tis thine.
*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet you fled.
*War.* 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove me thence.
*North.* No, nor your manhood that durst make you stay.
*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee reverently!—
Break off the parle; for scarce I can refrain
The execution of my big-swollen heart
Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.
*Clif.* I slew thy father: call'st thou him a child?
*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard, and a treacherous coward,
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland;
But, ere sun-set, I'll make thee curse the deed.
*K. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords, and hear me speak.
*Q. Mar.* Defy them, then, or else hold close thy lips.
*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee give no limits to my tongue;
I am a king, and privileged to speak.
*Clif.* My liege, the wound, that bred this meeting here,
Cannot be cured by words; therefore be still.
*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheath thy sword:
By him that made us all, I am resolved,*
That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.
*Edw.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right or no?
A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,
That ne'er shall dine, unless thou yield the crown.
*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;
For York in justice puts his armour on.
*Prince.* If that be right, which Warwick says is right,
There is no wrong, but everything is right.
*Rich.* Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;
For, well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.
*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire, nor dam;
But like a foul misshapen stigmatic,†
Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,
As venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.
*Rich.* Iron of Naples, hid with English gilt‡
Whose father bears the title of a king
(As if a channel § should be call'd the sea),
Shamest thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught,
To let thy tongue detect ‖ thy base-born heart?
*Edw.* A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns,
To make this shameless callet¶ know herself.—
Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,
Although thy husband may be Menelaus:**

* It is my persuasion.
† Branded by nature.
‡ Gilt is a superficial covering of gold.
§ Kennel.
‖ Expose.
¶ Drab.
** *I. e.* a cuckold.

And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd
By that false woman, as this king by thee.
His father revell'd in the heart of France,
And tamed the king, and made the dauphin stoop;
And, had he match'd according to his state,
He might have kept that glory to this day:
But, when he took a beggar to his bed,
And graced thy poor sire with his bridal day:
Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him,
That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France,
And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.
For what broach'd this tumult, but thy pride?
Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept;
And we, in pity of the gentle king,
Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

*Geo.* But, when we saw our sunshine made thy spring,
And that thy summer bred us no increase,
We set the axe to thy usurping root:
And though the edge hath something hit ourselves,
Yet, know thou since we have begun to strike,
We'll never leave, till we have hewn thee down,
Or bathed thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edw.* And, in this resolution I defy thee;
Not willing any longer conference,
Since thou deny'st the gentle king to speak.—
Sound trumpets!—Let our bloody colours wave!—
And either victory, or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward.

*Edw.* No, wrangling woman; we'll no longer stay:
These words will cost ten thousand lives to-day. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—A Field of Battle between Towton and Saxton in Yorkshire.*

*Alarums: Excursions.—Enter* WARWICK.

*War.* Forespent with toil, as runners with a race,
I lay me down a little while to breathe:
For strokes received, and many blows repaid,
Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their strength,
And, spite of spite, needs must I rest a while.

*Enter* EDWARD, *running.*

*Edw.* Smile, gentle heaven, or strike, ungentle death!
For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is clouded.

*War.* How now, my lord? What hap? What hope of good?

*Enter* GEORGE.

*Geo.* Our hap is loss, our hope but sad despair;
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us:
What counsel give you, whither shall we fly?

*Edw.* Bootless is flight, they follow us with wings:
And weak we are, and cannot shun pursuit.

*Enter* RICHARD.

*Rich.* Ah, Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn thyself?
Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath drunk,
Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's lance:
And, in the very pangs of death, he cried,—
Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,—
*Warwick, revenge! Brother, revenge my death!*
So underneath the belly of their steeds,
That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking blood,
The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.
*War.* Then let the earth be drunken with our blood:
I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.
Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,
Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;
And look upon,* as if the tragedy
Were play'd in jest, by counterfeiting actors?
Here on my knee I vow to God above,
I'll never pause again, never stand still,
Till either death hath closed these eyes of mine,
Or fortune given me measure of revenge.
*Edw.* O Warwick, I do bend my knee with thine;
And, in this vow, do chain my soul to thine.—
And ere my knee rise from the earth's cold face,
I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,
Thou setter up and plucker down of kings!
Beseeching thee,†—if with thy will it stands,
That to my foes this body must be prey,—
Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,
And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!—
Now, lords, take leave, until we meet again,
Where'er it be, in heaven, or on earth.
*Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand;—and gentle Warwick,
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:—
I, that did never weep, now melt with woe,
That winter should cut off our spring-time so.
*War.* Away, away! Once more, sweet lords, farewell.
*Geo.* Yet let us altogether to our troops,
And give them leave to fly that will not stay;
And call them pillars, that will stand to us;
And, if we thrive, promise them such rewards
As victors wear at the Olympian games:
This may plant courage in their quailing breasts;
For yet is hope of life and victory.—
Fore-slow ‡ no longer, make we hence amain. [*Exeunt.*

* Look on. † *I. e.* the Divine power. ‡ Be dilatory.

*SCENE IV.—The same. Another part of the Field.*

*Excursions.—Enter* RICHARD *and* CLIFFORD.

*Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone:
Suppose, this arm is for the duke of York,
And this for Rutland; both bound to revenge,
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.
*Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone:
This is the hand that stabb'd thy father York:
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rutland:
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death,
And cheers these hands that slew thy sire and brother,
To execute the like upon thyself;
And so, have at thee.
[*They fight—*WARWICK *enters;* CLIFFORD *flies.*
*Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase;
For I myself will hunt this wolf to death. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE V.—Another part of the Field.*

*Alarum.—Enter* KING HENRY.

*K. Hen.* This battle fares like to the morning's war,
When dying clouds contend with growing light;
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,
Can neither call it perfect day, or night.
Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea,
Forced by the tide to combat with the wind;
Now sways it that way, like the self-same sea,
Forced to retire by fury of the wind:
Sometime the flood prevails; and then, the wind;
Now, one the better; then, another best;
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,
Yet neither conqueror, nor conquered:
So is the equal poise of the fell war.
Here on this molehill will I sit me down.
To whom God will, there be the victory!
For Margaret, my queen, and Clifford, too,
Have chid me from the battle; swearing both,
They prosper best of all when I am thence.
'Would I were dead! if God's good will were so:
For what is in this world but grief and woe?
O God! methinks, it were a happy life,
To be no better than a homely swain;
To sit upon a hill, as I do now,
To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,
Thereby to see the minutes how they run:
How many make the hour full complete,
How many hours bring about the day,
How many days will finish up the year,
How many years a mortal man may live.

When this is known, then to divide the times;
So many hours must I tend my flock;
So many hours must I take my rest;
So many hours must I contemplate;
So many hours must I sport myself;
So many days my ewes have been with young;
So many weeks ere the poor fools will yean;
So many months ere I shall shear the fleece:
So minutes, hours, days, weeks, months, and years,
Pass'd over to the end they were created,
Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.
Ah, what a life were this! How sweet! How lovely!
Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade
To shepherds looking on their silly sheep,
Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy
To kings that fear their subjects' treachery?
O, yes, it doth; a thousand-fold it doth.
And to conclude, the shepherd's homely curds,
His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,
His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,
All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,
Is far beyond a prince's delicates.
His viands sparkling in a golden cup,
His body couched in a curious bed,
When care, mistrust, and treason wait on him.

*Alarum.—Enter a* SON *that has killed his Father, dragging in the dead Body.*

*Son.* Ill blows the wind that profits nobody.—
This man, whom hand-in-hand I slew in fight,
May be possessed with some store of crowns:
And I, that haply take them from him now,
May yet ere night, yield both my life and them
To some man else, as this dead man doth to me.—
Who's this?—O God! it is my father's face,
Whom in this conflict I unawares have kill'd.
O heavy times, begetting such events;
From London by the king was I press'd forth:
My father, being the earl of Warwick's man,
Came on the part of York, press'd by his master;
And I, who at his hands received my life,
Have by my hands of life bereaved him.—
Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did!—
And pardon, father, for I knew not thee!—
My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks;
And no more words till they have flow'd their fill.

*K. Hen.* O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!
Whilst lions war and battle for their dens;
Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.—
Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear:
And let our hearts, and eyes, like civil war,
Be blind with tears, and break, o'ercharged with grief.

*Enter a* FATHER *who hath killed his Son, with the Body in his Arms.*

*Fath.* Thou that so stoutly had resisted me,
Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold;
For I have bought it with a hundred blows.—
But let me see:—Is this our foeman's face?
Ah, no, no, no, it is mine only son!—
Ah, boy, if any life be left in thee,
Throw up thine eye; see, see, what showers arise,
Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,
Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart!—
O, pity, God, this miserable age!—
What stratagems,* how fell, how butcherly,
Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,
This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!—
O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,
And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!
*K. Hen.* Woe above woe! Grief more than common grief!
O, that my death would stay these ruthful deeds!—
O pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity!—
The red rose and the white are on his face,
The fatal colours of our striving houses:
The one his purple blood right well resembles;
The other, his pale cheek, methinks, present:
Wither one rose, and let the other flourish!
If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.
*Son.* How will my mother, for a father's death,
Take on with me and ne'er be satisfied!†
*Fath.* How will my wife, for slaughter of my son,
Shed seas of tears, and ne'er be satisfied!
*K. Hen.* How will the country, for these woeful chances,
Misthink‡ the king, and not be satisfied?
*Son.* Was ever son, so rued a father's death?
*Fath.* Was ever father, so bemoan'd a son?
*K. Hen.* Was ever king, so grieved for subjects' woe?
Much is your sorrow; mine, ten times so much.
*Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill.
[*Exit with the body.*
*Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy winding-sheet;
My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre;
For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go.
My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;
And so obsequious§ will thy father be,
E'en for the loss of thee, having no more,
As Priam was for all his valiant sons.
I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that will,
For I have murder'd where I should not kill. [*Exit with the body.*
*K. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,
Here sits a king more woeful than you are.

* Dreadful events.
† Reproach me with incessant lamentation.
‡ Think unfavourably of.
§ Careful of obsequies.

*Alarums: Excursions.—Enter* QUEEN MARGARET, *Prince of* WALES, *and* EXETER.

*Prince.* Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,
And Warwick rages like a chafed bull:
Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.
*Q. Mar.* Mount you, my lord, towards Berwick post amain;
Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds,
Having the fearful flying hare in sight,
With fiery eyes, sparkling for very wrath,
And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,
Are at our backs; and therefore hence amain.
*Exe.* Away! for vengeance comes along with them:
Nay, stay not to expostulate, make speed;
Or else come after, I'll away before.
*K. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter;
Not that I fear to stay, but love to go
Whither the queen intends. Forward; away! [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VI.—The same.*

*A loud Alarum.—Enter* CLIFFORD, *wounded.*

*Clif.* Here burns my candle out, ay, here it dies,
Which, while it lasted, gave king Henry light.
O, Lancaster! I fear thy overthrow
More than my body's parting with my soul.
My love, and fear, glued many friends to thee;
And, now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt.
Impairing Henry, strength'ning mis-proud York,
The common people swarm like summer flies:
And whither fly the gnats, but to the sun?
And who shines now, but Henry's enemies?
O Phœbus! hadst thou never given consent
That Phaëton should check thy fiery steeds,
Thy burning car never had scorch'd the earth:
And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should do,
Or as thy father, and his father, did,
Giving no ground unto the house of York,
They never then had sprung like summer flies;
I, and ten thousand in this luckless realm,
Had left no mourning widows for our death,
And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace.
For what doth cherish weeds, but gentle air?
And what makes robbers bold, but too much lenity?
Bootless are plaints, and cureless are my wounds;
No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:
The foe is merciless, and will not pity;
For, at their hands, I have deserved no pity;
The air hath got into my deadly wounds,
And much effuse of blood doth make me faint:—
Come, York, and Richard, Warwick, and the rest;
I stabb'd your fathers' bosoms, split my breast. [*He faints.*

*Alarum and Retreat.—Enter* EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, *and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords; good fortune bids us pause,
And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.—
Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen;
That led calm Henry, though he were a king,
As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,
Command an argosy to stem the waves.
But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them?
*War.* No, 'tis impossible he should escape;
For, though before his face I speak the words,
Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave;
And, wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead.
[CLIFFORD *groans and dies.*
*Edw.* Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave?
*Rich.* A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.
*Edw.* See who it is: and now the battle's ended,
If friend or foe, let him be gently used.
*Rich.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford;
Who, not contented that he lopp'd the branch,
In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,
But set his murdering knife unto the root
From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring,
I mean our princely father, duke of York.
*War.* From off the gates of York fetch down the head.
Your father's head, which Clifford placed there:
Instead whereof, let this supply the room;
Measure for measure must be answered.
*Edw.* Bring forth this fatal screech-owl to our house,
That nothing sung but death to us and ours:
Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound,
And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.
[*Attendants bring the body forward.*
*War.* I think his understanding is bereft:—
Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee?—
Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of life,
And he nor sees, nor hears us what we say.
*Rich.* O, 'would he did! And so, perhaps, he doth;
'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,
Because he would avoid such bitter taunts
Which in the time of death he gave our father.
*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager* words.
*Rich.* Clifford, ask mercy, and obtain no grace.
*Edw.* Clifford, repent in bootless penitence.
*War.* Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.
*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.
*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.
*Edw.* Thou pitied'st Rutland, I will pity thee.
*Geo.* Where's captain Margaret to fence you now?
*War.* They mock thee, Clifford, swear as thou wast wont.

* Sour.

*Rich.* What, not an oath? Nay, then the world goes hard,
When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath:—
I know by that, he's dead; and, by my soul,
If this right hand would buy two hours' life,
That I in all despite might rail at him,
This hand should chop it off; and with the issuing blood
Stifle the villain, whose unstaunched thirst
York and young Rutland could not satisfy.
*War.* Ay, but he's dead: Off with the traitor's head,
And rear it in the place your father's stands.—
And now to London, with triumphant march,
There to be crowned England's royal king.
From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,
And ask the lady Bona for thy queen:
So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;
And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread
The scatter'd foe, that hopes to rise again;
For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,
Yet look to have them buz, to offend thine ears.
First, will I see the coronation;
And then to Britanny I'll cross the sea,
To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.
*Edw.* Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick, let it be:
For on thy shoulder do I build my seat;
And never will I undertake the thing,
Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.—
Richard, I will create thee duke of Gloster;—
And George, of Clarence;—Warwick, as ourself,
Shall do, and undo, as him pleaseth best.
*Rich.* Let me be duke of Clarence, George of Gloster;
For Gloster's dukedom is too ominous.
*War.* Tut, that's a foolish observation;
Richard be duke of Gloster: now to London,
To see these honours in possession. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT III.

### *SCENE I.—A Chase in the North of England.*

*Enter Two* KEEPERS *with cross-bows in their hands.*

1 *Keep.* Under this thick-grown brake* we'll shroud ourselves
For through this laund† anon the deer will come:
And in this covert will we make our stand,
Culling the principal of all the deer.
2 *Keep.* I'll stay above the hill, so both may shoot.
1 *Keep.* That cannot be, the noise of thy cross-bow
Will scare the herd, and so my shoot is lost.
Here stand we both, and aim we at the best:
And, for the time shall not seem tedious,

* Thicket. † Lawn.

I'll tell thee what befel me on a day,
In this self-place where now we mean to stand.
2 *Keep.* Here comes a man, let's stay till he be past.

*Enter* KING HENRY, *disguised, with a prayer-book.*

*K. Hen.* From Scotland am I stolen, even of pure love,
To greet mine own land with my wishful sight.
No, Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine;
Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,
Thy balm wash'd off, wherewith thou wast anointed:
No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,
No humble suitors press to speak for right,
No, not a man comes for redress of thee;
For how can I help them, and not myself?
1 *Keep.* Ay, here's a deer whose skin 's a keeper's fee:
This is the *quondam* king; let's seize upon him.
*K. Hen.* Let me embrace thee, sad adversity!
For wise men say, it is the wisest course.
2 *Keep.* Why linger we? Let us lay hands upon him.
1 *Keep.* Forbear awhile; we'll hear a little more.
*K. Hen.* My queen, and son, are gone to France for aid;
And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick
Is thither gone, to crave the French king's sister
To wife for Edward: if this news be true,
Poor queen, and son, your labour is but lost;
For Warwick is a subtle orator,
And Lewis a prince soon won with moving words.
By this account, then, Margaret may win him;
For she's a woman to be pitied much:
Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;
Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;
The tiger will be mild, while she doth mourn;
And Nero will be tainted with remorse,
To hear, and see, her plaints, her brinish tears.
Ay, but she's come to beg; Warwick, to give:
She, on his left side, craving aid for Henry;
He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward.
She weeps, and says—her Henry is deposed;
He smiles, and says—his Edward is install'd;
That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no more:
Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the wrong,
Inferreth arguments of mighty strength;
And, in conclusion, wins the king from her,
With promise of his sister, and what else,
To strengthen and support king Edward's place.
O Margaret, thus 'twill be; and thou, poor soul,
Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn.
2 *Keep.* Say, what art thou, that talk'st of kings and queens?
*K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than I was born to:
A man at least, for less I should not be;
And men may talk of kings, and why not I?
2 *Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.
*K. Hen.* Why, so I am in mind; and that's enough.

2 *Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?
*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on my head;
Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,
Nor to be seen: my crown is call'd content;
A crown it is, that seldom kings enjoy.
2 *Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd with content,
Your crown content, and you, must be contented
To go along with us: for, as we think,
You are the king, king Edward hath deposed;
And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,
Will apprehend you as his enemy.
*K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and break an oath?
2 *Keep.* No, never such an oath; nor will not now.
*K. Hen.* Where did you dwell, when I was king of England?
2 *Keep.* Here in this country, where we now remain.
*K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine months old;
My father, and my grandfather, were kings;
And you were sworn true subjects unto me:
And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths?
1 *Keep.* No;
For we were subjects, but while you were king.
*K. Hen.* Why, am I dead? Do I not breathe a man?
Ah, simple men, you know not what you swear.
Look, as I blow this feather from my face,
And as the air blows it to me again,
Obeying with my wind when I do blow,
And yielding to another when it blows,
Commanded always by the greater gust;
Such is the lightness of you common men.
But do not break your oaths; for, of that sin
My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.
Go where you will, the king shall be commanded;
And be you kings; command, and I'll obey.
1 *Keep.* We are true subjects to the king, king Edward.
*K. Hen.* So would you be again to Henry,
If he were seated as king Edward is.
1 *Keep.* We charge you, in God's name, and in the king's,
To go with us unto the officers.
*K. Hen.* In God's name, lead; your king's name be obey'd:
And what God will, then let your king perform;
And what he will, I humbly yield unto. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, CLARENCE, *and* LADY GREY

*K. Edw.* Brother of Gloster, at St. Albans field
The lady's husband, Sir John Grey, was slain;
His lands then seized on by the conqueror:
Her suit is now to repossess those lands;
Which we in justice cannot well deny,
Because in quarrel of the house of York
The worthy gentleman did lose his life,

*Glo.* Your highness shall do well; to grant her suit;
It were dishonour, to deny it her.
*K. Edw.* It were no less; but yet I'll make a pause.
*Glo.* Yea! is it so?
I see, the lady hath a thing to grant,
Before the king will grant her humble suit.
*Clar.* He knows the game; how true he keeps the wind? [*Aside.*
*Glo.* Silence! [*Aside.*
*K. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your suit,
And come some other time to know our mind.
*L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay:
May it please your highness to resolve me now;
And what your pleasure is, shall satisfy me.
Glo. [*aside*]. Ay, widow? Then I'll warrant you all your lands,
An if what pleases him, shall pleasure you.
Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow.
*Clar.* I fear her not, unless she chance to fall. [*Aside.*
*Glo.* God forbid that! for he'll take 'vantages. [*Aside.*
*K. Edw.* How many children hast thou, widow? Tell me.
*Clar.* I think he means to beg a child of her. [*Aside.*
*Glo.* Nay, whip me then; he'll rather give her two. [*Aside.*
*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.
*Glo.* You shall have four, if you'll be ruled by him. [*Aside.*
*K. Edw.* 'Twere pity, they should lose their father's land.
*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it then.
*K. Edw.* Lords, give us leave; I'll try this widow's wit.
*Glo.* Ay, good leave have you; for you will have leave,
Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch.
[GLOSTER *and* CLARENCE *retire to the other side.*
*K. Edw.* Now, tell me, madam, do you love your children?
*L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.
*K. Edw.* And would you not do much to do them good?
*L. Grey.* To do them good, I would sustain some harm.
*K. Edw.* Then get your husband's land, to do them good.
*L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your majesty.
*K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got.
*L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your highness' service.
*K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if I give them?
*L. Grey.* What you command, that rests in me to do.
*K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.
*L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.
*K. Edw.* Ay, but thou canst do what I mean to ask.
*L. Grey.* Why, then I will do what your grace commands.
*Glo.* He plies her hard; and much rain wears the marble. [*Aside.*
*Clar.* As red as fire! Nay, then her wax must melt. [*Aside.*
*L. Grey.* Why stops my lord? Shall I not hear my task?
*K. Edw.* An easy task; 'tis but to love a king.
*L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.
*K. Edw.* Why then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee.
*L. Grey.* I take my leave, with many thousand thanks.

*Glo.* The match is made; she seals it with a curt'sy. [*Aside.*
*K. Edw.* But stay thee, 'tis the fruits of love I mean.
*L. Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.
*K. Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense.
What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?
*L. Grey.* My love till death, my humble thanks, my prayers;
That love, which virtue begs, and virtue grants.
*K. Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.
*L. Grey.* Why, then you mean not as I thought you did.
*K. Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind.
*L. Grey.* My mind will never grant what I perceive
Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.
*K. Edw.* To tell thee plain, I am to lie with thee.
*L. Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather lie in prison.
*K. Edw.* Why, then thou shalt not have thy husband's lands.
*L. Grey.* Why, then mine honesty shall be my dower;
For by that loss I will not purchase them.
*K. Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily.
*L. Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs both them and me.
But, mighty lord, this merry inclination,
Accords not with the sadness* of my suit;
Please you dismiss me, either with ay, or no.
*K. Edw.* Ay; if thou wilt say ay, to my request:
No; if thou dost say no, to my demand.
*L. Grey.* Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.
*Glo.* The widow likes him not, she knits her brows. [*Aside.*
*Clar.* He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom. [*Aside.*
K. Edw. [*aside*]. Her looks do argue her replete with modesty;
Her words do show her wit incomparable;
All her perfections challenge sovereignty;
One way, or other, she is for a king;
And she shall be my love, or else my queen.—
Say, that king Edward take thee for his queen?
*L. Grey.* 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord:
I am a subject fit to jest withal,
But far unfit to be a sovereign.
*K. Edw.* Sweet widow, by my state, I swear to thee,
I speak no more than what my soul intends;
And that is to enjoy thee for my love.
*L. Grey.* And that is more than I will yield unto:
I know, I am too mean to be your queen;
And yet too good to be your concubine.
*K. Edw.* You cavil, widow; I did mean, my queen.
*L. Grey.* 'Twill grieve your grace, my sons should call you—father.
*K. Edw.* No more, than when thy daughters call thee mother.
Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children;
And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,
Have other some: why, 'tis a happy thing
To be the father unto many sons.
Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

* The seriousness.

*Glo.* The ghostly father now hath done his shrift. [*Aside.*
*Clar.* When he was made a shriver, 'twas for shift. [*Aside.*
*K. Edw.* Brothers, you muse what chat we two have had.
*Glo.* The widow likes it not, for she looks sad,
*K. Edw.* You'd think it strange, if I should marry her.
*Clar.* To whom, my lord?
*K. Edw.* Why, Clarence, to myself.
*Glo.* That would be ten days' wonder, at the least.
*Clar.* That's a day longer than a wonder lasts.
*Glo.* By so much is the wonder in extremes.
*K. Edw.* Well, jest on, brothers: I can tell you both,
Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

*Enter a* NOBLEMAN.

*Nob.* My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,
And brought your prisoner to your palace gate.
*K. Edw.* See, that he be convey'd unto the Tower:—
And go we, brothers, to the man that took him,
To question of his apprehension.—
Widow, go you along;—Lords, use her honourably,
[*Exeunt* KING EDWARD, *Lady* GREY, CLARENCE, *and Lord.*
*Glo.* Ay, Edward will use women honourably.
Would he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all,
That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,
To cross me from the golden time I look for!
And yet, between my soul's desire and me
(The lustful Edward's title buried),
Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward,
And all the unlook'd-for issue of their bodies,
To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:
A cold premeditation for my purpose!
Why, then I do but dream on sovereignty;
Like one that stands upon a promontory,
And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,
Wishing his foot were equal with his eye;
And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,
Saying—he'll lade it dry to have his way
So do I wish the crown, being so far off;
And so I chide the means that keep me from it;
And so I say—I'll cut the causes off,
Flattering me with impossibilities.—
My eye 's too quick, my heart o'erweens too much,
Unless my hand and strength could equal them.
Well, say there is no kingdom then for Richard;
What other pleasure can the world afford?
I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,
And deck my body in gay ornaments,
And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks.
O miserable thought! and more unlikely,
Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!
Why, love forswore me in my mother's womb:
And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,
She did corrupt frail nature with a bribe

To shrink my arm up like a wither'd shrub;
To make an envious mountain on my back,
Where sits deformity to mock my body;
To shape my legs of an unequal size;
To disproportion me in every part,
Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp,
That carries no impression like the dam.
And am I then a man to be beloved?
O, monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought!
Then, since this earth affords no joy to me,
But to command, to check, to o'erbear such
As are of better person than myself,
I'll make my heaven—to dream upon the crown;
And, whiles I live, to account this world but hell,
Until my misshaped trunk that bears this head,
Be round impaled* with a glorious crown.
And yet I know not how to get the crown,
For many lives stand between me and home:
And I,—like one lost in a thorny wood,
That rents the thorns, and is rent with the thorns;
Seeking a way, and straying from the way;
Not knowing how to find the open air,
But toiling desperately to find it out,—
Torment myself to catch the English crown.
And from that torment I will free myself,
Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.
Why, I can smile, and murder while I smile;
And cry, content, to that which grieves my heart;
And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,
And frame my face to all occasions.
I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall;
I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk;
I'll play the orator as well as Nestor,
Deceive more slyly than Ulysses could,
And, like a Sinon, take another Troy:
I can add colours to the cameleon;
Change shapes, with Proteus, for advantages,
And set the murd'rous Machiavel to school.
Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?
Tut! were it further off, I'll pluck it down. [*Exit.*

*SCENE III.—France. A Room in the Palace.*

*Flourish. Enter* LEWIS *the French King, and Lady* BONA, *attended; the King takes his State. Then enter* QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD *her son, and the Earl of* OXFORD.

*K. Lew.* Fair queen of England, worthy Margaret, [*Rising.*
Sit down with us; it ill befits thy state,
And birth, that thou shouldst stand, while Lewis doth sit.
*Q. Mar.* No, mighty king of France; now Margaret

* Encircled.

Must strike her sail, and learn awhile to serve,
Where kings command. I was, I must confess,
Great Albion's queen in former golden days:
But now mischance hath trod my title down,
And with dishonour laid me on the ground;
Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,
And to my humble seat conform myself.

*K. Lew.* Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this deep despair?

*Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears,
And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in cares.

*K. Lew.* Whate'er it be, be thou still like thyself,
And sit thee by our side: yield not thy neck [*Seats her by him.*
To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind
Still ride in triumph over all mischance.
Be plain, queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;
It shall be eased, if France can yield relief.

*Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my drooping thoughts,
And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to speak.
Now, therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,—
That Henry, sole possessor of my love,
Is, of a king, become a banish'd man,
And forced to live in Scotland a forlorn;
While proud ambitious Edward, duke of York,
Usurps the regal title, and the seat
Of England's true-anointed lawful king.
This is the cause, that I, poor Margaret,—
With this my son, prince Edward, Henry's heir,—
Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;
And, if thou fail us, all our hope is done:
Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;
Our people and our peers are both misled,
Our treasure seized, our soldiers put to flight,
And, as thou see'st, ourselves in heavy plight.

*K. Lew.* Renowned queen, with patience calm the storm,
While we bethink a means to break it off.

*Q. Mar.* The more we stay, the stronger grows our foe.

*K. Lew.* The more I stay, the more I'll succour thee.

*Q. Mar.* O, but impatience waiteth on true sorrow:
And see, where comes the breeder of my sorrow.

*Enter* WARWICK, *attended.*

*K. Lew.* What's he, approacheth boldly to our presence?

*Q. Mar.* Our earl of Warwick, Edward's greatest friend.

*K. Lew.* Welcome, brave Warwick! What brings thee to France?
[*Descending from his state,* Queen* MARGARET *rises.*

*Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to rise;
For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

*War.* From worthy Edward, king of Albion,
My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,
I come,—in kindness and unfeigned love,—

* From his throne.

First, to do greetings to thy royal person;
And, then, to crave a league of amity;
And, lastly, to confirm that amity
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant
That virtuous lady Bona, thy fair sister,
To England's king, in lawful marriage.

*Q. Mar.* If that go forward, Henry's hope is done.

*War.* And, gracious madam [*To* BONA], in our king's behalf,
I am commanded, with your leave and favour,
Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue
To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart;
Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,
Hath placed thy beauty's image, and thy virtue.

*Q. Mar.* King Lewis,—and lady Bona,—hear me speak,
Before you answer Warwick. His demand
Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest love,
But from deceit, bred by necessity;
For how can tyrants safely govern home,
Unless abroad they purchase great alliance?
To prove him tyrant, this reason may suffice,—
That Henry liveth still: but were he dead,
Yet here prince Edward stands, king Henry's son.
Look, therefore, Lewis, that by this league and marriage,
Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour:
For though usurpers sway the rule awhile,
Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth wrongs.

*War.* Injurious Margaret!

*Prince.* And why not queen?

*War.* Because thy father Henry did usurp;
And thou no more art prince, than she is queen.

*Oxf.* Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,
Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain:
And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the fourth,
Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;
And, after that wise prince, Henry the fifth,
Who, by his prowess, conquered all France;
From these our Henry lineally descends.

*War.* Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,
You told not, how Henry the sixth hath lost
All that which Henry the fifth had gotten?
Methinks, these peers of France should smile at that.
But for the rest,—You tell a pedigree
Of threescore and two years; a silly time
To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against thy liege,
Whom thou obey'dst thirty and six years,
And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the right,
Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?
For shame, leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king, by whose injurious doom
My elder brother, the lord Aubrey Vere,
Was done to death? and more than so, my father.

Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,
When nature brought him to the door of death?
No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.
*War.* And I the house of York.
*K. Lew.* Queen Margaret, prince Edward, and Oxford,
Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside,
While I use further conference with Warwick.
*Q. Mar.* Heaven grant, that Warwick's words bewitch him not.
[*Retiring with the* PRINCE *and* OXFORD.
*K. Lew.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon thy conscience,
Is Edward your true king? for I were loath,
To link with him that were not lawful chosen.
*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour.
*K. Lew.* But is he gracious in the people's eye?
*War.* The more, that Henry was unfortunate.
*K. Lew.* Then further,—all dissembling set aside,
Tell me for truth the measure of his love
Unto our sister Bona.
*War.* Such it seems,
As may beseem a monarch like himself.
Myself have often heard him say and swear,—
That this his love was an eternal plant;
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's sun;
Exempt from envy,* but not from disdain,
Unless the lady Bona quit his pain.
*K. Lew.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm resolve.
*Bona.* Your grant, or your denial, shall be mine:—
Yet I confess [*To* WARWICK], that often ere this day,
When I have heard your king's desert recounted,
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.
*K. Lew.* Then, Warwick, thus,—Our sister shall be Edward's;
And now forthwith shall articles be drawn
Touching the jointure that your king must make,
Which with her dowry shall be counterpoised:—
Draw near, queen Margaret; and be a witness,
That Bona shall be wife to the English king.
*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English king.
*Q. Mar.* Deceitful Warwick! it was thy device
By this alliance to make void my suit;
Before thy coming, Lewis was Henry's friend.
*K. Lew.* And still is friend to him and Margaret:
But if your title to the crown be weak,—
As may appear by Edward's good success,—
Then 'tis but reason, that I be released
From giving aid, which late I promised.
Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand,
That your estate requires, and mine can yield.
*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland, at his ease;
Where having nothing, nothing he can lose.

* Malice or hatred.

And as for you yourself, our *quondam* queen,—
You have a father able to maintain you;
And better 'twere, you troubled him than France.
*Q. Mar.* Peace, impudent, and shameless Warwick; peace;
Proud setter-up and puller-down of kings!
I will not hence, till with my talk and tears,
Both full of truth, I make king Lewis behold
Thy sly conveyance,* and thy lord's false love;
For both of you are birds of self-same feather.
[*A horn sounded within.*
*K. Lew.* Warwick, this is some post to us, or thee.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord ambassador, these letters are for you;
Sent from your brother, marquis Montague.
These from our king unto your majesty.—
And, madam, these for you; from whom, I know not.
[*To* MARGARET. *They all read their letters.*
*Oxf.* I like it well, that our fair queen and mistress
Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at his.
*Prince.* Nay, mark, how Lewis stamps as he were nettled:
I hope, all's for the best.
*K. Lew.* Warwick, what are thy news? and yours, fair queen?
*Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with unhoped joys.
*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's discontent.
*K. Lew.* What! has your king married the lady Grey?
And now, to sooth† your forgery and his,
Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?
Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?
Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?
*Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much before:
This proveth Edward's love, and Warwick's honesty.
*War.* King Lewis, I here protest,—in sight of heaven,
And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,—
That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's;
No more my king, for he dishonours me;
But most himself, if he could see his shame.—
Did I forget, that by the house of York
My father came untimely to his death?
Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?
Did I impale him with the regal crown?
Did I put Henry from his native right;
And am I guerdon'd‡ at the last with shame?
Shame on himself! for my desert is honour.
And, to repair my honour lost for him,
I here renounce him, and return to Henry:
My noble queen, let former grudges pass,
And henceforth I am thy true servitor;
I will revenge his wrong to lady Bona,
And replant Henry in his former state.
*Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to love;

* Juggling. † Soften. ‡ Rewarded.

And I forgive and quite forget old faults,
And joy that thou becom'st king Henry's friend.
*War.* So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,
That, if king Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us
With some few bands of chosen soldiers,
I'll undertake to land them on our coast,
And force the tyrant from his seat by war.
'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him:
And as for Clarence,—as my letters tell me,
He's very likely now to fall from him;
For matching more for wanton lust than honour,
Or than for strength and safety of our country.
*Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be revenged,
But by thy help to this distressed queen?
*Q. Mar.* Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,
Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?
*Bona.* My quarrel, and this English queen's, are one.
*War.* And mine, fair lady Bona, joins with yours.
*K. Lew.* And mine, with hers, and thine, and Margaret's.
Therefore, at last, I firmly am resolved,
You shall have aid.
*Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all at once.
*K. Lew.* Then England's messenger, return in post;
And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,—
That Lewis of France is sending over maskers,
To revel it with him and his new bride:
Thou seest what's past, go fear* thy king withal.
*Bona.* Tell him, In hope he'll prove a widower shortly,
I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.
*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning weeds are laid aside,
And I am ready to put armour on.
*War.* Tell him from me, That he hath done me wrong;
And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be long.
There's thy reward; be gone. [*Exit* MESSENGER.
*K. Lew.* But, Warwick, thou,
And Oxford, with five thousand men,
Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward battle:
And, as occasion serves, this noble queen
And prince shall follow with a fresh supply.
Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt;—
What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?
*War.* This shall assure my constant loyalty:—
That if our queen and this young prince agree,
I'll join mine eldest daughter, and my joy,
To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.
*Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion:—
Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to Warwick;
And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

* Affright.

*Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it;
And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.
[*He gives his hand to* WARWICK.
*K. Lew.* Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be levied,
And thou, lord Bourbon, our high admiral,
Shall waft them over with our royal fleet.—
I long, till Edward fall by war's mischance,
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.
[*Exeunt all but* WARWICK.
*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador,
But I return his sworn and mortal foe:
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,
But dreadful war shall answer his demand.
Had he none else to make a stale,* but me?
Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.
I was the chief that raised him to the crown,
And I'll be chief to bring him down again:
Not that I pity Henry's misery,
But seek revenge on Edward's mockery. [*Exit.*

---

# ACT IV.

## *SCENE I.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* GLOSTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, MONTAGUE, *and others.*

*Glo.* Now tell me, brother Clarence, what think you
Of this new marriage with the lady Grey?
Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?
*Clar.* Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France;
How could he stay till Warwick made return?
*Som.* My lords, forbear this talk; here comes the king.

*Flourish. Enter* KING EDWARD, *attended;* LADY GREY, *as Queen;* PEMBROKE, STAFFORD, HASTINGS, *and others.*

*Glo.* And his well-chosen bride.
*Clar.* I mind to tell him plainly what I think.
*K. Edw.* Now brother of Clarence, how like you our choice,
That you stand pensive, as half malecontent?
*Clar.* As well as Lewis of France, or the earl of Warwick;
Which are so weak of courage, and in judgment,
That they'll take no offence at our abuse.
*K. Edw.* Suppose, they take offence without a cause,
They are but Lewis and Warwick; I am Edward,
Your king and Warwick's, and must have my will.

* A stalking-horse.

*Glo.* And you shall have your will, because our king:
Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.
*K. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too?
*Glo.* Not I:
No; God forbid, that I should wish them sever'd
Whom God hath join'd together: ay, an 'twere pity,
To sunder them that yoke so well together.
*K. Edw.* Setting your scorns, and your mislike aside,
Tell me some reason, why the lady Grey
Should not become my wife, and England's queen:—
And you too, Somerset, and Montague,
Speak freely what you think.
*Clar.* Then this is my opinion,—that king Lewis
Becomes your enemy, for mocking him
About the marriage of the lady Bona.
*Glo.* And Warwick, doing what you gave in charge,
Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.
*K. Edw.* What, if both Lewis and Warwick be appeased,
By such invention as I can devise?
*Mont.* Yet to have join'd with France in such alliance,
Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth
'Gainst foreign storms, than any home-bred marriage.
*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague, that of itself
England is safe, if true within itself?
*Mont.* Yes; but the safer, when 'tis back'd with France.
*Hast.* 'Tis better using France, than trusting France:
Let us be back'd with God, and with the seas,
Which he hath given for fence impregnable,
And with their helps only defend ourselves;
In them, and in ourselves, our safety lies.
*Clar.* For this one speech, lord Hastings well deserves
To have the heir of the lord Hungerford.
*K. Edw.* Ay, what of that; it was my will, and grant;
And, for this once, my will shall stand for law.
*Glo.* And yet, methinks, your grace hath not done well,
To give the heir and daughter of lord Scales
Unto the brother of your loving bride;
She better would have fitted me, or Clarence:
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.
*Clar.* Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir*
Of the lord Bonville on your new wife's son,
And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.
*K. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence, is it for a wife
That thou art malecontent? I will provide thee.
*Clar.* In choosing for yourself you show'd your judgment;
Which being shallow, you shall give me leave
To play the broker in mine own behalf;
And, to that end, I shortly mind to leave you.
*K. Edw.* Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be king,
And not be tied unto his brother's will.
*Q. Eliz.* My lords, before it pleased his majesty

* Heiress.

To raise my state to title of a queen,
Do me but right, and you must all confess
That I was not ignoble of descent,
And meaner than myself have had like fortune.
But as this title honours me and mine,
So your dislikes, to whom I would be pleasing,
Do cloud my joys with danger and with sorrow.

*K. Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon their frowns:
What danger, or what sorrow can befall thee,
So long as Edward is thy constant friend,
And their true sovereign, whom they must obey?
Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee too,
Unless they seek for hatred at my hands:
Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,
And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

*Glo.* I hear, yet say not much, but think the more. [*Aside.*

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*K. Edw.* Now, messenger, what letters, or what news,
From France?

*Mess.* My sovereign liege, no letters; and few words,
But such as I, without your special pardon,
Dare not relate.

*K. Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in brief,
Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess them.
What answer makes king Lewis unto our letters?

*Mess.* At my depart, these were his very words:
*Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,—*
*That Lewis of France is sending over maskers,*
*To revel it with him and his new bride.*

*K. Edw.* Is Lewis so brave? belike, he thinks me Henry.
But what said lady Bona to my marriage?

*Mess.* These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain:
*Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,*
*I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.*

*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less;
She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen?
For I have heard, that she was there in place.*

Mess. *Tell him*, quoth she, *my mourning weeds are done,*†
*And I am ready to put armour on.*

*K. Edw.* Belike, she minds to play the Amazon.
But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Mess.* He, more incensed against your majesty
Than all the rest, discharged me with these words:
*Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,*
*And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be long.*

*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?
Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd:
They shall have wars, and pay for their presumption.
But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

* Present. † Thrown off.

*Mess.* Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in friendship,
That young prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.
*Clar.* Belike, the elder; Clarence will have the younger.
Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,
For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter;
That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage
I may not prove inferior to yourself.—
You, that love me and Warwick, follow me.
[*Exit* CLARENCE, *and* SOMERSET *follows.*
*Glo.* Not I:
My thoughts aim at a further matter; I
Stay not for love of Edward, but the crown. [*Aside.*
*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!
Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen;
And haste is needful in this desperate case.—
Pembroke, and Stafford, you in our behalf
Go levy men, and make prepare for war;
They are already, or quickly will be landed:
Myself in person will straight follow you.
[*Exeunt* PEMBROKE *and* STAFFORD.
But, ere I go, Hastings,—and Montague,—
Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest,
Are near to Warwick, by blood, and by alliance:
Tell me, if you love Warwick more than me?
If it be so, then both depart to him;
I rather wish you foes, than hollow friends;
But if you mind to hold your true obedience,
Give me assurance with some friendly vow,
That I may never have you in suspect.
*Mont.* So God help Montague, as he proves true!
*Hast.* And Hastings, as he favours Edward's cause!
*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?
*Glo.* Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.
*K. Edw.* Why so; then am I sure of victory.
Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour,
Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—A Plain in Warwickshire.*

*Enter* WARWICK *and* OXFORD, *with French and other Forces.*

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well;
The common people by numbers swarm to us.

*Enter* CLARENCE *and* SOMERSET.

But, see, where Somerset and Clarence come;—
Speak suddenly, my lords, are we all friends?
*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.
*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;
And welcome, Somerset:—I hold it cowardice,
To rest mistrustful where a noble heart
Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love;
Else might I think, that Clarence, Edward's brother,

Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings;
But welcome, Clarence; my daughter shall be thine.
And now what rests, but, in night's overture,
Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,
His soldiers lurking in the towns about,
And but attended by a simple guard,
We may surprise and take him at our pleasure?
Our scouts have found the adventure very easy:
That as Ulysses, and stout Diomede,
With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus' tents,
And brought from thence the Thracian fatal* steeds;
So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,
At unawares may beat down Edward's guard,
And seize himself;—I say not—slaughter him,
For I intend but only to surprise him.—
You, that will follow me to this attempt,
Applaud the name of Henry, with your leader.
[*They all cry*, Henry!
Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort:
For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George! [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—Edward's Camp, near Warwick.*

*Enter certain* WATCHMEN, *to guard the King's tent.*

1 *Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stand;
The king, by this, is set him down to sleep.
2 *Watch.* What, will he not to-bed?
1 *Watch.* Why, no: for he hath made a solemn vow
Never to lie and take his natural rest,
Till Warwick, or himself, be quite suppress'd.
2 *Watch.* To-morrow then, belike, shall be the day,
If Warwick be so near as men report.
3 *Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that,
That with the king here resteth in his tent?
1 *Watch.* 'Tis the lord Hastings, the king's chiefest friend.
3 *Watch.* O, is it so? But why commands the king,
That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,
While he himself keepeth in the cold field?
2 *Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous.
3 *Watch.* Ay; but give me worship and quietness,
I like it better than a dangerous honour.
If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,
'Tis to be doubted, he would waken him.
1 *Watch.* Unless our halberts did shut up his passage.
2 *Watch.* Ay; wherefore else guard we his royal tent,
But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter* WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, *and Forces.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see, where stand his guard.
Courage, my masters: honour now, or never!
But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

* *I. e.* fatal to Troy.

1 *Watch.* Who goes there?
2 *Watch.* Stay, or thou diest.
[WARWICK, *and the rest, cry all*—Warwick! Warwick! *and set upon the guard; who fly, crying*—Arm! Arm! —WARWICK, *and the rest, following them.*

*The Drum beating, and Trumpets sounding, re-enter* WARWICK, *and the rest, bringing the* KING *out in a gown, sitting in a chair;* GLOSTER *and* HASTINGS *fly.*

*Som.* What are they that fly there?
*War.* Richard, and Hastings: let them go, here's the duke.
*K. Edw.* The duke! why, Warwick, when we parted last,
Thou call'dst me king?
*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd:
When you disgraced me in my embassade,
Then I degraded you from being king,
And come now to create you duke of York.
Alas! how should you govern any kingdom,
That know not how to use ambassadors;
Nor how to be contented with one wife;
Nor how to use your brothers brotherly;
Nor how to study for the people's welfare;
Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies?
*K. Edw.* Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?
Nay, then I see, that Edward needs must down.—
Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,
Of thee thyself, and all thy complices,
Edward will always bear himself as king:
Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,
My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.
*War.* Then, for his mind,* be Edward England's king:
[*Takes off his crown.*
But Henry now shall wear the English crown,
And be true king indeed; thou but the shadow.—
My lord of Somerset, at my request,
See that forthwith duke Edward be convey'd
Unto my brother, archbishop of York.
When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,
I'll follow you, and tell what answer
Lewis, and the lady Bona, send to him:—
Now, for a while, farewell, good duke of York.
*K. Edw.* What fates impose, that men must needs abide;
It boots not to resist both wind and tide.
[*Exit* KING EDWARD, *led out;* SOMERSET *with him.*
*Oxf.* What now remains, my lords, for us to do,
But march to London with our soldiers?
*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;
To free king Henry from imprisonment,
And see him seated in the regal throne. [*Exeunt.*

* As far as his mind goes.

*SCENE IV.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH *and* RIVERS.

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?
*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn,
What late misfortune is befall'n king Edward?
*Riv.* What, loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick?
*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.
*Riv.* Then is my sovereign slain?
*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner;
Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard,
Or by his foe surprised at unawares:
And, as I further have to understand,
Is new committed to the bishop of York,
Fell Warwick's brother, and by that our foe.
*Riv.* These news, I must confess, are full of grief:
Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may;
Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.
*Q. Eliz.* Till then, fair hope must hinder life's decay.
And I the rather wean me from despair,
For love of Edward's offspring in my womb:
This is it that makes me bridle passion,
And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross;
Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear,
And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,
Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown
King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown.
*Riv.* But, madam, where is Warwick then become?
*Q. Eliz.* I am informed, that he comes towards London,
To set the crown once more on Henry's head:
Guess thou the rest; king Edward's friends must down.
But, to prevent the tyrant's violence
(For trust not him that hath once broken faith),
I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary,
To save at least the heir of Edward's right;
There shall I rest secure from force, and fraud.
Come therefore, let us fly, while we may fly;
If Warwick take us, we are sure to die. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE V.—A Park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.*

*Enter* GLOSTER, HASTINGS, SIR WILLIAM STANLEY, *and others.*

*Glo.* Now, my lord Hastings, and Sir William Stanley
Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,
Into this chiefest thicket of the park.
Thus stands the case: You know, our king, my brother,
Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands
He hath good usage and great liberty;
And often, but attended with weak guard,
Comes hunting this way to disport himself.

I have advértised him by secret means,
That if about this hour, he make this way,
Under the colour of his usual game,
He shall here find his friends, with horse and men,
To set him free from his captivity.

*Enter* KING EDWARD *and a* HUNTSMAN.

*Hunt.* This way, my lord; for this way lies the game.
*K. Edw.* Nay, this way, man; see where the huntsmen stand.—
Now, brother of Gloster, lord Hastings, and the rest,
Stand you thus close to steal the bishop's deer?
*Glo.* Brother, the time and case requireth haste;
Your horse stands ready at the park corner.
*K. Edw.* But whither shall we then?
*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord; and ship from thence to Flanders.
*Glo.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that was my meaning.
*K. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.
*Glo.* But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk.
*K. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go along?
*Hunt.* Better do so, than tarry and be hang'd.
*Glo.* Come then, away; let's have no more ado.
*K. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee from Warwick's frown;
And pray that I may repossess the crown. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VI.—A Room in the Tower.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, *young* RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, LIEUTENANT *of the Tower, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Master lieutenant, now that God and friends
Have shaken Edward from the regal seat;
And turn'd my captive state to liberty,
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys;
At our enlargement, what are thy due fees?
*Lieu.* Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns;
But, if an humble prayer may prevail,
I then crave pardon of your majesty.
*K. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well using me?
Nay, be thou sure, I'll well requite thy kindness,
For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure:
Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds
Conceive, when, after many moody thoughts,
At last, by notes of household harmony,
They quite forget their loss of liberty:—
But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free,
And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;
He was the author, thou the instrument.
Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite,
By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me;
And that the people of this blessed land
May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars;

Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,
I here resign my government to thee,
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.
*War.* Your grace hath still been famed for virtuous;
And now may seem as wise as virtuous,
By spying, and avoiding, fortune's malice,
For few men rightly temper with the stars:*
Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace
For choosing me, when Clarence is in place.†
*Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,
To whom the heavens, in thy nativity,
Adjudged an olive branch and laurel crown,
As likely to be blessed in peace, and war;
And therefore I yield thee my free consent.
*War.* And I choose Clarence only for protector.
*K. Hen.* Warwick and Clarence, give me both your hands,
Now join your hands, and, with your hands, your hearts,
That no dissension hinder government:
I make you both protectors of this land;
While I myself will lead a private life,
And in devotion spend my latter days,
To sin's rebuke, and my Creator's praise.
*War.* What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will?
*Clar.* That he consents, if Warwick yield consent;
For on thy fortune I repose myself.
*War.* Why then, though loath, yet must I be content:
We'll yoke together, like a double shadow
To Henry's body, and supply his place;
I mean, in bearing weight of government,
While he enjoys the honour, and his ease.
And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful,
Forthwith that Edward be pronounced a traitor,
And all his lands and goods be confiscate.
*Clar.* What else? and that succession be determined.
*War.* Ay, therein Clarence shall not want his part.
*K. Hen.* But, with the first of all your chief affairs,
Let me entreat (for I command no more),
That Margaret your queen, and my son Edward,
Be sent for, to return from France with speed:
For, till I see them here, by doubtful fear
My joy of liberty is half eclipsed.
*Clar.* It shall be done, my sovereign, with all speed.
*K. Hen.* My lord of Somerset, what youth is that,
Of whom you seem to have so tender care?
*Som.* My liege, it is young Henry, earl of Richmond.
*K. Hen.* Come hither, England's hope: If secret powers
[*Lays his hand on his head.*
Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,
This pretty lad will prove our country's bliss.
His looks are full of peaceful majesty;
His head by nature framed to wear a crown,

* Conform their temper to their destiny. † Present.

His hand to wield a sceptre; and himself
Likely, in time, to bless a regal throne.
Make much of him, my lords; for this is he
Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*War.* What news, my friend?
*Mess.* That Edward is escaped from your brother,
And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.
*War.* Unsavoury news, but how made he escape?
*Mess.* He was convey'd by Richard duke of Gloster,
And the lord Hastings, who attended* him
In secret ambush on the forest side,
And from the bishop's huntsmen rescued him;
For hunting was his daily exercise.
*War.* My brother was too careless of his charge.—
But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide
A salve for any sore that may betide.

[*Exeunt* KING HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE, LIEUTENANT, *and Attendants.*

*Som.* My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's:
For, doubtless, Burgundy will yield him help;
And we shall have more wars before't be long.
As Henry's late presaging prophecy
Did glad my heart, with hope of this young Richmond;
So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts
What may befall him, to his harm and ours:
Therefore, lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,
Forthwith we'll send him hence to Britanny,
Till storms be past of civil enmity.
*Oxf.* Ay; for, if Edward repossess the crown,
'Tis like, that Richmond with the rest shall down.
*Som.* It shall be so; he shall to Britanny.
Come, therefore, let's about it speedily. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE VII.—Before York.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, *and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, lord Hastings, and the rest;
Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,
And says—that once more I shall interchange
My waned state for Henry's regal crown.
Well have we pass'd, and now repass'd the seas,
And brought desired help from Burgundy:
What then remains, we being thus arrived
From Ravenspurg haven before the gates of York,
But that we enter, as into our dukedom?
*Glo.* The gates made fast!—Brother, I like not this;

* Waited for him.

For many men that stumble at the threshold,
Are well foretold—that danger lurks within.
*K. Edw.* Tush, man! abodements must not now affright us:
By fair or foul means we must enter in,
For hither will our friends repair to us.
*Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more to summon them.

*Enter, on the walls, the* MAYOR *of York, and his Brethren.*

*May.* My lords, we were forewarned of your coming,
And shut the gates, for safety of ourselves;
For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.
*K. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be your king,
Yet Edward at the least is duke of York.
*May.* True, my good lord; I know you for no less.
*K. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but my dukedom;
As being well content with that alone.
*Glo.* But, when the fox hath once got in his nose,
He'll soon find means to make the body follow. [*Aside.*
*Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand you in a doubt?
Open the gates, we are king Henry's friends.
*May.* Ay, say you so? the gates shall then be open'd.
[*Exeunt from above.*
*Glo.* A wise stout captain, and persuaded soon!
*Hast.* The good old man would fain that all were well,
So 'twere not 'long of him:* but, being enter'd,
I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade
Both him, and all his brothers, unto reason.

*Re-enter the* MAYOR *and two* ALDERMEN, *below.*

*K. Edw.* So, master mayor: these gates must not be shut,
But in the night, or in the time of war.
What! fear not, man, but yield me up the keys; [*Takes his keys.*
For Edward will defend the town, and thee,
And all those friends that deign to follow me.

*Drum.—Enter* MONTGOMERY, *and Forces, marching.*

*Glo.* Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,
Our trusty friend, unless I be deceived.
*K. Edw.* Welcome, Sir John! But why come you in arms?
*Mont.* To help king Edward in his time of storm,
As every loyal subject ought to do.
*K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery: But we now forget
Our title to the crown; and only claim
Our dukedom, till God please to send the rest.
*Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence again;
I came to serve a king, and not a duke,—
Drummer, strike up, and let us march away. [*A march begun.*
*K. Edw.* Nay, stay, Sir John, a while; and we'll debate,
By what safe means the crown may be recover'd.

* So he may not be blamed.

*Mont.* What talk you of debating? in few words,
If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king,
I'll leave you to your fortune; and be gone,
To keep them back that come to succour you:
Why should we fight, if you pretend no title?
*Glo.* Why, brother, wherefore stand you on nice points?
*K. Edw.* When we grow stronger, then we'll make our claim:
Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning.
*Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit! now arms must rule.
*Glo.* And fearless minds climb soonest unto crowns.
Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand;
The bruit* thereof will bring you many friends.
*K. Edw.* Then be it as you will; for, 'tis my right,
And Henry but usurps the diadem.
*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself;
And now will I be Edward's champion.
*Hast.* Sound, trumpet; Edward shall be here proclaim'd:—
Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation.
[*Gives him a Paper. Flourish.*
Sold. [*Reads.*] *Edward the fourth, by the grace of God, king of England and France, and lord of Ireland, &c.*
*Mont.* And whosoe'er gainsays king Edward's right,
By this I challenge him to single fight.
[*Throws down his gauntlet.*
*All.* Long live king Edward the fourth!
*K. Edw.* Thanks, brave Montgomery;—and thanks unto you all.
If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness.
Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York:
And when the morning sun shall raise his car
Above the border of this horizon,
We'll forward towards Warwick, and his mates;
For, well I wot,† that Henry is no soldier.—
Ah, froward Clarence!—how evil it beseems thee,
To flatter Henry, and forsake thy brother!
Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick.—
Come on, brave soldiers; doubt not of the day;
And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VIII.—London. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE, MONTAGUE, EXETER, *and* OXFORD.

*War.* What counsel, lords? Edward from Belgia,
With hasty Germans, and blunt Hollanders,
Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,
And with his troops doth march amain to London;
And many giddy people flock to him.
*Oxf.* Let's levy men, and beat him back again.
*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out;
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

* Noise, report. † Know.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,
Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war;
Those will I muster up:—and thou, son Clarence,
Shall stir, in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent,
The knights and gentlemen to come with thee:—
Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,
Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find
Men well inclined to hear what thou command'st:—
And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well beloved,
In Oxfordshire shall muster up thy friends.—
My sovereign, with the loving citizens,—
Like to his island, girt in with the ocean,
Or modest Dian, circled with her nymphs,—
Shall rest in London, till we come to him.—
Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.—
Farewell, my sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

*Clar.* In sign of truth, I kiss your highness' hand.

*K. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate!

*Mont.* Comfort, my lord;—and so I take my leave.

*Oxf.* And thus [*kissing* HENRY'S *hand*] I seal my truth, and bid adieu.

*K. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,
And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords; let's meet at Coventry.

[*Exeunt* WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, *and* MONTAGUE.

*K. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest a while.
Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship?
Methinks, the power, that Edward hath in field,
Should not be able to encounter mine.

*Exe.* The doubt is, that he will seduce the rest.

*K. Hen.* That's not my fear, my meed* hath got me fame.
I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays;
My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,
My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,
My mercy dried their water-flowing tears:
I have not been desirous of their wealth,
Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies,
Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd;
Then why should they love Edward more than me?
No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace:
And, when the lion fawns upon the lamb,
The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[*Shout within.* A Lancaster! A Lancaster!

*Exe.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

*Enter* KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, *and Soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Seize on the shame-faced Henry, bear him hence,
And once again proclaim us king of England.

* Merit.

You are the fount, that makes small brooks to flow;
Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them dry,
And swell so much the higher by their ebb.—
Hence with him to the Tower; let him not speak.
[*Exeunt some with* KING HENRY.
And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,
Where peremptory Warwick now remains:
The sun shines hot, and, if we use delay,
Cold biting winter mars our hoped-for hay.
*Glo.* Away betimes, before his forces join,
And take the great grown-traitor unawares:
Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT V.

### *SCENE I.—Coventry.*

*Enter, upon the walls,* WARWICK, *the* MAYOR *of Coventry, two* MESSENGERS, *and others.*

*War.* Where is the post, that came from valiant Oxford?
How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?
1 *Mess.* By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward.
*War.* How far off is our brother Montague?—
Where is the post that came from Montague?
2 *Mess.* By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

*Enter* SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.

*War.* Say, Somerville, what says my loving son?
And, by the guess, how nigh is Clarence now?
*Som.* At Southam I did leave him with his forces,
And do expect him here some two hours hence. [*Drum heard.*
*War.* Then Clarence is at hand, I hear his drum.
*Som.* It is not his, my lord; here Southam lies;
The drum your honour hears, marcheth from Warwick.
*War.* Who should that be? belike, unlook'd-for friends.
*Som.* They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

*Drums.—Enter* KING EDWARD, GLOSTER, *and Forces, marching.*

*K. Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle.
*Glo.* See, how the surly Warwick mans the wall.
*War.* O, unbid spite! is sportful Edward come?
Where slept our scouts, or how are they seduced,
That we could hear no news of his repair?
*K. Edw.* Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates,
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy knee?—
Call Edward—king, and at his hands beg mercy,
And he shall pardon thee these outrages.
*War.* Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,

Confess who set thee up and pluck'd thee down
Call Warwick—patron, and be penitent,
And thou shalt still remain the duke of York.
*Glo.* I thought, at least, he would have said—the king;
Or did he make the jest against his will?
*War.* Is not a dukedom, Sir, a goodly gift?
*Glo.* Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give!
I'll do thee service for so good a gift.*
*War.* 'Twas I, that gave the kingdom to thy brother.
*K. Edw.* Why, then 'tis mine, if but by Warwick's gift.
*War.* Thou art no Atlas for so great a weight:
And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again;
And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.
*K. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner:
And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this,—
What is the body, when the head is off?
*Glo.* Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast,
But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten,
The king was slyly finger'd from the deck!†
You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace,
And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower.
*K. Edw.* 'Tis even so; yet you are Warwick still.
*Glo.* Come, Warwick, take the time, kneel down, kneel down:
Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cools.
*War.* I had rather chop this hand off at a blow,
And with the other fling it at thy face,
Than bear so low a sail, to strike to thee.
*K. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy friend;
This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,
Shall, whiles the head is warm, and new cut off,
Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood,
*Wind-changing* Warwick *now can change no more.*

*Enter* OXFORD, *with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* O cheerful colours! see, where Oxford comes!
*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster!
[OXFORD *and his forces enter the city.*
*Glo.* The gates are open, let us enter too.
*K. Edw.* So other foes may set upon our backs,
Stand we in good array; for they, no doubt,
Will issue out again, and bid us battle:
If not, the city, being but of small defence,
We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.
*War.* O, welcome, Oxford, for we want thy help.

*Enter* MONTAGUE, *with Drum and Colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster!
[*He and his forces enter the city.*
*Glo.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason
Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

* Enrol myself among thy dependants.
† A pack of cards was anciently termed a deck of cards.

*K. Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory;
My mind presageth happy gain, and conquest.

*Enter* SOMERSET, *with Drum and Colours.*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!
[*He and his forces enter the city.*
*Glo.* Two of thy name, both dukes of Somerset,
Have sold their lives unto the house of York;
And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter* CLARENCE, *with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,
Of force enough to bid his brother battle;
With whom an upright zeal to right prevails,
More than the nature of a brother's love:—
Come, Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick calls.
*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means;
[*Taking the red rose out of his cap.*
Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:
I will not ruinate my father's house,
Who gave his blood to lime* the stones together,
And set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick,
That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt,† unnatural,
To bend the fatal instruments of war
Against his brother, and his lawful king?
Perhaps, thou wilt object my holy oath:
To keep that oath, were more impiety
Than Jephtha's, when he sacrificed his daughter.
I am so sorry for my trespass made,
That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,
I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe;
With resolution, whereso'er I meet thee
(As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad),
To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.
And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,
And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.—
Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends;
And Richard, do not frown upon my faults,
For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.
*K. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times more beloved,
Than if thou never hadst deserved our hate.
*Glo.* Welcome, good Clarence; this is brother-like.
*War.* O passing‡ traitor, perjured, and unjust!
*K. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town, and fight?
Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?
*War.* Alas, I am not coop'd here for defence:
I will away towards Barnet presently,
And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.
*K. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the way:—
Lords to the field; Saint George, and victory. [*March. Exeunt.*

* To cement. † Stupid, insensible. ‡ Egregious.

## *SCENE II.—A field of Battle near Barnet.*

*Alarums, and Excursions.—Enter* KING EDWARD, *bringing in* WARWICK *wounded.*

*K. Edw.* So, lie thou there: die thou, and die our fear;
For Warwick was a bug,* that fear'd† us all.—
Now, Montague, sit fast; I seek for thee,
That Warwick's bones may keep thine company. [*Exit.*

*War.* Ah, who is nigh? come to me, friend or foe,
And tell me, who is victor, York, or Warwick?
Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,
My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,
That I must yield my body to the earth,
And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe.
Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,
Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,
Under whose shade the ramping lion slept;
Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading tree,
And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful wind.
These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's black veil,
Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,
To search the secret treasons of the world:
The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with blood,
Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres;
For who lived king, but I could dig his grave?
And who durst smile, when Warwick bent his brow?
Lo, now my glory smear'd in dust and blood!
My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,
Even now forsake me; and, of all my lands,
Is nothing left me, but my body's length!
Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and dust?
And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

*Enter* OXFORD *and* SOMERSET.

*Som.* Ah, Warwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,
We might recover all our loss again!
The queen from France hath brought a puissant power;
Even now we heard the news: Ah, couldst thou fly!

*War.* Why, then I would not fly.—Ah, Montague,
If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,
And with thy lips keep in my soul awhile!
Thou lov'st me not; for, brother, if thou didst,
Thy tears would wash this cold congealed blood,
That glues my lips, and will not let me speak.
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

*Som.* Ah, Warwick, Montague hath breath'd his last:
And to the latest gasp, cried out for Warwick,
And said—Commend me to my valiant brother.
And more he would have said; and more he spoke,

* Bugbear. † Terrified.

Which sounded like a cannon in a vault,
That might not be distinguish'd; but, at last,
I well might hear deliver'd with a groan,—
O, farewell, Warwick!

*War.* Sweet rest to his soul!—
Fly, lords, and save yourselves; for Warwick bids
You all farewell, to meet again in heaven. [*Dies.*

*Oxf.* Away, away, to meet the queen's great power!
[*Exeunt, bearing off* WARWICK'S *body.*

*SCENE III.—Another part of the Field.*

*Flourish.—Enter* KING EDWARD *in triumph; with* CLARENCE, GLOSTER, *and the rest.*

*K. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an upward course,
And we are graced with wreaths of victory.
But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,
I spy a black, suspicious, threat'ning cloud,
That will encounter with our glorious sun,
Ere he attain his easeful western bed:
I mean, my lords,—those powers, that the queen
Hath raised in Gallia, have arrived our coast,
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

*Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that cloud,
And blow it to the source from whence it came:
Thy very beams will dry those vapours up;
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

*Glo.* The queen is valued thirty thousand strong,
And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her;
If she have time to breathe, be well assured,
Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

*K. Edw.* We are advértised by our loving friends,
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury;
We having now the best at Barnet field,
Will thither straight, for willingness rids way;
And, as we march, our strength will be augmented,
In every county as we go along.—
Strike up the drum; cry—Courage! and away. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—Plains near Tewksbury.*

*March.—Enter* QUEEN MARGARET, PRINCE EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, *and Soldiers.*

*Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and wail their loss,
But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.
What though the mast be now blown overboard,
The cable broke, the holding anchor lost,
And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood?
Yet lives our pilot still: Is't meet that he
Should leave the helm, and, like a fearful lad,

With tearful eyes add water to the sea,
And give more strength to that which hath too much;
Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the rock,
Which industry and courage might have saved?
Ah, what a shame! ah, what a fault were this!
Say, Warwick was our anchor; What of that?
And Montague our top-mast; What of him?
Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; What of these?
Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?
And Somerset another goodly mast?
The friends of France our shrouds and tacklings?
And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I
For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?
We will not from the helm, to sit and weep;
But keep our course, though the rough wind say—no,
From shelves and rocks that threaten us with wreck.
As good to chide the waves, as speak them fair.
And what is Edward, but a ruthless sea?
What Clarence, but a quicksand of deceit?
And Richard, but a ragged fatal rock?
All these the enemies to our poor bark.
Say, you can swim; alas, 'tis but a while:
Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly sink:
Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,
Or else you famish, that's a threefold death.
This speak I, lords, to let you understand,
In case some one of you would fly from us,
That there's no hoped-for mercy with the brothers,
More than with ruthless waves, with sands and rocks.
Why, courage, then! what cannot be avoided,
'Twere childish weakness to lament, or fear.

*Prince.* Methinks, a woman of this valiant spirit
Should, if a coward heard her speak these words,
Infuse his breast with magnanimity,
And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.
I speak not this, as doubting any here:
For, did I but suspect a fearful man,
He should have leave to go away betimes;
Lest, in our need, he might infect another,
And make him of like spirit to himself.
If any such be here, as God forbid!
Let him depart, before we need his help.

*Oxf.* Women and children of so high a courage!
And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual shame.—
O, brave young prince! thy famous grandfather
Doth live again in thee; Long mayst thou live,
To bear his image, and renew his glories!

*Som.* And he, that will not fight for such a hope,
Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

*Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset;—sweet Oxford, thanks.

*Prince.* And take his thanks, that yet hath nothing else.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand.
Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.
*Oxf.* I thought no less: it is his policy,
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.
*Som.* But he's deceived, we are in readiness.
*Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart, to see your forwardness.
*Oxf.* Here pitch our battle, hence we will not budge.

*March.—Enter at a distance,* KING EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, *and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny wood,
Which, by the heavens' assistance, and your strength,
Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.
I need not add more fuel to your fire,
For well I wot,* ye blaze to burn them out:
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords.
*Q. Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen, what, I should say,
My tears gainsay; for every word I speak,
Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.
Therefore, no more but this:—Henry, your sovereign,
Is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp'd,
His realm a slaughterhouse, his subjects slain,
His statutes cancell'd; and his treasure spent;
And yonder is the wolf, that makes this spoil.
You fight in justice: then, in God's name, lords,
Be valiant, and give signal to the fight. [*Exeunt both Armies.*

*SCENE V.—Another part of the same.*

*Alarums: Excursions: and afterwards a Retreat. Then Enter* KING EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, *and Forces; with* QUEEN MARGARET, OXFORD, *and* SOMERSET, *Prisoners.*

*K. Edw.* Now, here a period of tumultuous broils.
Away with Oxford to Hammes' castle straight:
For Somerset, off with his guilty head.
Go, bear them hence; I will not hear them speak.
*Oxf.* For my part, I will not trouble thee with words.
*Som.* Nor I, but stoop with patience to my fortune.
[*Exeunt* OXFORD *and* SOMERSET, *guarded.*
*Q. Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous world,
To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.
*K. Edw.* Is proclamation made,—that, who finds Edward,
Shall have a high reward, and he his life?
*Glo.* It is: and, lo, where youthful Edward comes.

*Enter Soldiers with* PRINCE EDWARD.

*K. Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him speak:
What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?

* Know.

Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make,
For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,
And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?
*Prince.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York!
Suppose, that I am now my father's mouth;
Resign thy chair, and, where I stand, kneel thou,
Whilst I propose the self-same words to thee,
Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to.
*Q. Mar.* Ah, that thy father had been so resolved!
*Glo.* That you might still have worn the petticoat,
And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.
*Prince.* Let Æsop* fable in a winter's night:
His currish riddles sort not with this place.
*Glo.* By heaven, brat, I'll plague you for that word.
*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague to men.
*Glo.* For God's sake, take away this captive scold.
*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crookback rather.
*K. Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I will charn† your tongue.
*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.
*Prince.* I know my duty, you are all undutiful:
Lascivious Edward,—and thou perjured George,—
And thou misshapen Dick,—I tell you all,
I am your better, traitors as ye are;—
And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.
*K. Edw.* Take that, the likeness of this railer here. [*Stabs him.*
*Glo.* Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy agony.
[GLOSTER *stabs him.*
*Clar.* And there's for twitting me with perjury.
[CLARENCE *stabs him.*
*Q. Mar.* O, kill me too!
*Glo.* Marry, and shall. [*Offers to kill her.*
*K. Edw.* Hold, Richard, hold, for we have done too much.
*Glo.* Why should she live, to fill the world with words?‡
*K. Edw.* What! doth she swoon? use means for her recovery.
*Glo.* Clarence, excuse me to the king, my brother;
I'll hence to London on a serious matter:
Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.
*Clar.* What? what?
*Glo.* The Tower, the Tower! [*Exit.*
*Q. Mar.* O, Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy!
Canst thou not speak?—O traitors, murderers!—
They, that stabb'd Cæsar, shed no blood at all,
Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,
If this foul deed were by, to equal it.
He was a man; this, in respect, a child;
And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.
What's worse than murderer, that I may name it?
No, no; my heart will burst, an if I speak:—
And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.

* The Prince calls Richard, for his crookedness, Æsop.
† Compel you to be as silent as though you were enchanted.
‡ Dispute, contention.

Butchers and villains, bloody cannibals;
How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp'd!
You have no children, butchers! if you had,
The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse:
But, if you ever chance to have a child,
Look in his youth to have him so cut off,
As, deathsmen! you have rid this sweet young prince!

*K. Edw.* Away with her; go, bear her hence perforce.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, despatch me here;
Here sheath thy sword, I'll pardon thee my death:
What! wilt thou not?—then, Clarence, do it thou.

*Clar.* By heaven, I will not do thee so much ease.

*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence, do thou do it.

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear, I would not do it.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, but thou usest to forswear thyself:
'Twas sin before,* but now 'tis charity.
What! wilt thou not? where is that devil's butcher,
Hard favour'd Richard? Richard, where art thou?
Thou art not here: Murder is thy alms-deed;
Petitioners for blood thou ne'er put'st back.

*K. Edw.* Away, I say; I charge ye, bear her hence.

*Q. Mar.* So come to you and yours, as to this prince!
[*Exit, led out forcibly.*

*K. Edw.* Where's Richard gone?

*Clar.* To London, all in post; and, as I guess,
To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head.
Now march we hence; discharge the common sort
With pay and thanks, and let's away to London,
And see our gentle queen how well she fares
By this, I hope, she hath a son for me. [*Exeunt.*

### *SCENE VI.—London. A Room in the Tower.*

KING HENRY *is discovered sitting with a book in his hand, the Lieutenant attending. Enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Good day, my lord! What, at your book so hard?

*K. Hen.* Ay, my good lord: my lord I should say rather;
'Tis sin to flatter, good was little better:
Good Gloster, and good devil, were alike,
And both preposterous; therefore, not good lord.

*Glo.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must confer.
[*Exit Lieutenant.*

*K. Hen.* So flies the reckless shepherd from the wolf:
So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece,
And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.—
What scene of death hath Roscius now to act?

*Glo.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind;
The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

*K. Hen.* The bird that hath been limed in a bush,

* She alludes to the desertion of Clarence.

With trembling wings misdoubteth every bush:
And I, the hapless male* to one sweet bird,
Have now the fatal object in my eye,
Where my poor young was limed, was caught, and kill'd.
*Glo.* Why, what a peevish † fool was that of Crete,
That taught his son the office of a fowl?
And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.
*K. Hen.* I, Dædalus; my poor boy, Icarus;
Thy father, Minos, that denied our course;
The sun, that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy,
Thy brother Edward; and thyself the sea,
Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.
Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words!
My breast can better brook thy dagger's point,
Than can my ears that tragic history.—
But wherefore dost thou come, is't for my life?
*Glo.* Think'st thou, I am an executioner?
*K. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure, thou art;
If murdering innocents be executing,
Why, then thou art an executioner.
*Glo.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.
*K. Hen.* Hadst thou been kill'd, when first thou didst presume,
Thou hadst not lived to kill a son of mine.
And thus I prophesy,—that many a thousand,
Which now mistrust no parcel of my fear;
And many an old man's sigh, and many a widow's,
And many an orphan's water-standing eye,—
Men for their sons, wives for their husbands' fate,
And orphans for their parents' timeless death,—
Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.
The owl shriek'd at thy birth, an evil sign;
The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time;
Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempests shook down trees;
The raven rook'd ‡ her on the chimney's top,
And chattering pies in dismal discords sung.
Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,
And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope;
To wit,—an indigest deformed lump,
Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.
Teeth hadst thou in thy head, when thou wast born,
To signify,—thou cam'st to bite the world:
And, if the rest be true which I have heard,
Thou cam'st.—
*Glo.* I'll hear no more; Die, prophet, in thy speech;
[*Stabs him.*
For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.
*K. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.
O God! forgive my sins, and pardon thee! [*Dies.*
*Glo.* What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster
Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted.
See, how my sword weeps for the poor king's death!

* *I. e.* male parent. † Childish. ‡ Squatted down.

O, may such purple tears be always shed
From those that wish the downfal of our house!—
If any spark of life be yet remaining,
Down, down to hell; and say—I sent thee thither.
[*Stabs him again.*

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.—
Indeed, 'tis true, that Henry told me of;
For I have often heard my mother say,
I came into the world with my legs forward:
Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,
And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?
The midwife wonder'd; and the women cried,
*O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth!*
And so I was; which plainly signified—
That I should snarl, and bite, and play the dog.
Then since the heavens have shaped my body so,
Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it.
I have no brother, I am like no brother:
And this word—love, which greybeards call divine,
Be resident in men like one another,
And not in me; I am myself alone.—
Clarence, beware; thou keep'st me from the light;
But I will sort* a pitchy day for thee:
For I will buz abroad such prophecies,
That Edward shall be fearful of his life;
And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.
King Henry, and the prince, his son, are gone:
Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest;
Counting myself but bad, till I be best.—
I'll throw thy body in another room,
And triumph, Henry, in thy day of doom. [*Exit.*

*SCENE VII.—The same. A Room in the Palace.*

KING EDWARD *is discovered sitting on his Throne;* QUEEN ELIZABETH *with the infant Prince,* CLARENCE, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, *and others, near him.*

*K. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's royal throne.
Re-purchased with the blood of enemies.
What valiant foe-men, like to autumn's corn,
Have we mow'd down, in tops of all their pride?
Three dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd
For hardy and undoubted champions:
Two Cliffords, as the father and the son,
And two Northumberlands; two braver men
Ne'er spurr'd their coursers at the trumpet's sound:
With them, the two brave bears, Warwick and Montague,
That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,
And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.
Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,

* Select.

And made our footstool of security.—
Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy:—
Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles, and myself,
Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night,
Went all a foot in summer's scalding heat,
That thou mightst repossess the crown in peace;
And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.

*Glo.* I'll blast his harvest, if your head were laid;
For yet I am not look'd on in the world.
This shoulder was ordain'd so thick, to heave;
And heave it shall some weight, or break my back:—
Work thou * the way,—and thou † shalt execute. [*Aside.*

*K. Edw.* Clarence, and Gloster, love my lovely queen;
And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

*Clar.* The duty that I owe unto your majesty,
I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, noble Clarence; worthy brother, thanks.

*Glo.* And, that I love the tree from whence thou sprang'st,
Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit:—
To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his master;
And cried—all hail! when as he meant—all harm. } *Aside.*

*K. Edw.* Now am I seated as my soul delights,
Having my country's peace, and brothers' loves.

*Clar.* What will your grace have done with Margaret?
Reignier, her father, to the king of France
Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,
And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

*K. Edw.* Away with her, and waft her hence to France.
And now what rests ‡ but that we spend the time
With stately triumphs, § mirthful comic shows,
Such as befit the pleasures of the court?—
Sound, drums and trumpets!—farewell sour annoy!
For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy. [*Exeunt.*

* *I. e.* his head.
† *I. e.* his hand.
‡ Remains.
§ Public shows.

# THE
# LIFE AND DEATH
## OF
# KING RICHARD III.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING EDWARD THE FOURTH.
EDWARD, Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V. } *Sons to the King.*
RICHARD, Duke of York, } *Sons to the King.*
GEORGE, Duke of Clarence, } *Brothers to the King.*
RICHARD, Duke of Gloster, afterwards King Richard III. } *Brothers to the King.*
A young SON of Clarence.
HENRY, Earl of Richmond, *afterwards King Henry VII.*
CARDINAL BOUCHIER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*
THOMAS ROTHERAM, *Archbishop of York.*
JOHN MORTON, *Bishop of Ely.*
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.
DUKE OF NORFOLK: EARL OF SURREY, *his Son.*
EARL RIVERS, *Brother to King Edward's Queen.*
MARQUIS OF DORSET, and LORD GREY, *her Sons.*
EARL OF OXFORD.
LORD HASTINGS.
LORD STANLEY.
LORD LOVEL.
SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN.
SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF.
SIR WILLIAM CATESBY.
SIR JAMES TYREL.
SIR JAMES BLOUNT.
SIR WALTER HERBERT.
SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, *Lieutenant of the Tower.*
CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, *a Priest.*
Another PRIEST.
LORD MAYOR OF LONDON.
SHERIFF OF WILTSHIRE.

---

ELIZABETH, *Queen of King Edward IV.*
MARGARET, *Queen of King Henry VI.*
DUCHESS OF YORK, *Mother to King Edward IV., Clarence, and Gloster.*
LADY ANNE, *Widow of Edward Prince of Wales, Son to King Henry VI.; afterwards married to the Duke of Gloster.*
A young DAUGHTER of Clarence.

LORDS, and other ATTENDANTS; two GENTLEMEN, a PURSUIVANT, SCRIVENER, CITIZENS, MURDERERS, MESSENGERS, GHOSTS, SOLDIERS, &c.

SCENE.—England.

## ACT I.

### *SCENE I.—London. A Street.*

*Enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Now is the winter of our discontent
Made glorious summer by this sun* of York;
And all the clouds, that lowr'd upon our house,

* The cognizance of Edward IV.

In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.
Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths;
Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;
Our stern alarums changed to merry meetings,
Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.*
Grim-visaged war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front;
And now,—instead of mounting barbed steeds,
To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,—
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber,
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.
But I,—that am not shaped for sportive tricks,
Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;
I that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty,
To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,
Cheated of feature† by dissembling‡ nature,
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time
Into this breathing world, scarce half made up,
And that so lamely and unfashionable,
That dogs bark at me, as I halt by them;—
Why I, in this weak piping time of peace,
Have no delight to pass away the time;
Unless to spy my shadow in the sun,
And descant on mine own deformity;
And therefore,—since I cannot prove a lover,
To entertain these fair well-spoken days,—
I am determined to prove a villain,
And hate the idle pleasures of these days.
Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,§
By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams,
To set my brother Clarence, and the king,
In deadly hate the one against the other:
And, if king Edward be as true and just,
As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,
This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up;
About a prophecy,—which says,—that G,
Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be.
Dive, thoughts, down to my soul! here Clarence comes.

*Enter* CLARENCE, *guarded, and* BRAKENBURY.

Brother, good day: What means this armed guard,
That waits upon your grace?
*Clar.* His majesty,
Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed
This conduct to convey me to the Tower.
*Glo.* Upon what cause?
*Clar.* Because my name is—George.
*Glo.* Alack, my lord, that fault is none of yours;
He should, for that, commit your godfathers:—
O, belike, his majesty hath some intent,

* Dances. † Beauty.
‡ Producing things dissimilar. § Preparations for mischief.

That you should be new christen'd in the Tower.
But what's the matter, Clarence? may I know?
*Clar.* Yea, Richard, when I know; for I protest,
As yet I do not: but, as I can learn,
He hearkens after prophecies, and dreams;
And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,
And says,—a wizard told him, that by G
His issue disinherited should be;
And, for my name of George begins with G,
It follows in his thought, that I am he:
These, as I learn, and such like toys* as these,
Have moved his highness to commit me now.
*Glo.* Why, this it is, when men are ruled by women:—
'Tis not the king, that sends you to the Tower:
My lady Grey, his wife, Clarence, 'tis she,
That tempers him to this extremity.
Was it not she, and that good man of worship,
Anthony Woodeville, her brother there,
That made him send lord Hastings to the Tower;
From whence this present day he is deliver'd?
We are not safe, Clarence, we are not safe.
*Clar.* By heaven, I think, there is no man secure,
But the queen's kindred, and night-walking heralds
That trudge betwixt the king and mistress Shore.
Heard you not, what an humble suppliant
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?
*Glo.* Humbly complaining to her deity
Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.
I'll tell you what,—I think, it is our way,
If we will keep in favour with the king,
To be her men, and wear her livery:
The jealous o'er-worn widow, and herself,†
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen,
Are mighty gossips in this monarchy.
*Brak.* I beseech your graces both to pardon me;
His majesty hath straitly given in charge,
That no man shall have private conference,
Of what degree soever, with his brother.
*Glo.* Even so? an please your worship, Brakenbury,
You may partake of anything we say:
We speak no treason, man;—We say, the king
Is wise, and virtuous; and his noble queen
Well struck in years; fair, and not jealous:
We say, that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,
A cherry lip,
A bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue;
And the queen's kindred are made gentlefolks:
How say you, Sir? can you deny all this?
*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have naught to do.
*Glo.* Naught to do with mistress Shore? I tell thee, fellow,

* Fancies. † Shore.

He that doth naught with her, excepting one,
Were best to do it secretly, alone.
*Brak.* What one, my lord?
*Glo.* Her husband, knave:—Wouldst thou betray me?
*Brak.* I beseech your grace to pardon me; and, withal,
Forbear your conference with the noble duke.
*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and will obey.
*Glo.* We are the queen's abjects,* and must obey.
Brother, farewell; I will unto the king,
And whatsoever you will employ me in,—
Were it, to call king Edward's widow—sister,—
I will perform it to enfranchise you.
Mean time, this deep disgrace in brotherhood,
Touches me deeper than you can imagine.
*Clar.* I know it pleaseth neither of us well.
*Glo.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be long;
I will deliver you, or else lie for you:†
Mean time, have patience.
*Clar.* I must perforce; farewell.
[*Exeunt* CLARENCE, BRAKENBURY, *and guard.*
*Glo.* Go, tread the path that thou shalt ne'er return,
Simple, plain Clarence!—I do love thee so,
That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,
If heaven will take the present at our hands.
But who comes here? the new-deliver'd Hastings?

*Enter* HASTINGS.

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious lord!
*Glo.* As much unto my good lord chamberlain!
Well are you welcome to this open air.
How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment?
*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as prisoners must:
But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks,
That were the cause of my imprisonment.
*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt; and so shall Clarence too;
For they, that were your enemies, are his,
And have prevail'd as much on him as you.
*Hast.* More pity that the eagle should be mew'd,
While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.
*Glo.* What news abroad?
*Hast.* No news so bad abroad, as this at home;—
The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy,
And his physicians fear him mightily.
*Glo.* Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed.
O, he hath kept an evil diet‡ long,
And over-much consumed his royal person;
'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.
What, is he in his bed?

* Most servile of subjects. † *I. e.* in prison.
‡ Bad regimen.

*Hast.* He is.

*Glo.* Go you before, and I will follow you. [*Exit* HASTINGS.
He cannot live, I hope; and must not die,
Till George be pack'd with posthorse up to heaven.
I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments;
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,
Clarence hath not another day to live:
Which done, God take king Edward to his mercy,
And leave the world for me to bustle in!
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter:
What though I kill'd her husband and her father?
The readiest way to make the wench amends,
Is—to become her husband, and her father:
The which will I; not all so much for love,
As for another secret close intent,
By marrying her, which I must reach unto.
But yet I run before my horse to market:
Clarence still breathes; Edward still lives, and reigns;
When they are gone, then must I count my gains. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE II.—The same. Another Street.*

*Enter the corpse of* KING HENRY *the Sixth, borne in an open coffin, Gentlemen bearing halberts, to guard it; and* LADY ANNE, *as mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable load,—
If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,—
Whilst I a while obsequiously* lament
The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.—
Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!
Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!
Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!
Be it lawful that I invocate thy ghost,
To hear the lamentions of poor Anne,
Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son,
Stabb'd by the self-same hand that made these wounds!
Lo, in these windows, that let forth thy life,
I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes:—
O, cursed be the hand that made these holes!
Cursed the heart, that had the heart to do it!
Cursed the blood, that let this blood from hence!
More direful hap betide that hated wretch,
That makes us wretched by the death of thee,
That I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,
Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives!
If ever he have child, abortive be it,
Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,
Whose ugly and unnatural aspect
May fright the hopeful mother at the view;

* As a funereal mourner.

And that be heir to his unhappiness!*
If ever he have wife, let her be made
More miserable by the death of him,
Than I am made by my young lord, and thee!
Come, now, toward Chertsey with your holy load,
Taken from Paul's to be interred there;
And, still as you are weary of the weight,
Rest you, whiles I lament king Henry's corse.
[*The bearers take up the corpse, and advance.*

*Enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Stay you, that bear the corse, and set it down.
*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this fiend,
To stop devoted charitable deeds?
*Glo.* Villains, set down the corse; or, by Saint Paul,
I'll make a corse of him that disobeys.
1 *Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.
*Glo.* Unmanner'd dog! stand thou when I command:
Advance thy halbert higher than my breast,
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.
[*The bearers set down the coffin.*
*Anne.* What, do you tremble? are you all afraid?
Alas, I blame you not: for you are mortal,
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.—
Avaunt, thou dreadful minister of hell!
Thou hadst but power over his mortal body,
His soul thou canst not have; therefore, be gone.
*Glo.* Sweet saint, for charity be not so curst.
*Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble us not;
For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,
Fill'd it with cursing cries, and deep exclaims.
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,
Behold this pattern† of thy butcheries:—
O, gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry's wounds
Open their congeal'd mouths, and bleed afresh!
Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity;
For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood
From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells;
Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural,
Provokes this deluge most unnatural.——
O God, which this blood madest, revenge his death!
O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge his death!
Either, heaven, with lightning strike the murderer dead,
Or, earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick;
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butchered!
*Glo.* Lady, you know no rules of charity,
Which renders good for bad, blessings for curses.
*Anne.* Villain, thou know'st no law of God nor man;
No beast so fierce, but knows some touch of pity.

* Evil disposition. † Example.

*Glo.* But I know none, and therefore am no beast.
*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!
*Glo.* More wonderful, when angels are so angry.—
Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,
Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.
*Anne.* Vouchsafe, diffused infection of a man,*
For these known evils, but to give me leave,
By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self.
*Glo.* Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have
Some patient leisure to excuse myself.
*Anne.* Fouler than heart can think thee, thou canst make
No excuse current, but to hang thyself.
*Glo.* By such despair, I should accuse myself.
*Anne.* And, by despairing, shalt thou stand excused;
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,
That didst unworthy slaughter upon others.
*Glo.* Say, that I slew them not?
*Anne.* Why then, they are not dead:
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.
*Glo.* I did not kill your husband.
*Anne.* Why, then he is alive.
*Glo.* Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's hand.
*Anne.* In thy soul's throat thou liest; queen Margaret saw
Thy murderous faulchion smoking in his blood;
The which thou once didst bend against her breast,
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.
*Glo.* I was provoked by her sland'rous tongue,
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.
*Anne.* Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,
That never dreamt on aught but butcheries:
Didst thou not kill this king?
*Glo.* I grant ye.
*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedge-hog? then God grant me too,
Thou mayst be damned for that wicked deed!
O, he was gentle, mild, and virtuous.
*Glo.* The fitter for the King of heaven that hath him.
*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.
*Glo.* Let him thank me, that holp to send him thither;
For he was fitter for that place, than earth.
*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.
*Glo.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.
*Anne.* Some dungeon.
*Glo.* Your bed-chamber.
*Anne.* Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest
*Glo.* So will it, madam, till I lie with you.
*Anne.* I hope so.
*Glo.* I know so.—But, gentle lady Anne,—
To leave this keen encounter of our wits,
And fall somewhat into a slower† method;—
Is not the causer of the timeless deaths

* Wide-spreading pestilence. † More serious.

Of these Plantagenets, Henry, and Edward,
As blameful as the executioner?
*Anne.* Thou wast the cause, and most accursed effect.
*Glo.* Your beauty was the cause of that effect;
Your beauty, which did haunt me in my sleep,
To undertake the death of all the world,
So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.
*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.
*Glo.* These eyes would not endure that beauty's wreck,
You should not blemish it, if I stood by:
As all the world is cheered by the sun,
So I by that; it is my day, my life.
*Anne.* Black night o'ershade thy day, and death thy life!
*Glo.* Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.
*Anne.* I would I were, to be revenged on thee.
*Glo.* It is a quarrel most unnatural,
To be revenged on him that loveth thee.
*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,
To be revenged on him that kill'd my husband.
*Glo.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,
Did it to help thee to a better husband.
*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the earth.
*Glo.* He lives, that loves you better than he could.
*Anne.* Name him.
*Glo.* Plantagenet.
*Anne.* Why, that was he.
*Glo.* The self-same name, but one of better nature.
*Anne.* Where is he?
*Glo.* Here: [*She spits at him.*] Why dost thou spit at me?
*Anne.* 'Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake!
*Glo.* Never came poison from so sweet a place.
*Anne.* Never hung poison on a fouler toad.
Out of my sight! thou dost infect mine eyes.
*Glo.* Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.
*Anne.* 'Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!
*Glo.* I would they were, that I might die at once;
For now they kill me with a living death.
Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,
Shamed their aspects with store of childish drops:
These eyes, which never shed remorseful* tear,—
Not, when my father York and Edward wept,
To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made,
When black-faced Clifford shook his sword at him:
Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,
Told the sad story of my father's death;
And twenty times made pause, to sob, and weep,
That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,
Like trees bedash'd with rain: in that sad time,
My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear;
And what these sorrows could not thence exhale,

* Pitiful.

Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.
I never sued to friend, nor enemy;
My tongue could never learn sweet soothing word;
But now thy beauty is proposed my fee,
My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak.
*[She looks scornfully at him.*
Teach not thy lip such scorn; for it was made
For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.
If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,
Lo! here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword,
Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,
And let the soul forth that adoreth thee,
I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,
And humbly beg the death upon my knee.
*[He lays his breast open; she offers at it with his sword.*
Nay, do not pause; for I did kill king Henry;—
But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me.
Nay, now despatch; 'twas I that stabb'd young Edward;—
*[She again offers at his breast.*
But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.
*[She lets fall the sword.*
Take up the sword again, or take up me.
*Anne.* Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death,
I will not be thy executioner.
*Glo.* Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.
*Anne.* I have already.
*Glo.* That was in thy rage:
Speak it again, and, even with the word,
This hand, which, for thy love, did kill thy love,
Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love;
To both their deaths shalt thou be accessory.
*Anne.* I would, I knew thy heart.
*Glo.* 'Tis figured in my tongue.
*Anne.* I fear me, both are false.
*Glo.* Then man was never true.
*Anne.* Well, well, put up your sword.
*Glo.* Say then, my peace is made.
*Anne.* That shall you know hereafter.
*Glo.* But shall I live in hope?
*Anne.* All men, I hope, live so.
*Glo.* Vouchsafe to wear this ring.
*Anne.* To take, is not to give. *[She puts on the ring.*
*Glo.* Look, how this ring encompasseth thy finger,
Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart;
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.
And if thy poor devoted servant may
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,
Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.
*Anne.* What is it?
*Glo.* That it may please you leave these sad designs
To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,
And presently repair to Crosby-place;
Where—after I have solemnly interr'd,

At Chertsey monast'ry, this noble king,
And wet his grave with my repentant tears,—
I will with all expedient duty see you:
For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,
Grant me this boon.
*Anne.* With all my heart; and much it joys me too,
To see you are become so penitent.—
Tressel, and Berkeley, go along with me.
*Glo.* Bid me farewell.
*Anne.* 'Tis more than you deserve:
But, since you teach me how to flatter you,
Imagine I have said farewell already.
[*Exeunt* LADY ANNE, TRESSEL, *and* BERKELEY.
*Glo.* Take up the corse, Sirs.
*Gent.* Towards Chertsey, noble lord?
*Glo.* No, to White-Friars; there attend my coming.
[*Exeunt the rest, with the corse.*
Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?
Was ever woman in this humour won?
I'll have her,—but I will not keep her long.
What! I, that kill'd her husband, and his father,
To take her in her heart's extremest hate;
With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,
The bleeding witness of her hatred by;
With God, her conscience, and these bars against me,
And I no friends to back my suit withal,
But the plain devil, and dissembling looks,
And yet to win her,—all the world to nothing!
Ha!
Hath she forgot already that brave prince,
Edward, her lord, whom I some three months since,
Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury?
A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,—
Framed in the prodigality of nature,
Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,—
The spacious world cannot again afford:
And will she yet abase her eyes on me,
That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet prince,
And made her widow to a woeful bed?
On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety?
On me, that halt, and am misshapen thus?
My dukedom to a beggarly denier,*
I do mistake my person all this while:
Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,
Myself to be a marvellous proper man.
I'll be at charges for a looking-glass;
And entertain a score or two of tailors,
To study fashions to adorn my body:
Since I am crept in favour with myself,
I will maintain it with some little cost.
But, first, I'll turn yon fellow in his grave;

* The twelfth part of a French *sou*.

And then return lamenting to my love.—
Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,
That I may see my shadow as I pass. [*Exit.*

*SCENE III.—The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH, LORD RIVERS, *and* LORD GREY.

*Riv.* Have patience, madam; there's no doubt his majesty
Will soon recover his accustom'd health.
*Grey.* In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse:
Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,
And cheer his grace with quick and merry words.
*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide of me?
*Grey.* No other harm, but loss of such a lord.
*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all harms.
*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,
To be your comforter, when he is gone.
*Q. Eliz.* Ah, he is young; and his minority
Is put into the trust of Richard Gloster,
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.
*Riv.* Is it concluded, he shall be protector?
*Q. Eliz.* It is determined, not concluded yet:
But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM *and* STANLEY.

*Grey.* Here come the lords of Buckingham and Stanley.
*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal grace!
*Stan.* God make your majesty joyful as you have been!
*Q. Eliz.* The countess Richmond, good my lord of Stanley,
To your good prayer will scarcely say—amen.
Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assured,
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.
*Stan.* I do beseech you, either not believe
The envious slanders of her false accusers;
Or, if she be accused on true report,
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds
From wayward sickness, and no grounded malice.
*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my lord of Stanley?
*Stan.* But now, the duke of Buckingham, and I,
Are come from visiting his majesty.
*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment, lords?
*Buck.* Madam, good hope: his grace speaks cheerfully.
*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! Did you confer with him?
*Buck.* Ay, madam: he desires to make atonement
Between the duke of Gloster and your brothers,
And between them and my lord chamberlain;
And sent to warn* them to his presence.
*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well!—But that will never be;—
I fear, our happiness is at the height.

* Summon.

*Enter* GLOSTER, HASTINGS, *and* DORSET.

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not endure it:—
Who are they, that complain unto the king,
That I, forsooth, am stern, and love them not?
By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly,
That fill his ear with such dissentious rumours.
Because I cannot flatter, and speak fair,
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,
I must be held a rancorous enemy.
Cannot a plain man live, and think no harm,
But thus his simple truth must be abused
By silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?
*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?
*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty, nor grace.
When have I injured thee? when done thee wrong?—
Or thee?—or thee?—or any of your faction?
A plague upon you all! His royal grace,—
Whom God preserve better than you would wish!—
Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while,
But you must trouble him with lewd* complaints.
*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloster, you mistake the matter:
The king, of his own royal disposition,
And not provoked by any suitor else;
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,
That in your outward action shows itself
Against my children, brothers, and myself,
Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather
The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.
*Glo.* I cannot tell;—The world is grown so bad,
That wrens may prey where eagles dare not perch:
Since every Jack† became a gentleman,
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.
*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning, brother Gloster;
You envy my advancement, and my friends;
God grant, we never may have need of you!
*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that we have need of you:
Our brother is imprison'd by your means,
Myself disgraced, and the nobility
Held in contempt; while great promotions
Are daily given, to ennoble those
That scarce, some two days since, were worth a noble.
*Q. Eliz.* By Him, that raised me to this careful height
From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,
I never did incense his majesty
Against the duke of Clarence, but have been
An earnest advocate to plead for him.
My lord, you do me shameful injury,
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.
*Glo.* You may deny that you were not the cause
Of my lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

* Rude, ignorant. † Low fellow.

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for——
*Glo.* She may, lord Rivers?—Why, who knows not so?
She may do more, Sir, than denying that:
She may help you to many fair preferments;
And then deny her aiding hand therein,
And lay those honours on your high desert.
What may she not? She may,—ay, marry may she,——
*Riv.* What, marry, may she?
*Glo.* What, marry, may she? marry with a king,
A bachelor, a handsome stripling too:
I wis,* your grandam had a worser match.
*Q. Eliz.* My lord of Gloster, I have too long borne
Your blunt upbraidings, and your bitter scoffs:
By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty,
Of these gross taunts I often have endured.
I had rather be a country servant-maid,
Than a great queen, with this condition—
To be so baited, scorn'd, and stormed at:
Small joy have I in being England's queen.

*Enter* QUEEN MARGARET, *behind.*

Q. Mar. [*aside*]. And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech thee!
Thy honour, state, and seat, is due to me.
*Glo.* What? Threat you me with telling of the king?
Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said
I will avouch, in presence of the king:
I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower.
'Tis time to speak, my pains† are quite forgot.
Q. Mar. [*aside*]. Out, devil! I remember them too well:
Thou kill'dst my husband Henry in the Tower,
And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury.
*Glo.* Ere you were queen, ay, or your husband king,
I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;
A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,
A liberal rewarder of his friends;
To royalize‡ his blood, I spilt my own.
Q. Mar. [*aside*]. Ay, and much better blood than his, or thine.
*Glo.* In all which time, you, and your husband Grey,
Were factious for the house of Lancaster;—
And, Rivers, so were you:—Was not your husband
In Margaret's battle§ at Saint Albans slain?
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,
What you have been ere now, and what you are;
Withal, what I have been, and what I am.
Q. Mar. [*aside*]. A murd'rous villain, and so still thou art.
*Glo.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father Warwick,
Ay, and forswore himself,—Which Jesu pardon!—
Q. Mar. [*aside*]. Which God revenge!
*Glo.* To fight on Edward's party, for the crown
And, for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up

* Think. † Labours. ‡ Make royal. § Army.

I would to God, my heart were flint like Edward's,
Or Edward's soft and pitiful like mine;
I am too childish-foolish for this world.
Q. Mar. [*aside*]. Hie thee to hell for shame, and leave this world,
Thou cacodæmon!* there thy kingdom is.
*Riv.* My lord of Gloster, in those busy days,
Which here you urge, to prove us enemies,
We follow'd then our lord, our lawful king;
So should we you, if you should be our king.
*Glo.* If I should be?—I had rather be a pedlar;
Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof!
*Q. Eliz.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose,
You should enjoy, were you this country's king;
As little joy you may suppose in me,
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.
Q. Mar. [*aside*]. A little joy enjoys the queen thereof;
For I am she, and altogether joyless.
I can no longer hold me patient.— [*Advancing.*
Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out
In sharing that which you have pill'd† from me:
Which of you trembles not, that looks on me?
If not, that, I being queen, you bow like subjects;
Yet that, by you deposed, you quake like rebels?—
Ah, gentle‡ villain, do not turn away!
*Glo.* Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'st thou in my sight?
*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast marr'd;
That will I make before I let thee go.
*Glo.* Wert thou not banish'd on pain of death?
*Q. Mar.* I was; but I do find more pain in banishment,
Than death can yield me here by my abode.
A husband, and a son, thou ow'st to me,—
And thou, a kingdom;—all of you, allegiance:
This sorrow that I have, by right is yours;
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.
*Glo.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,—
When thou didst crown his warlike brows with paper,
And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his eyes;
And then, to dry them, gav'st the duke a clout,
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland;—
His curses, then from bitterness of soul
Denounced against thee are all fall'n upon thee;
And God, not we, hath plagued§ thy bloody deed.
*Q. Eliz.* So just is God to right the innocent.
*Hast.* O, 'twas the foulest deed to slay that babe,
And the most merciless that e'er was heard of.
*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.
*Dor.* No man but prophesied revenge for it.
*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.
*Q. Mar.* What! were you snarling all before I came,

* Corrupt devil. † Pillaged.
‡ Spoken ironically. § Punished.

Ready to catch each other by the throat,
And turn you all your hatred now on me?
Did York's dread curse prevail so much with heaven,
That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,
Their kingdom's loss, my woeful banishment,
Could all but answer for that peevish brat?
Can curses pierce the clouds, and enter heaven?—
Why, then give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses!—
Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,
As ours by murder, to make him a king!
Edward, thy son, that now is prince of Wales,
For Edward, my son, that was prince of Wales,
Die in his youth, by like untimely violence!
Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,
Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!
Long mayst thou live to wail thy children's loss;
And see another, as I see thee now,
Deck'd in thy rights as thou art stall'd in mine!
Long die thy happy days before thy death;
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,
Die, neither mother, wife, nor England's queen!
Rivers,—and Dorset,— you were standers by,—
And so wast thou, lord Hastings,—when my son
Was stabb'd with bloody daggers; God, I pray him,
That none of you may live your natural age,
But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

*Glo.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful wither'd hag.

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee? stay, dog, for thou shalt hear me.
If heaven have any grievous plague in store,
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,
O, let them keep it, till thy sins be ripe,
And then hurl down their indignation
On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace.
The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul!
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou liv'st,
And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends!
No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,
Unless it be while some tormenting dream
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!
Thou elvish-mark'd abortive, rooting* hog!
Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity
The slave of nature, and the son of hell!
Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb!
Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!
Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

*Glo.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard!

*Glo.* Ha?

*Q. Mar.* I call thee not.

*Glo.* I cry thee mercy then, for I did think,
That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names.

* Grovelling; with snout turned towards the ground.

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did: but look'd for no reply.
O, let me make the period to my curse.
*Glo.* 'Tis done by me; and ends in—Margaret.
*Q. Eliz.* Thus have you breath'd your curse against yourself.
*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish of my fortune!
Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled * spider,
Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about?
Fool, fool! thou whet'st a knife to kill thyself.
The day will come that thou shalt wish for me
To help thee curse this pois'nous bunch-back'd toad.
*Hast.* False-boding woman, end thy frantic curse;
Lest, to thy harm, thou move our patience.
*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upon you! you have all moved mine.
*Riv.* Were you well served, you would be taught your duty.
*Q. Mar.* To serve me well, you all should do me duty,
Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects:
O, serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty.
*Dor.* Dispute not with her, she is lunatic.
*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquis, you are malapert:
Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce current: †
O, that your young nobility could judge,
What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!
They that stand high, have many blasts to shake them;
And, if they fall, they dash themselves to pieces.
*Glo.* Good counsel, marry;—learn it, learn it, marquis.
*Dor.* It touches you, my lord, as much as me.
*Glo.* Ay, and much more: but I was born so high,
Our aiery ‡ buildeth in the cedar's top,
And dallies with the wind, and scorns the sun.
*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade;—alas, alas!
Witness my son, now in the shade of death;
Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy wrath
Hath in eternal darkness folded up.
Your aiery buildeth in our aiery's nest:
O God, that see'st it, do not suffer it;
As it was won with blood, lost be it so!
*Buck.* Peace, peace, for shame, if not for charity.
*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to me;
Uncharitably with me have you dealt,
And shamefully by you my hopes are butcher'd.
My charity is outrage, life my shame,—
And in my shame still live my sorrow's rage!
*Buck.* Have done, have done.
*Q. Mar.* O princely Buckingham, I kiss thy hand,
In sign of league and amity with thee:
Now fair befall thee, and thy noble house!
Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.
*Buck.* Nor no one here; for curses never pass
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

* Deformed. † He had just been created marquis of Dorset.
‡ Eagle's nest.

*Q. Mar.* I'll not believe but they ascend the sky,
And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.
O Buckingham, beware of yonder dog;
Look, when he fawns, he bites; and, when he bites,
His venom tooth will rankle to the death:
Have not to do with him, beware of him;
Sin, death, and hell, have set their marks on him;
And all their ministers attend on him.
*Glo.* What doth she say, my lord of Buckingham?
*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious lord.
*Q. Mar.* What, dost thou scorn me for my gentle counsel?
And soothe the devil that I warn thee from?
O, but remember this another day,
When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow;
And say, poor Margaret was a prophetess.—
Live each of you the subjects to his hate,
And he to yours, and all of you to God's. [*Exit.*
*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear her curses.
*Riv.* And so doth mine; I muse,* why she's at liberty.
*Glo.* I cannot blame her, by God's holy mother;
She hath had too much wrong, and I repent
My part thereof, that I have done to her.
*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my knowledge.
*Glo.* Yet you have all the 'vantage of her wrong.
I was too hot to do somebody good,
That is too cold in thinking of it now.
Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;
He is frank'd † up to fatting for his pains;—
God pardon them that are the cause thereof!
*Riv.* A virtuous and a Christian-like conclusion,
To pray for them that hath done scathe to us.
*Glo.* So do I ever, being well advised;—
For had I cursed now, I had cursed myself. [*Aside.*

*Enter* CATESBY.

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for you,—
And for your grace,—and you, my noble lords.
*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, I come:—Lords, will you go with me?
*Riv.* Madam, we will attend upon your grace.
[*Exeunt all but* GLOSTER.
*Glo.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.
The secret mischiefs that I set abroach,
I lay unto the grievous charge of others.
Clarence,—whom I, indeed, have laid in darkness,—
I do beweep to many simple gulls;
Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham;
And tell them—'tis the queen and her allies,
That stir the king against the duke my brother
Now they believe it: and withal whet me
To be revenged on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey:
But then I sigh, and, with a piece of scripture,
Tell them—that God bids us do good for evil.

* Wonder. † Put in a stye.

And thus I clothe my naked villany
With old odd ends, stol'n forth of holy writ;
And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.

*Enter two* MURDERERS.

But soft, here come my executioners.—
How now, my hardy, stout, resolved mates?
Are you now going to despatch this thing?
1 *Murd.* We are, my lord; and come to have the warrant,
That we may be admitted where he is.
*Glo.* Well thought upon, I have it here about me.
[*Gives the warrant.*
When you have done, repair to Crosby-place.
But, Sirs, be sudden in the execution,
Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;
For Clarence is well spoken, and, perhaps,
May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.
1 *Murd.* Tut, tut, my lord, we will not stand to prate,
Talkers are no good doers; be assured,
We go to use our hands, and not our tongues.
*Glo.* Your eyes drop mill-stones, when fools' eyes drop tears:
I like you, lads:—about your business straight;
Go, go, despatch.
1 *Murd.* We will, my noble lord. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—The same. A Room in the Tower.*

*Enter* CLARENCE *and* BRAKENBURY.

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily to-day?
*Clar.* O, I have pass'd a miserable night,
So full of fearful dreams, of ugly sights,
That, as I am a Christian faithful* man,
I would not spend another such a night,
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days;
So full of dismal terror was the time.
*Brak.* What was your dream, my lord? I pray you, tell me.
*Clar.* Methought, that I had broken from the Tower,
And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;
And, in my company, my brother Gloster:
Who, from my cabin tempted me to walk
Upon the hatches; thence we look'd toward England,
And cited up a thousand heavy times,
During the wars of York and Lancaster,
That had befall'n us. As we paced along
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,
Methought that Gloster stumbled; and, in falling,
Struck me, that thought to stay him, over-board,
Into the tumbling billows of the main.
O Lord! methought, what pain it was to drown!
What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!

* Not a pagan.

Methought, I saw a thousand fearful wrecks;
A thousand men, that fishes gnaw'd upon;
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,
Inestimable stones, unvalued* jewels,
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea.
Some lay in dead men's skulls; and, in those holes
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept
(As 'twere in scorn of eyes) reflecting gems,
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd by.

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of death,
To gaze upon these secrets of the deep?

*Clar.* Methought, I had; and often did I strive
To yield the ghost: but still the envious flood
Kept in my soul, and would not let it forth
To seek the empty, vast, and wand'ring air;
But smother'd it within my panting bulk,†
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

*Brak.* Awaked you not with this sore agony?

*Clar.* O, no, my dream was lengthen'd after life;
O, then began the tempest to my soul!
I pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood,
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.
The first that there did greet my stranger soul,
Was my great father-in-law, renowned Warwick,
Who cried aloud,—*What scourge for perjury*
*Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?*
And so he vanish'd: Then came wand'ring by
A shadow like an angel, with bright hair
Dabbled in blood; and he shriek'd out aloud,—
*Clarence is come,—false, fleeting, perjured Clarence,—*
*That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury;—*
*Seize on him, furies, take him to your torments!*
With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends
Environ'd me, and howled in mine ears
Such hideous cries, that, with the very noise,
I trembling waked, and, for a season after,
Could not believe but that I was in hell;
Such terrible impression made my dream.

*Brak.* No marvel, lord, though it affrighted you!
I am afraid, methinks, to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* O, Brakenbury, I have done these things—
That now give evidence against my soul,—
For Edward's sake; and, see, how he requites me!—
O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee,
But thou wilt be avenged on my misdeeds,
Yet execute thy wrath on me alone:
O spare my guiltless wife, and my poor children!
I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;
My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

* Invaluable. † Body.

*Brak.* I will, my lord; God give your grace good rest!—
[CLARENCE *reposes himself on a chair.*
Sorrow breaks seasons, and reposing hours
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide night.
Princes have but their titles for their glories,
An outward honour for an inward toil;
And, for unfelt imaginations,
They often feel a world of restless cares:
So that, between their titles, and low name,
There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the two* MURDERERS.

1 *Murd.* Ho! who's here?
*Brak.* What wouldst thou, fellow? and how cam'st thou hither?
1 *Murd.* I would speak with Clarence, and I came hither on my legs.
*Brak.* What, so brief?
2 *Murd.* O, Sir, 'tis better to be brief than tedious:—
Let him see our commission; talk no more.
[*A paper is delivered to* BRAKENBURY, *who reads it.*
*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver
The noble duke of Clarence to your hands:—
I will not reason what is meant thereby,
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.
Here are the keys;—there sits the duke asleep:
I'll to the king; and signify to him,
That thus to you I have resign'd my charge.
1 *Murd.* You may, Sir; 'tis a point of wisdom:
Fare you well. [*Exit* BRAKENBURY.
2 *Murd.* What, shall we stab him as he sleeps?
1 *Murd.* No; he'll say, 'twas done cowardly, when he wakes.
2 *Murd.* When he wakes! why, fool, he shall never wake until the great judgment day.
1 *Murd.* Why, then he'll say, we stabb'd him sleeping.
2 *Murd.* The urging of that word, judgment, hath bred a kind of remorse in me.
1 *Murd.* What? art thou afraid?
2 *Murd.* Not to kill him, having a warrant for it; but to be damn'd for killing him, from the which no warrant can defend me.
1 *Murd.* I thought, thou hadst been resolute.
2 *Murd.* So I am, to let him live.
1 *Murd.* I'll back to the duke of Gloster, and tell him so.
2 *Murd.* Nay, I pr'ythee, stay a little: I hope, this holy humour of mine will change; it was wont to hold me but while one would tell twenty.
1 *Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself now?
2 *Murd.* 'Faith some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.
1 *Murd.* Remember our reward, when the deed 's done.
2 *Murd.* Come, he dies; I had forgot the reward.

1 *Murd.* Where's thy conscience now?

2 *Murd.* In the duke of Gloster's purse.

1 *Murd.* So when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

2 *Murd.* 'Tis no matter; let it go; there's few or none, will entertain it.

1 *Murd.* What, if it come to thee again?

2 *Murd.* I'll not meddle with it, it is a dangerous thing, it makes a man a coward; a man cannot steal, but it accuseth him; a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'Tis a blushing shame-faced spirit, that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of gold, that by chance I found; it beggars any man that keeps it; it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man, that means to live well, endeavours to trust to himself, and live without it.

1 *Murd.* 'Zounds, it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

2 *Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee, but to make thee sigh.

1 *Murd.* I am strong-framed, he cannot prevail with me.

2 *Murd.* Spoke like a tall* fellow, that respects his reputation. Come, shall we fall to work?

1 *Murd.* Take him over the costard† with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the malmsey-butt, in the next room.

2 *Murd.* O excellent device! and make a sop of him.

1 *Murd.* Soft! he wakes.

2 *Murd.* Strike.

1 *Murd.* No, we'll reason‡ with him.

*Clar.* Where art thou, keeper; give me a cup of wine.

1 *Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

1 *Murd.* A man, as you are.

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

1 *Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

1 *Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

*Clar.* How darkly, and how deadly dost thou speak!
Your eyes do menace me: Why look you pale?
Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

*Both Murd.* To, to, to,——

*Clar.* To murder me?

*Both Murd.* Ay, ay.

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so,
And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.
Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

1 *Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconciled to him again.

* Brave. † Head. ‡ Talk.

2 *Murd.* Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die.
*Clar.* Are you call'd forth from out a world of men,
To slay the innocent? What is my offence?
Where is the evidence that doth accuse me?
What lawful quest* have given their verdict up
Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounced
The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death?
Before I be convict by course of law,
To threaten me with death is most unlawful.
I charge you, as you hope for any goodness,
By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous sins,
That you depart, and lay no hands on me;
The deed you undertake is damnable.
1 *Murd.* What we will do, we do upon command.
2 *Murd.* And he, that hath commanded, is our king.
*Clar.* Erroneous vassal! the great King of kings
Hath in the table of his law commanded,
That thou shalt do no murder; Wilt thou then
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?
Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hand,
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.
2 *Murd.* And that same vengeance doth he hurl on thee,
For false forswearing, and for murder too:
Thou didst receive the sacrament, to fight
In quarrel† of the house of Lancaster.
1 *Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name of God,
Didst break that vow; and, with thy treacherous blade,
Unrip'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.
2 *Murd.* Whom thou wast sworn to cherish and defend.
1 *Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dreadful law to us,
When thou hast broke it in such dear‡ degree?
*Clar.* Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?
For Edward, for my brother, for his sake:
He sends you not to murder me for this;
For in that sin he is as deep as I.
If God will be avenged for the deed,
O, know you, that he doth it publicly;
Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm;
He needs no indirect nor lawless course,
To cut off those that have offended him.
1 *Murd.* Who made thee then a bloody minister,
When gallant-springing,§ brave Plantagenet,
That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?
*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.
1 *Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy fault,
Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.
*Clar.* If you do love my brother, hate not me;
I am his brother, and I love him well.
If you are hired for meed,‖ go back again,
And I will send you to my brother Gloster;

* Jury. † On the part. ‡ Eminent.
§ Youthful. ‖ Reward.

Who shall reward you better for my life,
Than Edward will for tidings of my death.
2 *Murd.* You are deceived, your brother Gloster hates you.
*Clar.* Oh, no; he loves me, and he holds me dear:
Go you to him from me.
*Both Murd.* Ay, so we will.
*Clar.* Tell him, that when our princely father York
Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,
And charged us from his soul to love each other,
He little thought of this divided friendship:
Bid Gloster think on this, and he will weep.
1 *Murd.* Ay, mill-stones; as he lesson'd us to weep
*Clar.* O, do not slander him, for he is kind.
1 *Murd.* Right, as snow in harvest.—Come, you deceive yourself;
'Tis he that sends us to destroy you here.
*Clar.* It cannot be; for he bewept my fortune,
And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with sobs,
That he would labour my delivery.
1 *Murd.* Why, so he doth, when he delivers you
From this earth's thraldom to the joys of heaven.
2 *Murd.* Make peace with God, for you must die, my lord.
*Clar.* Hast thou that holy feeling in thy soul,
To counsel me to make my peace with God,
And art thou yet to thy own soul so blind,
That thou wilt war with God, by murd'ring me?—
Ah, Sirs, consider, he, that sent you on
To do this deed, will hate you for the deed.
2 *Murd.* What shall we do?
*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.
1 *Murd.* Relent! 'tis cowardly, and womanish.
*Clar.* Not to relent, is beastly, savage, devilish.—
Which of you, if you were a prince's son,
Being pent from liberty, as I am now,—
If two such murderers as yourselves came to you,—
Would not entreat for life?—
My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;
O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,
Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,
As you would beg, were you in my distress.
A begging prince what beggar pities not?
2 *Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.
1 *Murd.* Take that, and that; if all this will not do,
[*Stabs him.*
I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.
[*Exit with the body.*
2 *Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately despatch'd!
How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands
Of this most grievous guilty murder done!

*Re-enter first* MURDERER.

1 *Murd.* How now? what mean'st thou, that thou help'st me not?
By heaven, the duke shall know how slack you have been.

2 *Murd.* I would he knew, that I had saved his brother!
Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say;
For I repent me that the duke is slain. [*Exit.*
1 *Murd.* So do not I; go, coward, as thou art.—
Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole,
Till that the duke give order for his burial:
And when I have my meed, I will away;
For this will out, and then I must not stay. [*Exit.*

---

# ACT II.

## *SCENE I.—The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* KING EDWARD (*led in sick*), QUEEN ELIZABETH, DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, *and others.*

*K. Edw.* Why, so:—now have I done a good day's work;—
You peers, continue this united league:
I every day expect an embassage
From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;
And more in peace my soul shall part to heaven,
Since I have made my friends at peace on earth.
Rivers, and Hastings, take each other's hand;
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.
*Riv.* By heaven, my soul is purged from grudging hate;
And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.
*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!
*K. Edw.* Take heed, you dally not before your king;
Lest he, that is the supreme King of kings,
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award
Either of you to be the other's end.
*Hast.* So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!
*Riv.* And I, as I love Hastings with my heart!
*K. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt in this,—
Nor your son Dorset,—Buckingham, nor you;—
You have been factious one against the other.
Wife, love lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;
And what you do, do it unfeignedly.
*Q. Eliz.* There, Hastings;—I will never more remember
Our former hatred, so thrive I, and mine!
*K. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him,—Hastings, love lord marquis.
*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here protest,
Upon my part shall be inviolable.
*Hast.* And so swear I. [*Embraces* DORSET.
*K. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal thou this league
With thy embracements to my wife's allies
And make me happy in your unity.
*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn his hate

Upon your grace, [*To the* QUEEN.] but with all duteous love
Doth cherish you, and yours, God punish me
With hate in those where I expect most love!
When I have most need to employ a friend,
And most assured that he is a friend,
Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,
Be he unto me! this do I beg of heaven,
When I am cold in love, to you, or yours.
[*Embracing* RIVERS, *&c.*

*K. Edw.* A pleasing cordial, princely Buckingham,
Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.
There wanteth now our brother Gloster here,
To make the blessed period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the noble duke.

*Enter* GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Good-morrow to my sovereign king and queen;
And, princely peers, a happy time of day!

*K. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent the day:—
Brother, we have done deeds of charity;
Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,
Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.

*Glo.* A blessed labour, my most sovereign liege.—
Among this princely heap, if any here,
By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,
Hold me a foe;
If I unwittingly, or in my rage,
Have aught committed that is hardly borne
By any in this presence, I desire
To reconcile me to his friendly peace:
'Tis death to me, to be at enmity;
I hate it, and desire all good men's love.—
First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,
Which I will purchase with my duteous service;—
Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,
If ever any grudge were lodged between us;—
Of you, lord Rivers,—and lord Grey,—of you,—
That all without desert have frown'd on me;—
Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen; indeed of all.
I do not know that Englishman alive,
With whom my soul is any jot at odds,
More than the infant that is born to-night;
I thank my God for my humility.

*Q. Eliz.* A holy-day shall this be kept hereafter:—
I would to God, all strifes were well compounded.—
My sovereign lord, I do beseech your highness
To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glo.* Why, madam, have I offer'd love for this,
To be so flouted in this royal presence?
Who knows not, that the gentle duke is dead? [*They all start.*
You do him injury to scorn his corse.

*K. Edw.* Who knows not he is dead! who knows he is?

*Q. Eliz.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is this!

*Buck.* Look I so pale, lord Dorset, as the rest?
*Dor.* Ay, my good lord; and no man in the presence,
But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.
*K. Edw.* Is Clarence dead? the order was reversed.
*Glo.* But he, poor man, by your first order died,
And that a winged Mercury did bear;
Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,
That came too lag to see him buried:—
God grant, that some, less noble, and less loyal,
Nearer in bloody thoughts, and not in blood,
Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,
And yet go current from suspicion.

*Enter* STANLEY.

*Stan.* A boon, my sovereign, for my service done!
*K. Edw.* I pr'ythee, peace; my soul is full of sorrow.
*Stan.* I will not rise, unless your highness hear me.
*K. Edw.* Then say at once, what is it thou request'st.
*Stan.* The forfeit,* sovereign, of my servant's life;
Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman,
Lately attendant on the duke of Norfolk.
*K. Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death,
And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?
My brother kill'd no man, his fault was thought,
And yet his punishment was bitter death.
Who sued to me for him? who, in my wrath,
Kneel'd at my feet, and bade me be advised?
Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of love?
Who told me, how the poor soul did forsake
The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?
Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury,
When Oxford had me down, he rescued me,
And said, *Dear brother, live, and be a king?*
Who told me, when we both lay in the field,
Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me
Even in his garments; and did give himself,
All thin and naked, to the numb-cold night?
All this from my remembrance brutish wrath
Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you
Had so much grace to put it to my mind.
But when your carters, or your waiting-vassals,
Have done a drunken slaughter, and defaced
The precious image of our dear Redeemer,
You straight are on your knees for pardon, pardon;
And I, unjustly too, must grant it you:—
But for my brother, not a man would speak,—
Nor I (ungracious) speak unto myself
For him, poor soul.—The proudest of you all
Have been beholden to him in his life;
Yet none of you would once plead for his life.—
O God! I fear, thy justice will take hold

* Remission of the forfeit.

On me, and you, and mine, and yours, for this.—
Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. O,
Poor Clarence!

[*Exeunt* KING, QUEEN, HASTINGS, RIVERS, DORSET, *and* GREY.

*Glo.* This is the fruit of rashness!—Mark'd you not,
How that the guilty kindred of the queen
Look'd pale, when they did hear of Clarence' death?
O! they did urge it still unto the king:
God will revenge it. Come, lords; will you go,
To comfort Edward with our company?

*Buck.* We wait upon your grace. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—The same.*

*Enter the Duchess of* YORK, *with a* SON *and* DAUGHTER *of* CLARENCE.

*Son.* Good grandam, tell us, is our father dead?

*Duch.* No, boy.

*Daugh.* Why do you weep so oft? and beat your breast?
And cry—*O Clarence, my unhappy son!*

*Son.* Why do you look on us, and shake your head,
And call us—orphans, wretches, cast-aways,
If that our noble father be alive?

*Duch.* My pretty cousins, you mistake me both;
I do lament the sickness of the king,
As loath to lose him, not your father's death;
It were lost sorrow, to wail one that's lost.

*Son.* Then, grandam, you conclude that he is dead.
The king my uncle is to blame for this:
God will revenge it; whom I will impórtune
With earnest prayers all to that effect.

*Daugh.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you well:
Incapable* and shallow innocents,
You cannot guess who caused your father's death.

*Son.* Grandam, we can: for my good uncle Gloster
Told me, the king, provoked to't by the queen,
Devised impeachments to imprison him:
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;
Bade me rely on him, as on my father,
And he would love me dearly as his child.

*Duch.* Ah, that deceit should steal such gentle shapes,
And with a virtuous visor hide deep vice!
He is my son, ay, and therein my shame,
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

*Son.* Think you, my uncle did dissemble, grandam?

*Duch.* Ay, boy.

*Son.* I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is this!

* Ignorant.

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH *distractedly;* RIVERS *and* DORSET, *following her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! who shall hinder me to wail and weep?
To chide my fortune, and torment myself?
I'll join with black despair against my soul,
And to myself become an enemy.
*Duch.* What means this scene of rude impatience?
*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence:—
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead.
Why grow the branches, when the root is gone?
Why wither not the leaves, that want their sap?—
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief,
That our swift-winged souls may catch the king's;
Or, like obedient subjects, follow him
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.
*Duch.* Ah, so much interest have I in thy sorrow,
As I had title in thy noble husband!
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,
And lived by looking on his images:
But now two mirrors of his princely semblance
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death;
And I for comfort have but one false glass,
That grieves me when I see my shame in him.
Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,
And hast the comfort of thy children left thee:
But death hath snatch'd my husband from my arms,
And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble hands;
Clarence, and Edward. O, what cause have I
(Thine being but a moiety of my grief)
To over-go thy plaints, and drown thy cries!
*Son.* Ah, aunt! you wept not for our father's death;
How can we aid you with our kindred tears?
*Daugh.* Our fatherless distress was left unmoan'd,
Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept!
*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation,
I am not barren, to bring forth laments:
All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,
That I, being govern'd by the watery moon,
May send forth plenteous tears to drown the world!
Ah, for my husband, for my dear lord Edward!
*Chil.* Ah, for our father, for our dear lord Clarence!
*Duch.* Alas, for both, both mine, Edward and Clarence!
*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I, but Edward? and he's gone.
*Chil.* What stay had we, but Clarence? and he's gone.
*Duch.* What stays had I, but they? and they are gone.
*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow, had so dear a loss.
*Chil.* Were never orphans, had so dear a loss.
*Duch.* Was never mother, had so dear a loss.
Alas! I am the mother of these griefs;
Their woes are parcell'd,* mine are general.

* Divided.

She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;
I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:
These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I:
I for an Edward weep, so do not they:—
Alas! you three, on me, threefold distress'd,
Pour all your tears, I am your sorrow's nurse.
And I will pamper it with lamentations.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother; God is much displeased,
That you take with unthankfulness his doing;
In common worldly things, 'tis call'd—ungrateful,
With dull unwillingness to repay a debt,
Which, with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;
Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,
For* it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*Riv.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,
Of the young prince your son: send straight for him,
Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives:
Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,
And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter* GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, RATCLIFF, *and others.*

*Glo.* Sister, have comfort: all of us have cause
To wail the dimming of our shining star;
But none can cure their harms by wailing them.—
Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy,
I did not see your grace: humbly on my knee
I crave your blessing.

*Duch.* God bless thee: and put meekness in thy breast,
Love, charity, obedience, and true duty!

*Glo.* Amen; and make me die a good old man!—
That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing:— [*Aside.*
I marvel, that her grace did leave it out.

*Buck.* You cloudy princes, and heart-sorrowing peers,
That bear this mutual heavy load of moan,
Now cheer each other in each other's love:
Though we have spent our harvest of this king,
We are to reap the harvest of his son.
The broken rancour of your high-swoln hearts,
But lately splinted, knit, and join'd together,
Must gently be preserved, cherish'd, and kept:
Me seemeth good, that with some little train,
Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fetch'd
Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest by a multitude,
The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out;
Which would be so much the more dangerous,
By how much the estate is green, and yet ungovern'd:
Where every horse bears his commanding rein,
And may direct his course as please himself,

* Because.

As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent,
In my opinion, ought to be prevented.
*Glo.* I hope, the king made peace with all of us;
And the compact is firm, and true, in me.
*Riv.* And so in me; and so, I think, in all:
Yet, since it is but green, it should be put
To no apparent likelihood of breach,
Which, haply, by much company might be urged;
Therefore I say, with noble Buckingham,
That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.
*Hast.* And so say I.
*Glo.* Then be it so; and go we to determine
Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow.
Madam,—and you my mother,—will you go
To give your censures * in this weighty business?
[*Exeunt all but* BUCKINGHAM *and* GLOSTER.
*Buck.* My lord, whoever journeys to the prince,
For God's sake let not us two stay at home:
For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,
As index † to the story we late talk'd of,
To part the queen's proud kindred from the prince.
*Glo.* My other self, my counsel's consistory,
My oracle, my prophet!—My dear cousin,
I, as a child, will go by thy direction.
Towards Ludlow, then, for we'll not stay behind. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The same. A street.*

*Enter two* CITIZENS, *meeting.*

1 *Cit.* Good morrow, neighbour: Whither away so fast?
2 *Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know myself:
Hear you the news abroad?
1 *Cit.* Yes; the king's dead.
2 *Cit.* Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better:
I fear, I fear, 'twill prove a giddy world.

*Enter another* CITIZEN.

3 *Cit.* Neighbours, God speed!
1 *Cit.* Give you good morrow, Sir.
3 *Cit.* Doth the news hold of good king Edward's death?
2 *Cit.* Ay, Sir, it is too true; God help, the while!
3 *Cit.* Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.
1 *Cit.* No, no; by God's good grace, his son shall reign.
3 *Cit.* Woe to that land, that's govern'd by a child!
2 *Cit.* In him there is a hope of government;
That in his nonage, council under him,
And, in his full and ripen'd years, himself,
No doubt, shall then, and till then, govern well.
1 *Cit.* So stood the state, when Henry the sixth
Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

* Opinion. † Preparatory.

3 *Cit.* Stood the state so? No no, good friends, God wot;
For then this land was famously enrich'd
With politic grave counsel; then the king
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.
1 *Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by his father and mother.
3 *Cit.* Better it were they all came by his father;
Or, by his father, there were none at all;
For emulation now, who shall be nearest,
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.
O, full of danger is the duke of Gloster;
And the queen's sons, and brothers, haught and proud:
And were they to be ruled, and not to rule,
This sickly land might solace as before.
1 *Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worst; all will be well.
3 *Cit.* When clouds are seen, wise men put on their cloaks;
When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand;
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?
Untimely storms make men expect a dearth:
All may be well: but, if God sort it so,
'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect.
2 *Cit.* Truly, the hearts of men are full of fear.
You cannot reason* almost with a man
That looks not heavily and full of dread.
3 *Cit.* Before the days of change, still is it so:
By a divine instinct, men's minds mistrust
Ensuing danger; as by proof, we see
The water swell before a boist'rous storm.
But leave it all to God. Whither away?
2 *Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the justices.
3 *Cit.* And so was I; I'll bear you company. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter the Archbishop of* YORK, *the young Duke of* YORK, QUEEN ELIZABETH, *and the Duchess of* YORK.

*Arch.* Last night, I heard, they lay at Stony-Stratford;
And at Northampton they do rest to-night:
To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.
*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the prince;
I hope, he is much grown since last I saw him.
*Q. Eliz.* But I hear, no; they say, my son of York
Hath almost overta'en him in his growth.
*York.* Ay, mother, but I would not have it so.
*Duch.* Why, my young cousin; it is good to grow.
*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper,
My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow
More than my brother; *Ay*, quoth my uncle Gloster,
*Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace:*
And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,
Because sweet flowers are slow, and weeds make haste.

* Converse.

*Duch.* 'Good faith, 'good faith, the saying did not hold
In him that did object the same to thee:
He was the wretched'st thing, when he was young,
So long a growing, and so leisurely,
That, if his rule were true, he should be gracious.
*Arch.* And so, no doubt, he is, my gracious madam.
*Duch.* I hope, he is; but yet let mothers doubt.
*York.* Now, by my troth, if I had been remember'd, *
I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,
To touch his growth, nearer than he touch'd mine.
*Duch.* How, my young York? I pry'thee let me hear it.
*York.* Marry, they say, my uncle grew so fast,
That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old;
'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.
Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.
*Duch.* I pr'ythee, pretty York, who told thee this?
*York.* Grandam, his nurse.
*Duch.* His nurse? why, she was dead ere thou wast born.
*York.* If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who told me.
*Q. Eliz.* A parlous † boy: Go to, you are too shrewd.
*Arch.* Good madam, be not angry with the child.
*Q. Eliz.* Pitchers have ears.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Arch.* Here comes a messenger:
What news?
*Mess.* Such news, my lord,
As grieves me to unfold.
*Q. Eliz.* How doth the prince?
*Mess.* Well, madam, and in health.
*Duch.* What is thy news?
*Mess.* Lord Rivers, and lord Grey, are sent to Pomfret,
With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.
*Duch.* Who hath committed them?
*Mess.* The mighty dukes,
Gloster and Buckingham.
*Q. Eliz.* For what offence?
*Mess.* The sum of all I can, I have disclosed;
Why, or for what, the nobles were committed,
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.
*Q. Eliz.* Ah me, I see the ruin of my house!
The tiger now hath seized the gentle hind;
Insulting tyranny begins to jet ‡
Upon the innocent and aweless throne:
Welcome, destruction, blood, and massacre.
I see, as in a map, the end of all.
*Duch.* Accursed and unquiet wrangling days!
How many of you have mine eyes beheld?
My husband lost his life to get the crown;
And often up and down my sons were toss'd,

* If I had thought of it. † Perilous, dangerous.
‡ Encroach upon.

For me to joy, and weep, their gain, and loss:
And being seated, and domestic broils
Clean over-blown, themselves the conquerors,
Make war upon themselves; brother to brother
Blood to blood, self 'gainst self;—O, preposterous
And frantic courage, end thy damned spleen;
Or let me die, to look on death no more!

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, my boy, we will to sanctuary.—
Madam, farewell.

*Duch.* Stay, I will go with you.

*Q. Eliz.* You have no cause.

*Arch.* My gracious lady, go, [*To the* QUEEN.
And thither bear your treasure and your goods.
For my part, I'll resign unto your grace
The seal I keep; And so betide to me,
As well I tender you, and all of yours!
Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary. [*Exeunt.*

---

# ACT III.

## *SCENE I.—The same. A Street.*

*The Trumpets sound. Enter the Prince of* WALES, GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, CARDINAL BOUCHIER, *and others.*

*Buck.* Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to your chamber.*

*Glo.* Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts' sovereign:
The weary way hath made you melancholy.

*Prince.* No, uncle; but our crosses on the way
Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:
I want more uncles here to welcome me.

*Glo.* Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years
Have not yet dived into the world's deceit:
No more can you distinguish of a man,
Than of his outward show; which, God he knows,
Seldom, or never, jumpeth with the heart.
Those uncles, which you want, were dangerous;
Your grace attended to the sugar'd words,
But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:
God keep you from them, and from such false friends!

*Prince.* God keep me from false friends! but they were none.

*Glo.* My lord, the mayor of London comes to greet you.

*Enter the* LORD MAYOR, *and his Train.*

*May.* God bless your grace with health and happy days!

*Prince.* I thank you, good my lord;—and thank you all.—
[*Exeunt* MAYOR, *&c.*

* *Camera Regis.*

I thought my mother, and my brother York,
Would long ere this have met us on the way:
Fie, what a slug is Hastings! that he comes not
To tell us, whether they will come, or no.

*Enter* HASTINGS.

*Buck.* And in good time, here comes the sweating lord.
*Prince.* Welcome, my lord: What, will our mother come?
*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, not I,
The queen your mother, and your brother York,
Have taken sanctuary: The tender prince
Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,
But by his mother was perforce withheld.
*Buck.* Fie! what an indirect and peevish course
Is this of hers?—Lord Cardinal, will your grace
Persuade the queen to send the duke of York
Unto his princely brother presently?
If she deny,—lord Hastings, go with him,
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.
*Card.* My lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory
Can from his mother win the duke of York,
Anon expect him here: But if she be obdurate
To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid
We should infringe the holy privilege
Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land,
Would I be guilty of so deep a sin.
*Buck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,
Too ceremonious, and traditional:*
Weigh it but with the grossness of this age,
You break not sanctuary in seizing him.
The benefit thereof is always granted
To those whose dealings have deserved the place,
And those who have the wit to claim the place:
This prince hath neither claim'd it, nor deserved it;
And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it:
Then, taking him from thence, that is not there,
You break no privilege nor charter there.
Oft have I heard of sanctuary men;
But sanctuary children, ne'er till now.
*Card.* My lord, you shall o'errule my mind for once.—
Come on, lord Hastings, will you go with me?
*Hast.* I go, my lord.
*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.
[*Exeunt* CARDINAL *and* HASTINGS.
Say, uncle Gloster, if our brother come,
Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?
*Glo.* Where it seems best unto your royal self.
If I may counsel you, some day, or two,
Your highness shall repose you at the Tower:
Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit
For your best health and recreation.

* Too observant of forms and traditions.

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any place:—
Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord?
*Glo.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place;
Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.
*Prince.* Is it upon record? or else reported
Successively from age to age he built it?
*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.
*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not register'd;
Methinks, the truth should live from age to age,
As 'twere retail'd to all posterity,
Even to the general all-ending day.
*Glo.* So wise so young, they say, do ne'er live long. [*Aside*
*Prince.* What say you, uncle?
*Glo.* I say, without characters, fame lives long.
Thus, like the formal* vice, Iniquity, } *Aside.*
I moralize two meanings in one word. }
*Prince.* That Julius Cæsar was a famous man;
With what his valour did enrich his wit,
His wit set down to make his valour live:
Death makes no conquest of this conqueror;
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.—
I tell you what, my cousin Buckingham.—
*Buck.* What, my gracious lord?
*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man,
I'll win our ancient right in France again,
Or die a soldier, as I lived a king.
*Glo.* Short summers lightly† have a forward spring. [*Aside.*

*Enter* YORK, HASTINGS, *and the* CARDINAL.

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the duke of York.
*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?
*York.* Well, my dread lord; so must I call you now.
*Prince.* Ay, brother; to our grief, as it is yours:
Too late‡ he died, that might have kept that title,
Which by his death hath lost much majesty.
*Glo.* How fares our cousin, noble lord of York?
*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my lord,
You said, that idle weeds are fast in growth:
The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.
*Glo.* He hath, my lord.
*York.* And therefore is he idle?
*Glo.* O, my fair cousin, I must not say so.
*York.* Then is he more beholden to you, than I.
*Glo.* He may command me, as my sovereign:
But you have power in me, as in a kinsman.
*York.* I pray you, uncle, then, give me this dagger.
*Glo.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.
*Prince.* A beggar, brother?
*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will give;
And, being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

* The buffoon in old plays. † Commonly. ‡ Lately.

*Glo.* A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin.
*York.* A greater gift! O, that's the sword to it?
*Glo.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.
*York.* O then, I see, you'll part but with light gifts;
In weightier things you'll say a beggar, nay.
*Glo.* It is too weighty for your grace to wear.
*York.* I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.
*Glo.* What, would you have my weapon, little lord?
*York.* I would, that I might thank you as you call me.
*Glo.* How?
*York.* Little.
*Prince.* My lord of York will still be cross in talk;—
Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.
*York.* You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me:—
Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me;
Because that I am little, like an ape,
He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.
*Buck.* With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons!
To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,
He prettily and aptly taunts himself:
So cunning, and so young, is wonderful.
*Glo.* My gracious lord, will't please you pass along?
Myself, and my good cousin Buckingham,
Will to your mother; to entreat of her,
To meet you at the Tower, and welcome you.
*York.* What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord?
*Prince.* My lord protector needs will have it so.
*York.* I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.
*Glo.* Why, sir, what should you fear?
*York.* Marry, my uncle Clarence' angry ghost;
My grandam told me, he was murder'd there,
*Prince.* I fear no uncles dead.
*Glo.* Nor none that live, I hope.
*Prince.* An if they live, I hope, I need not fear.
But come, my lord, and, with a heavy heart,
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[*Exeunt* PRINCE, YORK, HASTINGS, CARDINAL, *and Attendants.*

*Buck.* Think you, my lord, this little prating York
Was not incensed* by his subtle mother,
To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?
*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt: O, 'tis a parlous boy;
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable;†
He's all the mother's, from the top to toe.
*Buck.* Well, let them rest.—
Come hither, gentle Catesby; thou art sworn
As deeply to effect what we intend,
As closely to conceal what we impart:
Thou know'st our reasons urged upon the way;—
What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter

* Incited. † Intelligent.

To make William lord Hastings of our mind,
For the instalment of this noble duke
In the seat royal of this famous isle?
*Cate.* He for his father's sake so loves the prince,
That he will not be won to aught against him.
*Buck.* What think'st thou then of Stanley? will not he?
*Cate.* He will do all in all as Hastings doth.
*Buck.* Well then, no more but this: Go, gentle Catesby,
And, as it were far off, sound thou lord Hastings,
How he doth stand affected to our purpose;
And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,
To sit about the coronation.
If thou dost find him tractable to us,
Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons:
If he be leaden, icy, cold, unwilling,
Be thou so too, and so break off the talk,
And give us notice of his inclination:
For we to-morrow hold divided* councils,
Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd.
*Glo.* Commend me to lord William: tell him, Catesby,
His dangerous knot of adversaries
To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret Castle;
And bid my friend, for joy of this good news,
Give mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.
*Buck.* Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.
*Cate.* My good lords both, with all the heed I can.
*Glo.* Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep?
*Cate.* You shall, my lord.
*Glo.* At Crosby-place, there shall you find us both.
[*Exit* CATESBY.
*Buck.* Now, my lord, what shall we, if we perceive
Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?
*Glo.* Chop off his head, man;—somewhat we will do:—
And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me
The earldom of Hereford, and all the moveables
Whereof the king my brother was possess'd.
*Buck.* I'll claim that promise at your grace's hand.
*Glo.* And look to have it yielded with all kindness.
Come, let us sup betimes; that afterwards
We may digest our complots in some form. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—Before Lord* HASTINGS' *House.*

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord, my lord,— [*Knocking.*
Hast. [*within*]. Who knocks?
*Mess.* One from lord Stanley.
Hast. [*within*]. What is't o'clock?
*Mess.* Upon the stroke of four.

* Separate.

*Enter* HASTINGS.

*Hast.* Cannot thy master sleep these tedious nights?
*Mess.* So it should seem by that I have to say.
First, he commends him to your noble lordship.
*Hast.* And then,—
*Mess.* And then he sends you word, he dreamt
To-night the boar had rased off his helm:
Besides, he says, there are two councils held;
And that may be determined at the one,
Which may make you and him to rue at the other.
Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure,—
If presently, you will take horse with him,
And with all speed post with him toward the north,
To shun the danger that his soul divines.
*Hast.* Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord;
Bid him not fear the separated councils:
His honour, and myself, are at the one;
And, at the other, is my good friend Catesby;
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us,
Whereof I shall not have intelligence.
Tell him his fears are shallow, wanting instance:*
And for his dreams—I wonder, he's so fond†
To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers:
To fly the boar, before the boar pursues,
Were to incense the boar to follow us,
And make pursuit, where he did mean no chase.
Go, bid thy master rise and come to me;
And we will both together to the Tower,
Where, he shall see, the boar‡ will use us kindly.
*Mess.* I'll go, my lord, and tell him what you say. [*Exit.*

*Enter* CATESBY.

*Cate.* Many good morrows to my noble lord!
*Hast.* Good morrow, Catesby; you are early stirring:
What news, what news, in this our tottering state?
*Cate.* It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord;
And, I believe, will never stand upright,
Till Richard wear the garland of the realm.
*Hast.* How! wear the garland? dost thou mean the crown?
*Cate.* Ay, my good lord.
*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders,
Before I'll see the crown so foul misplaced.
But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?
*Cate.* Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you forward
Upon his party, for the gain thereof:
And, thereupon, he sends you this good news,—
That, this same very day, your enemies,
The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.
*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,

* Example. † Weak.
‡ *I. e.* Gloster, who had a boar for his cognizance.

Because they have been still my adversaries:
But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side
To bar my master's heirs in true descent,
God knows, I will not do it, to the death.
*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious mind!
*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelvemonth hence,
That they who brought me in my master's hate,
I live to look upon their tragedy.
Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older,
I'll send some packing, that yet think not on't.
*Cate.* 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,
When men are unprepared, and look not for it.
*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out
With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey: and so 'twill do
With some men else, who think themselves as safe
As thou, and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear
To princely Richard, and to Buckingham.
*Cate.* The princes both make high account of you,—
For they account his head upon the bridge. [*Aside.*
*Hast.* I know, they do; and I have well deserved it.

*Enter* STANLEY.

Come on, come on, where is your boar-spear, man?
Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided?
*Stan.* My lord, good morrow; and, good morrow, Catesby:—
You may jest on, but by the holy rood,
I do not like these several councils, I.
*Hast.* My lord, I hold my life as dear as yours;
And never, in my life, I do protest,
Was it more precious to me than 'tis now:
Think you, but that I know our state secure,
I would be so triumphant as I am?
*Stan.* The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from London,
Were jocund, and supposed their states were sure,
And they, indeed, had no cause to mistrust;
But yet, you see, how soon the day o'er-cast.
This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt;
Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward!
What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent.
*Hast.* Come, come, have with you.—Wot* you what, my lord?
To-day, the lords you talk of are beheaded.
*Stan.* They, for their truth, might better wear their heads,
Than some, that have accused them, wear their hats.
But come, my lord, let's away.

*Enter a* PURSUIVANT.

*Hast.* Go on before, I'll talk with this good fellow.
[*Exeunt* STANLEY *and* CATESBY.
How now, sirrah? how goes the world with thee?
*Purs.* The better, that your lordship please to ask.

* Know.

*Hast.* I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me now,
Than when thou met'st me last where now we meet;
Then I was going prisoner to the Tower,
By the suggestion of the queen's allies;
But now I tell thee (keep it to thyself),
This day those enemies are put to death,
And I in better state than ere I was.
*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good content!
*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow: There, drink that for me.
[*Throwing him his purse.*
*Purs.* I thank your honour. [*Exit* PURSUIVANT.

*Enter a* PRIEST.

*Pr.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour.
*Hast.* I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart.
I am in your debt for your last exercise;
Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM.

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain?
Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest;
Your honour hath no shriving* work in hand.
*Hast.* 'Good faith, and when I met this holy man,
The men you talk of came into my mind.
What, go you toward the Tower?
*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I cannot stay there:
I shall return before your lordship thence.
*Hast.* Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.
*Buck.* And supper too, although thou know'st it not. [*Aside.*
Come, will you go?
*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—Pomfret. Before the Castle.*

*Enter* RATCLIFF, *with a guard, conducting* RIVERS, GREY, *and* VAUGHAN, *to Execution.*

*Rat.* Come, bring forth the prisoners.
*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this,—
To-day shalt thou behold a subject die,
For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.
*Grey.* God keep the prince from all the pack of you!
A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.
*Vaugh.* You live, that shall cry woe for this hereafter.
*Rat.* Despatch; the limit of your lives is out.
*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody prison.
Fatal and ominous to noble peers!
Within the guilty closure of thy walls,
Richard the second here was hack'd to death:

* Confession.

And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,
We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink.
*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon our heads,
When she exclaim'd on Hastings, you and I,
For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son.
*Riv.* Then cursed she Hastings, then cursed she Buckingham,
Then cursed she Richard :—O, remember, God,
To hear her prayers for them, as now for us!
And for my sister, and her princely sons,—
Be satisfied, dear God, with our true bloods,
Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spilt!
*Rat.* Make haste, the hour of death is expiate.*
*Riv.* Come, Grey,—come, Vaughan,—let us here embrace:
Farewell, until we meet again in heaven. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—London. A Room in the Tower.*

BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, *the Bishop of* ELY, CATESBY, LOVEL, *and others, sitting at a table: Officers of the Council attending.*

*Hast.* Now, noble peers, the cause why we are met
Is—to determine of the coronation:
In God's name, speak, when is the royal day?
*Buck.* Are all things ready for that royal time?
*Stan.* They are; and wants but nomination.†
*Ely.* To-morrow then I judge a happy day.
*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?
Who is most inward‡ with the noble duke?
*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his mind.
*Buck.* We know each other's faces: for our hearts,—
He knows no more of mine, than I of yours;
Nor I, of his, my lord, than you of mine:—
Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.
*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;
But, for his purpose in the coronation,
I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd
His gracious pleasure any way therein:
But you, my noble lord, may name the time;
And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,
Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part.

*Enter* GLOSTER.

*Ely.* In happy time here comes the duke himself.
*Glo.* My noble lords and cousins, all, good morrow:
I have been long a sleeper; but, I trust,
My absence doth neglect no great design,
Which by my presence might have been concluded.
*Buck.* Had you not come upon your cue,§ my lord,

* Completed.
† Naming the day.
‡ Intimate.
§ In the nick of time.

William lord Hastings had pronounced your part,—
I mean your voice,—for crowning of the king.
*Glo.* Than my lord Hastings no man might be bolder;
His lordship knows me well, and loves me well.—
My lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn,
I saw good strawberries in your garden there;
I do beseech you send for some of them.
*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. [*Exit* ELY.
*Glo.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you.
[*Takes him aside.*
Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business;
And finds the testy gentleman so hot,
That he will lose his head, ere give consent,
His master's child, as worshipfully he terms it,
Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.
*Buck.* Withdraw yourself awhile, I'll go with you.
[*Exeunt* GLOSTER *and* BUCKINGHAM.
*Stan.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph.
To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden;
For I myself am not so well provided,
As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

*Re-enter Bishop of* ELY.

*Ely.* Where is my lord protector? I have sent for these strawberries.
*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth this morning;
There's some conceit* or other likes him well,
When he doth bid good morrow with such spirit.
I think, there's ne'er a man in Christendom,
Can lesser hide his love, or hate, than he;
For by his face straight shall ye know his heart.
*Stan.* What of his heart perceive you in his face,
By any likelihood he show'd to-day?
*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended;
For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

*Re-enter* GLOSTER *and* BUCKINGHAM.

*Glo.* I pray you all, tell me what they deserve,
That do conspire my death with devilish plots,
Of damned witchcraft; and that have prevail'd
Upon my body with their hellish charms?
*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,
Makes me most forward in this noble presence
To doom the offenders: Whosoe'er they be,
I say, my lord, they have deserved death.
*Glo.* Then be your eyes the witness of their evil,
Look how I am bewitch'd; behold mine arm
Is, like a blasted sapling, wither'd up:
And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,

* Thought.

Consorted with that harlot strumpet Shore,
That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.
*Hast.* If they have done this deed, my noble lord,——
*Glo.* If! thou protector of this damned strumpet,
Talk'st thou to me of ifs?—Thou art a traitor:—
Off with his head:—now, by Saint Paul I swear,
I will not dine until I see the same.—
Lovel, and Catesby, look that it be done;
The rest that love me, rise, and follow me.
[*Exeunt Council, with* GLOSTER *and* BUCKINGHAM.
*Hast.* Woe, woe, for England! not a whit for me;
For I, too fond, might have prevented this:
Stanley did dream, the boar did rase his helm;
But I disdain'd it, and did scorn to fly.
Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,
And startled, when he look'd upon the Tower,
As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.
O, now I want the priest that spake to me:
I now repent I told the pursuivant,
As, too triumphing, how mine enemies,
To-day at Pomfret bloodily were butcher'd,
And I myself secure in grace and favour.
O, Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse
Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head.
*Cate.* Despatch, my lord, the duke would be at dinner;
Make a short shrift, he longs to see your head.
*Hast.* O momentary grace of mortal men,
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!
Who builds his hope in air of your fair looks,
Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast,
Ready, with every nod, to tumble down
Into the fatal bowels of the deep.
*Lov.* Come, come, despatch; 'tis bootless to exclaim.
*Hast.* O, bloody Richard!—miserable England!
I prophesy the fearful'st time to thee,
That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.—
Come, lead me to the block, bear him my head;
They smile at me, who shortly shall be dead. [*Exeunt.*

### *SCENE V.—The same. The Tower-walls.*

*Enter* GLOSTER *and* BUCKINGHAM, *in rusty armour, marvellous ill-favoured.*

*Glo.* Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour?
Murder thy breath in middle of a word,—
And then again begin, and stop again,
As if thou wert distraught, and mad with terror?
*Buck.* Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian;
Speak, and look back, and pry on every side,
Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,

Intending* deep suspicion: ghastly looks
Are at my service, like enforced smiles;
And both are ready in their offices,
At any time, to grace my stratagems.
But what, is Catesby gone?
*Glo.* He is; and, see, he brings the mayor along.

*Enter the* LORD MAYOR *and* CATESBY.

*Buck.* Let me alone to entertain him.—Lord mayor,——
*Glo.* Look to the draw-bridge there.
*Buck.* Hark, hark! a drum.
*Glo.* Catesby, o'erlook the walls.
*Buck.* Lord mayor, the reason we have sent for you,——
*Glo.* Look back, defend thee, here are enemies.
*Buck.* God and our innocence defend and guard us!

*Enter* LOVEL *and* RATCLIFF, *with* HASTINGS' *head.*

*Glo.* Be patient, they are friends; Ratcliff, and Lovel.
*Lov.* Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,
The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.
*Glo.* So dear I loved the man, that I must weep.
I took him for the plainest harmless't creature,
That breathed upon the earth a Christian;
Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded
The history of all her secret thoughts:
So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue,
That, his apparent open guilt omitted,—
I mean, his conversation† with Shore's wife,—
He lived from all attainder of suspect.
*Buck.* Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd traitor
That ever lived.—Look you, my lord mayor,
Would you imagine, or almost believe
(Were't not, that by great preservation
We live to tell it you), the subtle traitor
This day had plotted in the council-house,
To murder me, and my good lord of Gloster?
*May.* What! had he so?
*Glo.* What! think you we are Turks, or infidels?
Or that we would, against the form of law,
Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death;
But that the extreme peril of the case,
The peace of England, and our persons' safety,
Enforced us to this execution?
*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserved his death;
And your good graces both have well proceeded,
To warn false traitors from the like attempts.
I never look'd for better at his hands,
After he once fell in with mistress Shore.
*Buck.* Yet had we not determined he should die,
Until your lordship came to see his end;

* Pretending. † Familiar intercourse.

Which now the loving haste of these our friends,
Somewhat against our meaning, hath prevented:
Because, my lord, we would have had you heard
The traitor speak, and timorously confess
The manner and the purpose of his treasons;
That you might well have signified the same
Unto the citizens, who, haply, may
Misconstrue us in him, and wail his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's word shall serve,
As well as I had seen, and heard him speak:
And do not doubt, right noble princes both,
But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens
With all your just proceedings in this case.

*Glo.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,
To avoid the censures of the carping world.

*Buck.* But since you came too late of our intent,
Yet witness what you hear we did intend:
And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell.

[*Exit* LORD MAYOR.

*Glo.* Go after, after, cousin Buckingham.
The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all post:—
There, at your meetest vantage of the time,
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children:
Tell them, how Edward put to death a citizen,
Only for saying—he would make his son
Heir to the crown; meaning, indeed his house,
Which, by the sign thereof, was termed so.
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,
And bestial appetite in change of lust;
Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters, wives,
Even where his raging eye, or savage heart,
Without control, listed to make his prey.
Nay, for a need, thus far come near my person:—
Tell them, when that my mother went with child
Of that insatiate Edward, noble York,
My princely father, then had wars in France;
And, by just computation of the time,
Found, that the issue was not his begot;
Which well appear'd in his lineaments,
Being nothing like the noble duke my father:
Yet touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off;
Because, my lord, you know, my mother lives.

*Buck.* Doubt not, my lord; I'll play the orator,
As if the golden fee, for which I plead,
Were for myself: and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glo.* If you thrive well, bring them to Baynard's castle;
Where you shall find me well accompanied,
With reverend fathers, and well-learned bishops.

*Buck.* I go; and, towards three or four o'clock,
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords.

[*Exit* BUCKINGHAM.

*Glo.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to doctor Shaw,—

Go thou [*to* CATESBY] to friar Penker;—bid them both
Meet me, within this hour, at Baynard's castle.
[*Exeunt* LOVEL *and* CATESBY.
Now will I in, to take some privy order
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight,
And to give notice, that no manner of person
Have, any time, recourse unto the princes. [*Exit.*

## *SCENE VI.—A Street.*

*Enter a* SCRIVENER.

*Scriv.* Here is the indictment of the good lord Hastings;
Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.
And mark how well the sequel hangs together:
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me;
The precedent* was full as long adoing:
And yet within these five hours Hastings lived
Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.
Here's a good world the while!—Who is so gross,
That cannot see this palpable device?
Yet who so bold, but says—he sees it not?
Bad is the world; and all will come to nought,
When such bad dealing must be seen in thought.† [*Exit.*

## *SCENE VII.—The same. Court of Baynard's Castle.*

*Enter* GLOSTER *and* BUCKINGHAM, *meeting.*

*Glo.* How now, how now? what say the citizens?
*Buck.* Now by the holy mother of our Lord,
The citizens are mum, say not a word.
*Glo.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's children?
*Buck.* I did; with his contract with Lady Lucy,
And his contract by deputy in France:
The insatiate greediness of his desires,
And his enforcement of the city wives;
His tyranny for trifles; his own bastardy,—
As being got, your father then in France;
And his resemblance, being not like the duke.
Withal, I did infer your lineaments,
Being the right idea of your father,
Both in your form and nobleness of mind:
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,
Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility;
Indeed, left nothing, fitting for your purpose,
Untouch'd, or slightly handled, in discourse.

* Original draft. † In silence.

And, when my oratory grew to an end,
I bade them, that did love their country's good,
Cry—*God save Richard, England's royal king!*
*Glo.* And did they so?
*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not a word;
But, like dumb statues, or breathless stones,
Stared on each other, and look'd deadly pale.
Which when I saw, I reprehended them;
And ask'd the mayor, what meant this wilful silence:
His answer was,—the people were not used
To be spoke to, but by the recorder.
Then he was urged to tell my tale again:
*Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke inferr'd;*
But nothing spoke in warrant from himself.
When he had done, some followers of mine own,
At lower end o' the hall, hurl'd up their caps,
And some ten voices cried, *God save king Richard!*
And thus I took the vantage of the few,—
*Thanks, gentle citizens and friends,* quoth I;
*This general applause, and cheerful shout,*
*Argues your wisdom, and your love to Richard:*
And even here broke off and came away.
*Glo.* What tongueless blocks were they; Would they not speak?
Will not the mayor then, and his brethren come?
*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand; intend* some fear;
Be not you spoke with, but by mighty suit;
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,
And stand between two churchmen, good my lord;
For on that ground I'll make a holy descant:
And be not easily won to our requests;
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and take it.
*Glo.* I go; And if you plead as well for them,
As I can say nay to thee for myself,
No doubt we'll bring it to a happy issue.
*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads; the lord mayor knocks.
[*Exit* GLOSTER.

*Enter the* LORD MAYOR, *Aldermen, and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord; I dance attendance here;
I think, the duke will not be spoke withal.

*Enter, from the Castle,* CATESBY.

Now, Catesby! what says your lord to my request?
*Cate.* He doth entreat your grace, my noble lord,
To visit him to-morrow, or next day:
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,
Divinely bent to meditation;
And in no worldly suit would he be moved,
To draw him from his holy exercise.

* Pretend.

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to the gracious duke;
Tell him, myself, the mayor, and aldermen,
In deep designs, in matter of great moment,
No less importing than our general good,
Are come to have some conference with his grace.
*Cate.* I'll signify so much unto him straight. [*Exit.*
*Buck.* Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an Edward!
He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed,*
But on his knees at meditation;
Not dallying with a brace of courtezans,
But meditating with two deep divines;
Not sleeping, to engross† his idle body,
But praying, to enrich his watchful soul:
Happy were England, would this virtuous prince
Take on himself the sovereignty thereof:
But, sure, I fear, we shall ne'er win him to it.
*May.* Marry, God defend, his grace should say us nay!
*Buck.* I fear, he will: Here Catesby comes again;—

*Re-enter* CATESBY.

Now, Catesby, what says his grace?
*Cate.* He wonders to what end you have assembled
Such troops of citizens to come to him,
His grace not being warn'd thereof before:
He fears, my lord, you mean no good to him.
*Buck.* Sorry I am, my noble cousin should
Suspect me, that I mean no good to him:
By heaven, we come to him in perfect love;
And so once more return and tell his grace. [*Exit* CATESBY.
When holy and devout religious men
Are at their beads, 'tis hard to draw them thence;
So sweet is zealous contemplation.

*Enter* GLOSTER, *in a Gallery above, between two Bishops.* CATESBY *returns.*

*May.* See, where his grace stands 'tween two clergymen!
*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,
To stay him from the fall of vanity:
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand;
True ornaments to know a holy man.—
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,
Lend favourable ear to our requests;
And pardon us the interruption
Of thy devotion, and right-Christian zeal.
*Glo.* My lord, there needs no such apology;
I rather do beseech you pardon me,
Who, earnest in the service of my God,
Neglect the visitation of my friends.
But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?
*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above,
And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

* A couch. † Fatten.

*Glo.* I do suspect, I have done some offence,
That seems disgracious in the city's eye;
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.
*Buck.* You have, my lord; Would it might please your grace,
On our entreaties to amend your fault!
*Glo.* Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land?
*Buck.* Know, then, it is your fault, that you resign
The supreme seat, the throne majestical,
The sceptred office of your ancestors,
Your state of fortune, and your due of birth,
The lineal glory of your royal house,
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock:
Whilst, in the mildness of your sleepy thoughts
(Which here we waken to our country's good),
The noble isle doth want her proper limbs;
Her face defaced with scars of infamy,
Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,
And almost shoulder'd* in the swallowing gulf
Of dark forgetfulness and deep oblivion.
Which to recure,† we heartily solicit
Your gracious self to take on you the charge
And kingly government of this your land:
Not as protector, steward, substitute,
Or lowly factor for another's gain;
But as successively from blood to blood,
Your right of birth, your empery,‡ your own.
For this, consorted with the citizens,
Your very worshipful and loving friends,
And by their vehement instigation,
In this just suit come I to move your grace.
*Glo.* I cannot tell, if to depart in silence,
Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,
Best fitteth my degree, or your condition:
If not to answer,—you might haply think,
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded
To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,
Which fondly you would here impose on me;
If to reprove you for this suit of yours,
So season'd with your faithful love to me,
Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends.
Therefore,—to speak, and to avoid the first;
And, then in speaking, not to incur the last,—
Definitively thus I answer you.
Your love deserves my thanks; but my desert
Unmeritable, shuns your high request.
First, if all obstacles were cut away,
And that my path were even to the crown,
As the ripe revenue and due of birth;
Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,
So mighty, and so many, my defects,
That I would rather hide me from my greatness,—

* Thrust into. † Recover. ‡ Empire.

Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,—
Than in my greatness covet to be hid,
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd.
But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me;
(And much I need* to help you, if need were);
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,
Will well become the seat of majesty,
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.
On him I lay what you would lay on me,
The right and fortune of his happy stars,—
Which, God defend, that I should wring from him!

*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in your grace;
But the respects thereof are nice† and trivial,
All circumstances well considered.
You say, that Edward is your brother's son;
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife:
For first he was contract to lady Lucy,
Your mother lives a witness to his vow;
And afterwards by substitute betrothed
To Bona, sister to the king of France.
These both put by, a poor petitioner,
A care-crazed mother to a many sons,
A beauty-waning and distressed widow,
Even in the afternoon of her best days,
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,
Seduced the pitch and height of all his thoughts
To base declension and loath'd bigamy:
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got
This Edward, whom our manners call—the prince.
More bitterly could I expostulate,
Save that, for reverence to some alive,
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self
This proffer'd benefit of dignity:
If not to bless us and the land withal,
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry
From the corruption of abusing time,
Unto a lineal true-derived course.

*May.* Do, good my lord; your citizens entreat you.

*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

*Cate.* O, make them joyful, grant their lawful suit.

*Glo.* Alas, why would you heap those cares on me?
I am unfit for state and majesty:—
I do beseech you, take it not amiss;
I cannot, nor I will not, yield to you.

*Buck.* If you refuse it,—as in love and zeal,
Loath to depose the child, your brother's son;
As well we know your tenderness of heart,
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse,‡
Which we have noted in you to your kindred,

* Want ability. † Minute. ‡ Pity.

And equally, indeed, to all estates,—
Yet know, whe'r you accept our suit or no,
Your brother's son shall never reign our king;
But we will plant some other in your throne,
To the disgrace and downfal of your house.
And, in this resolution, here we leave you;
Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.
[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM *and Citizens.*

*Cate.* Call them again, sweet prince, accept their suit;
If you deny them, all the land will rue it.
*Glo.* Will you enforce me to a world of cares?
Well, call them again; I am not made of stone,
But penetrable to your kind entreaties, [*Exit* CATESBY.
Albeit against my conscience and my soul.—

*Re-enter* BUCKINGHAM *and the rest.*

Cousin of Buckingham,—and sage, grave men,—
Since you will buckle fortune on my back,
To bear her burden, whe'r I will, or no,
I must have patience to endure the load:
But if black scandal, or foul-faced reproach,
Attend the sequel of your imposition,
Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me
From all the impure blots and stains thereof;
For God he knows, and you may partly see,
How far I am from the desire of this.
*May.* God bless your grace! we see it, and will say it.
*Glo.* In saying so, you shall but say the truth.
*Buck.* Then I salute you with this royal title,—
Long live king Richard, England's worthy king!
*All.* Amen!
*Buck.* To-morrow may it please you to be crown'd?
*Glo.* Even when you please, since you will have it so.
*Buck.* To-morrow then we will attend your grace;
And so, most joyfully we take our leave.
*Glo.* Come, let us to our holy work again:— [*To the bishops.*
Farewell, good cousin;—farewell, gentle friends. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT IV.

### *SCENE I.—Before the Tower.*

*Enter on one side,* QUEEN ELIZABETH, *Duchess of* YORK, *and Marquis of* DORSET; *on the other,* ANNE, *Duchess of* GLOSTER, *leading* LADY MARGARET PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE'S *young daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here?—my niece Plantagenet,
Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloster?

Now, for my life, she's wand'ring to the Tower,
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender prince.—
Daughter, well met.
*Anne.* God give your graces both
A happy and a joyful time of day!
*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister! Whither away?
*Anne.* No further than the Tower; and, as I guess,
Upon the like devotion as yourselves,
To gratulate the gentle princes there.
*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks; we'll enter all together:

*Enter* BRAKENBURY.

And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes.—
Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,
How doth the prince, and my young son of York?
*Brak.* Right well, dear madam: By your patience,
I may not suffer you to visit them;
The king hath strictly charged the contrary.
*Q. Eliz.* The king! who's that?
*Brak.* I mean, the lord protector.
*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that kingly title!
Hath he set bounds between their love and me?
I am their mother, who shall bar me from them?
*Duch.* I am their father's mother, I will see them.
*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:
Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame,
And take thy office from thee, on thy peril.
*Brak.* No, madam, no, I may not leave it so;
I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me.
[*Exit* BRAKENBURY.

*Enter* STANLEY.

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,
And I'll salute your grace of York as mother,
And reverend looker-on of two fair queens.—
Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster.
[*To the Duchess of* GLOSTER.
There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.
*Q. Eliz.* Ah, cut my lace asunder!
That my pent heart may have some scope to beat,
Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news.
*Anne.* Despiteful tidings! O unpleasing news!
*Dor.* Be of good cheer;—Mother, how fares your grace?
*Q. Eliz.* O Dorset, speak not to me, get thee gone,
Death and destruction dog thee at the heels;
Thy mother's name is ominous to children:
If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas,
And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell.
Go, hie thee, hie thee, from this slaughter-house,
Lest thou increase the number of the dead;
And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse,—
Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam:—
Take all the swift advantage of the hours;
You shall have letters from me to my son
In your behalf, to meet you on the way:
Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.
*Duch.* O ill dispersing wind of misery!—
O my accursed womb, the bed of death;
A cockatrice* hast thou hatch'd to the world,
Whose unavoided eye is murderous!
*Stan.* Come, madam, come; I in all haste was sent.
*Anne.* And I with all unwillingness will go.—
O, would to God, that the inclusive verge
Of golden metal,† that must round my brow,
Were red-hot steel, to sear me to the brain!
Anointed let me be with deadly venom;
And die, ere men can say—God save the queen!
*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;
To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm.
*Anne.* No! why?—When he, that is my husband now,
Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse;
When scarce the blood was well wash'd from his hands,
Which issued from my other angel husband,
And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd;
O, when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,
This was my wish,—*Be thou,* quoth I, *accursed,*
*For making me, so young, so old a widow!*
*And, when thou wed'st, let sorrow haunt thy bed;*
*And be thy wife* (*if any be so mad*)
*More miserable by the life of thee,*
*Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's death.*
Lo, ere I can repeat this curse again,
Even in so short a space, my woman's heart
Grossly grew captive to his honey words,
And proved the subject of mine own soul's curse:
Which ever since hath held mine eyes from rest;
For never yet one hour in his bed
Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,
But with his timorous dreams was still awaked.
Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick;
And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.
*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu; I pity thy complaining.
*Anne.* No more than with my soul I mourn for yours.
*Dor.* Farewell, thou woeful welcomer of glory!
*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy leave of it!
*Duch.* Go thou to Richmond, and good fortune guide thee!
[*To* DORSET.
Go thou to Richard, and good angels tend thee!— [*To* ANNE.
Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee!
[*To* QUEEN ELIZABETH.
I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me.

* A serpent supposed to originate from a cock's egg.
† The crown.

Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,
And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen.*
*Q. Eliz.* Stay yet; look back, with me unto the Tower.—
Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes,
Whom envy hath immured within your walls!
Rough cradle for such little pretty ones!
Rude ragged nurse! old sullen play-fellow
For tender princes, use my babies well!
So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—A Room of State in the Palace.*

*Flourish of Trumpets.* RICHARD, *as King upon his Throne;* BUCKINGHAM, CATESBY, *a* PAGE, *and others.*

*K. Rich.* Stand all apart. Cousin of Buckingham,——
*Buck.* My gracious sovereign.
*K. Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by thy advice,
And thy assistance, is king Richard seated:—
But shall we wear these glories for a day?
Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?
*Buck.* Still live they, and for ever let them last!
*K. Rich.* Ah, Buckingham, now do I play the touch,†
To try if thou be current gold, indeed:—
Young Edward lives;—Think now what I would speak.
*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord.
*K. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.
*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice-renowned liege.
*K. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'Tis so: but Edward lives.
*Buck.* True, noble prince.
*K. Rich.* O bitter consequence,
That Edward still should live,—true, noble prince!—
Cousin, thou wast not wont to be so dull:—
Shall I be plain? I wish the bastards dead:
And I would have it suddenly perform'd.
What say'st thou now! speak suddenly, be brief.
*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.
*K. Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kindness freezes:
Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?
*Buck.* Give me some breath, some little pause, dear lord,
Before I positively speak in this:
I will resolve your grace immediately. [*Exit* BUCKINGHAM.
*Cate.* The king is angry; see he gnaws his lip. [*Aside.*
*K. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted fools,
[*Descends from his throne.*
And unrespective‡ boys: none are for me,
That look into me with considerate eyes;—
High-reaching Buckingham grows circumspect.—
Boy,——
*Page.* My lord.

* Sorrow. † Touchstone. ‡ Inconsiderate.

*K. Rich.* Know'st thou not any, whom corrupting gold
Would tempt unto a close exploit* of death?
*Page.* I know a discontented gentleman,
Whose humble means match not his haughty mind:
Gold were as good as twenty orators,
And will, no doubt, tempt him to anything.
*K. Rich.* What is his name?
*Page.* His name, my lord, is—Tyrrel.
*K. Rich.* I partly know the man; Go, call him hither, boy.—
[*Exit* PAGE.

The deep-revolving witty † Buckingham
No more shall be the neighbour to my counsels:
Hath he so long held out with me untired
And stops he now for breath?—well, be it so.—

*Enter* STANLEY.

How now, lord Stanley? what's the news?
*Stan.* Know, my loving lord,
The marquis Dorset, as I hear, is fled
To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.
*K. Rich.* Come hither, Catesby: rumour it abroad,
That Anne, my wife, is very grievous sick;
I will take order for her keeping close.
Inquire me out some mean-born gentleman,
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence's daughter:—
The boy is foolish, and I fear not him.—
Look, how thou dream'st!—I say again, give out,
That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die:
About it; for it stands me much ‡ upon,
To stop all hopes, whose growth may damage me.—
[*Exit* CATESBY.

I must be married to my brother's daughter,
Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass:—
Murder her brothers, and then marry her!
Uncertain way of gain! but I am in
So far in blood, that sin will pluck on sin.
Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.—

*Re-enter* PAGE, *with* TYRREL.

Is thy name—Tyrrel?
*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.
*K. Rich.* Art thou, indeed?
*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious lord.
*K. Rich.* Dar'st thou resolve to kill a friend of mine?
*Tyr.* Please you; but I had rather kill two enemies.
*K. Rich.* Why, then thou hast it; two deep enemies,
Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep's disturbers,
Are they that I would have thee deal upon:
Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

* Secret act. † Cunning.
‡ Is of the utmost consequence.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to them,
And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.
*K. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark, come hither, Tyrrel;
Go, by this token:—Rise, and lend thine ear: [*Whispers.*
There is no more but so:—Say, it is done,
And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it.
*Tyr.* I will despatch it straight. [*Exit.*

*Re-enter* BUCKINGHAM.

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind
The late demand that you did sound me in.
*K. Rich.* Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled to Richmond.
*Buck.* I hear the news, my lord.
*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son:—Well, look to it.
*Buck.* My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promise,
For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;
The earldom of Hereford, and the moveables,
Which you have promised I shall possess.
*K. Rich.* Stanley, look to your wife; if she convey
Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.
*Buck.* What says your highness to my just request?
*K. Rich.* I do remember me,—Henry the sixth
Did prophesy, that Richmond should be king,
When Richmond was a little peevish * boy.
A king!—perhaps——
*Buck.* My lord,——
*K. Rich.* How chance, the prophet could not at that time,
Have told me, I being by, that I should kill him?
*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earldom,—
*K. Rich.* Richmond!—When last I was at Exeter,
The mayor, in courtesy, show'd me the castle,
And call'd it—Rouge-mont: at which name, I started;
Because a bard of Ireland told me once,
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.
*Buck.* My lord,——
*K. Rich.* Ay, what's o'clock?
*Buck.* I am thus bold
To put your grace in mind of what you promised me.
*K. Rich.* Well, but what is't o'clock?
*Buck.* Upon the stroke
Of ten.
*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.
*Buck.* Why, let it strike?
*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack, † thou keep'st the stroke
Betwixt thy begging and my meditation.
I am not in the giving vein to-day.
*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whe'r you will or no.
*K. Rich.* Thou troublest me; I am not in the vein.
[*Exeunt* KING RICHARD *and train.*
*Buck.* And is it thus? repays he my deep service
With such contempt? made I him king for this?

* Foolish. † An image that struck the hours on a church-clock.

O, let me think on Hastings; and be gone
To Brecknock, while my fearful head is on. [*Exit.*

*SCENE III.—The same.*

*Enter* TYRREL.

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody act is done;
The most arch deed of piteous massacre,
That ever yet this land was guilty of.
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn
To do this piece of ruthless butchery,
Albeit they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,
Melting with tenderness and mild compassion,
Wept like two children, in their death's sad story.
*O thus*, quoth Dighton, *lay the gentle babes,—*
*Thus, thus*, quoth Forrest, *girdling one another*
*Within their alabaster innocent arms:*
*Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,*
*Which, in their summer beauty kiss'd each other.*
*A book of prayers on their pillow lay:*
*Which once*, quoth Forrest, *almost changed my mind:*
*But, O, the devil*—there the villain stopp'd;
When Dighton thus told on,—*we smothered*
*The most replenished sweet work of nature,*
*That, from the prime creation, e'er she framed.—*
Hence both are gone; with conscience and remorse,
They could not speak; and so I left them both,
To bear this tidings to the bloody king.

*Enter* KING RICHARD.

And here he comes:—All health, my sovereign lord!
*K. Rich.* Kind Tyrrel! am I happy in thy news?
*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in charge
Beget your happiness, be happy, then,
For it is done.
*K. Rich.* But didst thou see them dead?
*Tyr.* I did, my lord.
*K. Rich.* And buried, gentle Tyrrel?
*Tyr.* The chaplain of the Tower hath buried them;
But where, to say the truth, I do not know.
*K. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon, at after supper,
When thou shalt tell the process of their death.
Mean time, but think how I may do thee good,
And be inheritor of thy desire.
Farewell, till then.
*Tyr.* I humbly take my leave. [*Exit.*
*K. Rich.* The son of Clarence have I penn'd up close;
His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage;
The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,
And Anne my wife hath bid the world good night.

Now, for I know the Bretagne* Richmond aims
At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,
And, by that knot, looks proudly on the crown,
To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

*Enter* CATESBY.

*Cate.* My lord,—
*K. Rich.* Good news or bad, that thou com'st in so bluntly?
*Cate.* Bad news, my lord: Morton† is fled to Richmond;
And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Welshmen,
Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.
*K. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me more near,
Than Buckingham and his rash-levied strength.
Come,—I have learn'd, that fearful commenting
Is leaden servitor to dull delay;
Delay leads impotent and snail-paced beggary;
Then fiery expedition be my wing,
Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king
Go, muster men: My counsel is my shield;
We must be brief when traitors brave the field. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—The same. Before the Palace.*

*Enter* QUEEN MARGARET.

*Q. Mar.* So, now prosperity begins to mellow
And drop into the rotten mouth of death.
Here in these confines slyly have I lurk'd,
To watch the waning of mine enemies.
A dire induction‡ am I witness to,
And will to France; hoping, the consequence
Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical.
Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret! who comes here?

*Enter* QUEEN ELIZABETH *and the Duchess of* YORK.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, my poor princes! ah, my tender babes!
My unblown flowers, new-appearing sweets!
If yet your gentle souls fly in the air,
And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,
Hover about me with your airy wings,
And hear your mother's lamentation!
*Q. Mar.* Hover about her; say, that right for right
Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.
*Duch.* So many miseries have crazed my voice,
That my woe-wearied tongue is still and mute,—
Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?
*Q. Mar.* Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet,
Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.

* The country in which Richmond had taken refuge.
† Bishop of Ely. ‡ Introduction.

*Q. Eliz.* Wilt thou, O God, fly from such gentle lambs,
And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?
When didst thou sleep when such a deed was done?
*Q. Mar.* When holy Harry died, and my sweet son.
*Duch.* Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal-living ghost,
Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life usurp'd,
Brief abstract and record of tedious days,
Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth, [*Sitting down.*
Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood!
*Q. Eliz.* Ah, that thou wouldst as soon afford a grave,
As thou canst yield a melancholy seat;
Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here!
Ah, who has any cause to mourn, but we? [*Sitting down by her.*
*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverent,
Give mine the benefit of seniory,*
And let my griefs frown on the upper hand.
If sorrow can admit society, [*Sitting down with them.*
Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine:—
I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him:
I had a husband, till a Richard kill'd him;
Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;
Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.
*Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him;
I had a Rutland too, thou holp'st to kill him.
*Q. Mar.* Thou hadst a Clarence too, and Richard kill'd him.
From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept
A hell-hound, that doth hunt us all to death:
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,
To worry lambs, and lap their gentle blood;
That foul defacer of God's handy-work;
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,
That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,
Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves.—
O upright, just, and true-disposing God,
How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur
Preys on the issue of his mother's body,
And makes her pew-fellow† with others' moan!
*Duch.* O, Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes
God witness with me, I have wept for thine.
*Q. Mar.* Bear with me, I am hungry for revenge,
And now I cloy me with beholding it.
Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward;
Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward;
Young York he is but boot,‡ because both they
Match not the high perfection of my loss.
Thy Clarence he is dead, that stabb'd my Edward;
And the beholders of this tragic play,
The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan, Grey,
Untimely smother'd in their dusky graves.
Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencer;
Only reserved their factor, to buy souls,

* Seniority. † Companion. ‡ Thrown in to boot.

And send them thither: But at hand, at hand,
Ensues his piteous and unpitied end:
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,
To have him suddenly convey'd from hence:—
Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,
That I may live to say, The dog is dead!

*Q. Eliz.* O, thou didst prophesy the time would come,
That I should wish for thee to help me curse
That bottled spider, that foul bunch-back'd toad.

*Q. Mar.* I call'd thee then, vain flourish of my fortune;
I call'd thee then, poor shadow, painted queen;
The presentation of but what I was,
The flattering index* of a direful pageant,
One heaved a high, to be hurl'd down below:
A mother only mock'd with two fair babes;
A dream of what thou wast; a garish† flag,
To be the aim of every dangerous shot:
A sign of dignity, a breath, a bubble;
A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.
Where is thy husband now? Where be thy brothers?
Where be thy two sons? Wherein dost thou joy?
Who sues, and kneels, and says—God save the queen?
Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee?
Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee?
Decline‡ all this, and see what now thou art.
For happy wife, a most distressed widow;
For joyful mother, one that wails the name;
For one being sued to, one that humbly sues;
For queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care;
For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me;
For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;
For one commanding all, obey'd of none.
Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about,
And left thee but a very prey to time;
Having no more but thought of what thou wert,
To torture thee the more, being what thou art.
Thou didst usurp my place, And dost thou not
Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow?
Now thy proud neck bears half my burden'd yoke;
From which even here I slip my wearied head,
And leave the burden of it all on thee.
Farewell, York's wife,—and queen of sad mischance,—
These English woes shall make me smile in France.

*Q. Eliz.* O thou well skill'd in curses, stay a while,
And teach me how to curse mine enemies.

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the night, and fast the day;
Compare dead happiness with living woe;
Think that thy babes were fairer than they were,
And he, that slew them, fouler than he is:
Bettering thy loss makes the bad-causer worse;
Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

* Preface, programme. † Flaring. ‡ Go through.

*Q. Eliz.* My words are dull, O, quicken them with thine!
*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp, and pierce like mine.
[*Exit* QUEEN MARGARET.
*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words?
*Q. Eliz.* Windy attorneys to their client woes,
Airy succeeders of intestate joys,
Poor breathing orators of miseries!
Let them have scope: though what they do impart
Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.
*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-tied: go with me,
And in the breath of bitter words let's smother
My damned son, that thy two sweet sons smother'd.
[*Drum within.*
I hear his drum,—be copious in exclaims.

*Enter* KING RICHARD, *and his Train, marching.*

*K. Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition?
*Duch.* O, she, that might have intercepted thee,
By strangling thee in her accursed womb,
From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done.
*Q. Eliz.* Hid'st thou that forehead with a golden crown,
Where should be branded, if that right were right,
The slaughter of the prince that owed * that crown,
And the dire death of my poor sons, and brothers?
Tell me, thou villain-slave, where are my children?
*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother Clarence?
And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?
*Q. Eliz.* Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaughan, Grey?
*Duch.* Where is kind Hastings?
*K. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets!—strike alarum, drums!
Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women
Rail on the Lord's anointed: Strike, I say.—
[*Flourish. Alarums.*
Either be patient, and entreat me fair,
Or with the clamorous report of war
Thus will I drown your exclamations.
*Duch.* Art thou my son?
*K. Rich.* Ay; I thank God, my father, and yourself.
*Duch.* Then patiently hear my impatience.
*K. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your condition,
That cannot brook the accent of reproof.
*Duch.* O, let me speak.
*K. Rich.* Do, then; but I'll not hear.
*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my words.
*K. Rich.* And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.
*Duch.* Art thou so hasty? I have staid for thee,
God knows, in torment and in agony.
*K. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort you?
*Duch.* No, by the holy rood, thou know'st it well,
Thou cam'st on earth to make the earth my hell.
A grievous burden was thy birth to me;

* Owned

Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;
Thy school-days, frightful, desperate, wild, and furious;
Thy prime of manhood, daring, bold, and venturous;
Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, sly, and bloody,
More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in hatred:
What comfortable hour canst thou name,
That ever graced* me in thy company?

*K. Rich.* 'Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour, that call'd your grace
To breakfast once, forth of my company.
If I be so disgracious in your sight,
Let me march on, and not offend you, madam.—
Strike up the drum.

*Duch.* I pr'ythee, hear me speak.

*K. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.* Hear me a word;
For I shall never speak to thee again.

*K. Rich.* So.

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die, by God's just ordinance,
Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror;
Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish,
And never look upon thy face again.
Therefore take with thee my most heavy curse;
Which, in the day of battle, tire thee more,
Than all the cómplete armour that thou wear'st!
My prayers on the adverse party fight;
And there the little souls of Edward's children
Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,
And promise them success and victory.
Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end;
Shame serves† thy life, and doth thy death attend. [*Exit.*

*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much less spirit to curse
Abides in me; I say Amen to her. [*Going.*

*K. Rich.* Stay, madam, I must speak a word with you.

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal blood,
For thee to murder: for my daughters, Richard,—
They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens;
And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*K. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd—Elizabeth,
Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this? O, let her live,
And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty;
Slander myself, as false to Edward's bed;
Throw over her the veil of infamy:
So she may live unscarr'd of bleeding slaughter;
I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.

*K. Rich.* Wrong not her birth, she is of royal blood.

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life, I'll say—she is not so.

*K. Rich.* Her life is safest only in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her brothers.

*K. Rich.* Lo, at their births good stars were opposite.

* Blessed. † Attends.

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives bad friends were contrary.
*K. Rich.* All unavoided * is the doom of destiny.
*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoided grace makes destiny:
My babes were destined to a fairer death,
If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life.
*K. Rich.* You speak, as if that I had slain my cousins.
*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle cozen'd
Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.
Whose hands soever lanced their tender hearts,
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction:
No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt,
Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.
But that still † use of grief makes wild grief tame,
My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys,
Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes;
And I, in such a desperate bay of death,
Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,
Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.
*K. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enterprize,
And dangerous success of bloody wars,
As I intend more good to you and yours,
Than ever you or yours by me were harm'd!
*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face of heaven,
To be discover'd, that can do me good?
*K. Rich.* The advancement of your children, gentle lady.
*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads?
*K. Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of fortune,
The high imperial type of this earth's glory. ‡
*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrows with report of it;
Tell me what state, what dignity, what honour,
Canst thou demise to any child of mine?
*K. Rich.* Even all I have; ay, and myself and all,
Will I withal endow a child of thine;
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul
Thou drown the sad remembrance of those wrongs,
Which, thou supposest, I have done to thee.
*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness
Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.
*K. Rich.* Then know, that from my soul I love thy daughter.
*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it with her soul.
*K. Rich.* What do you think?
*Q. Eliz.* That thou dost love my daughter, from thy soul:
So, from thy soul's love, didst thou love her brothers;
And, from my heart's love, I do thank thee for it.
*K. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my meaning:
I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter,
And do intend to make her queen of England.
*Q. Eliz.* Well, then, who dost thou mean shall be her king?
*K. Rich.* Even he, that makes her queen: Who else should be?
*Q. Eliz.* What, thou?

* Unavoidable. † Constant. ‡ A crown.

*K. Rich.* Even so: What think you of it, madam?
*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her?
*K. Rich.* That I would learn of you,
As one being best acquainted with her humour.
*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me?
*K. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart.
*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers,
A pair of bleeding hearts; thereon engrave,
Edward, and York, then, haply, will she weep:
Therefore present to her,—as sometime Margaret
Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,—
A handkerchief; which, say to her, did drain
The purple sap from her sweet brothers' body,
And bid her wipe her weeping eyes withal.
If this inducement move her not to love,
Send her a letter of thy noble deeds;
Tell her, thou mad'st away her uncle Clarence,
Her uncle Rivers; ay, and, for her sake,
Mad'st quick conveyance with her good aunt Anne.
*K. Rich.* You mock me, madam; this is not the way
To win your daughter.
*Q. Eliz.* There is no other way;
Unless thou couldst put on some other shape,
And not be Richard that hath done all this.
*K. Rich.* Say, that I did all this for love of her.
*Q. Eliz.* Nay, then, indeed, she cannot choose but have thee,
Having bought love with such a bloody spoil.
*K. Rich.* Look, what is done cannot be now amended:
Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes,
Which after-hours give leisure to repent.
If I did take the kingdom from your sons,
To make amends I'll give it to your daughter.
If I have kill'd the issue of your womb,
To quicken your increase, I will beget
Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter.
A grandam's name is little less in love,
Than is the doting title of a mother;
They are as children, but one step below,
Even of your metal, of your very blood;
Of all one pain,—save for a night of groans
Endured of her, for whom you bid,* like sorrow.
Your children were vexation to your youth,
But mine shall be a comfort to your age.
The loss you have, is but—a son being king,
And, by that loss, your daughter is made queen.
I cannot make you what amends I would,
Therefore accept such kindness as I can.
Dorset, your son, that, with a fearful soul,
Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,
This fair alliance quickly shall call home
To high promotions and great dignity:

* Bided.

The king, that calls your beauteous daughter—wife,
Familiarly shall call thy Dorset—brother;
Again shall you be mother to a king,
And all the ruins of distressful times
Repair'd with double riches of content.
What! we have many goodly days to see:
The liquid drops of tears that you have shed,
Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl;
Advantaging their loan, with interest
Of ten times double gain of happiness.
Go then, my mother, to thy daughter go;
Make bold her bashful years with your experience;
Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale;
Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame
Of golden sovereignty; acquaint the princess
With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys;
And when this arm of mine hath chastised
The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham,
Bound with triumphal garlands will I come,
And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed;
To whom I will retail* my conquest won,
And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say? her father's brother
Would be her lord? Or, shall I say, her uncle?
Or, he that slew her brothers and her uncles?
Under what title shall I woo for thee,
That God, the law, my honour, and her love,
Can make seem pleasing to her tender years?

*K. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this alliance.

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still lasting war.

*K. Rich.* Tell her, the king, that may command, entreats.

*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands, which the king's King forbids.

*K. Rich.* Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.

*Q. Eliz.* To wail the title, as her mother doth.

*K. Rich.* Say, I will love her everlastingly.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title, ever, last?

*K. Rich.* Sweetly in force, unto her fair life's end.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last?

*K. Rich.* As long as heaven, and nature lengthens it.

*Q. Eliz.* As long as hell, and Richard likes of it.

*K. Rich.* Say, I, her sovereign, am her subject low.

*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loaths such sov'reignty.

*K. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.

*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best, being plainly told.

*K. Rich.* Then, in plain terms, tell her my loving tale.

*Q. Eliz.* Plain, and not honest, is too harsh a style.

*K. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.

*Q. Eliz.* O, no, my reasons are too deep and dead:—
Too deep and dead, poor infants, in their graves.

*K. Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam; that is past.

*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I, till heart-strings break.

* Hand over.

*K. Rich.* Now by my George, my Garter, and my Crown,—
*Q. Eliz.* Profaned, dishonour'd, and the third usurp'd.
*K. Rich.* I swear.
*Q. Eliz.* By nothing; for this is no oath.
Thy George, profaned, hath lost his holy honour;
Thy garter blemish'd, pawn'd, his knightly virtue
Thy crown, usurp'd, disgraced his kingly glory;
If something thou wouldst swear to be believed,
Swear then by something that thou hast not wrong'd.
*K. Rich.* Now by the world,—
*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.
*K. Rich.* My father's death,—
*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath that dishonour'd.
*K. Rich.* Then, by myself,—
*Q. Eliz.* Thyself is self-misused.
*K. Rich.* Why then, by God,—
*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,
The unity the king thy brother made,
Had not been broken, nor my brother slain:
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,
The imperial metal, circling now thy head,
Had graced the tender temples of my child;
And both the princes had been breathing here,
Which now, two tender bed-fellows for dust,
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.
What canst thou swear by now?
*K. Rich.* By the time to come.
*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wrong'd in the time o'erpast;
For I myself have many tears to wash
Hereafter time, for time past, wrong'd by thee.
The children live, whose parents thou hast slaughter'd,
Ungovern'd youth, to wail it in their age:
The parents live, whose children thou hast butcher'd,
Old barren plants, to wail it with their age.
Swear not by time to come; for that thou hast
Misused ere used, by times ill-used o'erpast.
*K. Rich.* As I intend to prosper, and repent!
So thrive I in my dangerous attempt
Of hostile arms! myself myself confound!
Heaven, and fortune, bar me happy hours!
Day, yield me not thy light; nor, night, thy rest!
Be opposite all planets of good luck
To my proceeding, if, with pure heart's love,
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,
I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter!
In her consists my happiness, and thine;
Without her, follows to myself, and thee,
Herself, the land, and many a Christian soul,
Death, desolation, ruin, and decay:
It cannot be avoided, but by this;
It will not be avoided, but by this:
Therefore, dear mother (I must call you so),

Be the attorney of my love to her,
Plead what I will be, not what I have been;
Not my deserts, but what I will deserve:
Urge the necessity and state of times,
And be not peevish* found in great designs.
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I be tempted of the devil thus?
*K. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do good.
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I forget myself, to be myself?
*K. Rich.* Ay, if your self's remembrance wrong yourself.
*Q. Eliz.* But thou didst kill my children.
*K. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury them:
Where, in that nest of spicery,† they shall breed
Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy will?
*K. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the deed.
*Q. Eliz.* I go.—Write to me very shortly,
And you shall understand from me her mind.
*K. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss, and so farewell.
[*Kissing her. Exit* QUEEN ELIZABETH.
Relenting fool, and shallow, changing—woman!
How now? what news?

*Enter* RATCLIFF; CATESBY *following.*

*Rat.* Most mighty sovereign, on the western coast
Rideth a puissant navy; to the shore
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,
Unarm'd, and unresolved to beat them back:
'Tis thought, that Richmond is their admiral;
And there they hull, expecting but the aid
Of Buckingham, to welcome them ashore.
*K. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the duke of Norfolk:—
Ratcliff, thyself,—or Catesby; where is he?
*Cate.* Here, my good lord.
*K. Rich.* Castesby, fly to the duke.
*Cate.* I will, my lord, with all convenient haste.
*K. Rich.* Ratcliff, come hither; Post to Salisbury;
When thou com'st thither,—Dull, unmindful villain,
[*To* CATESBY.
Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the duke?
*Cate.* First, mighty liege, tell me your highness' pleasure.
What from your grace I shall deliver to him.
*K. Rich.* O, true, good Catesby;—Bid him levy straight
The greatest strength and power he can make,
And meet me suddenly at Salisbury.
*Cate.* I go. [*Exit.*
*Rat.* What, may it please you, shall I do at Salisbury?
*K. Rich.* Why, what wouldst thou do there, before I go?
*Rat.* Your highness told me, I should post before.

*Enter* STANLEY.

*K. Rich.* My mind is changed.—Stanley, what news with you?

* Foolish. † The phœnix's nest.

*Stan.* None good, my liege, to please you with the hearing;
Nor none so bad, but well may be reported.
*K. Rich.* Heyday, a riddle! neither good nor bad!
What need'st thou run so many miles about,
When thou mayst tell thy tale the nearest way?
Once more what news?
*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.
*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas on him!
White-liver'd runagate, what doth he there?
*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by guess.
*K. Rich.* Well, as you guess?
*Stan.* Stirr'd up by Dorset, Buckingham, and Morton,
He makes for England, here to claim the crown.
*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty? is the sword unsway'd?
Is the king dead? The empire unpossess'd?
What heir of York is there alive, but we?
And who is England's king, but great York's heir?
Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas?
*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess.
*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be your liege,
You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman comes.
Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.
*Stan.* No, mighty liege; therefore mistrust me not.
*K. Rich.* Where is thy power, then, to beat him back?
Where be thy tenants, and thy followers?
Are they not now upon the western shore,
Safe-cónducting the rebels from their ships?
*Stan.* No, my good lord, my friends are in the north.
*K. Rich.* Cold friends to me: what do they in the north,
When they should serve their sovereign in the west?
*Stan.* They have not been commanded, mighty king
Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave,
I'll muster up my friends; and meet your grace,
Where, and what time, your majesty shall please.
*K. Rich.* Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to join with Richmond:
I will not trust you, Sir.
*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign,
You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful;
I never was, nor never will be, false.
*K. Rich.* Well, go, muster men. But, hear you, leave behind
Your son, George Stanley; look your heart be firm,
Or else his head's assurance is but frail.
*Stan.* So deal with him as I prove true to you.
[*Exit* STANLEY.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,
As I by friends am well advértised,
Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate,
Bishop of Exeter, his elder brother,
With many more confederates, are in arms.

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

2 *Mess.* In Kent, my liege, the Guildfords are in arms;

And every hour more competitors*
Flock to the rebels, and their power grows strong.

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

3 *Mess.* My lord, the army of great Buckingham—
*K. Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs of death?
[*He strikes him.*
There, take thou that, till thou bring better news.
3 *Mess.* The news I have to tell your majesty,
Is,—that, by sudden floods and fall of waters,
Buckingham's army is dispersed and scatter'd;
And he himself wander'd away alone,
No man knows whither.
*K. Rich.* O, I cry you mercy:
There is my purse to cure that blow of thine.
Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd
Reward to him that brings the traitor in?
3 *Mess.* Such proclamation hath been made, my liege.

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

4 *Mess.* Sir Thomas Lovel, and lord marquis Dorset,
'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms.
But this good comfort bring I to your highness,—
The Bretagne navy is dispersed by tempest:
Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat
Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks,
If they were his assistants, yea or no;
Who answer'd him, they came from Buckingham
Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,
Hois'd sail, and made his course again for Bretagne.
*K. Rich.* March on, march on, since we are up in arms;
If not to fight with foreign enemies,
Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

*Enter* CATESBY.

*Cate.* My liege, the duke of Buckingham is taken.
That is the best news; That the earl of Richmond
Is with a mighty power landed at Milford,
Is colder news, but yet they must be told.
*K. Rich.* Away towards Salisbury; while we reason here,
A royal battle might be won and lost:—
Some one take order, Buckingham be brought
To Salisbury;—the rest march on with me. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE V.—A Room in* LORD STANLEY'S *House.*

*Enter* STANLEY *and* SIR CHRISTOPHER URSWICK.

*Stan.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me;—
That, in the sty of this most bloody boar,

* *I. e.* to us.

My son George Stanley is frank'd* up in hold;
If I revolt, off goes young George's head;
The fear of that withholds my present aid.
But, tell me, where is princely Richmond now?
*Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Ha'rford-west, in Wales.
*Stan.* What men of name resort to him?
*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier;
Sir Gilbert Talbert, Sir William Stanley;
Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Blunt,
And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew;
And many other of great fame and worth:
And towards London do they bend their course,
If by the way they be not fought withal.
*Stan.* Well, hie thee to thy lord; commend me to him;
Tell him, the queen hath heartily consented
He shall espouse Elizabeth her daughter.
These letters will resolve him of my mind.
Farewell. [*Gives papers to* SIR CHRISTOPHER. *Exeunt.*

---

# ACT V.

## *SCENE I.—Salisbury. An open place.*

*Enter the* SHERIFF, *and Guard, with* BUCKINGHAM, *led to execution.*

*Buck.* Will not king Richard let me speak with him?
*Sher.* No, my good lord; therefore be patient.
*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children, Rivers, Grey,
Holy king Henry, and thy fair son Edward,
Vaughan, and all that have miscarried
By underhand corrupted foul injustice;
If that your moody discontented souls
Do through the clouds behold this present hour,
Even for revenge mock my destruction!
This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not?
*Sher.* It is, my lord.
*Buck.* Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's doomsday.
This is the day, which, in king Edward's time,
I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found
False to his children, or his wife's allies.
This is the day, wherein I wish'd to fall
By the false faith of him whom most I trusted;
This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul,
Is the determined respite† of my wrongs.‡
That high All-seer which I dallied with,
Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head,

* Stied up.
† *I. e.* time to which the respite of punishment was finally limited.
‡ Evil doings.

And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.
Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men
To turn their own points on their masters' bosoms:
Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck,—
*When he*, quoth she, *shall split thy heart with sorrow,*
*Remember Margaret was a prophetess.*—
Come, Sirs, convey me to the block of shame;
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.
[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM, *&c.*

## *SCENE II.—Plain near Tamworth.*

*Enter, with drum and colours,* RICHMOND, OXFORD, SIR JAMES BLUNT, SIR WALTER HERBERT, *and others, with forces, marching.*

*Richm.* Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,
Bruised underneath the yoke of tyranny,
Thus far into the bowels of the land
Have we march'd on without impediment;
And here receive we from our father Stanley
Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.
The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,
That spoil'd your summer fields, and fruitful vines,
Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough
In your embowell'd bosoms,—this foul swine
Lies now even in the centre of this isle,
Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:
From Tamworth thither, is but one day's march.
In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,
To reap the harvest of perpetual peace
By this one bloody trial of sharp war.
*Oxf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand swords,
To fight against that bloody homicide.
*Herb.* I doubt not, but his friends will turn to us.
*Blunt.* He hath no friends, but who are friends for fear;
Which, in his dearest need, will fly from him.
*Richm.* All for our vantage. Then, in God's name, march:
True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings,
Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—Bosworth Field.*

*Enter* KING RICHARD, *and forces; the Duke of* NORFOLK, *Earl of* SURREY, *and others.*

*K. Rich.* Here pitch our tents, even here in Bosworth field.—
My lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?
*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.
*K. Rich.* My lord of Norfolk,——
*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.
*K. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks; Ha! must we not?
*Nor.* We must both give and take, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Up with my tent: Here will I lie to-night;
[*Soldiers begin to set up the King's tent.*
But where to-morrow?—Well, all's one for that.—
Who hath descried the number of the traitors?
*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost power.
*K. Rich.* Why, our battalia trebles that account:
Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,
Which they, upon the adverse faction want.
Up with the tent.—Come, noble gentlemen,
Let us survey the vantage of the ground;—
Call for some men of sound direction:*—
Let's want no discipline, make no delay;
For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter, on the other side of the field,* RICHMOND, SIR WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, *and other Lords. Some of the soldiers pitch* RICHMOND'S *tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a golden set,
And, by the bright track of his fiery car,
Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow—
Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.—
Give me some ink and paper in my tent;—
I'll draw the form and model of our battle,
Limit† each leader to his several charge,
And part in just proportion our small power.
My lord of Oxford,—you, Sir William Brandon,—
And you, Sir Walter Herbert, stay with me:
The earl of Pembroke keeps‡ his regiment;—
Good captain Blunt, bear my good night to him,
And by the second hour in the morning
Desire the earl to see me in my tent:
Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me;
Where is lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know?
*Blunt.* Unless I have mista'en his colours much
(Which, well I am assured, I have not done),
His regiment lies half a mile at least
South from the mighty power of the king.
*Richm.* If without peril it be possible,
Sweet Blunt, make good some means to speak with him,
And give him from me this most needful note.
*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it;
And so, God give you quiet rest to-night!
*Richm.* Good night, good captain Blunt. Come, gentlemen,
Let us consult upon to-morrow's business;
In to my tent, the air is raw and cold.
[*They withdraw into the tent.*

*Enter, to his tent,* KING RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, *and* CATESBY.

*K. Rich.* What is't o'clock?

* *I.e.* judgment. † Appoint. ‡ Remains with.

*Cate.* It's supper time, my lord:
It's six o'clock.
*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night.—
Give me some ink and paper.—
What, is my beaver easier than it was?—
And all my armour laid into my tent?
*Cate.* It is, my liege, and all things are in readiness.
*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy charge;
Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.
*Nor.* I go, my lord.
*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle Norfolk.
*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord. [*Exit.*
*K. Rich.* Ratcliff,——
*Rat.* My lord?
*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant at arms
To Stanley's regiment; bid him bring his power
Before sun-rising, lest his son George fall
Into the blind cave of eternal night.—
Fill me a bowl of wine.—Give me a watch:*— [*To* CATESBY.
Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow.
Look that my staves† be sound, and not too heavy.
Ratcliff,——
*Rat.* My lord?
*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy‡ lord Northumberland?
*Rat.* Thomas the earl of Surrey, and himself,
Much about cock-shut§ time, from troop to troop,
Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.
*K. Rich.* I am satisfied. Give me a bowl of wine:
I have not that alacrity of spirit,
Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have.—
So, set it down.—Is ink and paper ready?
*Rat.* It is, my lord.
*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch; leave me.
About the mid of night, come to my tent
And help to arm me.—Leave me, I say.
[KING RICHARD *retires into his tent.* *Exeunt* RATCLIFF *and* CATESBY.

RICHMOND'S *tent opens, and discovers him and his officers, &c.*

*Enter* STANLEY.

*Stan.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!
*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can afford,
Be to thy person, noble father-in-law!
Tell me, how fares our loving mother?
*Stan.* I, by attorney,‖ bless thee from thy mother,
Who prays continually for Richmond's good;
So much for that.—The silent hours steal on,
And flaky darkness breaks within the east.
In brief, for so the season bids us be,

* A watch-light. † Wood of the lances.
‡ Sullenly indifferent. § Twilight. ‖ Deputation.

Prepare thy battle early in the morning;
And put thy fortune to the arbitrement
Of bloody strokes, and mortal-staring war.
I, as I may, (that which I would, I cannot,)
With best advantage will deceive the time,
And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms:
But on thy side I may not be too forward,
Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,
Be executed in his father's sight:
Farewell: The leisure and the fearful time
Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love,
And ample interchange of sweet discourse,
Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell upon;
God give us leisure for these rites of love!
Once more, adieu:—Be valiant and speed well!

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his regiment;
I'll strive, with troubled thoughts, to take a nap;
Lest leaden slumber peise* me down to-morrow,
When I should mount with wings of victory:
Once more good night, kind lords and gentlemen.

[*Exeunt* LORDS, *&c. with* STANLEY.

O Thou! whose captain I account myself,
Look on my forces with a gracious eye;
Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath,
That they may crush down with a heavy fall
The usurping helmets of our adversaries!
Make us thy ministers of chastisement,
That we may praise thee in thy victory!
To Thee I do commend my watchful soul,
Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes;
Sleeping, and waking, O defend me still! [*Sleeps.*

*The* GHOST *of* PRINCE EDWARD, *son to* HENRY *the Sixth, rises between the two tents.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!
[*To* KING RICHARD.
Think, how thou stab'dst me in my prime of youth
At Tewkesbury; Despair, therefore, and die!—
Be cheerful, Richmond; for the wrong'd souls
Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:
King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

*The* GHOST *of* KING HENRY *the Sixth rises.*

*Ghost.* When I was mortal, my anointed body
[*To* KING RICHARD.
By thee was punched full of deadly holes:
Think on the Tower, and me; Despair, and die!
Harry the sixth bids thee despair and die.—
Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror! [*To* RICHMOND.
Harry, that prophesy'd thou should'st be king,
Doth comfort thee in thy sleep: Live, and flourish!

* Weigh.

*The* GHOST *of* CLARENCE *rises.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow!
[*To* KING RICHARD.
I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,
Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death!
To-morrow in the battle think on me,
And fall* thy edgeless sword; Despair and die!—
Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster, [*To* RICHMOND.
The wrong'd heirs of York do pray for thee;
Good angels guard thy battle! Live, and flourish!

*The* GHOSTS *of* RIVERS, GREY, *and* VAUGHAN, *rise.*

*Riv.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow
[*To* KING RICHARD.
Rivers, that died at Pomfret! Despair and die!
*Grey.* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul despair!
[*To* KING RICHARD.
*Vaugh.* Think upon Vaughan; and, with guilty fear,
Let fall thy lance! Despair, and die!— [*To* KING RICHARD.
*All.* Awake! and think, our wrongs in Richard's bosom
[*To* RICHMOND.
Will conquer him;—awake, and win the day!

*The* GHOST *of* HASTINGS *rises.*

*Ghost.* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake, [*To* KING RICHARD.
And in a bloody battle end thy days!
Think on lord Hastings; and despair, and die!—
Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake! [*To* RICHMOND.
Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's sake!

*The* GHOSTS *of the two Young* PRINCES *rise.*

*Ghosts.* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in the Tower;
Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,
And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and death!
Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair, and die.—
Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake in joy;
Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy!
Live, and beget a happy race of kings!
Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

*The* GHOST *of* QUEEN ANNE *rises.*

*Ghost.* Richard, thy wife, that wretched Anne thy wife,
That never slept a quiet hour with thee,
Now fills thy sleep with perturbations:
To-morrow in the battle think on me,
And fall thy edgeless sword; Despair and die!—
Thou, quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep; [*To* RICHMOND.
Dream of success and happy victory;
Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

* Let fall.

*The* GHOST *of* BUCKINGHAM *rises.*

*Ghost.* The first was I, that help'd thee to the crown;
[*To* KING RICHARD.
The last was I that felt thy tyranny:
O, in the battle think on Buckingham,
And die in terror of thy guiltiness!
Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death;
Fainting, despair; despairing, yield thy breath!—
[*To* RICHMOND.
I died for hope,* ere I could lend thee aid:
But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd:
God, and good angels, fight on Richmond's side:
And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

[*The* GHOSTS *vanish.* KING RICHARD *starts out of his dream.*

*K. Rich.* Give me another horse,—bind up my wounds,—
Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft; I did but dream.—
O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!—
The lights burn blue.—It is now dead midnight.
Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.
What do I fear? myself? there's none else by:
Richard loves Richard; that is, I am I.
Is there a murderer here? No;—Yes; I am:
Then fly,—What, from myself? Great reason: Why?
Lest I revenge. What? Myself on myself?
I love myself. Wherefore? for any good,
That I myself have done unto myself?
O, no: alas, I rather hate myself,
For hateful deeds committed by myself.
I am a villain: Yet I lie, I am not.
Fool, of thyself speak well:—Fool, do not flatter.
My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,
And every tongue brings in a several tale,
And every tale condemns me for a villain.
Perjury, perjury, in the high'st degree,
Murder, stern murder, in the dir'st degree;
All several sins, all used in each degree;
Throng to the bar, crying all,—Guilty! guilty!
I shall despair.—There is no creature loves me;
And, if I die, no soul will pity me:—
Nay, wherefore should they? since that I myself
Find in myself no pity to myself.
Methought, the souls of all that I had murder'd
Came to my tent: and every one did threat
To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

*Enter* RATCLIFF.

*Rat.* My lord,——

*K. Rich.* Who's there?

*Rat.* Ratcliff, my lord; 'tis I. The early village cock
Hath twice done salutation to the morn;
Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour,

* Hoping well to you.

*K. Rich.* O, Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream!
What thinkest thou? will our friends prove all true?
*Rat.* No doubt, my lord.
*K. Rich.* Ratcliff, I fear, I fear,—
*Rat.* Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.
*K. Rich.* By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night
Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard,
Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers,
Armed in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me;
Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,
To hear, if any mean to shrink from me.
[*Exeunt* KING RICHARD *and* RATCLIFF.

RICHMOND *wakes. Enter* OXFORD *and others.*

*Lords.* Good morrow, Richmond.
*Richm.* 'Cry mercy, lords, and watchful gentlemen,
That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.
*Lords.* How have you slept, my lord?
*Richm.* The sweetest sleep, and fairest-boding dreams,
That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,
Have I since your departure had, my lords.
Methought, their souls, whose bodies Richard murder'd,
Came to my tent, and cried—On! victory!
I promise you, my heart is very jocund
In the remembrance of so fair a dream.
How far into the morning is it, lords?
*Lords.* Upon the stroke of four.
*Richm.* Why, then 'tis time to arm, and give direction.—
[*He advances to the troops.*
More than I have said, loving countrymen,
The leisure and enforcement of the time
Forbids to dwell on. Yet remember this,—
God, and our good cause, fight upon our side;
The prayers of holy saints, and wronged souls,
Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our faces;
Richard except, those, whom we fight against,
Had rather have us win, than him they follow.
For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,
A bloody tyrant, and a homicide;
One raised in blood, and one in blood establish'd;
One that made means to come by what he hath,
And slaughter'd those that were the means to help him;
A base foul stone, made precious by the foil
Of England's chair,* where he is falsely set;
One that hath ever been God's enemy:
Then, if you fight against God's enemy,
God will, in justice, ward† you as his soldiers;
If you do sweat to put a tyrant down,
You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;
If you do fight against your country's foes,

* Throne. † Guard.

Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire;
If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,
Your wives will welcome home the conquerors;
If you do free your children from the sword,
Your children's children quit* it in your age.
Then in the name of God, and all these rights,
Advance your standards, draw your willing swords;
For me, the ransom† of my bold attempt
Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold face;
But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt
The least of you shall share his part thereof.
Sound, drums and trumpets, boldly and cheerfully;
God, and Saint George! Richmond, and victory! [*Exeunt.*

*Re-enter* KING RICHARD, RATCLIFF, *Attendants, and Forces.*

*K. Rich.* What said Northumberland, as touching Richmond?
*Rat.* That he was never trained up in arms.
*K. Rich.* He said the truth: And what said Surrey then?
*Rat.* He smiled and said, the better for our purpose.
*K. Rich.* He was i'the right; and so, indeed, it is.
[*Clock strikes.*
Tell the clock there.—Give me a calendar.—
Who saw the sun to-day?
*Rat.* Not I, my lord.
*K. Rich.* Then he disdains to shine; for, by the book,
He should have braved‡ the east an hour ago:
A black day will it be to somebody.—
Ratcliff,——
*Rat.* My lord?
*K. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day;
The sky doth frown and lour upon our army.
I would, these dewy tears were from the ground.
Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me,
More than to Richmond? for the self-same heaven
That frowns on me, looks sadly upon him.

*Enter* NORFOLK.

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord; the foe vaunts in the field.
*K. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle;—Caparison my horse;—
Call up lord Stanley, bid him bring his power:—
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain,
And thus my battle shall be ordered.
My foreward shall be drawn out all in length,
Consisting equally of horse and foot;
Our archers shall be placed in the midst:
John duke of Norfolk, Thomas earl of Surrey,
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse.
They thus directed, we ourself will follow
In the main battle; whose puissance on either side

* Requite. † Fine. ‡ Made it splendid.

Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse.
This, and Saint George to boot!*—What think'st thou, Norfolk?
*Nor.* A good direction, warlike sovereign.—
This found I on my tent this morning. [*Giving a scroll.*
*K. Rich.* *Jocky of Norfolk, be not too bold,* [Reads.
*For Dickon thy master is bought and sold.*
A thing devised by the enemy.—
Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge:
Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls,
Conscience is but a word that cowards use,
Devised at first to keep the strong in awe;
Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.
March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell;
If not to heaven, then hand-in-hand to hell.
What shall I say more than I have inferr'd,
Remember whom you are to cope withal;
A sort† of vagabonds, rascals, and run-aways,
A scum of Bretagnes,‡ and base lackey peasants,
Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth
To desperate ventures and assured destruction,
You sleeping safe, they bring you to unrest;
You having lands, and blessed with beauteous wives,
They would restrain the one, distain the other.
And who doth lead them, but a paltry fellow,
Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost?
A milk-sop, one that never in his life
Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow?
Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again;
Lash hence these over-weening rags of France,
These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives;
Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,
For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themselves:
If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,
And not these bastard Bretagnes; whom our fathers
Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd, and thump'd,
And, on record, left them the heirs of shame.
Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives?
Ravish our daughters?—Hark, I hear their drum.
[*Drum afar off.*
Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen!
Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head;
Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood;
Amaze the welkin with your broken staves!§

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

What says lord Stanley? will he bring his power?
*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.
*K. Rich.* Off instantly with his son George's head!
*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is pass'd the marsh;
After the battle let George Stanley die.

* To help.
† Company.
‡ Bretons.
§ Affright the skies.

*K. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within my bosom:
Advance our standards, set upon our foes;
Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,
Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons!
Upon them! Victory sits on our helms. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—Another part of the Field.*

*Alarum: Excursions.—Enter* NORFOLK, *and Forces; to him* CATESBY.

*Cate.* Rescue, my lord of Norfolk, rescue, rescue!
The king enacts more wonders than a man,
Daring an opposite to every danger;
His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,
Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death;
Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost!

*Alarum.—Enter* KING RICHARD.

*K. Rich.* A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!
*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord, I'll help you to a horse.
*K. Rich.* Slave, I have set my life upon a cast,
And I will stand the hazard of the die:
I think, there be six Richmonds in the field;
Five have I slain to day, instead of him:
A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse! [*Exeunt.*

*Alarums. Enter* KING RICHARD *and* RICHMOND; *and exeunt fighting. Retreat, and flourish. Then enter* RICHMOND, STANLEY, *bearing the crown, with divers other Lords, and Forces.*

*Richm.* God, and your arms, be praised, victorious friends;
The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.
*Stan.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit thee!
Lo, here, this long-usurped royalty,
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch
Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal;
Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.
*Richm.* Great God of heaven, say, Amen, to all:—
But tell me first, is young George Stanley living?
*Stan.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester town;
Whither, if it please you, we may now withdraw us.
*Richm.* What men of name are slain on either side?
*Stan.* John duke of Norfolk, Walter lord Ferrers,
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Brandon.
*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their births.
Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled,
That in submission will return to us;
And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,
We will unite the white rose with the red:—
Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction,
That long hath frown'd upon their enmity!—
What traitor hears me, and says not,—Amen?

England hath long been mad, and scarr'd herself;
The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,
The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,
The son, compell'd, been butcher to the sire:
All this divided York and Lancaster,
Divided, in their dire division.—
O, now, let Richmond and Elizabeth,
The true succeeders of each royal house,
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together!
And let their heirs (God, if thy will be so),
Enrich the time to come with smooth-faced peace,
With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous days!
Abate* the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,
That would reduce† these bloody days again,
And make poor England weep in streams of blood!
Let them not live to taste this land's increase,
That would with treason wound this fair land's peace!
Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again;
That she may long live here, God say—Amen. [*Exeunt.*

* Lower. † Bring back.

# KING HENRY VIII.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.
CARDINAL WOLSEY.
CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.
CAPUCIUS, *Ambassador from the Emperor Charles V.*
CRANMER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*
DUKE OF NORFOLK.
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.
EARL OF SURREY.
LORD CHAMBERLAIN.
LORD CHANCELLOR.
GARDINER, *Bishop of Winchester.*
BISHOP OF LINCOLN.
LORD ABERGAVENNY.
LORD SANDS.
SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.
SIR THOMAS LOVELL.
SIR ANTHONY DENNY.
SIR NICHOLAS VAUX.
SECRETARIES to Wolsey.
CROMWELL, *Servant to Wolsey.*
GRIFFITH, *Gentleman-Usher to Queen Katharine.*
THREE OTHER GENTLEMEN.
DOCTOR BUTTS, *Physician to the King.*

GARTER, *King at Arms.*
SURVEYOR to the Duke of Buckingham.
BRANDON, and a Sergeant at Arms.
DOOR-KEEPER of the Council-Chamber.
PORTER, and his Man.
PAGE to Gardiner.
A CRIER.

---

QUEEN KATHARINE, *Wife to King Henry; afterwards divorced.*
ANNE BULLEN, *her Maid of Honour; afterwards Queen.*
AN OLD LADY, *Friend to Anne Bullen.*
PATIENCE, *Woman to Queen Katharine.*

Several LORDS and LADIES in the Dumb Shows; WOMEN attending upon the Queen; SPIRITS which appear to her; SCRIBES, OFFICERS, GUARDS, and other ATTENDANTS.

SCENE, chiefly in London and Westminster; once at Kimbolton.

## PROLOGUE.

I COME no more to make you laugh; things now,
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,
We now present. Those that can pity, here
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;

The subject will deserve it. Such, as give
Their money out of hope they may believe,
May here find truth too. Those, that come to see
Only a show or two, and so agree,
The play may pass; if they be still, and willing,
I'll undertake, may see away their shilling
Richly in two short hours. Only they,
That come to hear a merry, bawdy play,
A noise of targets; or to see a fellow
In a long motley coat, guarded* with yellow,
Will be deceived; for, gentle hearers, know,
To rank our chosen truth with such a show
As foot and fight is, beside forfeiting
Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,
(To make that only true we now intend,†)
Will leave us never an understanding friend.
Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are known
The first and happiest hearers of the town,
Be sad, as we would make ye: Think, ye see
The very persons of our noble story,
As they were living; think, you see them great,
And follow'd with the general throng, and sweat,
Of thousand friends; then, in a moment, see
How soon this mightiness meets misery!
And, if you can be merry then, I'll say,
A man may weep upon his wedding day.

---

## ACT I.

### *SCENE I.—London. An Ante-chamber in Palace.*

*Enter the Duke of* NORFOLK, *at one door; at the other, the Duke of* BUCKINGHAM, *and the* LORD ABERGAVENNY.

*Buck.* Good morrow, and well met. How have you done,
Since last we saw in France?
*Nor.* I thank your grace:
Healthful; and ever since a fresh admirer
Of what I saw there,
*Buck.* An untimely ague
Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when
Those suns of glory, those two lights of men,‡
Met in the vale of Arde.
*Nor.* 'Twixt Guynes and Arde:§
I was then present, saw them salute on horseback;
Beheld them, when they lighted, how they clung
In their embracement, as they grew together;

* Laced. † Pretend.
‡ Henry VIII. and Francis I. ‡ Ardres.

Which had they, what four throned ones could have weigh'd
Such a compounded one?
*Buck.* All the whole time
I was my chamber's prisoner.
*Nor.* Then you lost
The view of earthly glory: Men might say,
Till this time, pomp was single; but now married
To one above itself. Each following day
Became the next day's master, till the last
Made former wonders it's: To-day, the French
All clinquant,* all in gold, like heathen gods,
Shone down the English: and, to-morrow, they
Made Britain, India: every man, that stood,
Show'd like a mine. Their dwarfish pages were
As cherubims, all gilt; the madams, too,
Not used to toil, did almost sweat to bear
The pride upon them, that their very labour
Was to them as a painting: now this mask
Was cried incomparable; and the ensuing night
Made it a fool, and beggar. The two kings,
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,
As presence did present them; him in eye,
Still him in praise: and, being present both,
'Twas said, they saw but one; and no discerner
Durst wag his tongue in censure.† When these suns
(For so they phrase them,) by their heralds challeng'd
The noble spirits to arms, they did perform
Beyond thought's compass; that former fabulous story,
Being now seen possible enough, got credit,
That Bevis ‡ was believ'd.
*Buck.* O, you go far.
*Nor.* As I belong to worship, and affect
In honour honesty, the tract of everything
Would by a good discourser lose some life,
Which action's self was tongue to. All was royal;
To the disposing of it nought rebell'd,
Order gave each thing view; the office did
Distinctly his full function.
*Buck.* Who did guide?
I mean, who set the body and the limbs
Of this great sport together, as you guess?
*Nor.* One, certes, § that promises no element ||
In such a business.
*Buck.* I pray you, who, my lord?
*Nor.* All this was order'd by the good discretion
Of the right reverend cardinal of York.
*Buck.* The devil speed him! no man's pie is freed
From his ambitious finger. What had he
To do in these fierce ¶ vanities? I wonder

* Glittering, shining.
‡ Sir Bevis, an old romance.
|| Practice.
† Decision between them.
§ Certainly.
¶ Proud.

That such a keech * can with his very bulk
Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun,
And keep it from the earth.
*Nor.* Surely, Sir,
There's in him stuff that put's him to these ends:
For, being not propp'd by ancestry, (whose grace
Chalks successors their way,) nor call'd upon
For high feats done to the crown; neither allied
To eminent assistants, but, spider like,
Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note,
The force of his own merit makes his way;
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys
A place next to the king.
*Aber.* I cannot tell
What heaven hath given him, let some graver eye
Pierce into that; but I can see his pride
Peep through each part of him: whence has he that?
If not from hell the devil is a niggard:
Or has given all before, and he begins
A new hell in himself.
*Buck.* Why the devil,
Upon this French going-out, took he upon him,
Without the privity o' the king, to appoint
Who should attend on him? He makes up the file †
Of all the gentry; for the most part such
Too, whom as great a charge as little honour
He meant to lay upon: and his own letter,
The honourable board of council out,
Must fetch him in the papers. ‡
*Aber.* I do know
Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have
By this so sicken'd their estates, that never
They shall abound as formerly.
*Buck.* O, many
Have broke their backs with laying manors on them
For this great journey. What did this vanity,
But minister communication of
A most poor issue?
*Nor.* Grievingly I think,
The peace between the French and us not values
The cost that did conclude it.
*Buck.* Every man.
After the hideous storm that follow'd, was
A thing inspired: and, not consulting, broke
Into a general prophecy,—That this tempest,
Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded
The sudden breach on't.
*Nor.* Which is budded out;
For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath attached
Our merchant's goods at Bordeaux

* Lump of fat. † List.
‡ *I. e.* sets down in his letter without consulting the council.

*Aber.* Is it therefore
The ambassador is silenc'd ?
*Nor.* Marry, is't.
*Aber.* A proper title of a peace; and purchas'd
At a superfluous rate!
*Buck.* Why, all this business
Our reverend cardinal carried.*
*Nor.* 'Like it your grace,
The state takes notice of the private difference
Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you,
(And take it from a heart that wishes towards you
Honour and plenteous safety,) that you read
The cardinal's malice and his potency
Together: to consider further, that
What his high hatred would effect, wants not
A minister in his power: You know his nature,
That he's revengeful; and I know, his sword
Hath a sharp edge: it's long, and, it may be said,
It reaches far; and where 'twill not extend,
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel,
You'll find it wholesome. Lo, where comes that rock,
That I advise your shunning.

*Enter Cardinal* WOLSEY, (*the purse borne before him,*) *certain of the guard, and two* SECRETARIES *with papers. The Cardinal in his passage fixeth his eye on* BUCKINGHAM, *and* BUCKINGHAM *on him, both full of disdain.*

*Wol.* The duke of Buckingham's surveyor? ha?
Where's his examination?
1 *Secr.* Here, so please you.
*Wol.* Is he in person ready?
1 *Secr.* Ay, please your grace.
*Wol.* Well, we shall then know more; and Buckingham
Shall lessen this big look.
[*Exeunt* WOLSEY *and train.*
*Buck.* This butcher's cur † is venom-mouth'd, and I
Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore, best
Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's look
Out-worth's a noble's blood. ‡
*Nor.* What, are you chaf'd?
Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance only
Which your disease requires.
*Buck.* I read in his looks
Matter against me; and his eye revil'd
Me, as his abject object: at this instant
He bores § me with some trick: he's gone to the king;
I'll follow, and out-stare him.
*Nor.* Stay, my lord,
And let your reason with your choler question

* Conducted.
† Wolsey was said to be the son of a butcher.
‡ A beggar's learning is thought more highly of than a nobleman's descent.
§ Stabs.

What 'tis you go about: to climb steep hills,
Requires slow pace at first: Anger is like
A full-hot horse; who being allowed his way,
Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England
Can advise me like you: be to yourself
As you would to your friend.

*Buck.* I'll to the king;
And from a mouth of honour quite cry down
This Ipswich fellow's insolence; or proclaim,
There's difference in no persons.

*Nor.* Be advised;
Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot
That it do singe yourself: We may outrun,
By violent swiftness, that which we run at,
And lose by over-running. Know you not,
The fire, that mounts the liquor till it run o'er,
In seeming to augment it, wastes it? Be advised:
I say again, there is no English soul
More stronger to direct you than yourself;
If with the sap of reason you would quench,
Or but allay, the fire of passion.

*Buck.* Sir,
I am thankful to you; and I'll go along
By your prescription;—but this top-proud fellow,
(Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but
From sincere motions,) by intelligence,
And proofs as clear as founts in July, when
We see each grain of gravel, I do know
To be corrupt and treasonous.

*Nor.* Say not, treasonous.

*Buck.* To the king I'll say't; and make my vouch as strong
As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,
Or wolf, or both, (for he is equal ravenous,
As he is subtle; and as prone to mischief,
As able to perform it: his mind and place
Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally,)
Only to show his pomp as well in France
As here at home, suggests* the king our master
To this last costly treaty, the interview,
That swallowed so much treasure, and like a glass
Did break i' the wrenching.†

*Nor.* 'Faith, and so it did.

*Buck.* Pray give me favour, Sir. This cunning cardinal
The articles o' the combination drew,
As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified,
As he cried, Thus let it be; to as much end,
As give a crutch to the dead: but our count-cardinal
Has done this, and 'tis well; for worthy Wolsey,
Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,
(Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy
To the old dam, treason,)—Charles the emperor,

* Excites. † Rinsing.

Under pretence to see the queen his aunt
(For 'twas, indeed, his colour; but he came
To whisper Wolsey,) here makes visitation:
His fears were, that the interview, betwixt
England and France, might, through their amity,
Breed him some prejudice; for from this league
Peep'd harms that menaced him: He privily
Deals with our cardinal; and, as I trow,—
Which I do well; for, I am sure, the emperor
Paid ere he promis'd; whereby his suit was granted,
Ere it was ask'd;—but when the way was made,
And paved with gold, the emperor thus desired;—
That he would please to alter the king's course,
And break the aforesaid peace. Let the king know,
(As soon he shall by me,) that thus the cardinal
Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,
And for his own advantage.

*Nor.* I am sorry
To hear this of him; and could wish he were
Something mistaken in't.

*Buck.* No, not a syllable;
I do pronounce him in that very shape,
He shall appear in proof.

*Enter* BRANDON; *a* SERGEANT *at Arms before him, and two or three of the guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.

*Serg.* Sir,
My lord the duke of Buckingham, and earl
Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I
Arrest thee of high treason, in the name
Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.* Lo you, my lord,
The net has fallen upon me; I shall perish
Under device and practice.*

*Bran.* I am sorry
To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on
The business present: 'tis his highness' pleasure
You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.* It will help me nothing,
To plead mine innocence; for that die is on me,
Which makes my whitest part black. The will of heaven
Be done in this and all things!—I obey,—
O my lord Aberg'any, fare you well.

*Bran.* Nay, he must bear you company: The king
[*To* ABERGAVENNY.
Is pleased you shall to the Tower, till you know
How he determines further.

*Aber.* As the duke said,
The will of heaven be done, and the king's pleasure
By me obey'd.

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from

* Unfair stratagems.

The king, to attach lord Montacute; and the bodies
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Court,
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—
*Buck.* So, so:
These are the limbs of the plot: no more, I hope.
*Bran.* A monk o' the Chartreux.
*Buck.* O, Nicholas Hopkins?
*Bran.* He.
*Buck.* My surveyor is false; the o'er great cardinal
Hath show'd him gold: my life is spann'd* already;
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham;
Whose figure even this instant clouds put on,
By dark'ning my clear sun.—My lord, farewell. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—The Council-Chamber.*

*Cornets.—Enter* KING HENRY, CARDINAL WOLSEY, *the Lords of the Council,* SIR THOMAS LOVELL, *Officers, and Attendants. The* KING *enters, leaning on the* CARDINAL'S *shoulder.*

*K. Hen.* My life itself, and the best heart of it,
Thanks you for this great care: I stood i'the level†
Of a full-charged confederacy, and give thanks
To you that choked it.—Let be call'd before us
That gentleman of Buckingham's: in person
I'll hear him his confessions justify;
And point by point the treasons of his master
He shall again relate.

*The* KING *takes his state.*‡ *The Lords of the Council take their several places. The* CARDINAL *places himself under the* KING'S *feet on his right side.*

*A noise within crying,* Room for the Queen. *Enter the* QUEEN, *ushered by the Dukes of* NORFOLK *and* SUFFOLK: *she kneels. The* KING *riseth from his state, takes her up, kisses, and placeth her by him.*

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel; I am a suitor.
*K. Hen.* Arise, and take place by us:—Half your suit
Never name to us; you have half our power:
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given;
Repeat your will, and take it.
*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.
That you would love yourself; and, in that love,
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor
The dignity of your office, is the point
Of my petition.
*K. Hen.* Lady, mine!—proceed.
*Q. Kath.* I am solicited, not by a few,
And those of true condition, that your subjects
Are in great grievance: there hath been commissions

* Measured. † In the aim. ‡ Seats himself on his throne.

Sent down among them, which have flaw'd the heart
Of all their loyalties:—wherein, although,
My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches
Most bitterly on you, as putter-on
Of these exactions, yet the king our master,
(Whose honour heaven shield from soil!) even he escapes not
Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears
In loud rebellion.

*Nor.* Not almost appears,
It doth appear; for, upon these taxations,
The clothiers all, not able to maintain
The many to them 'longing, have put off
The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,
Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger
And lack of other means, in desperate manner
Daring the event to the teeth, are all in uproar,
And danger serves among them.

*K. Hen.* Taxation!
Wherein? and what taxation?—My lord cardinal,
You that are blamed for it alike with us,
Know you of this taxation?

*Wol.* Please you, Sir,
I know but of a single part, in aught
Pertains to the state; and front but in that file*
Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.* No, my lord,
You know no more than others: but you frame
Things, that are known alike; which are not wholesome
To those which would not know them, and yet must
Perforce be their acquaintance. These exactions,
Whereof my sovereign would have note, they are
Most pestilent to the hearing; and, to bear them,
The back is sacrifice to the load. They say,
They are devised by you; or else you suffer
Too hard an exclamation.

*K. Hen.* Still exaction!
The nature of it? In what kind, let's know
Is this exaction?

*Q. Kath.* I am much too venturous
In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd
Under your promised pardon. The subject's grief
Comes through commissions, which compel from each
The sixth part of his substance, to be levied
Without delay; and the pretence for this
Is named, your wars in France: This makes bold mouths:
Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts freeze
Allegiance in them; their curses now,
Live where their prayers did; and it's come to pass,
That tractable obedience is a slave
To each incensed will. I would, your highness

* I am only one among the other counsellors.

Would give it quick consideration, for
There is no primer* business.
*K. Hen.* By my life,
This is against our pleasure.
*Wol.* And for me,
I have no farther gone in this, than by
A single voice; and that not pass'd me, but
By learned approbation of the judges.
If I am traduced by tongues, which neither know
My faculties, nor person, yet will be
The chronicles of my doing,—let me say,
'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake†
That virtue must go through. We must not stint‡
Our necessary actions, in the fear
To cope§ malicious censurers; which ever,
As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow
That is new trimmed; but benefit no further
Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,
By sick interpreters, once‖ weak ones, is
Not ours, or not allowed;¶ what worst, as oft,
Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up
For our best act. If we shall stand still,
In fear our motion will be mock'd or carp'd at,
We should take root here where we sit, or sit
State statues only.
*K. Hen.* Things done well,
And with a care, exempt themselves from fear;
Things done without example, in their issue
Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent
Of this commission? I believe, not any.
We must not rend our subjects from our laws,
And stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?
A trembling contribution! Why, we take,
From every tree, lop,** bark, and part o' the timber;
And, though we leave it with a root, thus hack'd,
The air will drink the sap. To every county,
Where this is question'd, send our letters, with
Free pardon to each man that has denied
The force of this commission: Pray, look to't;
I put it to your care.
*Wol.* A word with you. [*To the* SECRETARY.
Let there be letters writ to every shire,
Of the king's grace and pardon. The grieved commons
Hardly conceive of me; let it be noised,
That, through our intercession, this revokement
And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you
Further in the proceeding. [*Exit* SECRETARY

*Enter* SURVEYOR.

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry, that the duke of Buckingham
Is run in your displeasure.

* More urgent. † Thicket. ‡ Retard. § Encounter. ‖ Sometime. ¶ Approved. ** Branch.

*K. Hen.* It grieves many:
The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare speaker,
To nature none more bound; his training such,
That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,
And never seek for aid out of himself.
Yet see,
When these so noble benefits shall prove
Not well dispos'd, the mind growing once corrupt,
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly
Than ever they were fair. This man so cómplete,
Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and when we,
Almost with ravish'd list'ning, could not find
His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady,
Hath into monstrous habits put the graces
That once were his, and is become as black
As if besmear'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall hear
(This was his gentleman in trust,) of him
Things to strike honour sad.—Bid him recount
The fore-recited practices; whereof
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Wol.* Stand forth; and with bold spirit relate what you,
Most like a careful subject, have collected
Out of the duke of Buckingham.

*K. Hen.* Speak freely.

*Surv.* First, it was usual with him, every day
It would infect his speech, That if the king
Should without issue die, he'd carry* it so
To make the sceptre his: These very words
I have heard him utter to his son-in-law,
Lord Aberga'ny; to whom by oath he menaced
Revenge upon the cardinal.

*Wol.* Please your highness, note
This dangerous conception in this point.
Not friended by his wish, to your high person
His will is most malignant; and it stretches
Beyond you, to your friends.

*Q. Kath.* My learn'd lord cardinal,
Deliver all with charity.

*K. Hen.* Speak on:
How grounded he his title to the crown,
Upon our fail; to this point hast thou heard him
At any time speak aught?

*Surv.* He was brought to this
By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

*K. Hen.* What was that Hopkins?

*Surv.* Sir, a Chartreux friar,
His confessor; who fed him every minute
With words of sovereignty.

*K. Hen.* How know'st thou this?

*Surv.* Not long before your highness sped to France,
The duke being at the Rose,† within the parish

* Conduct, manage. † Now Merchant Taylors' School.

Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand
What was the speech amongst the Londoners
Concerning the French journey: I replied,
Men fear'd, the French would prove perfidious,
To the king's danger. Presently the duke
Said, 'Twas the fear, indeed; and that he doubted,
'Twould prove the verity of certain words
Spoke by a holy monk; *That oft*, says he,
*Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit*
*John de la Court, my chaplain, a choice hour*
*To hear from him a matter of some moment:*
*Whom after under the confession's seal*
*He solemnly had sworn, that, what he spoke,*
*My chaplain to no creature living, but*
*To me, should utter, with demure confidence*
*This pausingly ensued,—Neither the king, nor his heirs,*
*(Tell you the duke,) shall prosper: bid him strive*
*To gain the love of the commonalty; the duke*
*Shall govern England.*

*Q. Kath.* If I know you well,
You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your office
On the complaint o' the tenants: Take good heed,
You charge not in your spleen a noble person,
And spoil your nobler soul! I say, take heed;
Yes, heartily beseech you.

*K. Hen.* Let him on:—
Go forward.

*Surv.* On my soul, I'll speak but truth.
I told my lord the duke, By the devil's illusions
The monk might be deceived; and that 'twas dang'rous for him,
To ruminate on this so far, until
It forged him some design, which, being believed,
It was much like to do: He answer'd, *Tush!*
*It can do me no damage:* adding further,
That, had the king in his last sickness fail'd,
The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads
Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.* Ha! what, so rank?* Ah, ha!
There's mischief in this man:——Canst thou say further?

*Surv.* I can, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Proceed.

*Surv.* Being at Greenwich,
After your highness had reproved the duke
About Sir William Blomer,—

*K. Hen.* I remember,
Of such a time:—Being my servant sworn,
The duke retain'd him his.——But on; What hence?

Surv. *If*, quoth he, *I for this had been committed,*
*As to the Tower, I thought,—I would have play'd*
*The part my father meant to act upon*
*The usurper Richard: who, being at Salisbury,*

* *I. e.* as strong weeds.

*Made suit to come in his presence; which if granted,*
*As he made semblance of his duty, would*
*Have put his knife into him.*
*K. Hen.* A giant traitor!
*Wol.* Now, madam, may his highness live in freedom,
And this man out of prison?
*Q. Kath.* God mend all!
*K. Hen.* There's something more would out of thee; What say'st!
*Surv.* After—*the duke his father,*—with *the knife,*—
He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his dagger,
Another spread on his breast, mounting his eyes,
He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenour
Was,—Were he evil used, he would outgo
His father, by as much as a performance
Does an irresolute purpose.
*K. Hen.* There's his period,
To sheath his knife in us. He is attach'd;
Call him to present trial: if he may
Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,
Let him not seek't of us: By day and night!
He's traitor to the height. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN *and* LORD SANDS.

*Cham.* Is it possible, the spells of France should juggle
Men into such strange mysteries?*
*Sands.* New customs,
Though they be never so ridiculous,
Nay, let them be unmanly, yet are follow'd.
*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our English
Have got by the late voyage, is but merely
A fit† or two o' the face; but they are shrewd ones;
For when they hold them, you would swear directly,
Their very noses had been counsellors
To Pepin, or Clotharius, they keep state so.
*Sands.* They have all new legs, and lame ones; one would take it,
That never saw them pace before, the spavin
And springhalt‡ reign'd among them.
*Cham.* Death! my lord,
Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,
That, sure, they have worn out Christendom. How now?
What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

*Enter* SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

*Lov.* 'Faith, my lord,
I hear of none but the new proclamation
That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

* Artificial fashions. † Grimace. ‡ Convulsions in horses.

*Cham.* What it't for?
*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gallants,
That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and tailors.
*Cham.* I am glad, 'tis there; now I would pray our monsieurs
To think an English courtier may be wise,
And never see the Louvre.
*Lov.* They must either
(For so run the conditions) leave these remnants
Of fool, and feather, that they got in France,
With all their honourable points of ignorance,
Pertaining thereunto (as fights, and fireworks;
Abusing better men than they can be,
Out of a foreign wisdom), renouncing clean
The faith they have in tennis, and tall stockings,
Short blister'd* breeches, and those types of travel,
And understand again like honest men;
Or pack to their old playfellows: there I take it,
They may, *cum privilegio*, wear away
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd at.
*Sands.* 'Tis time to give them physic, their diseases
Are grown so catching.
*Cham.* What a loss our ladies
Will have of these trim vanities!
*Lov.* Ay, marry,
There will be woe indeed, lords; the sly whoresons
Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies;
A French song, and a fiddle, has no fellow.
*Sands.* The devil fiddle them! I am glad they're going
(For, sure, there's no converting of them); now
An honest country lord, as I am, beaten
A long time out of play, may bring his plain song,
And have an hour of hearing; and, by'r-lady,
Held current music too.
*Cham.* Well said, lord Sands;
Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.
*Sands.* No, my lord;
Nor shall not, while I have a stump.
*Cham.* Sir Thomas,
Whither were you a-going?
*Lov.* To the cardinal's;
Your lordship is a guest too.
*Cham.* O, 'tis true:
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,
To many lords and ladies; there will be
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.
*Lov.* That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed,
A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us:
His dew falls everywhere.
*Cham.* No doubt, he's noble;
He had a black mouth, that said other of him.
*Sands.* He may, my lord, he has wherewithal; in him,

* *I. e.* puffed.

Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doctrine:
Men of his way should be most liberal,
They are set here for examples.
*Cham.* True, they are so;
But few now give so great ones. My barge stays;*
Your lordship shall along:—Come, good Sir Thomas,
We shall be late else: which I would not be,
For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford,
This night to be comptrollers.
*Sands.* I am your lordship's. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—The Presence-chamber in York-place.*

*Hautboys.—A small table under a state for the* CARDINAL, *a longer table for the guests. Enter at one door* ANNE BULLEN, *and divers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, as guests; at another door, enter* SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.

*Guild.* Ladies, a general welcome from his grace
Salutes ye all: This night he dedicates
To fair content, and you: none here, he hopes,
In all this noble bevy, has brought with her
One care abroad; he would have all as merry
As first-good company, good wine, good welcome
Can make good people.——O, my lord, you are tardy;

*Enter* LORD CHAMBERLAIN, LORD SANDS, *and* SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

The very thought of this fair company
Clapp'd wings to me.
*Cham.* You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.
*Sands.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal
But half my lay-thoughts in him, some of these
Should find a running banquet ere they rested,
I think, would better please them: By my life,
They are a sweet society of fair ones.
*Lov.* O, that your lordship were but now confessor
To one or two of these!
*Sands.* I would, I were;
They should find easy penance.
*Lov.* 'Faith, how easy?
*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would afford it.
*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit? Sir Harry,
Place you that side, I'll take the charge of this:
His grace is ent'ring.—Nay, you must not freeze;
Two women placed together makes cold weather:
My lord Sands, you are one will keep them waking;
Pray, sit between these ladies.
*Sands.* By my faith,
And thank your lordship.—By your leave, sweet ladies:
[*Seats himself between* ANNE BULLEN, *and another Lady.*

* The speaker is at Bridewell, and the Cardinal's house was at Whitehall.

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me;
I had it from my father.
*Anne.* Was he mad, Sir?
*Sands.* O, very mad, exceeding mad; in love too:
But he would bite none; just as I do now,
He would kiss you twenty with a breath. [*Kisses her.*
*Cham.* Well said, my lord.—
So, now you are fairly seated:—Gentlemen,
The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies
Pass away frowning.
*Sands.* For my little cure,
Let me alone.

*Hautboys.—Enter* CARDINAL WOLSEY, *attended; and takes his state.**

*Wol.* You are welcome, my fair guests; that noble lady,
Or gentleman, that is not freely merry,
Is not my friend: This, to confirm my welcome;
And to you all good health. [*Drinks.*
*Sands.* Your grace is noble;—
Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,
And save me so much talking.
*Wol.* My lord Sands,
I am beholden to you: cheer your neighbours.—
Ladies, you are not merry;—Gentlemen,
Whose fault is this?
*Sands.* The red wine first must rise
In their fair cheeks, my lord; then we shall have them
Talk us to silence.
*Anne.* You are a merry gamester,
My lord Sands.
*Sands.* Yes; if I make my play.
Here's to your ladyship; and pledge it, madam,
For 'tis to such a thing,——
*Anne.* You cannot show me.
*Sands.* I told your grace, they would talk anon.
[*Drum and trumpets within: chambers† discharged.*
*Wol.* What's that?
*Cham.* Look out there, some of you. [*Exit a* SERVANT.
*Wol.* What warlike voice?
And to what end is this?—Nay, ladies, fear not;
By all the laws of war you are privileged.

*Re-enter* SERVANT.

*Cham.* How now? what is 't?
*Serv.* A troop of noble strangers;
For so they seem: they have left their barge, and landed;
And hither make, as great ambassadors
From foreign princes.
*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain,

* Seats himself in his chair of state. † Small cannon.

Go, give them welcome, you can speak the French tongue;
And, pray, receive them nobly; and conduct them,
Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty
Shall shine at full upon them:—Some attend him.—
[*Exit* CHAMBERLAIN, *attended. All arise, and tables removed.*
You have now a broken banquet; but we'll mend it.
A good digestion to you all: and, once more,
I shower a welcome on you;—Welcome all.

*Hautboys.—Enter the* KING, *and twelve others, as Maskers, habited like Shepherds, with sixteen Torch-bearers; ushered by the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN. *They pass directly before the* CARDINAL, *and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company! what are their pleasures?
*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd
To tell your grace;—That, having heard by fame
Of this so noble and so fair assembly
This night to meet here, they could do no less,
Out of the great respect they bear to beauty,
But leave their flocks; and, under your fair conduct,
Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat
An hour of revels with them.
*Wol.* Say, lord Chamberlain,
They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay them
A thousand thanks, and pray them take their pleasures.
[*Ladies chosen for the dance. The* KING *chooses* ANNE BULLEN.
*K. Hen.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd! O, beauty,
Till now I never knew thee. [*Music. Dance.*
*Wol.* My lord,——
*Cham.* Your grace?
*Wol.* Pray, tell them thus much from me:
There should be one amongst them, by his person,
More worthy this place than myself; to whom,
If I but knew him, with my love and duty
I would surrender it.
*Cham.* I will, my lord.
[CHAMBERLAIN *goes to the company, and returns.*
*Wol.* What say they?
*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess,
There is, indeed; which they would have your grace
Find out, and he will take it.*
*Wol.* Let me see then.— [*Comes from his state.*
By all your good leaves, gentlemen;—Here I'll make
My royal choice.
*K. Hen.* You have found him, cardinal: [*Unmasking.*
You hold a fair assembly; you do well, lord:
You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,
I should judge now unhappily.†

* *I.e.* the chief place. † Mischievously.

*Wol.* I am glad,
Your grace is grown so pleasant.
*K. Hen.* My lord chamberlain,
Pr'ythee, come hither: What fair lady's that?
*Cham.* An't please your grace, Sir Thomas Bullen's daughter,
The viscount Rochford, one of her highness' women.
*K. Hen.* By heaven, she is a dainty one.—Sweetheart,
I were unmannerly, to take you out,
And not to kiss you.—A health, gentlemen,
Let it go round.
*Wol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready
I' the privy chamber?
*Lov.* Yes, my lord.
*Wol.* Your grace,
I fear, with dancing is a little heated
*K. Hen.* I fear, too much.
*Wol.* There's fresher air, my lord,
In the next chamber.
*K. Hen.* Lead in your ladies, every one.—Sweet partner,
I must not yet forsake you:—Let's be merry;—
Good my lord cardinal, I have half a dozen healths
To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure
To lead them once again; and then let's dream
Who's best in favour.—Let the music knock it.
[*Exeunt, with trumpets.*

---

## ACT II.

### *SCENE I.—A Street.*

*Enter two* GENTLEMEN, *meeting.*

1 *Gent.* Whither away so fast?
2 *Gent.* O,—God save you!
Even to the hall to hear what shall become
Of the great duke of Buckingham.
1 *Gent.* I'll save you
That labour, Sir. All's now done, but the ceremony
Of bringing back the prisoner.
2 *Gent.* Were you there?
1 *Gent.* Yes, indeed, was I.
2 *Gent.* Pray, speak, what has happen'd?
1 *Gent.* You may guess quickly what.
2 *Gent.* Is he found guilty?
1 *Gent.* Yes, truly, is he, and condemn'd upon it.
2 *Gent.* I am sorry for't.
1 *Gent.* So are a number more.
2 *Gent.* But, pray, how pass'd it?

1 *Gent.* I'll tell you in a little. The great duke
Came to the bar; where, to his accusations,
He pleaded still, not guilty, and alleg'd
Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.
The king's attorney, on the contrary,
Urg'd on the examinations, proofs, confessions,
Of divers witnesses; which the duke desired
To him brought, *vivâ voce*, to his face:
At which appear'd against him, his surveyor;
Sir Gilbert Peck, his chancellor; and John Court,
Confessor to him; with that devil-monk,
Hopkins, that made this mischief.
2 *Gent.* That was he
That fed him with his prophecies?
1 *Gent.* The same.
All these accused him strongly, which he fain
Would have flung from him, but, indeed, he could not:
And so his peers, upon this evidence,
Have found him guilty of high treason. Much
He spoke, and learnedly, for life; but all
Was either pitied in him, or forgotten.
2 *Gent.* After all this, how did he bear himself?
1 *Gent.* When he was brought again to the bar,—to hear
His knell wrung out, his judgment,—he was stirred
With such an agony, he sweat extremely,
And something spoke in choler, ill, and hasty:
But he fell to himself again, and, sweetly,
In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.
2 *Gent.* I do not think, he fears death.
1 *Gent.* Sure, he does not,
He never was so womanish; the cause
He may a little grieve at.
2 *Gent.* Certainly.
The cardinal is the end of this.
1 *Gent.* 'Tis likely,
By all conjectures: First, Kildare's attainder,
Then deputy of Ireland; who remov'd,
Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,
Lest he should help his father.
2 *Gent.* That trick of state
Was a deep envious one.
1 *Gent.* At his return,
No doubt he will requite it. This is noted,
And generally; whoever the king favours,
The cardinal instantly will find employment,
And far enough from court too.
2 *Gent.* All the commons
Hate him perniciously, and o' my conscience,
Wish him ten fathom deep: this duke as much
They love and dote on; call him, bounteous Buckingham,
The mirror of all courtesy;
1 *Gent.* Stay there, Sir,
And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM *from his arraignment; Tipstaves before him, the axe with the edge towards him; halberts on each side: with him, Sir* THOMAS LOVELL, *Sir* NICHOLAS VAUX, *Sir* WILLIAM SANDS, *and common people.*

2 *Gent.* Let's stand close, and behold him.
*Buck.* All good people,
You that thus far have come to pity me,
Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.
I have this day received a traitor's judgment,
And by that name must die; yet, heaven bear witness,
And if I have a conscience, let it sink me,
Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful!
The law I bear no malice for my death,
It has done, upon the premises, but justice.
But those, that sought it, I could wish more Christians:
Be what they will, I heartily forgive them:
Yet let them look they glory not in mischief.
Nor build their evils on the graves of great men;
For then my guiltless blood must cry against them.
For further life in this world I ne'er hope,
Nor will I sue, although the king have mercies
More than I dare make faults. You few that lov'd me,
And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham,
His noble friends, and fellows, whom to leave
Is only bitter to him, only dying,
Go with me, like good angels, to my end:
And, as the long divorce of steel falls on me,
Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice,
And lift my soul to heaven. Lead on o'God's name.
*Lov.* I do beseech your grace for charity,
If ever any malice in your heart
Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.
*Buck.* Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive you
As I would be forgiven: I forgive all;
There cannot be those numberless offences
'Gainst me, I can't take peace with: no black envy *
Shall make † my grave.—Commend me to his grace:
And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray, tell him,
You met him half in heaven: my vows and prayers
Yet are the king's; and, till my soul forsake me,
Shall cry for blessings on him: May he live
Longer than I have time to tell his years!
Ever belov'd, and loving, may his rule be!
And when old time shall lead him to his end,
Goodness and he fill up one monument!
*Lov.* To the water side I must conduct your grace;
Then give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux,
Who undertakes you to your end.
*Vaux.* Prepare there,
The duke is coming: see, the barge be ready;

* Malice. † Close.

And fit it with such furniture, as suits
The greatness of his person.
*Buck.* Nay, Sir Nicholas,
Let it alone; my state now will but mock me,
When I came hither, I was lord high constable,
And duke of Buckingham; now poor Edward Bohun:
Yet I am richer than my base accusers,
That never knew what truth meant: I now seal it;
And with that blood will make them one day groan for't.
My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,
Who first rais'd head against usurping Richard,
Flying for succour to his servant Banister,
Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,
And without trial fell; God's peace be with him!
Henry the seventh succeeding, truly pitying
My father's loss, like a most royal prince,
Restor'd me to my honours, and, out of ruins,
Made my name once more noble. Now his son,
Henry the Eighth, life, honour, name, and all
That made me happy, at one stroke has taken
For ever from the world. I had my trial,
And must needs say, a noble one; which makes me
A little happier than my wretched father:
Yet thus far we are one in fortunes,—Both
Fell by our servants, by those men we lov'd most;
A most unnatural and faithless service!
Heaven has an end in all: yet you that hear me,
This from a dying man receive as certain:
Where you are liberal of your loves, and counsels,
Be sure, you be not loose; for those you make friends,
And give your hearts to, when they once perceive
The least rub in your fortunes, fall away
Like water from ye, never found again
But where they mean to sink ye. All good people,
Pray for me! I must now forsake ye; the last hour
Of my long weary life is come upon me.
Farewell:
And when you would say something that is sad,
Speak how I fell.—I have done; and God forgive me!
[*Exeunt* BUCKINGHAM *and train.*
1 *Gent.* O, this is full of pity!—Sir, it calls
I fear, too many curses on their heads,
That were the authors.
2 *Gent.* If the duke be guiltless,
'Tis full of woe; yet I can give you inkling
Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,
Greater than this.
1 *Gent.* Good angels keep it from us!
Where may it be? you do not doubt my faith, Sir?
2. *Gent.* This secret is so weighty, 'twill require
A strong faith * to conceal it;

* Great fidelity

1 *Gent.* Let me have it;
I do not talk much.
2 *Gent.* I am confident;
You shall, Sir: did you not of late days hear
A buzzing, of a separation
Between the king and Katharine?
1 *Gent.* Yes, but it held not:
For when the king once heard it, out of anger
He sent command to the lord mayor, straight
To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues
That durst disperse it.
2 *Gent.* But that slander, Sir,
Is found a truth now: for it grows again
Fresher than e'er it was; and held for certain,
The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,
Or some about him near, have, out of malice
To the good queen, possess'd him with a scruple
That will undo her: To confirm this, too,
Cardinal Campeius is arrived, and lately;
As all think, for this business.
1 *Gent.* 'Tis the cardinal;
And merely to revenge him on the emperor,
For not bestowing on him, at his asking,
The archbishoprick of Toledo, this is purposed.
2 *Gent.* I think you have hit the mark: But is't not cruel,
That she should feel the smart of this? The cardinal
Will have his will, and she must fall.
1 *Gent.* 'Tis woful.
We are too open here to argue this;
Let's think in private more. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—An Ante-chamber in the Palace.*

*Enter the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN, *reading a letter.*

Cham. *My lord,—The horses your lordship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were young, and handsome; and of the best breed in the north. When they were ready to set out for London, a man of my lord cardinal's, by commission, and main power, took 'em from me; with this reason,—His master would be served before a subject, if not before the king: which stopped our mouths, Sir.*
I fear, he will, indeed: well let him have them.
He will have all, I think.

*Enter the Dukes of* NORFOLK *and* SUFFOLK.

*Nor.* Well met, my good
Lord Chamberlain.
*Cham.* Good day to both your graces.
*Suf.* How is the king employ'd?
*Cham.* I left him private,
Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

*Nor.* What's the cause?
*Cham.* It seems, the marriage with his brother's wife
Has crept too near his conscience.
*Suf.* No, his conscience
Has crept too near another lady.
*Nor.* 'Tis so;
This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal;
That blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,
Turns what he lists. The king will know him one day.
*Suf.* Pray God he do! he'll never know himself else.
*Nor.* How holily he works in all his business!
And with what zeal! For now he has crack'd the league
Between us and the emperor, the queen's great nephew,
He dives into the king's soul, and there scatters
Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience,
Fears, and despairs, and all these for his marriage:
And, out of all these to restore the king,
He counsels a divorce: a loss of her
That, like a jewel, has hung twenty years
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre;
Of her that loves him with that excellence
That angels love good men with; even of her
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,
Will bless the king: and is not this course pious?
*Cham.* Heaven keep me from such counsel! 'tis most true,
These news are everywhere; every tongue speaks them,
And every true heart weeps for't: All, that dare
Look into these affairs, see this main end,—
The French king's sister. Heaven will one day open
The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon
This bold bad man.
*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.
*Nor.* We had need pray,
And heartily, for our deliverance;
Or this imperious man will work us all
From princes into pages: all men's honours
Lie in one lump before him, to be fashion'd
Into what pitch* he please.
*Suf.* For me, my lords,
I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:
As I am made without him, so I'll stand,
If the king please; his curses and his blessings
Touch me alike, they are breath I not believe in.
I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him
To him, that made him proud, the pope.
*Nor.* Let's in;
And, with some other business, put the king
From these sad thoughts, that work too much upon him:—
My lord, you'll bear us company?
*Cham.* Excuse me;
The king hath sent me other-where; besides,

* High or low.

You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:
Health to your lordships.
*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.
[*Exit* LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

NORFOLK *opens a folding-door. The* KING *is discovered sitting, and reading pensively.*

*Suf.* How sad he looks! sure, he is much afflicted.
*K. Hen.* Who is there? ha?
*Nor.* 'Pray God, he be not angry.
*K. Hen.* Who's there, I say? How dare you thrust yourselves
Into my private meditations?
Who am I? ha?
*Nor.* A gracious king, that pardons all offences
Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty, this way,
Is business of estate; in which, we come
To know your royal pleasure.
*K. Hen.* You are too bold;
Go to; I'll make ye know your times of business:
Is this an hour for temporal affairs? ha?—

*Enter* WOLSEY *and* CAMPEIUS.

Who's there? my good lord cardinal?—O my Wolsey,
The quiet of my wounded conscience,
Thou art a cure fit for a king.—You're welcome, [*To* CAMPEIUS.
Most learned reverend Sir, into our kingdom;
Use us, and it:—My good lord, have great care
I be not found a talker. [*To* WOLSEY.
*Wol.* Sir, you cannot.
I would your grace would give us but an hour
Of private conference.
*K. Hen.* We are busy; go. [*To* NORFOLK *and* SUFFOLK.
*Nor.* This priest has no pride in him?
*Suf.* Not to speak of;
I would not be so sick though,* for his place:
But this cannot continue. *Aside.*
*Nor.* If it do,
I'll venture one have at him.
*Suf.* I another.
[*Exeunt* NORFOLK *and* SUFFOLK.
*Wol.* Your grace has given a precedent of wisdom
Above all princes, in committing freely
Your scruple to the voice of Christendom:
Who can be angry now? what envy reach you?
The Spaniard, tied by blood and favour to her,
Must now confess, if they have any goodness,
The trial just and noble. All the clerks,
I mean, the learned ones, in Christian kingdoms,
Have their free voices—Rome, the nurse of judgment,
Invited by your noble self, hath sent

* So sick as he is proud.

One general tongue unto us, this good man,
This just and learned priest, cardinal Campeius;
Whom, once more, I present unto your highness.
*K. Hen.* And, once more, in mine arms I bid him welcome,
And thank the holy conclave for their loves;
They have sent me such a man I would have wish'd for.
*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve all strangers' loves,
You are so noble: To your highness' hand
I tender my commission; by whose virtue
(The court of Rome commanding),—you, my lord
Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their servant,
In the unpartial judging of this business.
*K. Hen.* Two equal men. The queen shall be acquainted
Forthwith, for what you come:—Where's Gardiner?
*Wol.* I know, your majesty has always loved her
So dear in heart, not to deny her that
A woman of less place might ask by law,
Scholars, allow'd freely to argue for her.
*K. Hen.* Ay, and the best, she shall have; and my favour
To him that does best; God forbid else. Cardinal,
Pr'ythee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary;
I find him a fit fellow. [*Exit* WOLSEY.

*Re-enter* WOLSEY, *with* GARDINER.

*Wol.* Give me your hand: much joy and favour to you;
You are the king's now.
*Gard.* But to be commanded
For ever by your grace, whose hand has raised me. [*Aside.*
*K. Hen.* Come hither, Gardiner. [*They converse apart.*
*Cam.* My lord of York, was not one doctor Pace
In this man's place before him?
*Wol.* Yes, he was.
*Cam.* Was he not held a learned man?
*Wol.* Yes, surely.
*Cam.* Believe me, there's an ill opinion spread then
Even of yourself, lord cardinal.
*Wol.* How! of me!
*Cam.* They will not stick to say, you envied him;
And, fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,
Kept him a foreign man* still; which so grieved him,
That he ran mad, and died.
*Wol.* Heaven's peace be with him!
That's Christian care enough: for living murmurers,
There's places of rebuke. He was a fool;
For he would needs be virtuous: That good fellow,
If I command him, follows my appointment;
I will have none so near else. Learn this, brother,
We live not to be griped by meaner persons.
*K. Hen.* Deliver this with modesty to the queen.
[*Exit* GARDINER.
The most convenient place that I can think of,

* Abroad.

For such receipt of learning, is Black-friars;
There ye shall meet about this weighty business:—
My Wolsey, see it furnish'd.—O my lord,
Would it not grieve an able man, to leave
So sweet a bedfellow? But, conscience, conscience;—
O, 'tis a tender place, and I must leave her. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—An Ante-Chamber in the* QUEEN'S *apartments.*
*Enter* ANNE BULLEN, *and an* OLD LADY.

*Anne.* Not for that neither;—Here's the pang that pinches:
His highness having lived so long with her: and she
So good a lady, that no tongue could ever
Pronounce dishonour of her,—by my life,
She never knew harm-doing:—O now after
So many courses of the sun enthroned,
Still growing in a majesty and pomp,
The which to leave's a thousand-fold more bitter, than
'Tis sweet at first to acquire,—after this process,
To give her the avaunt!* it is a pity
Would move a monster.
*Old L.* Hearts of most hard temper
Melt and lament for her.
*Anne.* O, God's will! much better,
She ne'er had known pomp: though it be temporal,
Yet, if that quarrel,† fortune, do divorce
It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance, panging
As soul and body's severing.
*Old L.* Alas, poor lady!
She's a stranger now again.‡
*Anne.* So much the more
Must pity drop upon her. Verily,
I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,
And range with humble livers in content,
Than to be perk'd up in a glistering grief,
And wear a golden sorrow.
*Old L.* Our content
Is our best having.§
*Anne.* By my troth, and maidenhead,
I would not be a queen.
*Old L.* Beshrew me, I would,
And venture maidenhead for't; and so would you,
For all this spice of your hypocrisy:
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,
Have too a woman's heart; which ever yet
Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty;
Which, to say sooth, are blessings: and which gifts
(Saving your mincing) the capacity
Of your soft cheveril‖ conscience would receive,
If you might please to stretch it.
*Anne.* Nay, good troth,—

* Sentence of ejection. † Quarreler. ‡ No longer an Englishwoman. § Possession. ‖ Kid-skin.

*Old L.* Yes, troth, and troth,—You would not be a queen?
*Anne.* No, not for all the riches under heaven.
*Old L.* 'Tis strange; a three-pence bow'd* would hire me,
Old as I am, to queen it: But, I pray you,
What think you of a duchess? have you limbs
To bear that load of title?
*Anne.* No, in truth.
*Old L.* Then you are weakly made: Pluck off a little;†
I would not be a young count in your way,
For more than blushing comes to: if your back
Cannot vouchsafe this burden, 'tis too weak
Ever to get a boy.
*Anne.* How you do talk!
I swear again, I would not be a queen
For all the world.
*Old L.* In faith, for little England
You'd venture an emballing: I myself
Would for Carnarvonshire, although there 'long'd
No more to the crown but that. Lo, who comes here?

*Enter the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

*Cham.* Good morrow, ladies. What wer't worth to know
The secret of your conference?
*Anne.* My good lord,
Not your demand; it values not your asking:
Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.
*Cham.* It was a gentle business, and becoming
The action of good women: there is hope,
All will be well.
*Anne.* Now I pray God, amen!
*Cham.* You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly blessings
Follow such creatures. That you may, fair lady,
Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's
Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty
Commends his good opinion to you, and
Does purpose honour to you no less flowing
Than marchioness of Pembroke; to which title
A thousand pounds a year, annual support,
Out of his grace he adds.
*Anne.* I do not know,
What kind of my obedience I should tender;
More than my all is nothing; nor my prayers
Are not words duly hallow'd, nor my wishes
More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers, and wishes,
Are all I can return. 'Beseech your lordship,
Vouchsafe to speak my thanks, and my obedience,
As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness,
Whose health, and royalty, I pray for.
*Cham.* Lady,
I shall not fail to approve‡ the fair conceit,
The king have of you.—I have perused her well; [*Aside.*

* Crooked. † Descend a little lower. ‡ Improve.

Beauty and honour in her are so mingled,
That they have caught the king: and who knows yet,
But from this lady may proceed a gem,
To lighten all this isle?—I'll to the king,
And say, I spoke with you.

*Anne.* My honour'd lord. [*Exit* LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

*Old L.* Why, this it is; see, see!
I have been begging sixteen years in court
(And yet a courtier beggarly), nor could
Come pat betwixt too early and too late,
For any suit of pounds: and you, (O fate!)
A very fresh-fish here, (fie, fie upon
This compell'd fortune!) have your mouth fill'd up,
Before you open it.

*Anne.* This is strange to me.

*Old L.* How tastes it? is it bitter? forty pence,* no.
There was a lady once ('tis an old story),
That would not be a queen, that would she not,
For all the mud in Egypt:—Have you heard it?

*Anne.* Come, you are pleasant.

*Old L.* With your theme, I could
O'ermount the lark. The marchioness of Pembroke!
A thousand pounds a year! for pure respect;
No other obligation: By my life,
That promises more thousands: Honour's train
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time,
I know, your back will bear a duchess;—Say,
Are you not stronger than you were?

*Anne.* Good lady,
Make yourself mirth with your particular fancy,
And leave me out on't. 'Would I had no being,
If this salute my blood a jot; it faints me,
To think what follows.
The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful
In our long absence: Pray, do not deliver
What here you have heard, to her.

*Old L.* What do you think me? [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—A Hall in Black-friars.*

*Trumpets, sennet,† and cornets. Enter two* VERGERS, *with short silver wands; next them, two* SCRIBES, *in the habits of doctors; after them the Archbishop of* CANTERBURY *alone; after him, the Bishops of* LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHESTER, *and* SAINT ASAPH; *next them, with some small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing the purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal's hat; then two Priests, bearing each a silver cross; then a Gentleman-Usher bare-headed, accompanied with a Sergeant at Arms, bearing a silver mace: then two Gentlemen, bearing two great silver pillars;‡ after them, side by side, the two Cardinals*

* *I. e.* a small wager. † Flourish on cornets.
‡ Ensigns of dignity carried before cardinals.

WOLSEY *and* CAMPEIUS; *two Noblemen with the sword and mace. Then enter the* KING *and* QUEEN, *and their Trains. The King takes place under the cloth of state; the two cardinals sit under him as judges. The Queen takes place at some distance from the King. The Bishops place themselves on each side the court, in manner of a consistory: between them, the Scribes. The Lords sit next the Bishops. The crier and the rest of the Attendants stand in convenient order about the stage.*

*Wol.* Whilst our commission from Rome is read,
Let silence be commanded.
*K. Hen.* What's the need?
It hath already publicly been read,
And on all sides the authority allow'd;
You may then spare that time.
*Wol.* Be't so:—Proceed.
*Scribe.* Say, Henry king of England, come into the court.
*Crier.* Henry king of England, &c.
*K. Hen.* Here.
*Scribe.* Say, Katharine queen of England, come into court.
*Crier.* Katharine queen of England, &c.

[*The* QUEEN *makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the* KING, *and kneels, at his feet; then speaks.*

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you, do me right and justice;
And to bestow your pity on me: for
I am a most poor woman, and a stranger,
Born out of your dominions; having here
No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance
Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas Sir,
In what have I offended you? what cause
Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure,
That thus you should proceed to put me off,
And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,
I have been to you a true and humble wife,
At all times to your will conformable:
Ever in fear to kindle your dislike,
Yea, subject to your countenance; glad, or sorry,
As I saw it inclined. When was the hour,
I ever contradicted your desire,
Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends
Have I not strove to love, although I knew
He were mine enemy? what friend of mine
That had to him derived your anger, did I
Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice
He was from thence discharged? Sir, call to mind
That I have been your wife in this obedience,
Upwards of twenty years, and have been bless'd
With many children by you: If, in the course
And process of this time, you can report,
And prove it too, against mine honour aught,
My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty,

Against your sacred person, in God's name,
Turn me away; and let the foul'st contempt
Shut door upon me, and so give me up
To the sharpest kind of justice. Please you, Sir,
The king, your father, was reputed for
A prince most prudent, of an excellent
And unmatch'd wit and judgment: Ferdinand,
My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one
The wisest prince, that there had reign'd by many
A year before: It is not to be question'd
That they had gather'd a wise council to them
Of every realm, that did debate this business,
Who deem'd our marriage lawful: Wherefore I humbly
Beseech you, Sir, to spare me, till I may
Be by my friends in Spain advised; whose counsel
I will implore: if not; i' the name of God,
Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.* You have here, lady
(And of your choice), these reverend fathers; men
Of singular integrity and learning,
Yea, the elect of the land, who are assembled
To plead your cause: It shall be therefore bootless, *
That longer you desire the court; as well
For your own quiet, as to rectify
What is unsettled in the king.

*Cam.* His grace
Hath spoken well and justly: Therefore, Madam,
It's fit this royal session do proceed;
And that, without delay, their arguments
Be now produced, and heard.

*Q. Kath.* Lord cardinal,—
To you I speak.

*Wol.* Your pleasure, Madam!

*Q. Kath.* Sir,
I am about to weep; but, thinking that
We are a queen (or long have dream'd so), certain,
The daughter of a king, my drops of tears
I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.* Be patient yet.

*Q. Kath.* I will, when you are humble; nay, before,
Or God will punish me. I do believe,
Induced by potent circumstances, that
You are mine enemy; and make my challenge,
You shall not be my judge: for it is you
Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me,—
Which God's dew quench!—Therefore, I say again,
I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul,
Refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once more,
I hold my most malicious foe, and think not
At all a friend to truth.

*Wol.* I do profess

* Useless.

You speak not like yourself; who ever yet
Have stood to charity, and display'd the effects
Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom
O'ertopping woman's power. Madam, you do me wrong:
I have no spleen against you; nor injustice
For you, or any: how far I have proceeded,
Or how far further shall, is warranted
By a commission from the consistory,
Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You charge me,
That I have blown this coal: I do deny it:
The king is present: if it be known to him,
That I gainsay * my deed, how may he wound,
And worthily, my falsehood? yea, as much
As you have done my truth. But if he know
That I am free of your report, he knows,
I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him
It lies, to cure me: and the cure is, to
Remove these thoughts from you; The which before
His highness shall speak in, I do beseech
You, gracious Madam, to unthink your speaking,
And to say so no more.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord,
I am a simple woman, much too weak
To oppose your cunning. You are meek, and humble-mouth'd;
You sign your place and calling, in full seeming, †
With meekness and humility: but your heart
Is cramm'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride.
You have, by fortune, and his highness' favours,
Gone slightly o'er low steps; and now are mounted
Where powers are your retainers: and your words,
Domestics to you, serve your will, as 't please
Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell you,
You tender more your person's honour, than
Your high profession spiritual: That again
I do refuse you for my judge; and here,
Before you all, appeal unto the pope,
To bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness,
And to be judged by him.

[*She curtsies to the* KING, *and offers to depart.*

*Cam.* The queen is obstinate,
Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and
Disdainful to be tried by it; 'tis not well.
She's going away.

*K. Hen.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine queen of England, come into the court.

*Grif.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? pray you, keep your way:
When you are call'd, return.—Now the Lord help,
They vex me past my patience!—pray you, pass on:
I will not tarry: no, nor ever more,

* Deny. † Appearance.

Upon this business, my appearance make
In any of their courts.

[*Exeunt* QUEEN, GRIFFITH, *and her other Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Go thy ways, Kate:
That man i' the world, who shall report he has
A better wife, let him in nought be trusted,
For speaking false in that: Thou art, alone
(If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,
Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government,—
Obeying in commanding,—and thy parts
Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee out*),
The queen of earthly queens:—she is noble born;
And, like her true nobility, she has
Carried herself towards me.

*Wol.* Most gracious Sir,
In humblest manner I require your highness,
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing
Of all these ears (for where I am robb'd and bound,
There must I be unloosed; although not there
At once † and fully satisfied), whether ever I
Did broach this business to your highness; or
Laid any scruple in your way, which might
Induce you to the question on't? or ever
Have to you,—but with thanks to God for such
A royal lady,—spake one the least word, might
Be to the prejudice of her present state,
Or touch of her good person?

*K. Hen.* My lord cardinal,
I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,
I free you from't. You are not to be taught
That you have many enemies, that know not
Why they are so, but, like to village curs,
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these
The queen is put in anger. You are excused
But will you be more justified? you ever
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business; never
Desired it to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd; oft,
The passages ‡ made toward it:—on my honour,
I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,
And thus far clear him. Now, what moved me to't,—
I will be bold with time, and your attention:—
Then mark the inducement. Thus it came;—give heed to't—
My conscience first received a tenderness,
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd
By the bishop of Bayonne, then French ambassador;
Who had been hither sent on the debating
A marriage, 'twixt the duke of Orleans and
Our daughter Mary: I' the progress of this business,
Ere a determinate resolution, he
(I mean, the bishop) did require a respite;

* Speak out thy merits. † Immediately satisfied.
‡ Closed or fastened.

Wherein he might the king his lord advértise
Whether our daughter were legitimate,
Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,
Sometime our brother's wife. This respite shook
The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,
Yea, with a splitting power, and made to tremble
The region of my breast; which forced such way
That many mazed considerings did throng,
And press'd in with this caution. First, methought,
I stood not in the smile of heaven; who had
Commanded nature, that my lady's womb,
If not conceived a male child by me, should
Do no more offices of life to't, than
The grave does to the dead: for her male issue
Or died where they were made, or shortly after
This world had air'd them: Hence I took a thought,
This was a judgment on me; that my kingdom,
Well worthy the best heir o' the world, should not
Be gladded in't by me: then follows, that
I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in
By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me
Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling* in
The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer
Toward this remedy, whereupon we are
Now present here together; that's to say,
I meant to rectify my conscience,—which
I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,—
By all the reverend fathers of the land,
And doctors learn'd,—First I began in private
With you, my lord of Lincoln; you remember
How under my oppression I did reek,†
When I first moved you.

*Lin.* Very well, my liege.

*K. Hen.* I have spoke long; be pleased yourself to say
How far you satisfied me.

*Lin.* So please your highness,
The question did at first so stagger me,—
Bearing a state of mighty moment in't,
And consequence of dread,—that I committed
The daring'st counsel which I had, to doubt;
And did entreat your highness to this course,
Which you are running here.

*K. Hen.* I then moved you,
My lord of Canterbury; and got your leave
To make this present summons:—Unsolicited
I left no reverend person in this court;
But by particular consent proceeded
Under your hands and seals. Therefore, go on:
For no dislike i' the world against the person
Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points
Of my alleged reasons, drive this forward:

* Tossed about without guidance. † Waste, or wear away.

Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life,
And kingly dignity, we are contented
To wear our mortal state to come, with her,
Katharine our queen, before the primest creature
That's paragon'd * o' the world.
*Cam.* So please your highness,
The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness
That we adjourn this court till further day:
Meanwhile must be an earnest motion
Made to the queen, to call back her appeal
She intends unto his holiness. [*They rise to depart.*
*K. Hen.* I may perceive, [*Aside.*
These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor
This dilatory sloth, and tricks of Rome.
My learn'd and well-beloved servant, Cranmer,
Pr'ythee, return! with thy approach, I know,
My comfort comes along. Break up the court:
I say, set on. [*Exeunt in manner as they entered.*

---

# ACT III.

## *SCENE I.—Palace at Bridewell.*

*A room in the Queen's apartment.*

*The* QUEEN, *and some of her women, at work.*

*Q. Kath.* Take thy lute, wench: my soul grows sad with troubles;
Sing, and disperse them, if thou canst; leave working.

SONG.

*Orpheus with his lute made trees,*
*And the mountain-tops, that freeze,*
*Bow themselves, when he did sing;*
*To his music, plants, and flowers,*
*Ever sprung; as sun, and showers.*
*There had been a lasting spring.*

*Everything that heard him play,*
*Even the billows of the sea,*
*Hung their heads, and then lay by.*
*In sweet music is such art;*
*Killing care and grief of heart,*
*Fall asleep, or hearing, die.*

*Enter a* GENTLEMAN.

*Q. Kath.* How now?

* Without compare.

*Gent.* An't please your grace, the two great cardinals
Wait in the presence.*
*Q. Kath.* Would they speak with me?
*Gent.* They will'd me say so, Madam.
*Q. Kath.* Pray their graces
To come near. [*Exit* GENTLEMAN.] What can be their business
With me, a poor weak woman, fallen from favour?
I do not like their coming, now I think on't.
They should be good men; their affairs as righteous:
But all hoods make not monks.

*Enter* WOLSEY *and* CAMPEIUS.

*Wol.* Peace to your highness!
*Q. Kath.* Your graces find me here part of a housewife;
I would be all, against the worst may happen.
What are your pleasures with me, reverend lords?
*Wol.* May it please you, noble Madam, to withdraw
Into your private chamber, we shall give you
The full cause of our coming.
*Q. Kath.* Speak it here;
There's nothing I have done yet, o' my conscience,
Deserves a corner: 'Would, all other women
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do!
My lords, I care not (so much I am happy
Above a number), if my actions
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw them,
Envy and base opinion set against them,
I know my life so even: If your business
Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,
Out with it boldly; Truth loves open dealing.
Wol. *Tanta est erga te mentis integritas, regina serenissima,*—
*Q. Kath.* O, good my lord, no Latin;
I am not such a truant since my coming,
As not to know the language I have lived in;
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange, suspicious;
Pray, speak in English; here are some will thank you,
If you speak truth, for their poor mistress' sake;
Believe me, she has had much wrong: Lord cardinal,
The willing'st sin I ever yet committed,
May be absolved in English.
*Wol.* Noble lady,
I am sorry, my integrity should breed
(And service to his majesty and you)
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.
We come not by the way of accusation,
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses,
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow;
You have too much, good lady: but to know
How you stand minded in the weighty difference
Between the king and you: and to deliver,
Like free and honest men, our just opinions,
And comforts to your cause.

* Presence-chamber.

*Cam.* Most honour'd Madam,
My lord of York, out of his noble nature,
Zeal and obedience he still bore your grace;
Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure
Both of his truth and him (which was too far),
Offers, as I do, in a sign of peace,
His service and his counsel.
*Q. Kath.* To betray me. [*Aside.*
My lords, I thank you for both your good wills,
Ye speak like honest men (pray God, ye prove so!)
But how to make you suddenly an answer,
In such a point of weight, so near mine honour
(More near my life I fear), with my weak wit,
And to such men of gravity and learning,
In truth, I know not. I was set at work
Among my maids; full little, God knows, looking
Either for such men, or such business.
For her sake that I have been (for I feel
The last fit of my greatness), good your graces,
Let me have time, and counsel, for my cause;
Alas! I am a woman, friendless, hopeless.
*Wol.* Madam, you wrong the king's love with these fears;
Your hopes and friends are infinite.
*Q. Kath.* In England,
But little for my profit: Can you think, lords,
That any Englishman dare give me counsel?
Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness' pleasure
(Though he be grown so desperate to be honest),
And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,
They that must weigh * out my afflictions,
They that my trust must grow to, live not here;
They are, as all my other comforts, far hence,
In mine own country, lords.
*Cam.* I would, your grace
Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.
*Q. Kath.* How, Sir?
*Cam.* Put your main cause into the king's protection;
He's loving, and most gracious; 'twill be much
Both for your honour better, and your cause:
For, if the trial of the law o'ertake you,
You'll part away disgraced.
*Wol.* He tells you rightly.
*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for both, my ruin;
Is this your Christian counsel? out upon ye!
Heaven is above all yet; there sits a judge,
That no king can corrupt.
*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.
*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye; holy men I thought ye,
Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues:
But cardinal sins, and hollow hearts, I fear ye:
Mend them for shame, my lords. Is this your comfort?

* Outweigh.

The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady?
A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?
I will not wish ye half my miseries,
I have more charity: but say, I warn'd ye;
Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest at once
The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

*Wol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;
You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing: Woe upon ye,
And all such false professors! Would ye have me
(If you have any justice, any pity;
If ye be anything but churchmen's habits),
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?
Alas! he has banish'd me his bed already;
His love, too long ago: I am old, my lords,
And all the fellowship I hold now with him
Is only my obedience. What can happen
To me above this wretchedness? all your studies
Make me a curse like this.

*Cam.* Your fears are worse.

*Q. Kath.* Have I lived thus long—(let me speak myself,
Since virtue finds no friends)—a wife, a true one?
A woman (I dare say, without vainglory),
Never yet branded with suspicion?
Have I with all my full affections
Still met the king? loved him next heaven? obey'd him?
Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him?*
Almost forgot my prayers to content him?
And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.
Bring me a constant woman to her husband,
One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his pleasure;
And to that woman, when she has done most,
Yet will I add an honour,—a great patience.

*Wol.* Madam, you wander from the good we aim at.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself so guilty,
To give up willingly that noble title
Your master wed me to: nothing but death
Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Wol.* 'Pray, hear me.

*Q. Kath.* 'Would I had never trod this English earth,
Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!
Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your hearts.
What will become of me now, wretched lady?
I am the most unhappy woman living.—
Alas! poor wenches, where are now your fortunes?
[*To her women.*
Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,
No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me,
Almost no grave allow'd me:—Like the lilly,
That once was mistress of the field, and flourish'd,
I'll hang my head and perish.

* Served him with superstitious attention.

*Wol.* If your grace
Could but be brought to know, our ends are honest,
You'd feel more comfort: why should we, good lady
Upon what cause, wrong you? alas! our places,
The way of our profession is against it;
We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow them.
For goodness' sake, consider what you do;
How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly
Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this carriage.
The hearts of princes kiss obedience,
So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits,
They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.
I know, you have a gentle, noble temper,
A soul as even as a calm; Pray, think us
Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and servants.
*Cam.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong your virtues
With these weak women's fears. A noble spirit,
As yours was put into you, ever casts
Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king loves you;
Beware, you lose it not: For us, if you please
To trust us in your business, we are ready
To use our utmost studies in your service.
*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords: and, pray, forgive me,
If I have used* myself unmannerly;
You know, I am a woman, lacking wit
To make a seemly answer to such persons.
Pray, do my service to his majesty:
He has my heart yet; and shall have my prayers,
While I shall have my life. Come, reverend fathers,
Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs,
That little thought, when she set footing here,
She should have bought her dignities so dear. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—Ante-chamber to the King's Apartment.*

*Enter the Duke of* NORFOLK, *the Duke of* SUFFOLK, *the Earl of* SURREY, *and the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your complaints,
And force† them with a constancy, the cardinal
Cannot stand under them: if you omit
The offer of this time, I cannot promise,
But that you shall sustain more new disgraces,
With these you bear already.
*Sur.* I am joyful
To meet the least occasion, that may give me
Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,
To be revenged on him.
*Suf.* Which of the peers
Have uncontemn'd gone by him, or at least

* Behaved. † Enforce.

Strangely neglected? when did he regard
The stamp of nobleness in any person,
Out of himself?
*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures:
What he deserves of you and me, I know;
What we can do to him (though now the time
Gives way to us), I much fear. If you cannot
Bar his access to the king, never attempt
Anything on him; for he hath a witchcraft
Over the king in his tongue.
*Nor.* O, fear him not;
His spell in that is out: the king hath found
Matter against him, that for ever mars
The honey of his language. No, he's settled,
Not to come off, in his displeasure.
*Sur.* Sir,
I should be glad to hear such news as this
Once every hour.
*Nor.* Believe it, this is true.
In the divorce, his contrary proceedings
Are all unfolded; wherein he appears,
As I could wish mine enemy.
*Sur.* How came
His practices to light?
*Suf.* Most strangely.
*Sur.* O, how, how?
*Suf.* The cardinal's letter to the pope miscarried,
And came to the eye o' the king: wherein was read,
How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness
To stay the judgment o' the divorce: for if
It did take place, *I do,* quoth he, *perceive*
*My king is tangled in affection to*
*A creature of the queen's, lady Anne Bullen.*
*Sur.* Has the king this?
*Suf.* Believe it.
*Sur.* Will this work?
*Cham.* The king in this perceives him, how he coasts,
And hedges his own way. But in this point
All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic
After his patient's death; the king already
Hath married the fair lady.
*Sur.* 'Would he had!
*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my lord!
For, I profess, you have it.
*Sur.* Now all my joy
Trace* the conjunction!
*Suf.* My amen to't!
*Nor.* All men's.
*Suf.* There's order given for her coronation:
Marry, this is yet but young,† and may be left
To some ears unrecounted.—But, my lords,

* Follow. † New.

She is a gallant creature, and complete
In mind and feature: I persuade me, from her
Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall
In it be memorized.*
*Sur.* But, will the king
Digest this letter of the cardinal's?
The Lord forbid!
*Nor.* Marry, amen!
*Suf.* No, no;
There be more wasps that buzz about his nose,
Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal Campeius
Is stolen away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave;
Has left the cause o' the king unhandled; and
Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal,
To second all his plot. I do assure you
The king cried, ha! at this.
*Cham.* Now, God incense him,
And let him cry ha, louder!
*Nor.* But, my lord,
When returns Cranmer?
*Suf.* He is return'd, in his opinions; which
Have satisfied the king for his divorce,
Together with all famous colleges
Almost in Christendom: shortly, I believe,
His second marriage shall be publish'd, and
Her coronation. Katharine no more
Shall be call'd queen; but princess dowager,
And widow to prince Arthur.
*Nor.* This same Cranmer 's
A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain
In the king's business.
*Suf.* He has; and we shall see him
For it, an archbishop.
*Nor.* So I hear.
*Suf.* 'Tis so.
The cardinal—

*Enter* WOLSEY *and* CROMWELL.

*Nor.* Observe, observe, he's moody.
*Wol.* The packet, Cromwell, gave it you the king?
*Crom.* To his own hand, in his bed-chamber.
*Wol.* Look'd he o' the inside of the paper?
*Crom.* Presently
He did unseal them: and the first he view'd,
He did it with a serious mind; a heed
Was in his countenance: You, he bade
Attend him here this morning.
*Wol.* Is he ready
To come abroad?
*Crom.* I think, by this he is.
*Wol.* Leave me a while:— [*Exit* CROMWELL.

* Made memorable.

It shall be to the duchess of Alençon,
The French king's sister: he shall marry her.—
Anne Bullen! No; I'll no Anne Bullens for him:
There is more in it than fair visage.—Bullen!
No, we'll no Bullens.—Speedily I wish
To hear from Rome.—The marchioness of Pembroke!
*Nor.* He's discontented.
*Suf.* May be, he hears the king
Does whet his anger to him.
*Sur.* Sharp enough,
Lord, for thy justice!
*Wol.* The late queen's gentlewoman; a knight's daughter,
To be her mistress' mistress! the queen's queen!—
This candle burns not clear: 'tis I must snuff it;
Then, out it goes.—What though I know her virtuous,
And well-deserving? yet I know her for
A spleeny Lutheran; and not wholesome to
Our cause, that she should lie i' the bosom of
Our hard-ruled king. Again, there is sprung up
A heretic, an arch one, Cranmer; one
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,
And is his oracle.
*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.
*Suf.* I would, 'twere something that would fret the string,
The master-cord of his heart!

*Enter the* KING, *reading a Schedule;** *and* LOVELL.

*Suf.* The king, the king.
*K. Hen.* What piles of wealth hath he accumulated
To his own portion! and what expense by the hour
Seems to flow from him! How, i' the name of thrift,
Does he rake this together?—Now, my lords;
Saw you the cardinal?
*Nor.* My lord, we have
Stood here observing him: Some strange commotion
Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts;
Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,
Then, lays his finger on his temple; straight,
Springs out into fast gait;† then, stops again,
Strikes his breast hard; and anon, he casts
His eye against the moon: in most strange postures
We have seen him set himself.
*K. Hen.* It may well be;
There is a mutiny in his mind. This morning
Papers of state he sent me to peruse,
As I required; And, wot‡ you, what I found
There; on my conscience, put unwittingly?
Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing,—
The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,
Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household; which

* An inventory. † Steps. ‡ Know.

I find at such proud rate, that it out-speaks
Possession of a subject.
*Nor.* It's heaven's will;
Some spirit put this paper in the packet,
To bless your eye withal.
*K. Hen.* If we did think
His contemplation were above the earth,
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still
Dwell in his musings: but I am afraid,
His thinkings are below the moon, not worth
His serious considering.
[*He takes his seat, and whispers* LOVELL, *who goes to* WOLSEY.
*Wol.* Heaven forgive me!
Ever God bless your highness!
*K. Hen.* Good my lord,
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the inventory
Of your best graces in your mind; the which
You were now running o'er; you have scarce time
To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span,
To keep your earthly audit: sure, in that
I deem you an ill husband; and am glad
To have you therein my companion.
*Wol.* Sir,
For holy offices I have a time; a time
To think upon the part of business, which
I bear i' the state; and nature does require
Her times of preservation, which, perforce,
I, her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,
Must give my tendance to.
*K. Hen.* You have said well.
*Wol.* And ever may your highness yoke together,
As I will lend you cause, my doing well
With my well saying!
*K. Hen.* 'Tis well said again;
And 'tis a kind of good deed, to say well:
And yet words are no deeds. My father loved you:
He said, he did; and with his deed did crown
His word upon you. Since I had my office,
I have kept you next my heart; have not alone
Employ'd you where high profits might come home,
But pared my present havings, to bestow
My bounties upon you.
*Wol.* What should this mean?
*Sur.* The Lord increase this business! [*Aside.*
*K. Hen.* Have I not made you
The prime man of the state? I pray you, tell me,
If what I now pronounce, you have found true:
And, if you may confess it, say withal,
If you are bound to us or no. What say you?
*Wol.* My sovereign, I confess, your royal graces,
Shower'd on me daily, have been more than could
My studied purposes requite; which went
Beyond all man's endeavours:—my endeavours

Have ever come too short of my desires,
Yet filed with my abilities: Mine own ends
Have been mine so, that evermore they pointed
To the good of your most sacred person, and
The profit of the state. For your great graces
Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks;
My prayers to heaven for you; my loyalty,
Which ever has, and ever shall be growing,
Till death, that winter, kill it.

*K. Hen.* Fairly answer'd;
A loyal and obedient subject is
Therein illustrated: The honour of it
Does pay the act of it; as, i' the contrary,
The foulness is the punishment. I presume,
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour, more
On you, than any; so your hand, and heart,
Your brain, and every function of your power,
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,
As 'twere in love's particular, be more
To me, your friend, than any.

*Wol.* I do profess,
That for your highness' good I ever labour'd
More than mine own; that am, have, and will be.
Though all the world should crack their duty to you,
And throw it from their soul: though perils did
Abound, as thick as thought could make them, and
Appear in forms more horrid; yet my duty,
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,
Should the approach of this wild river break,
And stand unshaken yours.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis nobly spoken:
Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast,
For you have seen him open't.—Read o'er this;
[*Giving him papers.*
And, after, this: and then to breakfast, with
What appetite you have.

[*Exit* KING, *frowning upon* CARDINAL WOLSEY: *the Nobles throng after him, smiling, and whispering.*

*Wol.* What should this mean?
What sudden anger 's this? how have I reap'd it?
He parted frowning from me, as if ruin
Leap'd from his eyes: So looks the chafed lion
Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;
Then makes him nothing. I must read this paper;
I fear, the story of his anger.—'Tis so;
This paper has undone me:—'Tis the account
Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together
For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the popedom,
And fee my friends in Rome. O negligence,
Fit for a fool to fall by! What cross devil
Made me put this main secret in the packet

I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?
No new device to beat this from his brains?
I know, 'twill stir him strongly; Yet I know
A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune,
Will bring me off again. What's this—*To the Pope?*
The letter, as I live, with all the business
I writ to his holiness. Nay then, farewell!
I have touch'd the highest point of all my greatness;
And, from that full meridian of my glory,
I haste now to my setting: I shall fall
Like a bright exhalation in the evening,
And no man see me more.

*Re-enter the Dukes of* NORFOLK *and* SUFFOLK, *the Earl of* SURREY, *and the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal: who commands you
To render up the great seal presently
Into our hands; and to confine yourself
To Asher-house,* my lord of Winchester's,
Till you hear further from his highness.
*Wol.* Stay,
Where's your commission, lords? words cannot carry
Authority so weighty.
*Suf.* Who dare cross them?
Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly?
*Wol.* Till I find more than will, or words, to do it
(I mean, your malice), know, officious lords,
I dare, and must deny it. Now I feel
Of what coarse metal ye are moulded,—envy.
How eagerly ye follow my disgraces,
As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton
Ye appear in everything may bring my ruin!
Follow your envious courses, men of malice;
You have Christian warrant for them, and, no doubt,
In time will find their fit rewards. That seal,
You ask with such a violence, the king
(Mine, and your master), with his own hand gave me:
Bade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,
During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,
Tied it by letters patent: Now, who'll take it?
*Sur.* The king, that gave it.
*Wol.* It must be himself then.
*Sur.* Thou art a proud traitor, priest.
*Wol.* Proud lord, thou liest;
Within these forty hours Surrey durst better
Have burnt that tongue, than said so.
*Sur.* Thy ambition,
Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land
Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:
The heads of all thy brother cardinals
(With thee, and all thy best parts bound together)

* Esher, in Surrey.

Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your policy!
You sent me deputy for Ireland;
Far from his succour, from the king, from all
That might have mercy on the fault thou gav'st him;
Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,
Absolved him with an axe.

*Wol.* This, and all else
This talking lord can lay upon my credit,
I answer, is most false. The duke by law
Found his deserts: how innocent I was
From any private malice in his end,
His noble jury and foul cause can witness.
If I loved many words, lord, I should tell you,
You have as little honesty as honour;
That I, in the way of loyalty and truth
Toward the king, my ever royal master,
Dare mate* a sounder man than Surrey can be,
And all that love his follies.

*Sur.* By my soul,
Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou shouldst feel
My sword i' the life-blood of thee else.—My lords,
Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?
And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely
To be thus jaded † by a piece of scarlet,
Farewell nobility; let his grace go forward,
And dare us with his cap, like larks.‡

*Wol.* All goodness
Is poison to thy stomach.

*Sur.* Yes, that goodness
Of gleaning all the land's wealth into one,
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;
The goodness of your intercepted packets,
You writ to the pope, against the king: your goodness,
Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious.—
My lord of Norfolk,—as you are truly noble,
As you respect the common good, the state
Of our despised nobility, our issues,
Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,—
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles
Collected from his life:—I'll startle you
Worse than the scaring bell, when the brown wench
Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How much, methinks, I could despise this man,
But that I am bound in charity against it!

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in the king's hand:
But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Wol.* So much fairer,
And spotless, shall mine innocence arise,
When the king knows my truth.

* Equal. † Ridden.

‡ A cardinal's hat is scarlet, and the method of daring larks is by small mirrors on scarlet cloth.

*Sur.* This cannot save you:
I thank my memory, I yet remember
Some of these articles; and out they shall.
Now, if you can blush, and cry guilty, cardinal,
You'll show a little honesty.
*Wol.* Speak on, Sir:
I dare your worst objections: if I blush,
It is, to see a nobleman want manners.
*Sur.* I'd rather want those, than my head. Have at you.
First, that, without the king's assent, or knowledge,
You wrought to be a legate; by which power
You maim'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.
*Nor.* Then, that, in all you writ to Rome, or else
To foreign princes, *Ego et Rex meus*
Was still inscribed; in which you brought the king
To be your servant.
*Suf.* Then, that, without the knowledge
Either of king or council, when you went
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold
To carry into Flanders the great seal.
*Sur.* Item, you sent a large commission
To Gregory de Cassalis, to conclude,
Without the king's will, or the state's allowance,
A league between his highness and Ferrara.
*Suf.* That, out of mere ambition, you have caused
Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin.
*Sur.* Then, that you have sent innumerable substance
(By what means got, I leave to your own conscience),
To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways
You have for dignities; to the mere* undoing
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are;
Which, since they are of you, and odious,
I will not taint my mouth with.
*Cham.* O my lord,
Press not a falling man too far; 'tis virtue:
His faults lie open to the laws; let them,
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see him
So little of his great self.
*Sur.* I forgive him.
*Suf.* Lord cardinal, the king's further pleasure is,—
Because all those things, you have done of late
By your power legatine† within this kingdom,
Fall into the compass of a *præmunire*,—
That therefore such a writ be sued against you:
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,
Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be
Out of the king's protection:—This is my charge.
*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your meditations
How to live better. For your stubborn answer,
About the giving back the great seal to us,

* Absolute. † As the pope's legate.

The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall thank you.
So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

[*Exeunt all but* WOLSEY.

*Wol.* So farewell to the little good you bear me.
Farewell, a long farewell, to all my greatness!
This is the state of man: To-day he puts forth
The tender leaves of hope; to-morrow blossoms,
And bears his blushing honours thick upon him:
The third day, comes a frost, a killing frost;
And,—when he thinks, good easy man, full surely
His greatness is a ripening,—nips his root,
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventured,
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,
This many summers in a sea of glory;
But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride
At length broke under me; and now has left me,
Weary, and old with service, to the mercy
Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me.
Vain pomp, and glory of this world, I hate ye;
I feel my heart new open'd: O, how wretched
Is that poor man, that hangs on princes' favours
There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,
That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,*
More pangs and fears than wars or women have;
And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,
Never to hope again.—

*Enter* CROMWELL, *amazedly.*

Why, how now, Cromwell?
*Crom.* I have no power to speak, Sir.
*Wol.* What, amazed
At my misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder,
A great man should decline? Nay, an you weep,
I am fallen, indeed.
*Crom.* How does your grace?
*Wol.* Why, well;
Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.
I know myself now; and I feel within me
A peace above all earthly dignities,
A still and quiet conscience. The king has cured me,
I humbly thank his grace; and from these shoulders,
These ruin'd pillars, out of pity, taken
A load would sink a navy, too much honour:
O, 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden,
Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven.
*Crom.* I am glad, your grace has made that right use of it.
*Wol.* I hope, I have: I am able now, methinks
(Out of a fortitude of soul, I feel),
To endure more miseries, and greater far,

* Dooming to ruin.

Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer.
What news abroad?
*Crom.* The heaviest and the worst,
Is your displeasure with the king.
*Wol.* God bless him!
*Crom.* The next is, that Sir Thomas More is chosen
Lord chancellor in your place.
*Wol.* That's somewhat sudden:
But he's a learned man. May he continue
Long in his highness' favour, and do justice
For truth's sake, and his conscience; that his bones,
When he has run his course, and sleeps in blessings,
May have a tomb of orphan's tears* wept on 'em!
What more?
*Crom.* That Cranmer is return'd with welcome,
Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury.
*Wol.* That's news indeed!
*Crom.* Last, that the lady Anne,
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,
This day was view'd in open,† as his queen,
Going to chapel; and the voice is now
Only about her coronation.
*Wol.* There was the weight that pull'd me down. O, Cromwell,
The king has gone beyond me, all my glories
In that one woman I have lost for ever:
No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,
Or gild again the noble troops that waited
Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell;
I am a poor fallen man, unworthy now
To be thy lord and master: Seek the king;
That sun, I pray, may never set! I have told him
What, and how true thou art: he will advance thee:
Some little memory of me will stir him
(I know his noble nature), not to let
Thy hopeful service perish too: Good Cromwell,
Neglect him not; make use‡ now, and provide
For thine own future safety.
*Crom.* O my lord,
Must I then leave you? Must I needs forego
So good, so noble, and so true a master?
Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,
With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord.—
The king shall have my service; but my prayers
For ever, and for ever, shall be yours.
*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear
In all my miseries; but thou hast forced me
Out of thy honest truth to play the woman.
Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, Cromwell;
And,—when I am forgotten, as I shall be;
And sleep in dull cold marble, where no mention

* The chancellor is the guardian of orphans.
‡ Openly. ‡ Interest.

Of me more must be heard of,—say, I taught thee,
Say, Wolsey,—that once trod the ways of glory,
And sounded all the depths and shoals of honour,—
Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise in;
A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it.
Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me.
Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition;
By that sin fell the angels; how can man then,
The image of his Maker, hope to win by't?
Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee;
Corruption wins not more than honesty.
Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,
To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear not:
Let all the ends, thou aim'st at, be thy country's,
Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,
Thou fall'st a blessed martyr. Serve the king;
And,——Pr'ythee, lead me in:
There take an inventory of all I have,
To the last penny: 'tis the king's: my robe,
And my integrity to heaven, is all
I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Cromwell,
Had I but served my God with half the zeal
I served my king, he would not in mine age
Have left me naked to mine enemies.

*Crom.* Good Sir, have patience.

*Wol.* So I have. Farewell
The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do dwell. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT IV.

### *SCENE I.—A Street in Westminster.*

*Enter two* GENTLEMEN, *meeting.*

1 *Gent.* You are well met once again.

2 *Gent.* And so are you.

1 *Gent.* You come to take your stand here, and behold
The lady Anne pass from her coronation?

2 *Gent.* 'Tis all my business. At our last encounter
The duke of Buckingham came from his trial.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd sorrow;
This, general joy.

2 *Gent.* 'Tis well: The citizens,
I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds;
As, let them have their rights, they are ever forward
In celebration of this day with shows,
Pageants, and sights of honour.

1 *Gent.* Never greater,
Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, Sir.

2 *Gent.* May I be bold to ask what that contains,
That paper in your hand?

1 *Gent.* Yes; 'tis the list
Of those, that claim their offices this day,
By custom of the coronation.
The duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims
To be high steward; next, the duke of Norfolk,
He to be earl marshal; you may read the rest.
2 *Gent.* I thank you, Sir; had I not known those customs,
I should have been beholden to your paper.
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine,
The princess dowager! how goes her business?
1 *Gent.* That I can tell you too. The archbishop
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other
Learned and reverend fathers of his order,
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off
From Ampthill, where the princess lay; to which
She oft was cited by them, but appear'd not:
And, to be short, for not appearance, and
The king's late scruple, by the main assent
Of all these learned men she was divorced,
And the late marriage* made of none effect:
Since which, she was removed to Kimbolton,
Where she remains now, sick.
2 *Gent.* Alas, good lady!— [*Trumpets.*
The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen is coming.

THE ORDER OF THE PROCESSION.

*A lively flourish of Trumpets; then enter*

1. *Two Judges.*
2. *The Lord Chancellor, with the purse and mace before him.*
3. *Choristers singing.* [Music.
4. *Mayor of London bearing the mace. Then Garter, in his coat of arms, and on his head, a gilt copper crown.*
5. *Marquis Dorset, bearing a sceptre of gold, on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With him, the earl of Surrey, bearing the rod of silver with the dove, crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.*
6. *Duke of Suffolk, in his robe of estate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high steward. With him, the duke of Norfolk, with the rod of marshalship, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.*
7. *A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-ports; under it, the Queen in her robe; in her hair richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each side of her, the bishops of London and Winchester.*
8. *The old duchess of Norfolk, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the queen's train.*
9. *Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain circlets of gold without flowers.*

* The marriage lately considered as valid.

2 *Gent.* A royal train, believe me.—These I know;—
Who's that, that bears the sceptre?
1 *Gent.* Marquis Dorset:
And that the earl of Surrey, with the rod.
2 *Gent.* A bold brave gentleman: And that should be
The duke of Suffolk.
1 *Gent.* 'Tis the same; high steward.
2 *Gent.* And that my lord of Norfolk?
1 *Gent.* Yes.
2 *Gent.* Heaven bless thee! [*Looking on the Queen.*
Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.—
Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel;
Our king has all the Indies in his arms,
And more, and richer, when he strains that lady:
I cannot blame his conscience.
1 *Gent.* They, that bear
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons
Of the Cinque-ports.
2 *Gent.* Those men are happy; and so are all, are near her.
I take it, she that carries up the train,
Is that old noble lady, duchess of Norfolk.
1 *Gent.* It is; and all the rest are countesses.
2 *Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are stars indeed;
And, sometimes, falling ones.
1 *Gent.* No more of that.
[*Exit Procession, with a great flourish of Trumpets.*

*Enter a third* GENTLEMAN.

God save you, Sir! Where have you been broiling?
3 *Gent.* Among the crowd i' the abbey; where a finger
Could not be wedged in more; and I am stifled
With the mere rankness of their joy.
2 *Gent.* You saw
The ceremony?
3 *Gent.* That I did.
1 *Gent.* How was it?
3 *Gent.* Well worth the seeing.
2 *Gent.* Good Sir, speak it to us.
3 *Gent.* As well as I am able. The rich stream
Of lords, and ladies, having brought the queen
To a prepared place in the choir, fell off
A distance from her; while her grace sat down
To rest a while, some half an hour, or so,
In a rich chair of state, opposing freely
The beauty of her person to the people.
Believe me, Sir, she is the goodliest woman
That ever lay by man: which when the people
Had the full view of, such a noise arose
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,
As loud, and to as many tunes: hats, cloaks
(Doublets, I think), flew up; and had their faces

Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such joy
I never saw before. Great-bellied women,
That had not half a week to go, like rams*
In the old time of war, would shake the press,
And make them reel before them. No man living
Could say, *This is my wife*, there; all were woven
So strangely in one piece.

2 *Gent.* But, pray, what follow'd?

3 *Gent.* At length her grace rose, and with modest paces
Came to the altar; where she kneel'd, and, saint-like,
Cast her fair eyes to heaven, and pray'd devoutly.
Then rose again, and bow'd her to the people:
When by the archbishop of Canterbury
She had all the royal makings of a queen;
As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,
The rod, and bird of peace, and all such emblems
Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir
With all the choicest music of the kingdom,
Together sung *Te Deum*. So she parted,
And with the same full state paced back again
To York-place, where the feast is held.

1 *Gent.* Sir, you
Must no more call it York-place, that is past:
For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost;
'Tis now the king's, and call'd—Whitehall.

3 *Gent.* I know it;
But 'tis so lately alter'd, that the old name
Is fresh about me.

2 *Gent.* What two reverend bishops
Were those that went on each side of the queen?

3 *Gent.* Stokesly and Gardiner; the one of Winchester
(Newly preferr'd from the king's secretary),
The other, London.

2 *Gent.* He of Winchester
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,
The virtuous Cranmer.

3 *Gent.* All the land knows that:
However, yet there's no great breach; when it comes,
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him.

2 *Gent.* Who may that be, I pray you?

3 *Gent.* Thomas Cromwell;
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly
A worthy friend.—The king
Has made him master o' the jewel-house,
And one, already, of the privy council.

2 *Gent.* He will deserve more.

3 *Gent.* Yes, without all doubt.
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which
Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests;
Something I can command. As I walk thither,
I'll tell ye more.

*Both.* You may command us, Sir. [*Exeunt.*

* Battering-rams.

## *SCENE II.—Kimbolton.*

*Enter* KATHARINE, *Dowager, sick; led between* GRIFFITH *and* PATIENCE.

*Grif.* How does your grace?
*Kath.* O, Griffith, sick to death:
My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,
Willing to leave their burden: Reach a chair;—
So,—now, methinks, I feel a little ease.
Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou led'st me,
That the great child of honour, cardinal Wolsey,
Was dead?
*Grif.* Yes, Madam; but I think your grace,
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to't.
*Kath.* Pr'ythee, good Griffith, tell me how he died:
If well, he stepp'd before me, happily,*
For my example.
*Grif.* Well, the voice goes, Madam:
For after the stout earl Northumberland
Arrested him at York, and brought him forward
(As a man sorely tainted) to his answer,
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill,
He could not sit his mule.
*Kath.* Alas! poor man!
*Grif.* At last, with easy roads,† he came to Leicester,
Lodged in the abbey; where the reverend abbot,
With all his convent, honourably received him;
To whom he gave these words,—*O father abbot,*
*An old man, broken with the storms of state,*
*Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;*
*Give him a little earth for charity!*
So went to bed: where eagerly his sickness
Pursued him still; and three nights after this,
About the hour of eight (which he himself
Foretold, should be his last) full of repentance,
Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,
He gave his honours to the world again,
His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.
*Kath.* So may he rest; his faults lie gently on him!
Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak him,
And yet with charity,—He was a man
Of an unbounded stomach,‡ ever ranking
Himself with princes; one, that by suggestion
Tied§ all the kingdom: simony was fair play;
His own opinion was his law: i' the presence‖
He would say untruths; and be ever double,
Both in his words and meaning: He was never,
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful:

* Haply, perchance. † By short stages. ‡ Pride.
§ Circumscribed. ‖ Of the king.

His promises were, as he then was, mighty;
But his performance, as he is now, nothing.
Of his own body he was ill, and gave
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble madam,
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues
We write in water. May it please your highness
To hear me speak his good now?

*Kath.* Yes, good Griffith;
I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly
Was fashion'd to* much honour. From his cradle,
He was a scholar, and a ripe, and good one;
Exceeding wise, fair spoken, and persuading:
Lofty, and sour, to them that loved him not;
But, to those men that sought him, sweet as summer.
And though he were unsatisfied in getting
(Which was a sin), yet in bestowing, madam,
He was most princely: Ever witness for him
Those twins of learning, that he raised in you,
Ipswich, and Oxford! one† of which fell with him,
Unwilling to outlive the good that did it;
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,
So excellent in art, and still so rising,
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,
And found the blessedness of being little:
And, to add greater honours to his age
Than man could give him, he died, fearing God.

*Kath.* After my death I wish no other herald,
No other speaker of my living actions,
To keep mine honour from corruption,
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.
Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,
With thy religious truth, and modesty,
Now in his ashes honour: Peace be with him!—
Patience, be near me still; and set me lower:
I have not long to trouble thee.—Good Griffith,
Cause the musicians play me that sad note
I named my knell, whilst I sit meditating
On that celestial harmony I go to.

*Sad and solemn music.*

*Grif.* She is asleep: Good wench, let's sit down quiet,
For fear we wake her;—Softly, gentle Patience.

*The Vision. Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six personages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads garlands of bays, and golden vizards on their faces; branches of bays, or palm, in their hands. They first congee unto her, then dance;*

* Formed for. † Ipswich.

*and, at certain changes, the first two hold a spare garland over her head; at which, the other four make reverend curtsies; then the two that held the garland, deliver the same to the other next two, who observe the some order in their changes, and holding the garland over her head: which done, they deliver the same garland to the last two, who likewise observe the same order: at which (as it were by inspiration), she makes in her sleep signs of rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to heaven: and so in their dancing they vanish, carrying the garland with them. The music continues.*

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? Are ye all gone?
And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?
*Grif.* Madam, we are here.
*Kath.* It is not you I call for:
Saw ye none enter, since I slept?
*Grif.* None, madam.
*Kath.* No? Saw you not, even now, a blessed troop
Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?
They promised me eternal happiness;
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel
I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall,
Assuredly.
*Grif.* I am most joyful, madam, such good dreams
Possess your fancy.
*Kath.* Bid the music leave,
They are harsh and heavy to me. [*Music ceases.*
*Pat.* Do you note,
How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?
How long her face is drawn? How pale she looks,
And of an earthy cold? Mark you her eyes?
*Grif.* She is going, wench; pray, pray.
*Pat.* Heaven comfort her!

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* An't like your grace,——
*Kath.* You are a saucy fellow:
Deserve we no more reverence?
*Grif.* You are to blame,
Knowing, she will not lose her wonted greatness,
To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel.
*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness' pardon;
My haste made me unmannerly: There is staying
A gentleman, sent from the king to see you.
*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith: But this fellow
Let me ne'er see again. [*Exeunt* GRIFFITH *and* MESSENGER.

*Re-enter* GRIFFITH, *with* CAPUCIUS.

If my sight fail not,
You should be lord ambassador from the emperor,
My royal nephew, and your name Capucius.
*Cap.* Madam, the same, your servant.

*Kath.* O my lord,
The times, and titles, now are alter'd strangely
With me, since first you knew me. But, I pray you,
What is your pleasure with me?
*Cap.* Noble lady,
First, mine own service to your grace; the next,
The king's request that I would visit you;
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by me
Sends you his princely commendations,
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.
*Kath.* O my good lord, that comfort comes too late;
'Tis like a pardon after execution:
That gentle physic, given in time, had cured me;
But now I am past all comforts here, but prayers.
How does his highness?
*Cap.* Madam, in good health.
*Kath.* So may he ever do! and ever flourish,
When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor name
Banish'd the kingdom.—Patience, is that letter,
I caused you write, yet sent away?
*Pat.* No, madam. [*Giving it to* KATHARINE.
*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver
This to my lord the king.
*Cap.* Most willing, madam.
*Kath.* In which I have commended to his goodness
The model* of our chaste loves, his young daughter:—
The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on her!—
Beseeching him, to give her virtuous breeding
(She is young, and of a noble modest nature;
I hope, she will deserve well); and a little
To love her for her mother's sake, that loved him,
Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor petition
Is, that his noble grace would have some pity
Upon my wretched women, that so long
Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:
Of which there is not one, I dare avow
(And now I should not lie), but will deserve,
For virtue, and true beauty of the soul,
For honesty, and decent carriage,
A right good husband, let him be† a noble;
And, sure, those men are happy that shall have them.
The last is, for my men:—they are the poorest,
But poverty could never draw them from me;—
That they may have their wages duly paid them,
And something over to remember me by;
If Heaven had pleased to have given me longer life,
And able means, we had not parted thus.
These are the whole contents:—And, good my lord,
By that you love the dearest in this world,
As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,

* Representative. † Even if he should be.

Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the king
To do me this last right.
*Cap.* By heaven, I will;
Or let me lose the fashion of a man!
*Kath.* I thank you, honest lord. Remember me
In all humility unto his highness:
Say, his long trouble now is passing
Out of this world: tell him, in death I bless'd him,
For so I will.—Mine eyes grow dim.—Farewell,
My lord.—Griffith, farewell.—Nay, Patience,
You must not leave me yet. I must to bed;
Call in more women.—When I am dead, good wench,
Let me be used with honour; strew me over
With maiden flowers, that all the world may know
I was a chaste wife to my grave:—embalm me,
Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet like
A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.
I can no more.— [*Exeunt, leading* KATHARINE.

---

## ACT V.

### *SCENE I.—A Gallery in the Palace.*

*Enter* GARDINER *Bishop of Winchester, a* PAGE *with a torch before him.*

*Gar.* It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?
*Boy.* It hath struck.
*Gar.* These should be hours for necessities,
Not for delights; times to repair our nature
With comforting repose, and not for us
To waste these times.

*Enter* SIR THOMAS LOVELL.

Good hour of night, Sir Thomas!
Whither so late?
*Lov.* Came you from the king, my lord?
*Gar.* I did, Sir Thomas; and left him at primero*
With the duke of Suffolk.
*Lov.* I must to him too,
Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.
*Gar.* Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's the matter?
It seems you are in haste: an if there be
No great offence belongs to't, give your friend
Some touch† of your late business: Affairs, that walk
(As, they say, spirits do) at midnight, have
In them a wilder nature, than the business
That seeks despatch by day.
*Lov.* My lord, I love you;
And durst commend a secret to your ear

* A game at cards. † Hint.

Much weightier than this work. The queen's in labour,
They say, in great extremity; and fear'd,
She'll with the labour end.
*Gar.* The fruit, she goes with,
I pray for heartily; that it may find
Good time, and live: but for the stock, Sir Thomas,
I wish it grubb'd up now.
*Lov.* Methinks, I could
Cry the amen; and yet my conscience says
She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does
Deserve our better wishes.
*Gar.* But, Sir, Sir,—
Hear me, Sir Thomas: You are a gentleman
Of mine own way; I know you wise, religious;
And, let me tell you, it will ne'er be well,—
'Twill not, Sir Thomas Lovell, take't of me,
Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and she,
Sleep in their graves.
*Lov.* Now, Sir, you speak of two
The most remark'd i' the kingdom. As for Cromwell,—
Beside that of the jewel-house, he's made master
O' the rolls, and the king's secretary: further, Sir,
Stands in the gap and trade of more preferments,
With which the time will load him: The archbishop
Is the king's hand, and tongue; And who dare speak
One syllable against him?
*Gar.* Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,
There are that dare; and I myself have ventured
To speak my mind of him: and, indeed, this day,
Sir (I may tell it you), I think, I have
Incensed* the lords o' the council, that he is
(For so I know he is, they know he is)
A most arch heretic, a pestilence
That does infect the land: with which they moved,
Have broken† with the king; who hath so far
Given ear to our complaint (of his great grace
And princely care; foreseeing those fell mischiefs
Our reasons laid before him), he hath commanded,
To-morrow morning to the council-board
He be convented.‡ He's a rank weed, Sir Thomas,
And we must root him out. From your affairs
I hinder you too long: good night, Sir Thomas.
*Lov.* Many good nights, my lord; I rest your servant.
[*Exeunt* GARDINER *and* PAGE.

*As* LOVELL *is going out, enter the* KING, *and the Duke of* SUFFOLK.

*K. Hen.* Charles, I will play no more to-night;
My mind 's not on't, you are too hard for me.
*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.
*K. Hen.* But little, Charles;

* Set on. † Told their minds. ‡ Summoned.

Nor shall not, when my fancy 's on my play.—
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news?
*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her
What you commanded me, but by her woman
I sent your message; who return'd her thanks
In the greatest humbleness, and desired your highness
Most heartily to pray for her.
*K. Hen.* What say'st thou? ha!
To pray for her? what, is she crying out?
*Lov.* So said her woman; and that her sufferance made
Almost each pang a death.
*K. Hen.* Alas, good lady!
*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burden, and
With gentle travail, to the gladding of
Your highness with an heir!
*K. Hen.* 'Tis midnight, Charles,
Pr'ythee, to bed; and in thy prayers remember
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone;
For I must think of that, which company
Will not be friendly to.
*Suf.* I wish your highness
A quiet night, and my good mistress will
Remember in my prayers.
*K. Hen.* Charles, good night. [*Exit* SUFFOLK.

*Enter* SIR ANTHONY DENNY.

Well, Sir, what follows?
*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the archbishop,
As you commanded me.
*K. Hen.* Ha! Canterbury?
*Den.* Ay, my good lord.
*K. Hen.* 'Tis true: where is he, Denny?
*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.
*K. Hen.* Bring him to us. [*Exit* DENNY.
*Lov.* This is about that which the bishop spake;
I am happily come hither. [*Aside.*

*Re-enter* DENNY, *with* CRANMER.

*K. Hen.* Avoid the gallery. [LOVELL *seems to stay.*
Ha!—I have said!—Begone.
What! [*Exeunt* LOVELL *and* DENNY.
*Cran.* I am fearful!—Wherefore frowns he thus?
'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well.
*K. Hen.* How now, my lord? You do desire to know
Wherefore I sent for you.
*Cran.* It is my duty,
To attend your highness' pleasure.
*K. Hen.* 'Pray you, arise,
My good and gracious lord of Canterbury.
Come, you and I must walk a turn together;
I have news to tell you: Come, come, give me your hand,
Ah, my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,
And am right sorry to repeat what follows:

I have, and most unwillingly, of late
Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,
Grievous complaints of you; which, being consider'd,
Have moved us, and our council, that you shall
This morning come before us; where, I know,
You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,
But that, till further trial, in those charges
Which will require your answer, you must take
Your patience to you, and be well contented
To make your house our tower: you a brother of us,*
It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness
Would come against you.

*Cran.* I humbly thank your highness;
And am right glad to catch this good occasion
Most throughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff
And corn shall fly asunder: for, I know
There's none stands under more calumnious tongues,
Than I, myself, poor man.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, good Canterbury;
Thy truth, and thy integrity, is rooted
In us, thy friend: Give me thy hand, stand up;
Pr'ythee, let's walk. Now, by my holy dame,
What manner of man are you? My lord, I look'd
You would have given me your petition, that
I should have ta'en some pains to bring together
Yourself and your accusers; and to have heard you
Without indurance† further.

*Cran.* Most dread liege,
The good I stand on is my truth and honesty;
If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,
Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh‡ not,
Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing
What can be said against me.

*K. Hen.* Know you not how
Your state stands i' the world, with the whole world?
Your enemies
Are many, and not small; their practices
Must bear the same proportion: and not ever
The justice and the truth o' the question carries
The due o' the verdict with it: At what ease
Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt
To swear against you? Such things have been done.
You are potently opposed; and with a malice
Of as great size. Ween§ you of better luck,
I mean, in perjured witness, than your master,
Whose minister you are, whiles here he lived
Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to;
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,
And woo your own destruction.

*Cran.* God, and your majesty

* One of the council.
† Further delay.
‡ Value.
§ Think.

Protect mine innocence, or I fall into
The trap is laid for me!
*K. Hen.* Be of good cheer;
They shall no more prevail, than we give way to.
Keep comfort to you; and this morning see
You do appear before them; if they shall chance,
In charging you with matters, to commit you,
The best persuasions to the contrary
Fail not to use, and with what vehemency
The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties
Will render you no remedy, this ring
Deliver them, and your appeal to us
There make before them.—Look, the good man weeps!
He's honest, on mine honour. God's blest mother!
I swear, he is true-hearted; and a soul
None better in my kingdom.—Get you gone,
And do as I have bid you.— [*Exit* CRANMER.
He has strangled
His language in his tears.

*Enter an old* LADY.

Gent. [*within*]. Come back; what mean you?
*Lady.* I'll not come back: the tidings that I bring
Will make my boldness manners.—Now, good angels
Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person
Under their blessed wings!
*K. Hen.* Now, by thy looks
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?
Say, ay; and of a boy.
*Lady.* Ay, ay, my liege;
And of a lovely boy: The God of heaven
Both now and ever bless her!—'tis a girl,
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen
Desires your visitation, and to be
Acquainted with this stranger; 'tis as like you,
As cherry is to cherry.
*K. Hen.* Lovell,—

*Enter* LOVELL.

*Lov.* Sir.
*K. Hen.* Give her a hundred marks. I'll to the queen.
[*Exit* KING.
*Lady.* A hundred marks! By this light, I'll have more.
An ordinary groom is for such payment.
I will have more, or scold it out of him,
Said I for this, the girl is like to him?
I will have more, or else unsay't; and now
While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—Lobby before the Council-Chamber.*

*Enter* CRANMER; SERVANTS, DOOR-KEEPER, *&c. attending.*

*Cran.* I hope, I am not too late; and yet the gentleman,
That was sent to me from the council, pray'd me

To make great haste. All fast? what means this?—Hoa!
Who waits there?—Sure, you know me?
*D. Keep.* Yes, my lord;
But yet I cannot help you.
*Cran.* Why?
*D. Keep.* Your grace must wait, till you be call'd for.

*Enter* DOCTOR BUTTS.

*Cran.* So.
*Butts.* This is a piece of malice. I am glad,
I came this way so happily: The king
Shall understand it presently. [*Exit* BUTTS.
Cran. [*aside*]. 'Tis Butts,
The king's physician; As he pass'd along,
How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me!
Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For certain,
This is of purpose laid, by some that hate me
(God turn their hearts! I never sought their malice),
To quench mine honour: they would shame to make me
Wait else at door; a fellow counsellor,
Among boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their pleasures
Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*Enter at a window above, the* KING *and* BUTTS.

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest sight,—
*K. Hen.* What's that, Butts?
*Butts.* I think, your highness saw this many a day.
*K. Hen.* Body o' me, where is it?
*Butts.* There, my lord:
The high promotion of his grace of Canterbury;
Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuivants,
Pages, and footboys.
*K. Hen.* Ha! 'Tis he, indeed:
Is this the honour they do one another?
'Tis well, there's one above them yet. I had thought,
They had parted* so much honesty among them
(At least, good manners), as not thus to suffer
A man of his place, and so near our favour,
To dance attendance on their lordships' pleasures,
And at the door too, like a post with packets.
By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:
Let them alone, and draw the curtain close;
We shall hear more anon.— [*Exeunt.*

## THE COUNCIL-CHAMBER.

*Enter the* LORD CHANCELLOR, *the Duke of* SUFFOLK, *Earl of* SURREY, LORD CHAMBERLAIN, GARDINER, *and* CROMWELL. *The Chancellor places himself at the upper end of the table on the left hand; a seat being left void above him, as for the Archbishop of* CANTERBURY. *The rest seat themselves in order on each side.* CROMWELL *at the lower end, as secretary.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master secretary:
Why are we met in council?

* Shared.

*Crom.* Please your honours,
The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury.
*Gar.* Has he had knowledge of it?
*Crom.* Yes.
*Nor.* Who waits there?
*D. Keep.* Without, my noble lords?
*Gar.* Yes.
*D. Keep.* My lord archbishop;
And has done half an hour, to know your pleasures.
*Chan.* Let him come in.
*D. Keep.* Your grace may enter now.
[CRANMER *approaches the council-table.*
*Chan.* My good lord archbishop, I am very sorry
To sit here at this present, and behold
That chair stand empty: But we all are men,
In our own natures frail; and capable
Of our flesh, few are angels; out of which frailty,
And want of wisdom, you, that best should teach us,
Have misdemean'd yourself, and not a little,
Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling
The whole realm by your teaching, and your chaplains'
(For so we are inform'd), with new opinions,
Divers, and dangerous; which are heresies,
And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.
*Gar.* Which reformation must be sudden too,
My noble lords: for those, that tame wild horses,
Pace them not in their hands to make them gentle;
But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and spur them,
Till they obey the manage. If we suffer
(Out of our easiness, and childish pity
To one man's honour) this contagious sickness,
Farewell, all physic: And what follows then?
Commotions, uproars, with a general taint
Of the whole state: as, of late days, our neighbours,
The upper Germany, can dearly witness,
Yet freshly pitied in our memories.
*Cran.* My good lords, hitherto, in all the progress
Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,
And with no little study, that my teaching,
And the strong course of my authority,
Might go one way, and safely; and the end
Was ever to do well: nor is there living
(I speak it with a single heart,* my lords)
A man that more detests, more stirs against,
Both in his private conscience, and his place,
Defacers of a public peace, than I do.
'Pray heaven, the king may never find a heart
With less allegiance in it! Men, that make
Envy, and crooked malice, nourishment,
Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lordships,
That, in this case of justice, my accusers,
Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,
And freely urge against me.

* Free from duplicity.

*Suf.* Nay, my lord,
That cannot be; you are a counsellor,
And, by that virtue, no man dare accuse you.
*Gar.* My lord, because we have business of more moment,
We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness' pleasure,
And our consent, for better trial of you,
From hence you be committed to the Tower:
Where, being but a private man again,
You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,
More than, I fear, you are provided for.
*Cran.* Ah, my good lord of Winchester, I thank you,
You are always my good friend; if your will pass,
I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,
You are so merciful: I see your end,
'Tis my undoing: Love, and meekness, lord,
Become a churchman better than ambition;
Win straying souls with modesty again,
Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,
Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,
I make as little doubt, as you do conscience,
In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.
*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a sectary,
That's the plain truth; your painted gloss discovers
To men that understand you, words and weakness.
*Crom.* My lord of Winchester, you are a little,
By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,
However faulty, yet should find respect
For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty,
To load a falling man.
*Gar.* Good master secretary,
I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst
Of all this table, say so.
*Crom.* Why, my lord?
*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer
Of this new sect? ye are not sound.
*Crom.* Not sound?
*Gar.* Not sound, I say.
*Crom.* 'Would you were half so honest!
Men's prayers then would seek you, not their fears.
*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.
*Crom.* Do.
Remember your bold life too.
*Chan.* This is too much;
Forbear, for shame, my lords.
*Gar.* I have done.
*Crom.* And I.
*Chan.* Then thus for you, my lord,—It stands agreed,
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith
You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner;
There to remain, till the king's further pleasure
Be known unto us: Are you all agreed, lords?
*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,
But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?
*Gar.* What other
Would you expect? You are strangely troublesome!
Let some o' the guard be ready there.

*Enter* GUARD.

*Cran.* For me?
Must I go like a traitor thither?
*Gar.* Receive him,
And see him safe i' the Tower.
*Cran.* Stay, good my lords,
I have a little yet to say. Look there, my lords;
By virtue of that ring, I take my cause
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it
To a most noble judge, the king my master.
*Cham.* This is the king's ring.
*Sur.* 'Tis no counterfeit.
*Suf.* 'Tis the right ring, by heaven: I told ye all,
When we first put this dangerous stone a rolling,
'Twould fall upon ourselves.
*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,
The king will suffer but the little finger
Of this man to be vex'd?
*Cham.* 'Tis now too certain:
How much more is his life in value with him?
'Would I were fairly out on't.
*Crom.* My mind gave me,
In seeking tales, and informations,
Against this man (whose honesty the devil
And his disciples only envy at),
Ye blew the fire that burns ye: Now have at ye.

*Enter* KING, *frowning on them; takes his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven
In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;
Not only good and wise, but most religious:
One that, in all obedience, makes the church
The chief aim of his honour; and to strengthen
That holy duty, out of dear respect,
His royal self in judgment comes to hear
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.
*K. Hen.* You were ever good at sudden commendations,
Bishop of Winchester. But know, I come not
To hear such flattery now, and in my presence;
They are too thin and bare to hide offences.
To me you cannot reach, you play the spaniel,
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me;
But, whatsoe'er thou tak'st me for, I am sure,
Thou hast a cruel nature, and a bloody.—
Good man [*to* CRANMER], sit down. Now let me see the proudest
He, that dares most, but wag his finger at thee:

By all that's holy, he had better starve,
Than but once think this place becomes thee not.
*Sur.* May it please your grace,—
*K. Hen.* No, Sir, it does not please me.
I had thought, I had had men of some understanding
And wisdom, of my council; but I find none.
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,
This good man (few of you deserve that title),
This honest man, wait like a lowsy footboy
At chamber door? and one as great as you are?
Why, what a shame was this? Did my commission
Bid ye so far forget yourselves? I gave ye
Power as he was a counsellor to try him,
Not as a groom; There's some of ye, I see,
More out of malice than integrity,
Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean,
Which ye shall never have while I live.
*Chan.* Thus far,
My most dread sovereign, may it like your grace
To let my tongue excuse all. What was purposed
Concerning his imprisonment, was rather
(If there be faith in men) meant for his trial,
And fair purgation to the world, than malice;
I am sure, in me.
*K. Hen.* Well, well, my lords, respect him;
Take him, and use him well, he's worthy of it.
I will say thus much for him, If a prince
May be beholden to a subject, I
Am, for his love and service, so to him.
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him;
Be friends, for shame, my lords.—My lord of Canterbury,
I have a suit which you must not deny me;
This is, a fair young maid that yet wants baptism,
You must be godfather, and answer for her.
*Cran.* The greatest monarch now alive may glory
In such an honour; How may I deserve it,
That am a poor and humble subject to you?
*K. Hen.* Come, come, my lord, you'd spare your spoons;* you shall have
Two noble partners with you; the old duchess of Norfolk,
And lady marquis Dorset; Will these please you?
Once more, my lord of Winchester, I charge you,
Embrace, and love this man.
*Gar.* With a true heart,
And brother-love, I do it.
*Cran.* And let heaven
Witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.
*K. Hen.* Good man, those joyful tears show thy true heart.
The common voice, I see, is verified
Of thee, which says thus, *Do my lord of Canterbury*

* It was an ancient custom for sponsors to present spoons to their godchildren.

*A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for ever.*—
Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long
To have this young one made a Christian.
As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;
So I grow stronger, you more honour gain. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The Palace Yard.*

*Noise and tumult within. Enter* PORTER *and his* MAN.

*Port.* You'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals: Do you take the court for Paris-garden?* ye rude slaves, leave your gaping.†

[*Within.*] Good master porter, I belong to the larder.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, you rogue: Is this a place to roar in?—Fetch me a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones; these are but switches to them.—I'll scratch your heads: You must be seeing christenings? Do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals?

*Man.* Pray, Sir, be patient; 'tis as much impossible
(Unless we sweep them from the door with cannons)
To scatter them, as 'tis to make them sleep
On May-day morning; which will never be:
We may as well push against Paul's, as stir them.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd?

*Man.* Alas, I know not; How gets the tide in?
As much as one sound cudgel of four foot
(You see the poor remainder) could distribute,
I made no spare, Sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, Sir.

*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand, to mow them down before me: but, if I spared any, that had a head to hit, either young or old, he or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker, let me never hope to see a chine again, and that I would not for a cow, God save her.

[*Within.*] Do you hear, master Porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good master puppy.—Keep the door close, sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock them down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my Christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand; here will be father, godfather, and all together.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, Sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for o' my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in 's nose; all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other penance: That fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me; he stands there like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pink'd por-

* The bear-garden on Bank-side. † Roaring.

ringer* fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I miss'd the meteor † once, and hit that woman, who cried out, *clubs!* when I might see from far some forty truncheoneers draw to her succour, which were the hope of the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place; at length they came to the broomstaff with me, I defied them still; when suddenly a file of boys behind them, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let them win the work: The devil was amongst them, I think, surely.

*Port.* These are the youths that thunder at a play-house, and fight for bitten apples; that no audience, but the Tribulation of Tower-hill, or the Limbs of Limehouse, ‡ their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of them in *Limbo Patrum*, § and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two beadles ‖ that is to come.

*Enter the* LORD CHAMBERLAIN.

*Cham.* Mercy o'me, what a multitude are here!
They grow still too, from all parts they are coming,
As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters,
These lazy knaves?—Ye have made a fine hand, fellows.
There's a trim rabble let in: Are all these
Your faithful friends o' the suburbs? We shall have
Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies
When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An't please your honour,
We are but men; and what so many may do,
Not being torn a pieces, we have done:
An army cannot rule them.

*Cham.* As I live,
If the king blame me for 't, Ill lay ye all
By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads
Clap round fines, for neglect: You are lazy knaves;
And here ye lie baiting of bumbards,¶ when
Ye should do service. Hark, the trumpets sound;
They are come already from the christening:
Go, break among the press, and find a way out
To let the troop pass fairly; or I'll find
A Marshalsea, shall hold you play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princess.

*Man.* You great fellow, stand close up, or
I'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You i' the camblet, get up o' the rail;
I'll peck** you o'er the pales else. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—The Palace.*††

*Enter trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen,* LORD MAYOR, GARTER, CRANMER, *Duke of* NORFOLK, *with his Marshal's staff, Duke of* SUFFOLK, *two Noblemen bearing great standing-bowls for the christening gifts; then four Noblemen bearing a*

* Pink'd cap. † The brazier. ‡ Two Puritan congregations.
§ Place of confinement. ‖ A desert of whipping.
¶ Black leather vessels to hold beer. ** Pitch. †† At Greenwich.

*canopy, under which the Duchess of* NORFOLK, *godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c. Train borne by a Lady; then follows the Marchioness of* DORSET, *the other godmother, and Ladies. The troop pass once about the stage, and* GARTER *speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven from thy endless goodness, send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, to the high and mighty princess of England, Elizabeth!

*Flourish. Enter* KING, *and Train.*

Cran. [*kneeling*]. And to your royal grace, and the good queen,
My noble partners, and myself, thus pray:
All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,
Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy,
May hourly fall upon ye!

*K. Hen.* Thank you, good lord archbishop;
What is her name?

*Cran.* Elizabeth.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, lord.— [*The* KING *kisses the child.*
With this kiss take my blessing: God protect thee!
Into whose hands I give thy life.

*Cran.* Amen.

*K. Hen.* My noble gossips, ye have been too prodigal:
I thank ye heartily; so shall this lady,
When she has so much English.

*Cran.* Let me speak, Sir,
For heaven now bids me; and the words I utter
Let none think flattery, for they'll find them truth.
This royal infant, (heaven still move about her!)
Though in her cradle, yet now promises
Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,
Which time shall bring to ripeness: She shall be
(But few now living can behold that goodness)
A pattern to all princes living with her,
And all that shall succeed: Saba was never
More covetous of wisdom, and fair virtue,
Than this pure soul shall be: all princely graces,
That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,
With all the virtues that attend the good,
Shall still be doubled on her: truth shall nurse her,
Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her:
She shall be loved and fear'd: Her own shall bless her:
Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn,
And hang their heads with sorrow: Good grows with her:
In her days, every man shall eat in safety
Under his own vine, what he plants; and sing
The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours:
God shall be truly known; and those about her
From her shall read the perfect ways of honour,
And by those claim their greatness, not by blood.
[Nor* shall this peace sleep with her: But as when
The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phœnix,

* This and the following seventeen lines were probably written by Ben Jonson, after the accession of King James.

Her ashes new create another heir,
As great in admiration as herself;
So shall she leave her blessedness to one
(When heaven shall call her from this cloud of darkness),
Who, from the sacred ashes of her honour,
Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,
And so stand fix'd: Peace, plenty, love, truth, terror,
That were the servants to this chosen infant,
Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him;
Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine,
His honour and the greatness of his name
Shall be, and make new nations: He shall flourish,
And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches
To all the plains about him:——Our children's children
Shall see this, and bless heaven.

*K. Hen.* Thou speakest wonders.]

*Cran.* She shall be, to the happiness of England,
An aged princess; many days shall see her,
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.
'Would I had known no more! but she must die
(She must, the saints must have her), yet a virgin;
A most unspotted lily shall she pass
To the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.

*K. Hen.* O lord archbishop,
Thou hast made me now a man; never, before
This happy child, did I get anything:
This oracle of comfort has so pleased me,
That, when I am in heaven, I shall desire
To see what this child does, and praise my Maker.—
I thank ye all,—To you, my good lord mayor,
And your good brethren, I am much beholden;
I have received much honour by your presence,
And ye shall find me thankful. Lead the way, lords;—
Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye,
She will be sick else. This day, no man think
He has business at his house; for all shall stay,
This little one shall make it holiday. [*Exeunt.*

---

## EPILOGUE.

'Tis ten to one, this play can never please
All that are here: Some come to take their ease,
And sleep an act or two; but those, we fear,
We have frighted with our trumpets; so, 'tis clear,
They'll say, 'tis naught: others, to hear the city
Abused extremely, and to cry,—*that's witty!*
Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,
All the expected good we are like to hear
For this play at this time is only in
The merciful construction of good women;
For such a one we show'd them; If they smile,
And say, 'twill do, I know, within a while
All the best men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,
If they hold, when their ladies bid them clap.

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

PRIAM, *King of Troy.*
HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, DEIPHOBUS, HELENUS, } *his Sons.*
ÆNEAS, ANTENOR, *Trojan Commanders.*
CALCHAS, *a Trojan Priest, taking part with the Greeks.*
PANDARUS, *Uncle to Cressida.*
MARGARELON, *a bastard Son of Priam.*
AGAMEMNON, *the Grecian General.*
MENELAUS, *his Brother.*
ACHILLES, AJAX, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, PATROCLUS, } *Grecian Commanders.*

THERSITES, *a deformed and scurrilous Grecian.*
ALEXANDER, *Servant to Cressida.*
SERVANT to Troilus.
SERVANT to Paris.
SERVANT to Diomedes.

HELEN, *Wife to Menelaus.*
ANDROMACHE, *Wife to Hector.*
CASSANDRA, *Daughter to Priam; a Prophetess.*
CRESSIDA, *Daughter to Calchas.*

Trojan and Greek SOLDIERS, and Attendants.

SCENE.—Troy, and the Grecian Camp before it.

## PROLOGUE.

IN Troy, there lies the scene. From isles of Greece
The princes orgulous,* their high blood chafed,
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,
Fraught with the ministers and instruments
Of cruel war; Sixty and nine, that wore
Their crownets regal, from the Athenian bay
Put forth toward Phrygia: and their vow is made,
To ransack Troy: within whose strong immures
The ravish'd Helen, Menelaus' queen,
With wanton Paris sleeps; And that's the quarrel.
To Tenedos they come;
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge
Their warlike fraughtage:† Now on Dardan plains
The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch
Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city,
Dardan, and Tymbria, Ilias, Chetas, Trojan,
And Antenorides, with massy staples,
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,
Sperr‡ up the sons of Troy.

* Orgueilleux—proud, disdainful. † Freight. ‡ Shut.

Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits,
On one and other side, Trojan and Greek,
Sets all on hazard:—And hither am I come
A prologue arm'd,—but not in confidence
Of author's pen, or actor's voice; but suited
In like conditions as our argument,—
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play
Leaps o'er the vaunt* and firstlings of those broils,
'Ginning in the middle; starting thence away
To what may be digested in a play.
Like, or find fault; do as your pleasures are;
Now good, or bad, 'tis but the chance of war.

---

## ACT I.

*SCENE I.—Troy. Before* PRIAM'S *Palace.*

*Enter* TROILUS *armed, and* PANDARUS.

*Tro.* Call here my varlet,† I'll unarm again:
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,
That find such cruel battle here within?
Each Trojan, that is master of his heart,
Let him to field! Troilus, alas! hath none.

*Pan.* Will this geer ne'er be mended?

*Tro.* The Greeks are strong, and skilful to their strength,
Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness valiant;
But I am weaker than a woman's tear,
Tamer than sleep, fonder‡ than ignorance;
Less valiant than the virgin in the night,
And skilless as unpractised infancy.

*Pan.* Well, I have told you enough of this: for my part, I'll not meddle nor make no further. He that will have a cake out of the wheat, must tarry the grinding.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the grinding; but you must tarry the bolting.

*Tro.* Have I not tarried?

*Pan.* Ay, the bolting; but you must tarry the leavening.

*Tro.* Still have I tarried.

*Pan.* Ay, to the leavening: but here's yet in the word—hereafter, the kneading, the making of the cake, the heating of the oven, and the baking; nay, you must stay the cooling too, or you may chance to burn your lips.

*Tro.* Patience herself, what goddess e'er she be,
Doth lesser blench§ at sufferance than I do.
At Priam's royal table do I sit;
And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts,—
So, traitor!—when she comes!——When is she thence?

*Pan.* Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw her look, or any woman else.

* Avant, what went before.
† Servant to a knight.
‡ Weaker.
§ Shrink.

*Tro.* I was about to tell thee,—When my heart,
As wedged with a sigh, would rive* in twain;
Lest Hector or my father should perceive me,
I have (as when the sun doth light a storm)
Buried this sigh in wrinkle of a smile:
But sorrow, that is couch'd in seeming gladness,
Is like that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

*Pan.* An her hair were not somewhat darker than Helen's (well, go to), there were no more comparison between the women,—But, for my part, she is my kinswoman; I would not, as they term it, praise her,—But I would somebody had heard her talk yesterday, as I did. I will not dispraise your sister Cassandra's wit; but—

*Tro.* O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus,—
When I do tell thee, There my hopes lie drown'd,
Reply not in how many fathoms deep
They lie indrench'd. I tell thee, I am mad
In Cressid's love: Thou answer'st, She is fair;
Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart
Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice;
Handlest in thy discourse, O, that her hand,
In whose comparison all whites are ink,
Writing their own reproach; To whose soft seizure
The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense
Hard as the palm of ploughmen! This thou tell'st me,
As true thou tell'st me, when I say—I love her;
But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,
Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me
The knife that made it.

*Pan.* I speak no more than truth.

*Tro.* Thou dost not speak so much.

*Pan.* 'Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be as she is: if she be fair, 'tis the better for her; an she be not, she has the mends in her own hands.

*Tro.* Good Pandarus! How now, Pandarus?

*Pan.* I have had my labour for my travel; ill-thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you: gone between and between, but small thanks for my labour.

*Tro.* What, art thou angry, Pandarus? what, with me?

*Pan.* Because she is kin to me, therefore, she's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday, as Helen is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not, an she were a black-a-moor; 'tis all one to me.

*Tro.* Say I, she is not fair?

*Pan.* I do not care whether you do or no. She's a fool to stay behind her father; let her to the Greeks; and so I'll tell her the next time I see her: for my part, I'll meddle nor make no more in the matter.

*Tro.* Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Not I.

*Tro.* Sweet Pandarus,—

* Split.

*Pan.* Pray you, speak no more to me; I will leave all as I found it, and there an end. [*Exit* PANDARUS. *An alarum.*

*Tro.* Peace, you ungracious clamours! peace, rude sounds!
Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be fair
When with your blood you daily paint her thus.
I cannot fight upon this argument;
It is too starved a subject for my sword.
But, Pandarus—O gods, how do you plague me!
I cannot come to Cressid, but by Pandar;
And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo,
As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit.
Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love,
What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we?
Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl:
Between our Ilium and where she resides,
Let it be called the wild and wandering flood;
Ourself, the merchant; and this sailing Pandar,
Our doubtful hope, our convoy, and our bark.

*Alarum. Enter* ÆNEAS.

*Æne.* How now, prince Troilus? wherefore not afield?

*Tro.* Because not there; This woman's answer sorts,*
For womanish it is to be from thence.
What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?

*Æne.* That Paris is returned home, and hurt.

*Tro.* By whom, Æneas?

*Æne.* Troilus, by Menelaus.

*Tro.* Let Paris bleed; 'tis but a scar to scorn;
Paris is gored with Menelaus' horn. [*Alarum.*

*Æne.* Hark! what good sport is out of town to-day!

*Tro.* Better at home, if *would I might*, were *may*.—
But to the sport abroad;—Are you bound thither?

*Æne.* In all swift haste.

*Tro.* Come, go we then together. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—The same. A Street.*

*Enter* CRESSIDA *and* ALEXANDER.

*Cres.* Who were those went by?

*Alex.* Queen Hecuba and Helen.

*Cres.* And whither go they?

*Alex.* Up to the eastern tower,
Whose height commands as subject all the vale,
To see the battle. Hector, whose patience
Is, as a virtue, fix'd, to-day was moved:
He chid Andromache, and struck his armourer;
And, like as there were husbandry in war,
Before the sun rose, he was harness'd light,
And to the field goes he; where every flower
Did, as a prophet, weep what it foresaw
In Hector's wrath.

*Cres.* What was his cause of anger?

* Suits.

*Alex.* The noise goes, this: There is among the Greeks
A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;
They call him, Ajax.

*Cres.* Good; And what of him?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man *per se*,
And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men; unless they are drunk, sick, or have no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many beasts of their particular additions;* he is as valiant as the lion, churlish as the bear, slow as the elephant: a man into whom nature hath so crowded humours, that his valour is crushed† into folly, his folly sauced with discretion: there is no man hath a virtue that he hath not a glimpse of; nor any man an attaint, but he carries some stain of it: he is melancholy without cause, and merry against the hair:‡ He hath the joints of everything, but everything so out of joint, that he is a gouty Briareus, many hands and no use; or purblind Argus, all eyes and no sight.

*Cres.* But how should this man, that makes me smile, make Hector angry?

*Alex.* They say, he yesterday coped Hector in the battle, and struck him down; the disdain and shame whereof hath ever since kept Hector fasting and waking.

*Enter* PANDARUS.

*Cres.* Who comes here?

*Alex.* Madam, your uncle Pandarus.

*Cres.* Hector's a gallant man.

*Alex.* As may be in the world, lady.

*Pan.* What's that? what's that?

*Cres.* Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.

*Pan.* Good morrow, cousin Cressid: What do you talk of?—Good morrow, Alexander.—How do you, cousin? When were you at Ilium?

*Cres.* This morning, uncle.

*Pan.* What were you talking of, when I came? Was Hector armed, and gone, ere ye came to Ilium? Helen was not up, was she?

*Cres.* Hector was gone; but Helen was not up.

*Pan.* E'en so; Hector was stirring early.

*Cres.* That were we talking of, and of his anger.

*Pan.* Was he angry?

*Cres.* So he says here.

*Pan.* True, he was so; I know the cause too; he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell them that: and there is Troilus will not come far behind him; let them take heed of Troilus; I can tell them that too.

*Cres.* What, is he angry too?

*Pan.* Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better man of the two.

*Cres.* O, Jupiter! there's no comparison.

*Pan.* What, not between Troilus and Hector?
Do you know a man if you see him?

* Characteristics. † Mingled. ‡ Grain.

*Cres.* Ay; if ever I saw him before, and knew him.
*Pan.* Well, I say, Troilus is Troilus.
*Cres.* Then you say as I say; for, I am sure, he is not Hector.
*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus, in some degrees.
*Cres.* 'Tis just to each of them; he is himself.
*Pan.* Himself? Alas, poor Troilus! I would, he were,——
*Cres.* So he is.
*Pan.* ——'Condition, I had gone barefoot to India.
*Cres.* He is not Hector.
*Pan.* Himself? no, he's not himself.—'Would 'a were himself! Well, the gods are above; Time must friend, or end: Well, Troilus, well,—I would my heart were in her body! No, Hector is not a better man than Troilus.
*Cres.* Excuse me.
*Pan.* He is elder.
*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me.
*Pan.* The other's not come to't; you shall tell me another tale, when the other's come to't. Hector shall not have his wit this year.
*Cres.* He shall not need it, if he have his own.
*Pan.* Nor his qualities;——
*Cres.* No matter.
*Pan.* Nor his beauty.
*Cres.* 'Twould not become him, his own's better.
*Pan.* You have no judgment, niece: Helen herself swore the other day, that Troilus, for a brown favour (for so 'tis, I must confess),—Not brown neither.
*Cres.* No, but brown.
*Pan.* 'Faith, to say truth, brown and not brown.
*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.
*Pan.* She praised his complexion above Paris.
*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.
*Pan.* So he has.
*Cres.* Then, Troilus should have too much: if she praised him above, his complexion is higher than his; he having colour enough, and the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a good complexion. I had as lief, Helen's golden tongue had commended Troilus for a copper nose.
*Pan.* I swear to you, I think, Helen loves him better than Paris.
*Cres.* Then she's a merry Greek, indeed.
*Pan.* Nay, I am sure she does. She came to him the other day into a compassed* window,—and, you know, he has not past three or four hairs on his chin.
*Cres.* Indeed, a tapster's arithmetic may soon bring his particulars therein to a total.
*Pan.* Why, he is very young: and yet will he, within three pound, lift as much as his brother Hector.
*Cres.* Is he so young a man, and so old a lifter?†
*Pan.* But, to prove to you that Helen loves him;—she came, and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin,——
*Cres.* Juno have mercy!—How came it cloven?

* Bow. † Thief.

*Pan.* Why, you know, 'tis dimpled: I think, his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.

*Cres.* O, he smiles valiantly.

*Pan.* Does he not?

*Cres.* O yes, an 'twere a cloud in autumn.

*Pan.* Why, go to then:—But to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,——

*Cres.* Troilus will stand to the proof, if you'll prove it so.

*Pan.* Troilus? why, he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.

*Cres.* If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens i' the shell.

*Pan.* I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled his chin;—Indeed, she has a marvellous white hand, I must needs confess.

*Cres.* Without the rack.

*Pan.* And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.

*Cres.* Alas, poor chin! many a wart is richer.

*Pan.* But, there was such laughing;—Queen Hecuba laughed, that her eyes ran o'er.

*Cres.* With mill-stones.*

*Pan.* And Cassandra laughed.

*Cres.* But there was a more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes;—Did her eyes run o'er too?

*Pan.* And Hector laughed.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An't had been a green hair, I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair, as at his pretty answer.

*Cres.* What was his answer?

*Pan.* Quoth she, *Here's but one and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white.*

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That's true; make no question of that. *One and fifty hairs,* quoth he, *and one white: That white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons.* Jupiter! quoth she, *which of these hairs is Paris my husband? The forked one,* quoth he; *pluck it out and give it him.* But, there was such laughing! and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.†

*Cres.* So let it now; for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn, 'tis true; he will weep you, an 'twere‡ a man born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an 'twere a nettle against May. [*A retreat sounded.*

*Pan.* Hark, they are coming from the field: Shall we stand up here, and see them, as they pass toward Ilium? good niece, do; sweet niece Cressida.

* A proverbial saying. † Went beyond bounds.
‡ As if 'twere.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here, here's an excellent place; here we may see most bravely: I'll tell you them all by their names, as they pass by; but mark Troilus above the rest.

*Æneas passes over the stage.*

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*Pan.* That's Æneas; Is not that a brave man? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you. But mark Troilus; you shall see anon.

*Cres.* Who's that?

ANTENOR *passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Antenor; he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he's a man good enough; he's one o' the soundest judgments in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person:—When comes Troilus?—I'll show you Troilus anon; if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod?

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

HECTOR *passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Hector, that, that, look you, that; There's a fellow!—Go thy way, Hector;—There's a brave man, niece.—O brave Hector!—Look, how he looks! there's a countenance: Is't not a brave man?

*Cres.* O, a brave man!

*Pan.* Is 'a not? It does a man's heart good—Look you what hacks are on his helmet? look you yonder, do you see? look you there! There's no jesting: there's laying on; take't off who will, as they say: there be hacks!

*Cres.* Be those with swords?

*Pan.* Swords? anything, he cares not: an the devil come to him, it's all one: By god's lid, it does one's heart good:—Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris: look ye yonder, niece.

PARIS *passes over.*

*Pan.* Is't not a gallant man too, is't not?—Why, this is brave now.—Who said, he came hurt home to-day? he's not hurt: why this will do Helen's heart good now. Ha! 'would I could see Troilus now!—you shall see Troilus anon.

*Cres.* Who's that?

HELENUS *passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Helenus,—I marvel, where Troilus is:—That's Helenus;—I think he went not forth to-day:—That's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle?

*Pan.* Helenus? no;—yes, he'll fight indifferent well:—I marvel, where Troilus is!—Hark;—do you not hear the people cry, Troilus?—Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

TROILUS *passes over.*

*Pan.* Where? yonder? that's Deiphobus: 'Tis Troilus! there's a man, niece!—Hem!—Brave Troilus! the prince of chivalry!

*Cres.* Peace, for shame, peace!

*Pan.* Mark him; note him;—O brave Troilus!—look well upon him, niece; look you, how his sword is bloodied, and his helm more hack'd than Hector's; And how he looks, and how he goes!—O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three and twenty. Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way; had I a sister were a grace, or a daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable man! Paris?—Paris is dirt to him; and I warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to boot.

*Forces pass over the stage.*

*Cres.* Here come more.

*Pan.* Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran, chaff and bran! porridge after meat! I could live and die i' the eyes of Troilus. Ne'er look, ne'er look; the eagles are gone; crows and daws, crows and daws! I had rather be such a man as Troilus, than Agamemnon and all Greece.

*Cres.* There is among the Greeks, Achilles; a better man than Troilus.

*Pan.* Achilles? a drayman, a porter, a very camel.

*Cres.* Well, well.

*Pan.* Well, well?—Why, have you any discretion? have you any eyes? Do you know what a man is? Is not birth, beauty, good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, virtue, youth, liberality, and such like, the spice and salt that season a man?

*Cres.* Ay, a minced man: and then to be baked with no date in the pye,—for then the man's date is out.

*Pan.* You are such a woman? one knows not at what ward* you lie.

*Cres.* Upon my back, to defend my belly; upon my wit, to defend my wiles; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my mask, to defend my beauty; and, you, to defend all these: and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand watches.

*Pan.* Say one of your watches.

*Cres.* Nay, I'll watch you for that; and that's one of the chiefest of them too: if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I can watch you for telling how I took the blow; unless it swell past hiding, and then it is past watching.

*Pan.* You are such another!

*Enter* TROILUS' *Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.

*Pan.* Where?

*Boy.* At your own house; there he unarms him.

*Pan.* Good boy, tell him I come: [*Exit* BOY.] I doubt, he be hurt.—Fare ye well, good niece.

*Cres.* Adieu, uncle.

*Pan.* I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

* Guard.

*Cres.* To bring, uncle.
*Pan.* Ay, a token from Troilus.
*Cres.* By the same token you are a bawd.—
[*Exit* PANDARUS.
Words, vows, griefs, tears, and love's full sacrifice,
He offers in another's enterprise:
But more in Troilus thousand fold I see
Than in the glass of Pandar's praise may be;
Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing:
Things won are done, joy's soul lies in the doing:
That she beloved knows nought, that knows not this,—
Men prize the thing ungain'd more than it is:
That she was never yet, that ever knew
Love got so sweet, as when desire did sue:
Therefore this maxim out of love I teach,—
Achieved, men us command; ungain'd, beseech:*
Then though my heart's content† firm love doth bear,
Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear. [*Exit.*

*SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp. Before Agamemnon's Tent.*

*Trumpets. Enter* AGAMEMNON, NESTOR, ULYSSES, MENELAUS, *and others.*

*Agam.* Princes,
What grief hath set the jaundice on your cheeks?
The ample proposition, that hope makes
In all designs begun on earth below,
Fails in the promised largeness: checks and disasters
Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd;
As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap,
Infect the sound pine, and divert his grain
Tortive and errant‡ from his course of growth.
Nor, princes, is it matter new to us,
That we come short of our suppose so far,
That, after seven years' siege, yet Troy walls stand;
Sith§ every action that hath gone before,
Whereof we have record, trial did draw
Bias and thwart, not answering the aim,
And that unbodied figure of the thought
That gave't surmised shape. Why then, you princes,
Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our works;
And think them shames, which are, indeed, nought else
But the protractive trials of great Jove.
To find persistive constancy in men?
The fineness of which metal is not found
In fortune's love: for then, the bold and coward,
The wise and fool, the artist and unread,
The hard and soft, seem all affin'd and kin:
But, in the wind and tempest of her frown,
Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan,

* *I.e.* a woman once possessed is under command; but not gained, is still besought.
† Capacity. ‡ Twisted and rambling. § Since.

Puffing at all, winnows the light away;
And what hath mass, or matter, by itself
Lies, rich in virtue, and unmingled.

*Nest.* With due observance of thy godlike seat, *
Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply
Thy latest words. In the reproof of chance
Lies the true proof of men: The sea being smooth,
How many shallow bauble boats dare sail
Upon her patient breast, making their way
With those of nobler bulk.
But let the ruffian Boreas once enrage
The gentle Thetis, and, anon, behold
The strong ribb'd bark through liquid mountains cut,
Bounding between the two moist elements,
Like Perseus' horse: Where's then the saucy boat,
Whose weak untimber'd sides but even now
Co-rival'd greatness? either to harbour fled,
Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so
Doth valour's show, and valour's worth, divide,
In storms of fortune: For, in her ray and brightness,
The herd hath more annoyance by the brize, †
Than by the tiger: but when the splitting wind
Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks,
And flies ‡ fled under shade, why, then, the thing of courage, §
As roused with rage, with rage doth sympathize,
And with an accent turn'd in self-same key,
Returns to chiding ‖ fortune.

*Ulyss.* Agamemnon,—
Thou great commander, nerve and bone of Greece,
Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit,
In whom the tempers and the minds of all
Should be shut up,—hear what Ulysses speaks.
Besides the applause and approbation
The which,—most mighty for thy place and sway,—
[*To* AGAMEMNON.
And thou most reverend for thy stretch'd-out life,—[*To* NESTOR.
I give to both your speeches,—which were such,
As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece
Should hold up high in brass; and such again,
As venerable Nestor, hatch'd in silver, ¶
Should with a bond of air (strong as the axletree
On which heaven rides), knit all the Greekish ears
To his experienced tongue,—yet let it please both,—
Thou great,—and wise,—to hear Ulysses speak.

*Agam.* Speak, prince of Ithaca; and be't of less expect **
That matter needless, of importless burden,
Divide thy lips; than we are confident,
When rank Thersites opes his mastiff jaws,
We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.

* The throne. † The gad fly. ‡ (*Are*).
§ The tiger, which is said to be most furious in storms.
‖ Noisy, clamorous. ¶ *I. e.* ornamented with a silvery beard.
** Expectation.

*Ulyss.* Troy, yet upon his basis had been down,
And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a master,
But for these instances.
The speciality of rule * hath been neglected:
And, look, how many Grecian tents do stand
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow factions.
When that the general is not like the hive,
To whom the foragers shall all repair,
What honey is expected? Degree being vizarded,†
The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.
The heavens themselves, the planets, and this centre ‡
Observe degree, priority, and place,
Insisture, § course, proportion, season, form,
Office, and custom, in all line of order:
And therefore is the glorious planet, Sol,
In noble eminence enthroned and sphered
Amidst the other; whose med'cinable eye
Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil,
And posts, like the commandment of a king,
Sans check, to good and bad: But when the planets,
In evil mixture, to disorder wander,
What plagues, and what portents? what mutiny?
What raging of the sea? shaking of earth?
Commotion in the winds? frights, changes, horrors,
Divert and crack, rend and deracinate ‖
The unity and married calm of states
Quite from their fixture? O, when degree is shaked,
Which is the ladder of all high designs,
The enterprise is sick! How could communities,
Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods ¶ in cities,
Peaceful commerce from dividable ** shores,
The primogenitive and due of birth,
Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,
But by degree, stand in authentic place?
Take but degree away, untune that string,
And, hark, what discord follows! each thing meets
In mere †† oppugnancy: The bounded waters
Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,
And make a sop of all this solid globe:
Strength should be lord of imbecility,
And the rude son should strike his father dead:
Force should be right; or, rather, right and wrong
(Between whose endless jar justice resides),
Should lose their names, and so should justice too.
Then every thing includes itself in power,
Power into will, will into appetite;
And appetite, a universal wolf,
So doubly seconded with will and power,
Must make perforce a universal prey,
And, last, eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,

* Rights of authority. † Masked. ‡ *I. e.* the earth itself.
§ Constancy. ‖ Uproot. ¶ Corporations, companies.
** Divided. †† Absolute.

This chaos, when degree is suffocate,
Follows the choking.
And this neglection of degree it is,
That by a pace* goes backward, with a purpose
It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd
By him one step below; he, by the next;
That next, by him beneath: so every step,
Exampled by the first pace that is sick
Of his superior, grows to an envious fever
Of pale and bloodless † emulation:
And 'tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot,
Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,
Troy in our weakness stands, not in her strength.

*Nest.* Most wisely hath Ulysses here discover'd
The fever whereof all our power ‡ is sick.

*Agam.* The nature of the sickness found, Ulysses,
What is the remedy?

*Ulyss.* The great Achilles,—whom opinion crowns
The sinew and the forehand of our host,—
Having his ear full of his airy fame,
Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent
Lies mocking our designs: With him, Patroclus,
Upon a lazy bed the livelong day
Breaks scurril jests;
And with ridiculous and awkward action
(Which, slanderer, he imitation calls),
He pageants § us. Sometime, great Agamemnon,
Thy topless || deputation he puts on;
And, like a strutting player,—whose conceit
Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich
To hear the wooden dialogue and sound
'Twixt his stretch'd footing and the scaffeldage,¶—
Such to-be-pitied and o'er-wrested ** seeming
He acts thy greatness in: and when he speaks,
'Tis like a chime a mending; with terms unsquared, ††
Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon dropp'd,
Would seem hyperboles. At this fusty stuff,
The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling,
From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;
Cries *Excellent!—'tis* Agamemnon *just.*—
*Now play me* Nestor;—*hem, and stroke thy beard,*
*As he, being dress'd to some oration.*
That's done;—as near as the extremest ends
Of parallels;‡‡ as like as Vulcan and his wife.
Yet good Achilles still cries, *Excellent!*
*'Tis* Nestor *right! Now play him me,* Patroclus,
*Arming to answer in a night alarm.*
And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough, and spit,

* Step by step. † Inactive. ‡ Army.
§ Takes us off. || Supreme.
¶ The galleries of the theatre. ** Beyond the truth.
†† Unadapted. ‡‡ *I. e.* as like as east to west.

And with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,
Shake in and out the rivet:—and at this sport,
Sir Valour dies; cries, *O!—enough*, Patroclus;—
*Or give me ribs of steel! I shall split all*
*In pleasure of my spleen.* And in this fashion,
All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes,
Severals and generals of grace exact,
Achievements, plots, orders, preventions,
Excitements to the field, or speech for truce,
Success, or loss, what is, or is not, serves
As stuff for these two to make paradoxes.

*Nest.* And in the imitation of these twain
(Whom, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns
With an imperial voice), many are infect.
Ajax is grown self-will'd; and bears his head
In such a rein,* in full as proud a place
As broad Achilles: keeps his tent like him;
Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war,
Bold as an oracle: and sets Thersites
(A slave, whose gall coins slanders like a mint)
To match us in comparisons with dirt;
To weaken and discredit our exposure,
How rank soever rounded in with danger.

*Ulyss.* They tax our policy, and call it cowardice;
Count wisdom as no member of the war;
Forestall prescience, and esteem no act
But that of hand: the still and mental parts,—
That do contrive how many hands shall strike,
When fitness calls them on; and know, by measure†
Of their observant toil, the enemies' weight,—
Why, this hath not a finger's dignity:
They call this—bed-work, mappery, closet-war:
So that the ram, that batters down the wall,
For the great swing and rudeness of his poise,
They place before his hand that made the engine;
Or those, that with the fineness of their souls
By reason guide his execution.

*Nest.* Let this be granted, and Achilles' horse
Makes many Thetis' sons. [*Trumpet sounds.*

*Agam.* What trumpet? look, Menelaus.

*Enter* ÆNEAS.

*Men.* From Troy.

*Agam.* What would you 'fore our tent?

*Æne.* Is this
Great Agamemnon's tent, I pray?

*Agam.* Even this.

*Æne.* May one, that is a herald and a prince,
Do a fair message to his kingly ears?

*Agam.* With surety stronger than Achilles' arm
'Fore all the Greekish heads, which with one voice
Call Agamemnon head and general.

* So haughtily. † Means.

*Æne.* Fair leave, and large security. How may
A stranger to those most imperial looks
Know them from eyes of other mortals?
*Agam.* How?
*Æne.* Ay;
I ask, that I might waken reverence,
And bid the cheek be ready with a blush
Modest as morning when she coldly eyes
The youthful Phœbus:
Which is that god in office, guiding men?
Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?
*Agam.* This Trojan scorns us; or the men of Troy
Are ceremonious courtiers.
*Æne.* Courtiers as free, as debonair, unarm'd,
As bending angels; that's their fame in peace:
But when they would seem soldiers, they have galls,
Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and, Jove's accord,
Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas,
Peace, Trojan; lay thy finger on thy lips!
The worthiness of praise disdains his worth,
If that the praised himself bring the praise forth:
But what the repining enemy commends,
That breath fame follows; that praise, sole pure, transcends.
*Agam.* Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself Æneas?
*Æne.* Ay, Greek, that is my name.
*Agam.* What's your affair, I pray you?
*Æne.* Sir, pardon; 'tis for Agamemnon's ears.
*Agam.* He hears nought privately that comes from Troy.
*Æne.* Nor I from Troy come not to whisper him:
Boring a trumpet to awake his ear;
To set his sense on the attentive bent,
And then to speak.
*Agam.* Speak frankly* as the wind;
It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour:
That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake,
He tells thee so himself.
*Æne.* Trumpet, blow loud,
Send thy brass voice through all these lazy tents:
And every Greek of mettle, let him know,
What Troy means fairly shall be spoke aloud. [*Trumpet sounds.*
We have, great Agamemnon, here in Troy
A prince call'd Hector (Priam is his father),
Who in this dull and long-continued truce
Is rusty grown; he bade me take a trumpet,
And to this purpose speak. Kings, princes, lords!
If there be one among the fair'st of Greece,
That holds his honour higher than his ease;
That seeks his praise more than he fears his peril;
That knows his valour, and knows not to fear;
That loves his mistress more than in confession†
(With truant vows to her own lips he loves),
And dare avow her beauty and her worth,

* Freely. † Profession.

In other arms than hers,—to him this challenge.
Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it,
He hath a lady, wiser, fairer, truer,
Than ever Greek did compass in his arms;
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call,
Mid-way between your tents and walls of Troy,
To rouse a Grecian that is true in love:
If any come, Hector shall honour him;
If none, he'll say in Troy, when he retires,
The Grecian dames are sun-burn'd, and not worth
The splinter of a lance. Even so much.

*Agam.* This shall be told our lovers, lord Æneas;
If none of them have soul in such a kind,
We left them all at home: But we are soldiers;
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.

*Nest.* Tell him of Nestor, one that was a man
When Hector's grandsire suck'd: he is old now;
But if there be not in our Grecian host
One noble man, that hath one spark of fire
To answer for his love, Tell him from me,—
I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver,
And in my vantbrace* put this wither'd brawn;
And meeting him, will tell him, That my lady
Was fairer than his grandame, and as chaste
As may be in the world: His youth in flood,
I'll prove this truth with my three drops of blood.

*Æne.* Now heavens forbid such scarcity of youth!

*Ulyss.* Amen!

*Agam.* Fair lord Æneas, let me touch your hand;
To our pavilion shall I lead you, Sir.
Achilles shall have word of this intent:
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent:
Yourself shall feast with us before you go,
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[*Exeunt all but* ULYSSES *and* NESTOR.

*Ulyss.* Nestor,——

*Nest.* What says Ulysses?

*Ulyss.* I have a young conception in my brain,
Be you my time to bring it to some shape.

*Nest.* What is't?

*Ulyss.* This 'tis:
Blunt wedges rive hard knots: The seeded pride
That hath to this maturity blown up
In rank Achilles, must or now be cropp'd,
Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,
To overbulk us all.

*Nest.* Well, and how?

*Ulyss.* This challenge that the gallant Hector sends,

* Armour for the arm.

However it is spread in general name,
Relates in purpose only to Achilles.
*Nest.* The purpose is perspicuous even as substance,
Whose grossness little characters sum up:
And, in the publication, make no strain,*
But that Achilles, were his brain as barren
As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo knows,
'Tis dry enough,—will, with what great speed of judgment,
Ay, with celerity, find Hector's purpose
Pointing on him.
*Ulyss.* And wake him to the answer, think you?
*Nest.* Yes.
It is most meet; Whom may you else oppose,
That can from Hector bring those honours off,
If not Achilles? Though't be a sportful combat,
Yet in the trial much opinion dwells;
For here the Trojans taste our dear'st repute
With their fin'st palate: And trust to me, Ulysses,
Our imputation shall be oddly poised
In this wild action: for the success,
Although particular, shall give a scantling†
Of good or bad unto the general;
And in such indexes, although small pricks‡
To their subsequent volumes, there is seen
The baby figure of the giant mass
Of things to come at large. It is supposed,
He, that meets Hector, issues from our choice:
And choice, being mutual, act of all our souls,
Makes merit her election; and doth boil,
As 'twere from forth us all, a man distill'd
Out of our virtues; Who miscarrying,
What heart receives from hence a conquering part,
To steel a strong opinion to themselves?
Which entertain'd, limbs are his instruments,
In no less working, than are swords and bows
Directive by the limbs.
*Ulyss.* Give pardon to my speech;—
Therefore 'tis meet, Achilles meet not Hector.
Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,
And think, perchance, they'll sell; if not,
The lustre of the better shall exceed,
By showing the worse first. Do not consent,
That ever Hector and Achilles meet;
For both our honour and our shame, in this,
Are dogg'd with two strange followers.
*Nest.* I see them not with my old eyes; what are they?
*Ulyss.* What glory our Achilles shares from Hector,
Were he not proud, we all should share with him:
But he already is too insolent;
And we were better parch in Afric sun,
Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,

* Difficulty. † Measure.
‡ Small points compared with the volumes.

Should he 'scape Hector fair: If he were foil'd,
Why, then we did our main opinion* crush
In taint of our best man. No, make a lottery;
And, by device, let blockish Ajax draw
The sort† to fight with Hector: Among ourselves,
Give him allowance for the better man,
For that will physic the great Myrmidon,
Who broils in loud applause; and make him fall
His crest, that prouder than blue Iris bends.
If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,
We'll dress him up in voices: If he fail,
Yet go we under our opinion still
That we have better men. But, hit or miss,
Our project's life this shape of sense assumes—
Ajax, employ'd, plucks down Achilles' plumes.
*Nest.* Ulysses,
Now I begin to relish thy advice;
And I will give a taste of it forthwith
To Agamemnon: go we to him straight.
Two curs shall tame each other; Pride alone
Must tarre‡ the mastiffs on, as 'twere their bone. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT II.

### *SCENE I.—Another part of the Grecian Camp.*

*Enter* AJAX *and* THERSITES.

*Ajax.* Thersites,——
*Ther.* Agamemnon—how if he had boils? full, all over, generally?
*Ajax.* Thersites,——
*Ther.* And those boils did run?—Say so,—did not the general run then? were not that a botchy core?
*Ajax.* Dog,——
*Ther.* Then would come some matter from him; I see none now.
*Ajax.* Thou bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not hear? Feel then. [*Strikes him.*
*Ther.* The plague of Greece upon thee, thou mongrel beef-witted lord!
*Ajax.* Speak, then, thou unsalted leaven, speak: I will beat thee into handsomeness.
*Ther.* I shall sooner rail thee into wit and holiness: but, I think, thy horse will sooner con an oration, than thou learn a prayer without book. Thou canst strike, canst thou? a red murrain o' thy jade's tricks!
*Ajax.* Toads-stool, learn me the proclamation,
*Ther.* Dost thou think, I have no sense, thou strikest me thus?
*Ajax.* The proclamation,—
*Ther.* Thou art proclaim'd a fool, I think.

* Estimation. † Lot. ‡ Excite.

*Ajax.* Do not, porpentine,* do not; my fingers itch.

*Ther.* I would thou didst itch from head to foot, and I had the scratching of thee; I would make thee the loathsomest scab in Greece. When thou art forth in the incursions, thou strikest as slow as another.

*Ajax.* I say, the proclamation,——

*Ther.* Thou grumblest and railest every hour on Achilles; and thou art as full of envy at his greatness, as Cerberus is at Proserpina's beauty, ay, that thou barkest at him.

*Ajax.* Mistress Thersites!

*Ther.* Thou shouldest strike him.

*Ajax.* Cobloaf!†

*Ther.* He would pun‡ thee into shivers with his fist, as a sailor breaks a biscuit.

*Ajax.* You whoreson cur! [*Beating him.*

*Ther.* Do, do.

*Ajax.* Thou stool for a witch!§

*Ther.* Ay, do, do; thou sodden-witted lord! thou hast no more brain than I have in mine elbows; an assinego‖ may tutor thee: Thou scurvy valiant ass; thou art here put to thrash Trojans; and thou art bought and sold among those of any wit, like a Barbarian slave. If thou use¶ to beat me, I will begin at thy heel, and tell what thou art by inches, thou thing of no bowels, thou!

*Ajax.* You dog!

*Ther.* You scurvy lord!

*Ajax.* You cur! [*Beating him.*

*Ther.* Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do, camel; do, do.

*Enter* ACHILLES *and* PATROCLUS.

*Achil.* Why, how now, Ajax? wherefore do you thus? How now, Thersites? what's the matter, man?

*Ther.* You see him there, do you?

*Achil.* Ay, what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, look upon him.

*Achil.* So I do; What's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, but regard him well.

*Achil.* Well! why I do so.

*Ther.* But yet you look not well upon him: for, whosoever you take him to be, he is Ajax.

*Achil.* I know that, fool.

*Ther.* Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

*Ajax.* Therefore I beat thee.

*Ther.* Lo, lo, lo, lo, what modicums of wit he utters! his evasions have ears thus long. I have bobbed his brain, more than he has beat my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a penny, and his *pia mater* is not worth the ninth part of a sparrow. This lord Achilles, Ajax,—who wears his wit in his belly, and his guts in his head,—I'll tell you what I say of him.

*Achil.* What?

* Porcupine. † Crusty, uneven loaf. ‡ Pound.

§ There used to be a mode of punishing witches, by tying them cross-legged on a high stool.

‖ Ass. ¶ Continue.

*Ther.* I say, this Ajax——
*Achil.* Nay, good Ajax.
[AJAX *offers to strike him,* ACHILLES *interposes.*
*Ther.* Has not so much wit——
*Achil.* Nay, I must hold you.
*Ther.* As will stop the eye of Helen's needle, for whom he comes to fight.
*Achil.* Peace, fool!
*Ther.* I would have peace and quietness, but the fool will not: he there; that he; look you there.
*Ajax.* O thou damned cur! I shall——
*Achil.* Will you set your wit to a fool's?
*Ther.* No, I warrant you; for a fool's will shame it.
*Patr.* Good words, Thersites.
*Achil.* What's the quarrel?
*Ajax.* I bade the vile owl, go learn me the tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon me.
*Ther.* I serve thee not.
*Ajax.* Well, go to, go to.
*Ther.* I serve here voluntary.
*Achil.* Your last service was sufferance, 'twas not voluntary; no man is beaten voluntary;* Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress.
*Ther.* Even so?—A great deal of your wit too lies in your sinews, or elset here be liars. Hector shall have a great catch, if he knock out either of your brains; a' were as good crack a fusty nut with no kernel.
*Achil.* What, with me too, Thersites?
*Ther.* There's Ulysses, and old Nestor,—whose wit was mouldy ere your grandsires had nails on their toes,—yoke you like draught oxen, and make you plough up the wars.
*Achil.* What, what?
*Ther.* Yes, good sooth; to, Achilles! to, Ajax! to!
*Ajax.* I shall cut out your tongue.
*Ther.* 'Tis no matter; I shall speak as much as thou, afterwards.
*Patr.* No more words, Thersites; peace.
*Ther.* I will hold my peace when Achilles' brach† bids me, shall I?
*Achil.* There's for you, Patroclus.
*Ther.* I will see you hanged, like clotpoles, ere I come any more to your tents; I will keep where there is wit stirring, and leave the faction of fools. [*Exit.*
*Patr.* A good riddance.
*Achil.* Marry, this, Sir, is proclaim'd through all our host:
That Hector, by the first hour of the sun,
Will, with a trumpet, 'twixt our tents and Troy,
To-morrow morning call some knight to arms,
That hath a stomach; and such a one, that dare
Maintain—I know not what; 'tis trash: Farewell.
*Ajax.* Farewell. Who shall answer him?
*Achil.* I know not, it is put to lottery; otherwise,
He knew his man.
*Ajax.* O, meaning you:—I'll go learn more of it. [*Exeunt.*

* Voluntarily. † A small scenting hound.

*SCENE II.—Troy. A Room in* PRIAM'S *Palace.*

*Enter* PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, *and* HELENUS.

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches, spent,
Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks;
*Deliver Helen, and all damage else—*
*As honour, loss of time, travel, expense,*
*Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consumed*
*In hot digestion of this cormorant war,—*
*Shall be struck off*:—Hector, what say you to't?
*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks than I,
As far as toucheth my particular, yet,
Dread Priam,
There is no lady of more softer bowels,
More spungy to suck in the sense of fear,
More ready to cry out—*Who knows what follows?*
Than Hector is: The wound of peace is surety,
Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd
The beacon of the wise, the tent that searches
To the bottom of the worst. Let Helen go:
Since the first sword was drawn about this question,
Every tithe soul, 'mongst many thousand dismes,*
Hath been as dear as Helen; I mean, of ours:
If we have lost so many tenths of ours,
To guard a thing not ours; not worth to us,
Had it our name, the value of one ten;
What merit 's in that reason, which denies
The yielding of her up?
*Tro.* Fie, fie, my brother!
Weigh you the worth and honour of a king,
So great as our dread father, in a scale
Of common ounces? will you with counters sum
The past-proportion of his infinite?
And buckle-in a waist most fathomless,
With spans and inches so diminutive
As fears and reasons? fie, for godly shame!
*Hel.* No marvel, though you bite so sharp at reasons,
You are so empty of them. Should not our father
Bear the great sway of his affairs with reasons,
Because your speech hath none, that tells him so?
*Tro.* You are for dreams and slumbers, brother priest,
You fur your gloves with reason. Here are your reasons:
You know, an enemy intends you harm;
You know, a sword employ'd is perilous,
And reason flies the object of all harm:
Who marvels then, when Helenus beholds
A Grecian and his sword, if he do set
The very wings of reason to his heels;
And fly like chidden Mercury from Jove,
Or like a star disorb'd?—Nay, if we talk of reason,
Let's shut our gates, and sleep: Manhood and honour
Should have hare hearts, would they but fat their thoughts

* Tenths.

With this cramm'd reason: reason and respect*
Make livers pale, and lustihood deject.
*Hect.* Brother, she is not worth what she doth cost
The holding.
*Tro.* What is aught, but as 'tis valued?
*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular will;
It holds his estimate and dignity
As well wherein 'tis precious of itself
As in the prizer: 'tis mad idolatry,
To make the service greater than the god
And the will dotes, that is attributive
To what infectiously itself affects,†
Without some image of the affected merit.
*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election
Is led on in the conduct of my will:
My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,
Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores
Of will and judgment: How may I avoid,
Although my will distaste what it elected,
The wife I chose? there can be no evasion
To blench ‡ from this, and to stand firm by honour:
We turn not back the silks upon the merchant,
When we have soil'd them; nor the remainder viands
We do not throw in unrespective § sieve,
Because we now are full. It was thought meet,
Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks:
Your breath with full consent bellied his sails;
The seas and winds (old wranglers) took a truce,
And did him service; he touch'd the ports desir'd;
And, for an old aunt, ‖ whom the Greeks held captive,
He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and freshness
Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes stale ¶ the morning.
Why keep we her, the Grecians keep our aunt:
Is she worth keeping? why, she is a pearl,
Whose price hath launched above a thousand ships,
And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.
If you'll avouch, 'twas wisdom Paris went,
(As you must needs, for you all cried—*Go, go*),
If you'll confess, he brought home noble prize,
(As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your hands,
And cried—*Inestimable!*) why do you now
The issue of your proper wisdoms rate;
And do a deed that fortune never did,**
Beggar the estimation which you priz'd
Richer than sea and land? O theft most base;
That we have stolen what we do fear to keep!
But, thieves, unworthy of a thing so stolen,
That in their country did them that disgrace,
We fear to warrant in our native place!

* Caution. † That creates the excellence it admires.
‡ Shrink from. § Common basket.
‖ Priam's sister, Hesione. ¶ The opposite of fresh.
** Be more changeable than fortune.

Cas. [*within*]. Cry, Trojans, cry!
*Pri.* What noise? what shriek is this?
*Tro.* 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her voice.
Cas. [*within*]. Cry, Trojans!
*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

*Enter* CASSANDRA, *raving.*

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand eyes,
And I will fill them with prophetic tears.
*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace.
*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled elders,
Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,
Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes
A moiety of that mass of moan to come.
Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears!
Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand;
Our fire-brand brother, Paris,* burns us all.
Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen and a woe:
Cry, cry, Troy burns, or else let Helen go. [*Exit.*
*Hect.* Now youthful Troilus, do not these high strains
Of divination in our sister work
Some touches of remorse? or is your blood
So madly hot, that no discourse of reason,
Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,
Can qualify the same?
*Tro.* Why, brother Hector,
We may not think the justness of each act
Such and no other than event doth form it;
Nor once deject the courage of our minds,
Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick raptures
Cannot distaste† the goodness of a quarrel,
Which hath our several honours all engag'd
To make it gracious.‡ For my private part,
I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons:
And Jove forbid, there should be done amongst us
Such things as might offend the weakest spleen
To fight for and maintain!
*Par.* Else might the world convince§ of levity
As well my undertakings, as your counsels;
But I attest the gods, your full consent
Gave wings to my propension, and cut off
All fears attending on so dire a project.
For what, alas, can these my single arms?
What propugnation‖ is in one man's valour,
To stand the push and enmity of those
This quarrel would excite? yet, I protest,
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,
And had as ample power as I have will,
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done
Nor faint in the pursuit.

* Hecuba, when pregnant with Paris, dreamed she was about to be delivered of a firebrand. † Change to the worse.
‡ To set it off. § Convict. ‖ Defence.

*Pri.* Paris, you speak
Like one besotted on your sweet delights:
You have the honey still, but these the gall;
So to be valiant is no praise at all.
*Par.* Sir, I propose not merely to myself
The pleasures such a beauty brings with it;
But I would have the soil of her fair rape
Wip'd off, in honourable keeping her.
What treason were it to the ransack'd queen,
Disgrace to your great worths, and shame to me,
Now to deliver her possession up,
On terms of base compulsion? Can it be,
That so degenerate a strain as this,
Should once set footing in your generous bosoms?
There's not the meanest spirit on our party,
Without a heart to dare, or sword to draw,
When Helen is defended; nor none so noble,
Whose life were ill bestow'd, or death unfam'd,
Where Helen is the subject: then I say,
Well may we fight for her, whom, we know well,
The world's large spaces cannot parallel.
*Hect.* Paris and Troilus, you have both said well:
And on the cause and question now in hand
Have gloz'd, *—but superficially; not much
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought
Unfit to hear moral philosophy:
The reasons you allege, do more conduce
To the hot passion of distemper'd blood,
Than to make up a free determination
'Twixt right and wrong; For pleasure and revenge,
Have ears more deaf than adders to the voice
Of any true decision. Nature craves,
All dues be render'd to their owners; Now
What nearer debt in all humanity,
Than wife is to the husband? if this law
Of nature be corrupted through affection;
And that great minds, of † partial indulgence
To their benumbed wills, resist the same;
There is a law in each-well order'd nation,
To curb those raging appetites that are
Most disobedient and refractory.
If Helen then be wife to Sparta's king,—
As it is known she is,—these moral laws
Of nature, and of nations, speak aloud
To have her back return'd: Thus to persist
In doing wrong, extenuates not wrong,
But makes it much more heavy. Hector's opinion
Is this in way of truth: yet ne'ertheless,
My spritely brethren, I propend ‡ to you
In resolution to keep Helen still;
For 'tis a cause that hath no mean dependence
Upon our joint and several dignities.

* Commented. † Through. ‡ Incline to.

*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our design:
Were it not glory that we more affected
Than the performance of our heaving spleens,
I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood
Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hector,
She is a theme of honour and renown;
A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds;
Whose present courage may beat down our foes,
And fame, in time to come, canonize us:
For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose
So rich advantage of a promis'd glory,
As smiles upon the forehead of this action.
For the wide world's revenue.
*Hec.* I am yours,
You valiant offspring of great Priamus.—
I have a roistling * challenge sent amongst
The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks,
Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits:
I was advértis'd, their great general slept,
Whilst emulation † in the army crept;
This, I presume, will wake him. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp. Before* ACHILLES' *tent.*

*Enter* THERSITES.

*Ther.* How now, Thersites? what, lost in the labyrinth of thy fury? Shall the elephant Ajax carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at him: O worthy satisfaction! 'would, it were otherwise; that I could beat him, whilst he rail'd at me: 'Sfoot, I'll learn to conjure and raise devils, but I'll see some issue of my spiteful execrations. Then there's Achilles,—a rare engineer. If Troy be not taken till these two undermine it, the walls will stand till they fall of themselves. O thou great thunder-darter of Olympus, forget that thou art Jove the king of gods; and, Mercury, lose all the serpentine craft of thy *Caduceus;* ‡ if ye take not that little little less-than-little wit from them that they have! which short-aimed ignorance itself knows is so abundant scarce, it will not in circumvention deliver a fly from a spider, without drawing their massy irons, and cutting the web. After this, the vengeance on the whole camp! or, rather, the bone-ache! for that, methinks, is the curse dependent on those that war for a placket. I have said my prayers; and devil, envy, say Amen. What, ho! my lord Achilles!

*Enter* PATROCLUS.

*Patr.* Who's there? Thersites? Good Thersites, come in and rail.

*Ther.* If I could have remembered a gilt counterfeit, thou wouldest not have slipped out of my contemplation: but it is no matter; Thyself upon thyself! The common curse of mankind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great revenue! heaven bless thee from a tutor, and discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood

* Blustering. † Envy.
‡ The wand of Mercury which is wreathed with serpents.

be thy direction till thy death! then if she, that lays thee out, says—thou art a fair corse, I'll be sworn and sworn upon 't, she never shrouded any but lazers.* Amen.—Where's Achilles?

*Patr.* What, art thou devout? wast thou in prayer?

*Ther.* Ay; The heavens hear me!

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Who's there?

*Patr.* Thersites, my lord.

*Achil.* Where, where?—Art thou come? Why, my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou not served thyself in to my table so many meals? Come; what's Agamemnon?

*Ther.* Thy commander, Achilles:—Then tell me, Patroclus, what's Achilles?

*Patr.* Thy lord, Thersites; Then, tell me, I pray thee, what's thyself?

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus; Then tell me, Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou mayest tell, that knowest.

*Achil.* O, tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Agamemnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my lord; I am Patroclus' knower; and Patroclus is a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool; I have not done.

*Achil.* He is a privileged man.—Proceed, Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a fool; Thersites is a fool; and, as aforesaid, Patroclus is a fool.

*Achil.* Derive this; come,

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to command Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be commanded of Agamemnon; Thersites is a fool to serve such a fool; and Patroclus is a fool positive.

*Patr.* Why am I a fool?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the prover.—It suffices me, thou art. Look you, who comes here!

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, *and* AJAX.

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody:—Come in with me, Thersites. [*Exit.*

*Ther.* Here is such patchery,† such juggling, and such knavery! all the argument is, a cuckold, and a whore; A good quarrel, to draw emulous‡ factions, and bleed to death upon. Now the dry *serpigo* § on the subject: and war and lechery confound all! [*Exit.*

*Agam.* Where is Achilles?

*Patr.* Within his tent; but ill dispos'd, my lord.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him that we are here.
He shent‖ our messengers; and we lay by
Our appertainments,¶ visiting of him:
Let him be told so; lest, perchance, he think
We dare not move the question of our place,
Or know not what we are.

* Lepers. † Deception. ‡ Envious.
§ Tetter, scab. ‖ Rebuked, rated. ¶ Appendage of dignity.

*Patr.* I shall say so to him. [*Exit.*

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his tent; he is not sick.

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart; you may call it melancholy, if you will favour the man; but, by my head, 'tis pride: But why, why? let him show us a cause.—A word, my lord. [*Takes* AGAMEMNON *aside.*

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from him.

*Nest.* Who? Thersites?

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have lost his argument.

*Ulyss.* No you see, he is his argument, that has his argument; Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better; their fraction is more our wish than their faction: But it was a strong composure, a fool could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity, that wisdom knits not, folly may easily untie. Here comes Patroclus.

*Re-enter* PATROCLUS.

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none for courtesy: his legs are legs for necessity, not for flexure.

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say—he is much sorry,
If anything more than your sport and pleasure
Did move your greatness, and this noble state,
To call upon him; he hopes, it is no other,
But, for your health and your digestion sake,
And after-dinner's breath.*

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus;—
We are too well acquainted with these answers:
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,
Cannot outfly our apprehensions.
Much attribute he hath; and much the reason
Why we ascribe it to him: yet all his virtues,—
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,—
Do, in our eyes, begin to lose their gloss;
Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,
Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,
We come to speak with him; and you shall not sin,
If you do say—we think him over-proud,
And under-honest; in self-assumption greater,
Than in the note of judgment; and worthier than himself
Here tend† the savage strangeness he puts on;
Disguise the holy strength of their command,
And underwrite‡ in an observing kind
His humorous predominance; yea, watch
His pettish lunes, § his ebbs, his flows, as if
The passage and whole carriage of this action
Rode on his tide. Go, tell him this; and add,
That, if he overhold his price so much,
We'll none of him; but let him, like an engine
Not portable, lie under this report—
Bring action hither, this cannot go to war:

* Breathing. † Attend. ‡ Subscribe. § Fits of lunacy.

A stirring dwarf we do allowance * give
Before a sleeping giant:—Tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall; and bring his answer presently. [*Exit.*

*Agam.* In second voice we'll not be satisfied,
We come to speak with him.—Ulysses, enter. [*Exit.* ULYSSES.

*Ajax.* What is he more than another?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is.

*Ajax.* Is he so much? Do you not think, he thinks himself a better man than I am?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and say—he is?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax; you are as strong, as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more gentle, and altogether more tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud? How doth pride grow? I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind's the clearer, Ajax, and your virtues the fairer. He that is proud, eats up himself: pride is his own glass, his own trumpet, his own chronicle; and whatever praises itself but in the deed, devours the deed in the praise.

*Ajax.* I do hate a proud man, as I hate the engendering of toads.

*Nest.* And yet he loves himself: Is it not strange? [*Aside.*

*Re-enter* ULYSSES.

*Ulyss.* Achilles will not to the field to-morrow.

*Agam.* What's his excuse?

*Ulyss.* He doth rely on none;
But carries on the stream of his dispose,
Without observance or respect of any,
In will peculiar and in self-admission.

*Agam.* Why will he not, upon our fair request,
Untent his person, and share the air with us?

*Ulyss.* Things small as nothing, for request's sake only,
He makes important: Possess'd he is with greatness;
And speaks not to himself, but with a pride
That quarrels at self-breath: imagin'd worth
Holds in his blood such swoln and hot discourse,
That, 'twixt his mental and his active parts,
Kingdom'd Achilles in commotion rages,
And batters down himself: What should I say?
He is so plaguy proud, that the death tokens of it
Cry—*No recovery.*

*Agam.* Let Ajax go to him.—
Dear lord, go you and greet him in his tent:
'Tis said, he holds you well; and will be led,
At your request, a little from himself.

*Ulyss.* O Agamemnon, let it not be so!
We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes
When they go from Achilles: Shall the proud lord,
That bastes his arrogance with his own seam; †
And never suffers matter of the world
Enter his thoughts,—save such as do revolve

* Approbation. † Lard.

And ruminate himself,—shall he be worshipp'd
Of that we hold an idol more than he?
No, this thrice worthy and right valiant lord
Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquired;
Nor, by my will, assubjugate his merit,
As amply titled as Achilles is,
By going to Achilles:
That were to enlard his fat-already pride;
And add more coals to cancer, when he burns
With entertaining great Hyperion.
This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid;
And say in thunder—*Achilles go to him.*
*Nest.* O, this is well; he rubs the vein of him. [*Aside.*
*Dio.* And how his silence drinks up this applause! [*Aside.*
*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my arm'd fist I'll pash* him
Over the face.
*Agam.* O, no, you shall not go.
*Ajax.* An he be proud with me, I'll pheeze† his pride:
Let me go to him.
*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon our quarrel.
*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow,——
*Nest.* How he describes
Himself! [*Aside.*
*Ajax.* Can he not be sociable?
*Ulyss.* The raven
Chides blackness. [*Aside.*
*Ajax.* I will let his humours blood.
*Agam.* He'll be physician, that should be the patient. [*Aside.*
*Ajax.* An all men
Were o' my mind,—
*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion. [*Aside.*
*Ajax.* He should not bear it so,
He should eat swords first: Shall pride carry it?
*Nest.* An 'twould, you'd carry half. [*Aside.*
*Ulyss.* He'd have ten shares. [*Aside.*
*Ajax.* I'll knead him, I will make him supple:——
*Nest.* He's not yet thorough warm: farce‡ him with praises:
Pour in, pour in; his ambition is dry. [*Aside.*
*Ulyss.* My lord, you feed too much on this dislike.
[*To* AGAMEMNON.
*Nest.* O noble general, do not do so.
*Dio.* You must prepare to fight without Achilles.
*Ulyss.* Why, 'tis this naming of him does him harm.
Here is a man—But 'tis before his face;
I will be silent.
*Nest.* Wherefore should you so?
He is not emulous, § as Achilles is.
*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as valiant.
*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter thus with us!
I would, he were a Trojan!
*Nest.* What a vice
Were it in Ajax now——

* Strike. † Curry. ‡ Stuff. § Jealous.

*Ulyss.* If he were proud?
*Dio.* Or covetous of praise?
*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne?
*Dio.* Or strange, or self-affected?
*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of sweet composure
Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee suck:
Famed be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature
Thrice-famed beyond all erudition:
But he that disciplined thy arms to fight,
Let Mars divide eternity in twain,
And give him half: and, for thy vigour,
Bull-bearing Milo his addition * yield
To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,
Which, like a bourn, a pale, a shore, confines
Thy spacious and dilated parts; Here's Nestor,—
Instructed by the antiquary times,
He must, he is, he cannot but be wise;
But pardon, father Nestor, were your days
As green as Ajax', and your brain so temper'd,
You should not have the eminence of him,
But be as Ajax.
*Ajax.* Shall I call you father?
*Nest.* Ay, my good son.
*Dio.* Be ruled by him, lord Ajax.
*Ulyss.* There is no tarrying here; the hart Achilles
Keeps thicket. Please it our great general
To call together all his state of war;
Fresh kings are come to Troy: To-morrow,
We must with all our main of power stand fast:
And here's a lord,—come knights from east to west,
And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.
*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep:
Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks draw deep. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT III.

### *SCENE I.—Troy. A Room in* PRIAM'S *Palace.*

*Enter* PANDARUS *and a* SERVANT.

*Pan.* Friend! you! pray you, a word: Do not you follow the young lord Paris?
*Serv.* Ay, Sir, when he goes before me.
*Pan.* You do depend upon him, I mean?
*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.
*Pan.* You do depend upon a noble gentleman; I must needs praise him.
*Serv.* The lord be praised!
*Pan.* You know me, do you not?
*Serv.* 'Faith, Sir, superficially.
*Pan.* Friend, know me better; I am the lord Pandarus.

* Titles.

*Serv.* I hope, I shall know your honour better.
*Pan.* I do desire it.
*Serv.* You are in the state of grace. [*Music within.*
*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend; honour and lordship are my titles:—What music is this?
*Serv.* I do but partly know, Sir; it is music in parts.
*Pan.* Know you the musicians?
*Serv.* Wholly, Sir,
*Pan.* Who play they to?
*Serv.* To the hearers, Sir.
*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?
*Serv.* At mine, Sir, and theirs that love music.
*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.
*Serv.* Who shall I command, Sir?
*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one another; I am too courtly and thou art too cunning: At whose request do these men play?
*Serv.* That's to't, indeed, Sir: Marry, Sir, at the request of Paris my lord, who is there in person; with him, the mortal Venus, the heart-blood of beauty, love's invisible soul,——
*Pan.* Who, my cousin, Cressida?
*Serv.* No, Sir, Helen; Could you not find out that by her attributes?
*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the prince Troilus: I will make a complimental assault upon him, for my business seeths.*
*Serv.* Sodden business! there's a stewed phrase, indeed!

*Enter* PARIS *and* HELEN, *attended.*

*Pan.* Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measure, fairly guide them! especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!
*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.
*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen.—Fair prince, here is good broken music.
*Par.* You have broke it, cousin: and, by my life, you shall make it whole again; you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance:—Nell, he is full of harmony.
*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.
*Helen.* O, Sir,——
*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.
*Par.* Well said, my lord! well, you say so in fits.
*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen:——My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?
*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out; we'll hear you sing, certainly.
*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me.—But (marry) thus, my lord,—My dear lord, and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus—
*Helen.* My lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—
*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to:—commends himself most affectionately to you.

* Boils.

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our melody; if you do, our melancholy upon your head!

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen; that's a sweet queen i'faith.

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la. Nay, I care not for such words; no, no.—And, my lord, he desires you, that, if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My lord Pandarus,———

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen,—my very very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploits in hand? where sups he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but my lord,———

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen?—My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sups.

*Par.* I'll lay my life, with my disposer, Cressida.

*Pan.* No, no, no such matter, you are wide;* come, your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord. Why should you say—Cressida? no, your poor disposer's sick.

*Par.* I spy.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy?—Come, give me an instrument.—Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my lord Paris.

*Pan.* He! no, she'll none of him; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I'll hear no more of this; I'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, pr'ythee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O, Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Love! ay, that it shall, i'faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so:

*Love, love, nothing but love, still more!*
*For, ho, love's bow*
*Shoots buck and doe:*
*The shaft confounds,*
*Not that it wounds*
*But tickles still the sore.*

*These lovers cry—Oh! oh! they die!*
*Yet that which seems the wound to kill,*
*Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!*
*So dying love lives still:*
*Oh! oh! a while, but ah! ah! ha!*
*Oh! oh! groans out for ha! ha! ha!*

Hey ho!

* Wide of your mark.

*Helen.* In love, i'faith, to the very tip of the nose.

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love; and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love? hot blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds?—Why, they are vipers: is love a generation of vipers? Sweet lord, who's a-field to-day?

*Par.* Hector, Deiphobus, Helenus, Antenor, and all the gallantry of Troy: I would fain have armed to-night, but my Nell would not have it so. How chance my brother Troilus went not?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something;—you know all, lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen,—I long to hear how they sped to-day.—You'll remember your brother's excuse?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen. [*Exit.*

[*A retreat sounded.*

*Par.* They are come from field: let us to Priam's hall,
To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must woo you
To help unarm our Hector: his stubborn buckles,
With these your white enchanting fingers touch'd,
Shall more obey, than to the edge of steel,
Or force of Greekish sinews; you shall do more
Than all the island kings, disarm great Hector.

*Helen.* 'Twill make us proud to be his servant, Paris:
Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty,
Give us more palm in beauty than we have;
Yea, overshines ourself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—The same.* PANDARUS' *Orchard.*

*Enter* PANDARUS *and a* SERVANT, *meeting.*

*Pan.* How now? where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Serv.* No, Sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

*Enter* TROILUS.

*Pan.* O, here he comes.—How now, how now?

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off. [*Exit* SERVANT.

*Pan.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door,
Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks
Staying for waftage. O, be thou my Charon,
And give me swift transportance to those fields,
Where I may wallow in the lily beds.
Proposed for the deserver! O gentle Pandarus,
From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings,
And fly with me to Cressid!

*Pan.* Walk here i' the orchard; I'll bring her straight.

[*Exit* PANDARUS.

*Tro.* I am giddy, expectation whirls me round.
The imaginary relish is so sweet

That it enchants my sense: What will it be,
When that the watery palate tastes indeed
Love's thrice-reputed nectar? death, I fear me;
Swooning destruction; or some joy too fine,
Too subtle-potent, tun'd too sharp in sweetness,
For the capacity of my ruder powers:
I fear it much; and I do fear, besides,
That I shall lose distinction in my joys;
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps
The enemy flying.

*Re-enter* PANDARUS.

*Pan.* She's making her ready, she'll come straight: you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she were frayed with a sprite: I'll fetch her. It is the prettiest villain:—she fetches her breath as short as a new ta'en sparrow. [*Exit* PANDARUS.

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom:
My heart beats thicker than a fevorous pulse;
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,
Like vassalage at unawares encount'ring
The eye of majesty.

*Enter* PANDARUS *and* CRESSIDA.

*Pan.* Come, come, what need you blush? shame's a baby.—Here she is now; swear the oaths now to her, that you have sworn to me.—What, are you gone again? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you? Come your ways, come your ways; an you draw backward, we'll put you i' the fills.*—Why do you not speak to her?—Come, draw this curtain, and let's see your picture. Alas, the day, how loath you are to offend daylight! an 'twere dark, you'd close sooner. So, so; rub on, and kiss the mistress.† How now, a kiss in fee-farm! build there, carpenter; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out, ere I part you. The falcon as the tercel,‡ for all the ducks i' the river: go to, go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Pan.* Words pay no debts, give her deeds: but she'll bereave you of the deeds too, if she call your activity in question. What, billing again?—Here's—*In witness whereof the parties interchangeably*—Come in, come in; I'll go get a fire. [*Exit* PANDARUS.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Tro.* O Cressida, how often have I wish'd me thus?

*Cres.* Wished my lord?—The gods grant! O my lord!

*Tro.* What should they grant? what makes this pretty abruption? what too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love?

*Cres.* More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils cherubims: they never see truly.

* Shafts of a carriage.

† In bowling, what is now called the jack, was formerly termed the mistress.

‡ The tercel is the male and the falcon the female hawk.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer footing than blind reason stumbling without fear: To fear the worst, oft cures the worst.

*Tro.* O, let my lady apprehend no fear: in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither?

*Tro.* Nothing, but our undertakings; when we vow to weep seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough, than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstrosity in love, lady,—that the will is infinite, and the execution confined; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to limit.

*Cres.* They say, all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they never perform; vowing more than the perfection of ten, and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions, and the act of hares, are they not monsters?

*Tro.* Are there such? such are not we: Praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove; our head shall go bare, till merit crown it: no perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert, before his birth; and, being born, his addition * shall be humble. Few words to fair truth: Troilus shall be such to Cressid, as what envy † can say worst, shall be a mock for his truth; and what truth can speak truest, not truer than Troilus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Re-enter* PANDARUS.

*Pan.* What, blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that; if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me: Be true to my lord: if he flinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages; your uncle's word, and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too; our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant, being won: they are burs, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown.

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart:—
Prince Troilus, I have loved you night and day
For many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid then so hard to win?

*Cres.* Hard to seem won; but I was won, my lord,
With the first glance that ever—Pardon me;—
If I confess much, you will play the tyrant.
I love you now; but not, till now, so much
But I might master it: in faith, I lie;
My thoughts were like unbridled children, grown
Too headstrong for their mother: See, we fools!
Why have I blabb'd? who shall be true to us,
When we are so unsecret to ourselves?
But, though I lov'd you well, I woo'd you not,
And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man;

* Titles. † Malice

Or that we women had men's privilege
Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue;
For, in this rapture, I shall surely speak
The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence;
Cunning in dumbness, from my weakness draws
My very soul of counsel: Stop my mouth.
*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues thence.
*Pan.* Pretty, i'faith.
*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me;
'Twas not my purpose, thus to beg a kiss:
I am ashamed;—O heavens! what have I done?—
For this time will I take my leave, my lord.
*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid?
*Pan.* Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning,——
*Cres.* Pray you, content you.
*Tro.* What offends you, lady?
*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.
*Tro.* You cannot shun
Yourself.
*Cres.* Let me go and try:
I have a kind of self resides with you;
But an unkind self, that itself will leave,
To be another's fool. I would be gone:
Where is my wit? I know not what I speak.
*Tro.* Well know they what they speak, that speak so wisely.
*Cres.* Perchance, my lord, I show more craft than love;
And fell so roundly to a large confession,
To angle for your thoughts: But you are wise;
Or else you love not; For to be wise, and love,
Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above.
*Tro.* O, that I thought it could be in a woman
(As, if it can, I will presume in you),
To feed for aye her lamp and flames of love;
To keep her constancy in plight and youth,
Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind
That doth renew swifter than blood decays!
Or, that persuasion could but thus convince me,—
That my integrity and truth to you
Might be affronted* with the match and weight
Of such a winnow'd purity in love;
How were I then uplifted! but, alas,
I am as true as truth's simplicity,
And simpler than the infancy of truth.
*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.
*Tro.* O virtuous fight,
When right with right wars who shall be most right!
True swains in love shall, in the world to come,
Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rhymes,
Full of protest, of oath, and big compare,†
Want similes, truth tir'd with iteration,—
As true as steel, as plantage to the moon,
As sun to day, as turtle to her mate,
As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,—

* Matched. † Comparison.

Yet, after all comparisons of truth,
As truth's authentic author to be cited,
As true as Troilus shall crown up* the verse,
And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.* Prophet may you be!
If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth,
When time is old and hath forgot itself,
When waterdrops have worn the stones of Troy,
And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up,
And mighty states characterless are grated
To dusty nothing; yet let memory,
From false to false, among false maids in love,
Upbraid my falsehood! when they have said—as false
As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,
As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,
Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son;
Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of falsehood,
As false as Cressid.

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made: seal it, seal it; I'll be the witness.—Here I hold your hand: here my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers-between be called to the world's end after my name, call them all—Pandars; let all constant men be Troiluses, all false women Cressids, and all brokers-between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed, which bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, press it to death: away.
And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here,
Bed, chamber, Pandar to provide this geer! [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR, AJAX, MENELAUS, *and* CALCHAS.

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you,
The advantage of the time prompts me aloud
To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind,
That, through the sight I bear in things, to Jove
I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession,
Incurr'd a traitor's name; exposed myself,
From certain and possess'd conveniences,
To doubtful fortunes; séquest'ring from me all
That time, acquaintance, custom, and condition,
Made tame and most familiar to my nature;
And here, to do you service, am become
As new into the world, strange, unacquainted:
I do beseech you, as in way of taste,
To give me now a little benefit,
Out of those many register'd in promise,
Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

* Conclude it.

*Agam.* What woulds't thou of us, Trojan? make demand.
*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, call'd Antenor,
Yesterday took; Troy holds him very dear.
Oft have you (often have you thanks therefore),
Desired my Cressid in right great exchange,
Whom Troy hath still denied: But this Antenor,
I know, is such a wrest* in their affairs,
That their negotiations all must slack,
Wanting his manage; and they will almost
Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam,
In change of him: let him be sent, great princes,
And he shall buy my daughter; and her presence
Shall quite strike off all service I have done,
In most accepted pain.
*Agam.* Let Diomedes bear him,
And bring us Cressid hither: Calchas shall have
What he requests of us.—Good Diomed,
Furnish you fairly for this interchange:
Withal, bring word—if Hector will to-morrow
Be answer'd in his challenge: Ajax is ready.
*Dio.* This shall I undertake; and 'tis a burden
Which I am proud to bear. [*Exeunt* DIOMEDES *and* CALCHAS.

*Enter* ACHILLES *and* PATROCLUS, *before their Tent.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles stands i'the entrance of his tent:—
Please it our general to pass strangely† by him,
As if he were forgot; and, princes all,
Lay negligent and loose regard upon him:
I will come last: 'Tis like, he'll question me,
Why such unplausive eyes are bent, why turn'd on him:
If so, I have derision med'cinable,
To use between your strangeness and his pride,
Which his own will shall have desire to drink;
It may do good: pride hath no other glass
To show itself, but pride; for supple knees
Feed arrogance, and are the proud man's fees.
*Agam.* We'll execute your purpose, and put on
A form of strangeness as we pass along;—
So do each lord; and either greet him not,
Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him more
Than if not look'd on. I will lead the way.
*Achil.* What, comes the general to speak with me?
You know my mind, I'll fight no more 'gainst Troy.
*Agam.* What says Achilles? would he ought with us?
*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the general?
*Achil.* No.
*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.
*Agam.* The better. [*Exeunt* AGAMEMNON *and* NESTOR.
*Achil.* Good day, good day.
*Men.* How do you? how do you? [*Exit* MENELAUS.
*Achil.* What, does the cuckold scorn me?
*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus?

* An instrument for tuning harps. † Shyly.

*Achil.* Good morrow, Ajax.
*Ajax.* Ha?
*Achil.* Good morrow.
*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too. [*Exit* AJAX.
*Achil.* What mean these fellows? Know they not Achilles?
*Patr.* They pass by strangely: they were used to bend,
To send their smiles before them to Achilles;
To come as humbly, as they used to creep
To holy altars.
*Achil.* What, am I poor of late?
'Tis certain, greatness, once fallen out with fortune,
Must fall out with men too: What the declined is,
He shall as soon read in the eyes of others,
As feel in his own fall: for men, like butterflies,
Show not their mealy wings, but to the summer;
And not a man, for being simply man,
Hath any honour: but honour for those honours
That are without him, as place, riches, favour,
Prizes of accident as oft as merit:
Which when they fall, as being slippery standers,
The love that lean'd on them as slippery too,
Do one pluck down another, and together
Die in the fall. But 'tis not so with me:
Fortune and I are friends; I do enjoy
At ample point all that I did possess,
Save these men's looks; who do, methinks, find out
Something not worth in me such rich beholding
As they have often given. Here is Ulysses;
I'll interrupt his reading.—
How now, Ulysses?
*Ulyss.* Now, great Thetis' son?
*Achil.* What are you reading?
*Ulyss.* A strange fellow here
Writes me, That man—how dearly ever parted,*
How much in having, or without, or in,—
Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,
Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection;
As when his virtues shining upon others
Heat them, and they retort that heat again
To the first giver.
*Achil.* This is not strange, Ulysses.
The beauty that is borne here in the face
The bearer knows not, but commends itself
To others' eyes: nor doth the eye itself
(That most pure spirit of sense), behold itself
Not going from itself; but eye to eye opposed
Salutes each other with each other's form.
For speculation turns not to itself,
Till it hath travelled, and is married there
Where it may see itself: this is not strange at all.
*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position,
It is familiar; but at the author's drift:

* Excellently endowed.

Who, in his circumstance,* expressly proves—
That no man is the lord of anything
(Though in and of him there be much consisting),
Till he communicate his parts to others:
Nor doth he of himself know them for aught
Till he behold them form'd in the applause
Where they are extended; which, like an arch, reverberates
The voice again; or like a gate of steel
Fronting the sun, receives and renders back
His figure and his heat. I was much wrapt in this;
And apprehended here immediately
The unknown Ajax.†
Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse;
That has he knows not what. Nature, what things there are,
Most abject in regard, and dear in use!
What things again most dear in the esteem,
And poor in worth! Now shall we see to-morrow,
An act that very chance doth throw upon him,
Ajax renown'd. O heavens, what some men do!
While some men leave to do!
How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,
While others play the idiots in her eyes!
How one man eats into another's pride,
While pride is fasting in his wantonness!
To see these Grecian lords!—why, even already
They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder;
As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast,
And great Troy shrinking.

*Achil.* I do believe it: for they pass'd by me,
As misers do by beggars: neither gave to me
Good word, nor look: What, are my deeds forgot?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his back,
Wherein he puts alms for oblivion,
A great-sized monster of ingratitudes.
Those scraps are good deeds past: which are devour'd
As fast as they are made, forgot as soon
As done: Perséverance, dear my lord,
Keeps honour bright: To have done, is to hang
Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail
In monumental mockery. Take the instant way
For honour travels in a strait so narrow,
Where one but goes abreast: keep then the path;
For emulation hath a thousand sons,
That one by one pursue: If you give way,
Or hedge aside from the direct forthright,
Like to an enter'd tide, they all rush by,
And leave you hindmost;—
Or, like a gallant horse fallen in first rank,
Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,
O'errun and trampled on: Then what they do in present,
Though less than yours in past, must o'ertop yours:
For time is like a fashionable host,

* Detail of argument. † Ajax not hitherto appreciated.

That slightly shakes his parting guest by the hand;
And with his arms out-stretched, as he would fly,
Grasps-in the comer: Welcome ever smiles,
And farewell goes out sighing. O, let not virtue seek
Remuneration for a thing it was;
For beauty, wit,
High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,
Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all
To envious and calumniating time.
One touch of nature makes the whole world kin,—
That all, with one consent, praise new-born gawds,*
Though they are made and moulded of things past;
And give to dust, that is a little gilt,
More laud than gilt o'er-dusted.
The present eye praises the present object;
Then marvel not, thou great and cómplete man,
That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax;
Since things in motion sooner catch the eye,
That what not stirs. The cry went once on thee,
And still it might; and yet it may again,
If thou wouldst not entomb thyself alive,
And case thy reputation in thy tent;
Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of late,
Made emulous missions† 'mongst the gods themselves
And drave great Mars to faction.

*Achil.* Of this my privacy
I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.* But 'gainst your privacy
The reasons are more potent and heroical:
'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love
With one of Priam's daughters.‡

*Achil.* Ha! known?

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder?
The providence that's in a watchful state,
Knows almost every grain of Plutus' gold;
Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps;
Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the gods,
Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.
There is a mystery (with whom relation§
Durst never meddle) in the soul of state;
Which hath an operation more divine,
Than breath, or pen, can give expressure to;
All the commerce that you have had with Troy,
As perfectly is ours, as yours, my lord;
And better would it fit Achilles much,
To throw down Hector, than Polyxena:
But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home,
When fame shall in our islands sound her trump,
And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing,—
*Great Hector's sister did Achilles win;*

* New fashioned toys.
† The descent of the deities to combat on either side.
‡ Polyxena. § History.

*But our great Ajax bravely beat down him.*
Farewell, my lord: I as your lover* speak;
The fool slides o'er the ice that you should break. [*Exit.*

*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I moved you.
A woman impudent and mannish grown
Is not more loath'd than an effeminate man
In time of action. I stand condemn'd for this.
They think, my little stomach to the war,
And your great love to me, restrains you thus:
Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wanton Cupid
Shall from your neck unloose his amorous fold,
And, like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,
Be shook to air.

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector?

*Patr.* Ay; and, perhaps, receive much honour by him.

*Achil.* I see, my reputation is at stake;
My fame is shrewdly gored.

*Patr.* O, then beware;
Those wounds heal ill, that men do give themselves:
Omission to do what is necessary
Seals a commission to a blank of danger;
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints
Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Thersites hither, sweet Patroclus:
I'll send the fool to Ajax, and desire him
To invite the Trojan lords after the combat
To see us here unarm'd: I have a woman's longing,
An appetite that I am sick withal,
To see great Hector in his weeds of peace;
To talk with him, and to behold his visage,
Even to my full of view. A labour saved!

*Enter* THERSITES.

*Ther.* A wonder!

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field, asking for himself.

*Ther.* How so?

*Achil.* He must fight singly to-morrow with Hector; and is so prophetically proud of an heroical cudgelling, that he raves in saying nothing.

*Achil.* How can that be?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a peacock, a stride, and a stand: ruminates, like an hostess, that hath no arithmetic but her brain to set down her reckoning: bites his lip with a politic regard,† as who should say—there were wit in this head, an 'twould out; and so there is; but it lies as coldly in him as fire in a flint, which will not show without knocking. The man 's undone for ever; for if Hector break not his neck i' the combat, he'll break it himself in vainglory. He knows not me: I said, *Good morrow, Ajax;* and he replies, *Thanks, Agamemnon.* What think you of this man, that takes me for the general? He is grown a very land-fish, languageless, a monster. A plague of opinion! a man may wear it on both sides, like a leather jerkin.

* Friend. † Knowin look.

*Achil.* Thou must be my ambassador to him, Thersites.

*Ther.* Who, I? why, he'll answer nobody; he professes not answering; speaking is for beggars; he wears his tongue in his arms. I will put on his presence; let Patroclus make demands of me, you shall see the pageant of Ajax.

*Achil.* To him, Patroclus: Tell him,—I humbly desire the valiant Ajax, to invite the most valorous Hector to come unarmed to my tent; and to procure safe conduct for his person, of the magnanimous, and most illustrious, six-or-seven-times-honoured captain general of the Grecian army, Agamemnon. Do this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax.

*Ther.* Humph!

*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles,——

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you, to invite Hector to his tent!——

*Ther.* Humph!

*Patr.* And to procure safe conduct from Agamemnon!

*Ther.* Agamemnon?

*Patr.* Ay, my lord.

*Ther.* Ha!

*Patr.* What say you to't?

*Ther.* God be wi' you, with all my heart.

*Patr.* Your answer, Sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven o'clock it will go one way or other; howsoever, he shall pay for me ere he has me.

*Patr.* Your answer, Sir.

*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.

*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune, is he?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o' tune thus. What music will be in him when Hector has knocked out his brains, I know not: But, I am sure, none; unless the fiddler Apollo get his sinews to make catlings* on.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him straight.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse; for that's the more capable† creature.

*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain stirr'd;
And I myself see not the bottom of it.

[*Exeunt* ACHILLES *and* PATROCLUS.

*Ther.* 'Would the fountain of your mind were clear again, that I might water an ass at it! I had rather be a tick in a sheep, than such a valiant ignorance. [*Exit.*

---

## ACT IV.

### *SCENE I.—Troy. A Street.*

*Enter, at one side,* ÆNEAS *and* SERVANT, *with a torch; at the other,* PARIS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, DIOMEDES, *and others, with torches.*

*Par.* See, ho! who's that there?

*Dei.* 'Tis the lord Æneas.

* Lute-strings. † Intelligent.

*Æne.* Is the prince there in person?—
Had I so good occasion to lie long,
As you, prince Paris, nothing but heavenly business
Should rob my bed-mate of my company.
*Dio.* That's my mind too.—Good morrow, lord Æneas.
*Par.* A valiant, Greek, Æneas; take his hand:
Witness the process of your speech, wherein
You told—how Diomed, a whole week by days,
Did haunt you in the field.
*Æne.* Health to you, valiant Sir,
During all question* of the gentle truce:
And when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance,
As heart can think, or courage execute.
*Dio.* The one and other Diomed embraces.
Our bloods are now in calm; and, so long, health:
But when contention and occasion meet,
By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life,
With all my force, pursuit, and policy.
*Æne.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that will fly
With his face backward.—In humane gentleness,
Welcome to Troy! now, by Anchises' life,
Welcome indeed! By Venus' hand I swear,
No man alive can love, in such a sort,
The thing he means to kill more excellently.
*Dio.* We sympathize:—Jove, let Æneas live,
If to my sword his fate be not the glory.
A thousand complete courses of the sun!
But, in mine emulous honour, let him die,
With every joint a wound; and that to-morrow!
*Æne.* We know each other well.
*Dio.* We do; and long to know each other worse.
*Par.* This is the most despiteful gentle greeting,
The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of.—
What business, lord, so early?
*Æne.* I was sent for to the king; but why, I know not.
*Par.* His purpose meets you;† 'Twas to bring this Greek
To Calchas' house; and there to render him,
For the enfreed Antenor, the fair Cressid:
Let's have your company; or, if you please,
Haste there before us: I constantly do think
(Or, rather, call my thought a certain knowledge)
My brother Troilus lodges there to-night;
Rouse him, and give him note of our approach,
With the whole quality wherefore: I fear,
We shall be much unwelcome.
*Æne.* That I assure you:
Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece,
Than Cressid borne from Troy.
*Par.* There is no help:
The bitter disposition of the time
Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.
*Æne.* Good morrow, all. [*Exit.*
*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed; 'faith, tell me true,

* Conversation. † *I. e.* I bring it you.

Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship,—
Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,
Myself, or Menelaus?
*Dio.* Both alike:
He merits well to have her, that doth seek her
(Not making any scruple of her soilure),
With such a hell of pain, and world of charge;
And you as well to keep her, that defend her
(Not palating the taste of her dishonour),
With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:
He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up
The lees and dregs of a flat tamed piece;*
You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins
Are pleased to breed out your inheritors:
Both merits poised, each weighs nor less nor more;
But he as he, the heavier for a whore.
*Par.* You are too bitter to your countryman.
*Dio.* She's bitter to her country: Hear me, Paris,—
For every false drop in her bawdy veins
A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple
Of her contaminated carrion weight,
A Trojan hath been slain; since she could speak,
She hath not given so many good words breath,
As for her Greeks and Trojans suffered death.
*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,
Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy:
But we in silence hold this virtue well,—
We'll not commend what we intend to sell.
Here lies our way. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—The same. Court before the House of* PANDARUS.

*Enter* TROILUS *and* CRESSIDA.

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself; the morn is cold.
*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine uncle down;
He shall unbolt the gates.
*Tro.* Trouble him not;
To bed, to bed: Sleep kill those pretty eyes,
And give as soft attachment to thy senses,
As infants' empty of all thought!
*Cres.* Good morrow then.
*Tro.* 'Pr'ythee now, to bed.
*Cres.* Are you aweary of me?
*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,
Waked by the lark, hath roused the ribald† crows,
And dreaming night will hide our joys no longer,
I would not from thee.
*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.
*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous wights she stays,
As tediously as hell; but flies the grasps of love,
With wings more momentary-swift than thought.
You will catch cold, and curse me.
*Cres.* Pr'ythee, tarry;—

* Barrel of wine. † Lewd, noisy.

You men will never tarry.—
O foolish Cressid!—I might have still held off,
And then you would have tarried. Hark! there's one up.

*Pan.* [*Within*]. What, are all the doors open here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

*Enter* PANDARUS.

*Cres.* A pestilence on him! now will he be mocking:
I shall have such a life,——

*Pan.* How now, how now? how go maidenheads?—Here, you maid! where's my cousin Cressid?

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking uncle!
You bring me to do,* and then you flout me too.

*Pan.* To do what? to do what?—let her say what: what have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come; beshrew† your heart! you'll ne'er be good,
Nor suffer others.

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! a poor capoochia!‡—hast not slept to-night? would he not, a naughty man, let it sleep? a bugbear take him! [*Knocking.*

*Cres.* Did I not tell you?—'would he were knock'd o' the head!—
Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see.—
My lord, come you again into my chamber:
You smile, and mock me, as if I meant naughtily.

*Tro.* Ha, ha!

*Cres.* Come, you are deceived, I think of no such thing.—
[*Knocking.*
How earnestly they knock!—pray you, come in;
I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Exeunt* TROILUS *and* CRESSIDA.

Pan. [*Going to the door*]. Who's there? what's the matter? will you beat down the door? How now? what's the matter?

*Enter* ÆNEAS.

*Æne.* Good morrow, lord, good morrow.

*Pan.* Who's there? my lord Æneas? By my troth, I knew you not: what news with you so early?

*Æne.* Is not prince Troilus here?

*Pan.* Here! what should he do here?

*Æne.* Come, he is here, my lord, do not deny him;
It doth import him much, to speak with me.

*Pan.* Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I know.
I'll be sworn:—For my own part, I came in late:
What should he do here?

*Æne.* Who!—nay, then:—
Come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you are 'ware:
You'll be so true to him, to be false to him:
Do not you know of him, yet go fetch him hither:
Go.

*As* PANDARUS *is going out, enter* TROILUS.

*Tro.* How now? what's the matter?

* To do is here used in a wanton sense. † Ill betide.
‡ An Italian word for poor fool!

*Æne.* My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute you,
My matter is so rash: * There is at hand
Paris your brother, and Deiphobus,
The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor
Deliver'd to us; and for him forthwith,
Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour,
We must give up to Diomedes' hand
The lady Cressida.

*Tro.* Is it so concluded?

*Æne.* By Priam, and the general state of Troy:
They are at hand, and ready to effect it.

*Tro.* How my achievements mock me!
I will go meet them: and, my lord Æneas,
We met by chance; you did not find me here.

*Æne.* Good, good, my lord; the secrets of nature
Have not more gift in taciturnity.

[*Exeunt* TROILUS *and* ÆNEAS.

*Pan.* Is't possible? no sooner got, but lost? The devil take Antenor! the young prince will go mad. A plague upon Antenor, I would, they had broke's neck!

*Enter* CRESSIDA.

*Cres.* How now? What is the matter? Who was here?

*Pan.* Ah, ah!

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly? where's my lord gone? Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?

*Pan.* 'Would I were as deep under the earth as I am above!

*Cres.* O the gods!—what's the matter?

*Pan.* Pr'ythee, get thee in; 'Would thou had'st ne'er been born! I knew, thou would'st be his death:—O poor gentleman! —A plague upon Antenor!

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you on my knees, I beseech you, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench, thou must be gone; thou art changed for Antenor: thou must to thy father, and begone from Troilus; 'twill be his death; 'twill be his bane; he cannot bear it.

*Cres.* O you immortal gods!—I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must.

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my father;
I know no touch of consanguinity;
No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me
As the sweet Troilus.—O you gods divine!
Make Cressid's name the very crown of falsehood,
If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and death,
Do to this body what extremes you can;
But the strong base and building of my love
Is as the very centre of the earth,
Drawing all things to it.—I'll go in, and weep;—

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair, and scratch my praised cheeks,
Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my heart
With sounding Troilus. I will not go from Troy. [*Exeunt.*

* Urgent

*SCENE III.—The same. Before* PANDARUS' *House.*

*Enter* PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, *and* DIOMEDES.

*Par.* It is great * morning; and the hour prefix'd
Of her delivery to this valiant Greek
Comes fast upon:—Good my brother Troilus,
Tell you the lady what she is to do,
And haste her to the purpose.
*Tro.* Walk in to her house;
I'll bring her to the Grecian presently:
And to his hand when I deliver her,
Think it an altar; and thy brother Troilus
A priest, there offering to it his own heart. [*Exit.*
*Par.* I know what 'tis to love;
And 'would, as I shall pity, I could help!—
Please you, walk in, my lords. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—The same. A Room in* PANDARUS' *House.*

*Enter* PANDARUS *and* CRESSIDA.

*Pan.* Be moderate, be moderate.
*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation?
The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,
And violenteth in a sense as strong
As that which causeth it: How can I moderate it?
If I could temporize with my affection,
Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,
The like allayment could I give my grief:
My love admits no qualifying dross:
No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

*Enter* TROILUS.

*Pan.* Here, here, here he comes.—Ah sweet ducks!
*Cres.* O Troilus! Troilus! [*Embracing him.*
*Pan.* What a pair of spectacles is here! Let me embrace too: *O heart,*—as the goodly saying is——

*——O heart, O heavy heart,*
*Why sigh'st thou without breaking?*

where he answers again,

*Because thou canst not ease thy smart,*
*By friendship, nor by speaking.*

There never was a truer rhyme. Let us cast away nothing, for we may live to have need of such a verse; we see it, we see it.—How now, lambs?
*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a purity,
That the bless'd gods—as angry with my fancy,
More bright in zeal than the devotion which
Cold lips blow to their deities,—take thee from me.
*Cres.* Have the gods envy?
*Pan.* Ay, ay, ay, ay; 'tis too plain a case.
*Cres.* And is it true, that I must go from Troy?

* *I. e.* advanced.

*Tro.* A hateful truth.
*Cres.* What, and from Troilus too?
*Tro.* From Troy, and Troilus.
*Cres.* Is it possible?
*Tro.* And suddenly where injury of chance
Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by
All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips
Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents
Our lock'd embrasures, strangles our dear vows
Even in the birth of our own labouring breath:
We two, that with so many thousand sighs
Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves
With the rude brevity and discharge of one.
Injurious time now, with a robber's haste
Crams his rich thievery up, he knows not how:
As many farewells as be stars in heaven,
With distinct breath and consign'd* kisses to them,
He fumbles up into a loose adieu;
And scants us with a single famish'd kiss,
Distasted with the salt of broken † tears.
Æne. [*Within*]. My lord! is the lady ready?
*Tro.* Hark! you are call'd: Some say, the Genius so
Cries, *Come!* to him that instantly must die.
Bid them have patience; she shall come anon.
*Pan.* Where are my tears? rain, to lay this wind, or my heart will be blown up by the root! [*Exit* PANDARUS.
*Cres.* I must then to the Greeks?
*Tro.* No remedy.
*Cres.* A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry Greeks!
When shall we see again?
*Tro.* Hear me, my love: Be thou but true of heart,——
*Cres.* I true! how now? what wicked deem ‡ is this?
*Tro.* Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,
For it is parting from us:
I speak not, *be thou true*, as fearing thee;
For I will throw my glove to death himself, §
That there's no maculation ‖ in thy heart:
But *be thou true*, say I, to fashion in
My sequent ¶ protestation; be thou true,
And I will see thee.
*Cres.* O, you shall be exposed, my lord, to dangers
As infinite as imminent! but, I'll be true.
*Tro.* And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear this sleeve.
*Cres.* And you this glove. When shall I see you?
*Tro.* I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels,
To give thee nightly visitation.
But yet, be true.
*Cres.* O heavens!—be true again?
*Tro.* Hear why I speak it, love;
The Grecian youths are full of quality;**

* Sealed. † Interrupted. ‡ Surmise.
§ *I. e.* challenge him. ‖ Spot. ¶ Following.
** Highly accomplished.

They're loving, well compos'd, with gifts of nature flowing,
And swelling o'er with arts and exercise;
How novelty may move, and parts with person,
Alas, a kind of godly jealousy
(Which I beseech you, call a virtuous sin),
Makes me afeard.
*Cres.* O heavens! you love me not.
*Tro.* Die I a villain then!
In this I do not call your faith in question,
So mainly as my merit: I cannot sing,
Nor heel the high lavolt,* nor sweeten talk,
Nor play at subtle games; fair virtues all,
To which the Grecians are most prompt and pregnant;
But I can tell, that in each grace of these
There lurks a still and dumb-discoursive devil,
That tempts most cunningly: but be not tempted.
*Cres.* Do you think I will?
*Tro.* No.
But something may be done, that we will not:
And sometimes we are devils to ourselves,
When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,
Presuming on their changeful potency.
Æne. [*Within*]. Nay, good my lord,——
*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part.
Par. [*Within*]. Brother Troilus!
*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;
And bring Æneas, and the Grecian with you.
*Cres.* My lord, will you be true?
*Tro.* Who, I? alas, it is my vice, my fault:
While others fish with craft for great opinion,
I with great truth catch mere simplicity;†
Whilst some with cunning gild their copper crowns,
With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.
Fear not my truth; the moral of my wit
Is—plain, and true,—there's all the reach of it.

*Enter* ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTENOR, DEIPHOBUS, *and* DIOMEDES.

Welcome, Sir Diomed! here is the lady,
Which for Antenor we deliver you:
At the port,‡ lord, I'll give her to thy hand;
And, by the way, possess§ thee what she is.
Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,
If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,
Name Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe
As Priam is in Ilion.
*Dio.* Fair lady Cressid,
So please you, save the thanks this prince expects:
The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,
Pleads your fair usage; and to Diomed
You shall be mistress and command him wholly.
*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me courteously,
To shame the zeal of my petition to thee,

*A dance. † Merely acquire simple approbation. ‡ Gate. § Inform.

In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,
She is as far high-soaring o'er thy praises,
As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.
I charge thee, use her well, even for my charge;
For, by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,
Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,
I'll cut thy throat.

*Dio.* O, be not moved, prince Troilus:
Let me be privileged by my place, and message,
To be a speaker free; when I am hence,
I'll answer to my lust:* And know you, lord,
I'll nothing do on charge: To her own worth
She shall be prized; but that you say,—be't so,
I'll speak it in my spirit and honour,—no.

*Tro.* Come, to the port.—I'll tell thee, Diomed,
This brave† shall oft make thee to hide thy head.—
Lady, give me your hand, and as we walk,
To our own selves bend we our needful talk.

[*Exeunt* TROILUS, CRESSIDA, *and* DIOMED. *Trumpet heard.*

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Æne.* How have we spent this morning!
The prince must think me tardy and remiss,
That swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'Tis Troilus' fault: Come, come, to field with him.

*Dei.* Let us make ready straight.

*Æne.* Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacrity,
Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:
The glory of our Troy doth this day lie,
On his fair worth and single chivalry. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE V.—The Grecian camp. Lists set out.*

*Enter* AJAX, *armed;* AGAMEMNON, ACHILLES, PATROCLUS, MENELAUS, ULYSSES, NESTOR, *and others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment‡ fresh and fair,
Anticipating time with starting courage.
Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,
Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled air
May pierce the head of the great combatant,
And hale him thither.

*Ajax.* Thou, trumpet, there's my purse.
Now crack thy lungs, and split thy brazen pipe,
Blow, villain, till thy sphered bias§ cheek
Out-swell the colic of puff'd Aquilon:
Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout blood;
Thou blow'st for Hector. [*Trumpet sounds.*

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.* 'Tis but early days.

*Agam.* Is not yon Diomed, with Calchas' daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;
He rises on the toe: that spirit of his
In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

* Will. † Bravado. ‡ Preparation. § Swollen like a ball.

*Enter* DIOMED *with* CRESSIDA.

*Agam.* Is this the lady Cressid?
*Dio.* Even she.
*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks, sweet lady.
*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a kiss.
*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;
'Twere better she were kiss'd in general.
*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin.—
So much for Nestor.
*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips, fair lady:
Achilles bids you welcome.
*Men.* I had good argument for kissing once.
*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing now:
For thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment,
And parted thus you and your argument.
*Ulyss.* O deadly gall, and theme of all our scorns!
For which we lose our heads to gild his horns.
*Patr.* The first was Menelaus' kiss;—this, mine:
Patroclus kisses you.
*Men.* O, this is trim!
*Patr.* Paris, and I, kiss evermore for him.
*Men.* I'll have my kiss, Sir:—Lady, by your leave.
*Cres.* In kissing do you render or receive?
*Patr.* Both take and give.
*Cres.* I'll make my match to live,*
The kiss you take is better than you give,
Therefore no kiss.
*Men.* I'll give you boot, I'll give you three for one.
*Cres.* You're an odd man; give even, or give none.
*Men.* An odd man, lady? every man is odd.
*Cres.* No, Paris is not; for, you know, 'tis true,
That you are odd, and he is even with you.
*Men.* You fillip me o' the head.
*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.
*Ulyss.* It were no match, your nail against his horn.—
May I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you?
*Cres.* You may.
*Ulyss.* I do desire it.
*Cress.* Why, beg then.
*Ulyss.* Why then, for Venus' sake, give me a kiss,
When Helen is a maid again, and his.
*Cres.* I am your debtor, claim it when 'tis due.
*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of you,
*Dio.* Lady, a word;—I'll bring you to your father.
[DIOMED *leads out* CRESSIDA.
*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.
*Ulyss.* Fie, fie upon her!
There's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip,
Nay, her foot speaks; her wanton spirits look out
At every joint and motive† of her body.
O, these encounterers, so glib of tongue,
That give a coasting welcome‡ ere it comes,

* I'll lay my life. † Motion. ‡ Conciliatory advances.

And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts
To every ticklish reader! set them down
For sluttish spoils of opportunity,
And daughters of the game. [*Trumpet within.*

*All.* The Trojan's trumpet.

*Agam.* Yonder comes the troop.

*Enter* HECTOR, *armed;* ÆNEAS, TROILUS, *and other Trojans, with attendants.*

*Æne.* Hail, all the state of Greece! what shall be done
To him that victory commands? Or do you purpose,
A victor shall be known? will you, the knights
Shall to the edge of all extremity
Pursue each other; or shall they be divided
By any voice or order of the field?
Hector bade ask.

*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it?

*Æne.* He cares not, he'll obey conditions.

*Achil.* 'Tis done like Hector; but securely done,
A little proudly, and great deal misprising
The knight opposed.

*Æne.* If not Achilles, Sir,
What is your name?

*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.

*Æne.* Therefore Achilles; but, whate'er, know this;—
In the extremity of great and little,
Valour and pride excels themselves in Hector;
The one almost as infinite as all,
The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,
And that, which looks like pride, is courtesy.
This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood: *
In love whereof, half Hector stays at home;
Half-heart, half-hand, half Hector comes to seek
This blended knight, half Trojan, and half Greek.

*Achil.* A maiden battle then?—O, I perceive you.

*Re-enter* DIOMED.

*Agam.* Here is Sir Diomed:—Go, gentle knight,
Stand by our Ajax: As you and lord Æneas
Consent upon the order of their fight,
So be it; either to the uttermost,
Or else a breath; † the combatants being kin,
Half stints ‡ their strife before their strokes begin.

AJAX *and* HECTOR *enter the lists.*

*Ulyss.* They are opposed already.

*Agam.* What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy?

*Ulyss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true knight;
Not yet mature, yet matchless; firm of word;
Speaking in deeds, and deedless § in his tongue;
Not soon provoked, nor, being provoked, soon calm'd:
His heart and hand both open, and both free;

* They were cousins.
† Breathing, exercise.
‡ Stops.
§ No boaster.

For what he has he gives, what thinks, he shows;
Yet gives he not till judgment guide his bounty,
Nor dignifies an impair * thought with breath:
Manly as Hector, but more dangerous;
For Hector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes †
To tender objects; but he, in heat of action,
Is more vindicative than jealous love:
They call him Troilus; and on him erect
A second hope, as fairly built as Hector.
Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth
Even to his inches, and, with private soul,
Did in great Ilion thus translate ‡ him to me.

[*Alarum.* HECTOR *and* AJAX *fight.*

*Agam.* They are in action.
*Nest.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!
*Tro.* Hector, thou sleep'st;
Awake thee!
*Agam.* His blows are well disposed:—There, Ajax!
*Dio.* You must no more. [*Trumpets cease.*
*Æne.* Princes, enough, so please you.
*Ajax.* I am not warm yet, let us fight again.
*Dio.* As Hector pleases.
*Hect.* Why then, will I no more:—
Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,
A cousin-german to great Priam's seed
The obligation of our blood forbids
A gory emulation 'twixt us twain:
Were they commixtion Greek and Trojan so,
That thou couldst say—*This hand is Grecian all,*
*And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg*
*All Greek, and this all Troy; my mother's blood*
*Runs on the dexter* § *cheek, and this sinister* ‖
*Bounds-in my father's;* by Jove multipotent,
Thou shouldst not bear from me a Greekish member
Wherein my sword had not impressure made
Of our rank feud: but the just gods gainsay,
Than any drop thou borrow'st from thy mother,
My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword
Be drain'd! let me embrace thee, Ajax:
By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms;
Hector would have them fall upon him thus:
Cousin, all honour to thee!
*Ajax.* I thank thee, Hector:
Thou art too gentle, and too free a man:
I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence
A great addition ¶ earned in thy death.
*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus ** so mirable
(On whose bright crest Fame with her loud'st O yes,
Cries, *This is he*), could promise to himself
A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

* Unequal to the occasion. † Yields, gives way.
‡ Describe him. § Right. ‖ Left. ¶ Title.
** Achilles, as being the father of Pyrrhus Neoptolemus.

*Æne.* There is expectance here from both the sides,
What further you will do.
*Hect.* We'll answer it;
The issue is embracement:—Ajax, farewell.
*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success
(As seld* I have the chance), I would desire
My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.
*Dio.* 'Tis Agamemnon's wish: and great Achilles
Doth long to see unarm'd the valiant Hector.
*Hect.* Æneas, call my brother Troilus to me;
And signify this loving interview
To the expectors of our Trojan part;
Desire them home.—Give me thy hand, my cousin;
I will go eat with thee, and see your knights.
*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us here.
*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me name by name;
But for Achilles, my own searching eyes
Shall find him by his large and portly size.
*Agam.* Worthy of arms! as welcome as to one
That would be rid of such an enemy;
But that's no welcome: Understand more clear,
What's past, and what's to come, is strew'd with husks
And formless ruin of oblivion;
But in this extant moment, faith and troth,
Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing,
Bids thee, with most divine integrity,
From heart of very heart, great Hector, welcome.
*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious† Agamemnon.
*Agam.* My well famed lord of Troy, no less to you.
[*To* TROILUS.
*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's greeting;—
You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hither.
*Hect.* Whom must we answer?
*Men.* The noble Menelaus.
*Hect.* O you, my lord; by Mars his gauntlet, thanks!
Mock not, that I affect the untraded‡ oath;
Your *quondam*§ wife swears still by Venus' glove:
She's well, but bade me not commend her to you.
*Men.* Name her not now, Sir; she's a deadly theme.
*Hect.* O pardon; I offend.
*Nest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee oft,
Labouring for destiny, make cruel way
Through ranks of Greekish youth: and I have seen thee,
As hot as Perseus, spur thy Phrygian steed,
Despising many forfeits and subduements,
When thou hast hung thy advanced sword i' the air,
Not letting it decline on the declined;‖
That I have said to some my standers-by,
*Lo, Jupiter is yonder, dealing life!*
And I have seen thee pause, and take thy breath,
When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd thee in,
Like an Olympian wrestling: This have I seen;
But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel,

* Seldom. † Imperial. ‡ Unusual. § Heretofore. ‖ Fallen.

I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire,
And once fought with him: he was a soldier good;
But, by great Mars, the captain of us all,
Never like thee: Let an old man embrace thee;
And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.
*Æne.* 'Tis the old Nestor.
*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chronicle,
That hast so long walk'd hand in hand with time:—
Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.
*Nest.* I would my arms could match thee in contention,
As they contend with thee in courtesy.
*Hect.* I would they could.
*Nest.* Ha!
By this white beard, I'd fight with thee to-morrow.
Well, welcome, welcome! I have seen the time—
*Ulyss.* I wonder now how yonder city stands,
When we have here her base and pillar by us.
*Hect.* I know your favour, lord Ulysses, well.
Ah, Sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead,
Since first I saw yourself and Diomed
In Ilion, on your Greekish embassy.
*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would ensue:
My prophecy is but half his journey yet;
For yonder walls, that pertly front your town,
Yon towers, whose wanton tops do buss the clouds,
Must kiss their own feet.
*Hect.* I must not believe you:
There they stand yet; and modestly I think,
The fall of every Phrygian stone will cost
A drop of Grecian blood: The end crowns all;
And that old common arbitrator, time,
Will one day end it.
*Ulyss.* So to him we leave it.
Most gentle, and most valiant Hector, welcome.
After the general, I beseech you next
To feast with me, and see me at my tent.
*Achil.* I shall forestall thee, lord Ulysses thou!—
Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee;
I have with exact view perused thee, Hector,
And quoted* joint by joint.
*Hect.* Is this Achilles?
*Achil.* I am Achilles.
*Hect.* Stand fair, I pray thee: let me look on thee.
*Achil.* Behold thy fill.
*Hect.* Nay, I have done already.
*Achil.* Thou art too brief; I will the second time,
As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb.
*Hect.* O, like a book of sport thou'lt read me o'er;
But there's more in me than thou understand'st.
Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye?
*Achil.* Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body
Shall I destroy him? whether there, there, or there?
That I may give the local wound a name;

* Observed.

And make distinct the very breach whereout
Hector's great spirit flew: Answer me, heavens!
*Hect.* It would discredit the bless'd gods, proud man,
To answer such a question: Stand again:
Think'st thou to catch my life so pleasantly,
As to prenominate* in nice conjecture,
Where thou wilt hit me dead?
*Achil.* I tell thee, yea.
*Hect.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so,
I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee well;
For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there;
But, by the forge that stithied† Mars his helm,
I'll kill thee everywhere, yea, o'er and o'er.—
You, wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag,
His insolence draws folly from my lips;
But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words,
Or may I never——
*Ajax.* Do not chafe thee, cousin;—
And you, Achilles, let these threats alone,
Till accident or purpose bring you to 't:
You may have every day enough of Hector,
If you have stomach;‡ the general state, I fear,
Can scarce entreat you to be odd§ with him.
*Hect.* I pray you, let us see you in the field;
We have had pelting‖ wars, since you refused
The Grecians' cause.
*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector?
To-morrow, do I meet thee, fell as death;
To-night, all friends.
*Hect.* Thy hand upon that match.
*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece, go to my tent;
There in the full convive¶ we: afterwards,
As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall
Concur together, severally entreat him.—
Beat loud the tabourines,** let the trumpets blow,
That this great soldier may his welcome know.
[*Exeunt all but* TROILUS *and* ULYSSES.
*Tro.* My lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech you,
In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?
*Ulyss.* At Menelaus' tent, most princely Troilus:
There Diomed doth feast with him to-night;
Who neither looks upon the heaven, nor earth,
But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view
On the fair Cressid.
*Tro.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so much,
After we part from Agamemnon's tent,
To bring me thither?
*Ulyss.* You shall command me, Sir.
As gentle tell me, of what honour was
This Cressida in Troy? Had she no lover there
That wails her absence?
*Tro.* O, Sir, to such as boasting show their scars,

* Forename. † Anvilled. ‡ Inclination. § Contend.
‖ Petty. ¶ Feast. ** Small drums.

A mock is due. Will you walk on, my lord?
She was beloved, she loved; she is, and doth:
But, still, sweet love is food for fortune's tooth. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT V.

*SCENE I.—The Grecian Camp. Before* ACHILLES' *Tent.*

*Enter* ACHILLES *and* PATROCLUS.

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine to-night,
Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow.—
Patroclus, let us feast him to the height.
*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter* THERSITES.

*Achil.* How now, thou core of envy?
Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?
*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seemest, and idol of idiot-worshippers, here's a letter for thee.
*Achil.* From whence, fragment?
*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.
*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?
*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's wound.
*Patr.* Well said, Adversity!* and what need these tricks?
*Ther.* Pr'ythee be silent, boy; I profit not by thy talk: thou art thought to be Achilles' male varlet.
*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?
*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now the rotten diseases of the south, the guts-griping, ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i' the back, lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of imposthume, sciaticas, limekilns i' the palm, incurable bone-ache, and the rivelled fee-simple of the tetter; take and take again such preposterous discoveries!
*Patr.* Why thou damnable box of envy, thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?
*Ther.* Do I curse thee?
*Patr.* Why, no, you ruinous butt; you whoreson indistinguishable cur, no.
*Ther.* No? why art thou then exasperate, thou idle immaterial skein of sleive† silk, thou green sarcenet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah, how the poor world is pestered with such water-flies; diminutives of nature!
*Patr.* Out, gall!
*Ther.* Finch egg!
*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted quite
From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle.
Here is a letter from queen Hecuba;
A token from her daughter, my fair love;
Both taxing me, and gaging me to keep
An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it:
Fall, Greeks; fail, fame; honour, or go, or stay;
My major vow lies here, this I'll obey.——

* Contrariety. † Coarse, unwrought.

Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent.
This night in banqueting must all be spent.
Away, Patroclus. [*Exeunt* ACHILLES *and* PATROCLUS.

*Ther.* With too much blood, and too little brain, these two may run mad; but if with too much brain, and too little blood, they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon,—an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails;* but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: And the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull,—the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckolds;† a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg,—to what form, but that he is, should wit larded with malice, and malice farced‡ with wit, turn him to? To an ass, were nothing; he is both ass and ox: to an ox were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitchew,§ a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care: but to be Menelaus,—I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were not Thersites; for I care not to be the louse of a lazar,‖ so I were not Menelaus.—Hey-day! spirits and fires!

*Enter* HECTOR, TROILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, *and* DIOMED, *with lights.*

*Agam.* We go wrong, we go wrong.
*Ajax.* No, yonder 'tis;
There, where we see the lights.
*Hect.* I trouble you.
*Ajax.* No, not a whit.
*Ulyss.* Here comes himself to guide you.

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector; welcome, princes all.
*Agam.* So now, fair prince of Troy, I bid good night.
Ajax commands the guard to tend on you.
*Hect.* Thanks, and good night, to the Greeks' general.
*Men.* Good night, my lord.
*Hect.* Good night, sweet Menelaus.
*Ther.* Sweet draught:¶ Sweet, quoth 'a! sweet sink, sweet sewer.
*Achil.* Good night.
And welcome both to those that go, or tarry.
*Agam.* Good night. [*Exeunt* AGAMEMNON *and* MENELAUS.
*Achil.* Old Nestor tarries; and you too, Diomed,
Keep Hector company an hour or two.
*Dio.* I cannot, lord; I have important business,
The tide whereof is now.—Good night, great Hector.
*Hect.* Give me your hand.
*Ulyss.* Follow his torch, he goes
To Calchas' tent; I'll keep you company. [*Aside to* TROILUS.
*Tro.* Sweet Sir, you honour me.
*Hect.* And so good night.

[*Exit* DIOMED; ULYSSES *and* TROILUS *following.*

*Achil.* Come, come, enter my tent.

[*Exeunt* ACHILLES, HECTOR, AJAX, *and* NESTOR.

* Harlots. † Menelaus. ‡ Stuffed.
§ Polecat. ‖ Leper. ¶ Privy.

*Ther.* That same Diomed's a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knave; I will no more trust him when he leers, than I will a serpent when he hisses; he will spend his mouth, and promise, like Brabler the hound;* but when he performs, astronomers foretell it; it is prodigious,† there will come some change; the sun borrows of the moon, when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than not to dog him: they say, he keeps a Trojan drab, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent: I'll after.—Nothing but lechery! all incontinent varlets! [*Exit.*

*SCENE II.—The same. Before* CALCHAS' *Tent.*

*Enter* DIOMEDES.

*Dia.* What are you up here, ho? speak.
Cal. [*within*]. Who calls?
*Dio.* Diomed.—Calchas, I think.—Where's your daughter?
Cal. [*within*]. She comes to you.

*Enter* TROILUS *and* ULYSSES, *at a distance; after them* THERSITES.

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter* CRESSIDA.

*Tro.* Cressid come forth to him!
*Dio.* How now, my charge?
*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian!—Hark! a word with you. [*Whispers.*
*Tro.* Yea, so familiar!
*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.
*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff;‡ she's noted.
*Dio.* Will you remember?
*Cres.* Remember? yes.
*Dio.* Nay, but do then;
And let your mind be coupled with your words.
*Tro.* What should she remember?
*Ulyss.* List!
*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.
*Ther.* Roguery!
*Dio.* Nay, then,—
*Cres.* I'll tell you what:
*Dio.* Pho! pho! come, tell a pin: You are forsworn.—
*Cres.* In faith, I cannot: What would you have me do?
*Ther.* A juggling trick, to be—secretly open.
*Dio.* What did you swear you would bestow on me?
*Cres.* I pr'ythee, do not hold me to mine oath;
Bid me do anything but that, sweet Greek.
*Dio.* Good night.
*Tro.* Hold, patience!
*Ulyss.* How now, Trojan?
*Cres.* Diomed,——
*Dio.* No, no, good night: I'll be your fool no more.
*Tro.* Thy better must.
*Cres.* Hark! one word in your ear.

* A hound that barks without being on the scent is called a brabler or babler. † Portentous, ominous. ‡ Key.

*Tro.* O plague and madness!
*Ulyss.* You are moved, prince; let us depart, I pray you,
Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself
To wrathful terms: this place is dangerous;
The time right deadly; I beseech you, go.
*Tro.* Behold, I pray you!
*Ulyss.* Now, good my lord, go off:
You flow to great distraction; come, my lord.
*Tro.* I pr'ythee, stay.
*Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.
*Tro.* I pray you, stay; by hell, and all hell's torments,
I will not speak a word.
*Dio.* And so, good night.
*Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.
*Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?
O wither'd truth!
*Ulyss.* Why, how now, lord?
*Tro.* By Jove,
I will be patient.
*Cres.* Guardian!—why, Greek!
*Dio.* Pho, pho! adieu; you palter.
*Cres.* In faith, I do not; come hither once again.
*Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something; will you go?
You will break out.
*Tro.* She strokes his cheek!
*Ulyss.* Come, come.
*Tro.* Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak a word;
There is between my will and all offences
A guard of patience:—stay a little while.
*Ther.* How the devil luxury, with his fat rump, and potato finger, tickles these together! Fry, lechery, fry!
*Dio.* But will you then?
*Cres.* In faith, I will, la; never trust me else.
*Dio.* Give me some token for the surety of it.
*Cres.* I'll fetch you one. [*Exit.*
*Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.
*Tro.* Fear me not, my lord;
I will not be myself, nor have cognition*
Of what I feel; I am all patience.

*Re-enter* CRESSIDA.

*Ther.* Now the pledge; now, now, now!
*Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve.
*Tro.* O beauty! where's thy faith?
*Ulyss.* My lord,——
*Tro.* I will be patient; outwardly I will.
*Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; Behold it well.—
He loved me—O false wench!—Giv't me again.
*Dio.* Who was't?
*Cres.* No matter, now I hav't again.
I will not meet with you to-morrow night:
I pr'ythee, Diomed, visit me no more.

* Knowledge.

*Ther.* Now she sharpens;—Well said, whetstone.
*Dio.* I shall have it.
*Cres.* What, this?
*Dio.* Ay, that.
*Cres.* O, all you gods!—O pretty pretty pledge!
Thy master now lies thinking in his bed
Of thee, and me; and sighs, and takes my glove,
And gives memorial dainty kisses to it,
As I kiss thee,—Nay, do not snatch it from me;
He, that takes that, must take my heart withal.
*Dio.* I had your heart before, this follows it.
*Tro.* I did swear patience.
*Cres.* You shall not have it, Diomed; 'faith you shall not;
I'll give you something else.
*Dio.* I will have this; Whose was it?
*Cres.* 'Tis no matter.
*Dio.* Come, tell me whose it was.
*Cres.* 'Twas one's that loved me better than you will.
But, now you have it, take it.
*Dio.* Who's was it?
*Cres.* By all Diana's waiting-women yonder,*
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.
*Dio.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm;
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.
*Tro.* Wert thou the devil, and wor'st on thy horn,
It should be challenged.
*Cres.* Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past;—And yet it is not;
I will not keep my word.
*Dio.* Why then, farewell;
Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.
*Cres.* You shall not go:—One cannot speak a word,
But it straight starts you.
*Dio.* I do not like this fooling.
*Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes not you, pleases me best.
*Dio.* What, shall I come? the hour?
*Cres.* Ay, come:—O Jove!—
Do come:—I shall be plagued.
*Dio.* Farewell till then.
*Cres.* Good night. I pr'ythee, come.— [*Exit* DIOMEDES.
Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee;
But with my heart the other eye doth see.
Ah! poor our sex! this fault in us I find,
The error of our eye directs our mind:
What error leads, must err; O then conclude,
Minds, sway'd by eyes, are full of turpitude. [*Exit* CRESSIDA.
*Ther.* A proof of strength she could not publish more,
Unless she said, my mind is now turn'd whore.
*Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.
*Tro.* It is.
*Ulyss.* Why stay we then?
*Tro.* To make a recordation † to my soul
Of every syllable that here was spoke.

* The stars. † Remembrance.

But, if I tell how these two did co-act,
Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?
Sith yet there is a credence * in my heart,
An esperance † so obstinately strong,
That doth invert the attest ‡ of eyes and ears;
As if those organs had deceptious functions,
Created only to calumniate.
Was Cressid here?
*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, § Trojan.
*Tro.* She was not, sure.
*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.
*Tro.* Why, my negation ‖ hath no taste of madness.
*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here but now.
*Tro.* Let it not be believed for ¶ womanhood!
Think, we had mothers; do not give advantage
To stubborn critics **—apt, without a theme,
For depravation,—to square the general sex
By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.
*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can soil our mothers?
*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were she.
*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own eyes?
*Tro.* This she? no, this is Diomed's Cressida:
If beauty have a soul, this is not she;
If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimony
If sanctimony be the gods' delight,
If there be rule in unity itself, ††
This was not she. O madness of discourse,
That cause sets up with and against itself!
Bifold authority! where reason can revolt
Without perdition, and loss assume all reason
Without revolt; this is, and is not, Cressid!
Within my soul there doth commence a fight
Of this strange nature, that a thing inseparate ‡‡
Divides more wider than the sky and earth;
And yet the spacious breadth of this division
Admits no orifice for a point, as subtle
As is Arachne's broken woof, to enter.
Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;
Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven:
Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;
The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolved, and loosed;
And with another knot, five-finger tied, §§
The fractions of her faith, orts of her love,
The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy reliques
Of her o'er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed.
*Ulyss.* May worthy Troilus be half attach'd ‖‖
With that which here his passion doth express?
*Tro.* Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged well
In characters as red as Mars his heart

* Belief. † Hope. ‡ Testimony. § Raise up forms.
‖ Denial. ¶ (For the sake of.) ** Cynics.
†† If it be true that one individual cannot be two persons.
‡‡ Inseparable. §§ By giving it with her five fingers to Diomed.
‖‖ Can he really feel.

Inflamed with Venus: never did young man fancy *
With so eternal and so fix'd a soul.
Hark, Greek;—As much as I do Cressid love,
So much by weight hate I her Diomed:
That sleeve is mine, that he'll bear on his helm;
Were it a casque composed by Vulcan's skill,
My sword should bite it: not the dreadful spout,
Which shipmen do the hurricano call
Constringed † in mass by the almighty sun,
Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear
In his descent, than shall my prompted sword
Falling on Diomed.

*Ther.* He'll tickle it for his concupy.‡

*Tro.* O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false, false!
Let all untruths stand by thy stained name,
And they'll seem glorious.

*Ulyss.* O, contain yourself;
Your passion draws ears hither.

*Enter* ÆNEAS.

*Æne.* I have been seeking you this hour, my lord:
Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy;
Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.

*Tro.* Have with you, prince:—My courteous lord, adieu:
Farewell, revolted fair!—and Diomed,
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

*Ulyss.* I'll bring you to the gates.

*Tro.* Accept distracted thanks.

[*Exeunt* TROILUS, ÆNEAS, *and* ULYSSES.

*Ther.* 'Would, I could meet that rogue Diomed! I would croak like a raven; I would bode, I would bode. Patroclus will give me anything for the intelligence of this whore: the parrot will not do more for an almond, than he for a commodious drab. Lechery, lechery; still, wars and lechery; nothing else holds fashion: A burning devil take them! [*Exit.*

*SCENE III.—Troy. Before* PRIAM'S *Palace.*

*Enter* HECTOR *and* ANDROMACHE.

*And.* When was my lord so much ungently temper'd,
To stop his ears against admonishment?
Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.

*Hect.* You train me to offend you; get you in:
By all the everlasting gods, I'll go.

*And.* My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to-day.

*Hect.* No more, I say.

*Enter* CASSANDRA.

*Cas.* Where is my brother Hector?

*And.* Here, sister; arm'd, and bloody in intent:
Consort with me in loud and dear § petition,
Pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd
Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night
Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of slaughter.

* Love. † Compressed. ‡ Concupiscence. § Earnest.

*Cas.* O, it is true.
*Hect.* Ho! bid my trumpet sound!
*Cas.* No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet brother.
*Hect.* Begone, I say: the gods have heard me swear.
*Cas.* The gods are deaf to hot and peevish* vows!
They are polluted offerings, more abhorr'd
Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.
*And.* O! be persuaded: Do not count it holy
To hurt by being just: it is as lawful,
For we would give much, to use violent thefts,
And rob in the behalf of charity.
*Cas.* It is the purpose that makes strong the vow;
But vows, to every purpose, must not hold:
Unarm, sweet Hector.
*Hect.* Hold you still, I say;
Mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:
Life every man holds dear; but the dear† man
Holds honour far more precious dear than life.—

*Enter* TROILUS.

How now, young man? mean'st thou to fight to-day?
*And.* Cassandra, call my father to persuade. [*Exit* CASSANDRA.
*Hect.* No, 'faith, young Troilus; doff thy harness, youth,
I am to-day i' the vein of chivalry:
Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,
And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.
Unarm thee, go; and doubt thou not, brave boy,
I'll stand, to-day, for thee, and me, and Troy.
*Tro.* Brother, you have a vice of mercy in you,
Which better fits a lion than a man.
*Hect.* What vice is that, good Troilus? chide me for it.
*Tro.* When many times the captive Grecians fall,
Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,
You bid them rise, and live.
*Hect.* O, 'tis fair play.
*Tro.* Fool's play, by heaven, Hector.
*Hect.* How now, how now?
*Tro.* For the love of all the gods,
Let's leave the hermit pity with our mother;
And when we have our armours buckled on,
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords;
Spur them to ruthful work, rein them from ruth.‡
*Hect.* Fie, savage, fie!
*Tro.* Hector, then 'tis wars.
*Hect.* Troilus, I would not have you fight to-day.
*Tro.* Who should withhold me?
Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars
Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;
Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,
Their eyes o'ergalled with recourse of tears;
Nor you, my brother, with your true sword drawn,
Opposed to hinder me, should stop my way,
But by my ruin.

* Foolish. † Valuable. ‡ Mercy.

*Re-enter* CASSANDRA, *with* PRIAM.

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him fast:
He is thy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay,
Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,
Fall all together.
*Pri.* Come, Hector, come, go back:
Thy wife hath dream'd; thy mother hath had visions;
Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself
Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,
To tell thee, that this day is ominous:
Therefore, come back.
*Hect.* Æneas is a-field;
And I do stand engaged to many Greeks,
Even in the faith of valour, to appear
This morning to them.
*Pri.* But thou shalt not go.
*Hect.* I must not break my faith.
You know me dutiful; therefore, dear Sir,
Let me not shame respect;* but give me leave
To take that course by your consent and voice,
Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.
*Cas.* O Priam, yield not to him.
*And.* Do not, dear father.
*Hect.* Andromache, I am offended with you:
Upon the love you bear me, get you in. [*Exit* ANDROMACHE.
*Tro.* This foolish, dreaming, superstitious girl
Makes all these bodements.
*Cas.* O farewell, dear Hector.
Look, how thou diest! look, how thy eye turns pale!
Look, how thy wounds do bleed at many vents!
Hark, how Troy roars! how Hecuba cries out!
How poor Andromache shrills her dolours forth!
Behold, destruction, frenzy, and amazement,
Like witless antics, one another meet,
And all cry—Hector! Hector 's dead! O Hector!
*Tro.* Away!—Away!
*Cas.* Farewell.—Yet, soft:—Hector, I take my leave:
Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive. [*Exit.*
*Hect.* You are amazed, my liege, at her exclaim:
Go in, and cheer the town; we'll forth, and fight;
Do deeds worth praise, and tell you them at night.
*Pri.* Farewell: the gods with safety stand about thee!
[*Exeunt severally* PRIAM *and* HECTOR. *Alarums.*
*Tro.* They are at it; hark! Proud Diomed, believe,
I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

*As* TROILUS *is going out, enter, from the other side,* PANDARUS.

*Pan.* Do you hear, my lord? do you hear?
*Tro.* What now?
*Pan.* Here's a letter from yon poor girl.
*Tro.* Let me read.
*Pan.* A whoreson ptisick, a whoreson rascally ptisick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of this girl; and what one

* Disgrace the respect I owe you.

thing, what another, that I shall leave you one o' these days: And I have a rheum in mine eyes too: and such an ache in my bones, that, unless a man were cursed,* I cannot tell what to think on't.—What says she there?

*Tro.* Words, words, mere words, no matter from the heart;
[*Tearing the letter.*
The effect doth operate another way.—
Go, wind, to wind, there turn and change together.—
My love with words and errors still she feeds;
But edifies another with her deeds. [*Exeunt severally.*

*SCENE IV.—Between Troy and the Grecian camp.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* THERSITES.

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-clawing one another; I'll go look on. That dissembling abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that same scurvy doting foolish young knave's sleeve of Troy there, in his helm: I would fain see them meet; that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whoremasterly villain, with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious drab, on a sleeveless errand. O' the other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals,—that stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese, Nestor; and that same dog-fox, Ulysses,—is not proved worth a blackberry:—They set me up, in policy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles: and now is the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day: whereupon the Grecians begin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion. Soft! here comes sleeve, and t'other.

*Enter* DIOMEDES, TROILUS *following.*

*Tro.* Fly not; for, should'st thou take the river Styx,
I would swim after.

*Dio.* Thou dost miscall retire:
I do not fly; but advantageous care
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude:
Have at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian!—now for thy whore, Trojan!—now the sleeve, now the sleeve!
[*Exeunt* TROILUS *and* DIOMEDES, *fighting.*

*Enter* HECTOR.

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek? art thou for Hector's match?
Art thou of blood, and honour?

*Ther.* No, no:—I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave; a very filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee; live. [*Exit.*

*Ther.* God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; But a plague break thy neck, for frighting me! What's become of the wenching rogues? I think, they have swallowed one another: I would laugh at that miracle. Yet, in a sort, lechery eats itself. I'll seek them. [*Exit.*

* Under some witch's malediction.

*SCENE V.—The same.*

*Enter* DIOMEDES *and a* SERVANT.

*Dio.* Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus' horse;
Present the fair steed to my lady Cressid;
Fellow, commend my service to her beauty;
Tell her, I have chastis'd the amorous Trojan,
And am her knight by proof.
*Serv.* I go, my lord. [*Exit* SERVANT.

*Enter* AGAMEMNON,

*Agam.* Renew, renew! The fierce Polydamus
Hath beat down Menon: bastard Margarelon
Hath Doreus prisoner:
And stands colossus-wise, waving his beam,*
Upon the pashed† corses of the kings
Epistrophus and Cedius; Polixenes is slain;
Amphimachus, and Thous, deadly hurt;
Patroclus ta'en, or slain; and Palamedes
Sore hurt and bruised: the dreadful Sagittary
Appals our numbers; Haste we, Diomed,
To reinforcement, or we perish all.

*Enter* NESTOR.

*Nest.* Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles;
And bid the snail-pac'd Ajax arm for shame.—
There is a thousand Hectors in the field:
Now here he fights on Galathe his horse,
And there lacks work; anon, he's there afoot,
And there they fly, or die, like scaled sculls‡
Before the belching whale; then is he yonder,
And there the strawy Greeks, ripe for his edge,
Fall down before him, like the mower's swath:§
Here, there, and everywhere, he leaves and takes;
Dexterity so obeying appetite,
That what he will, he does; and does so much,
That proof is call'd impossibility.

*Enter* ULYSSES.

*Ulyss.* O, courage, courage, princes! great Achilles
Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance:
Patroclus' wounds have rous'd his drowsy blood,
Together with his mangled Myrmidons,
That noseless, handless, hack'd and chipp'd, come to him,
Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,
And foams at mouth, and he is arm'd, and at it,
Roaring for Troilus; who hath done to-day
Mad and fantastic execution;
Engaging and redeeming of himself,
With such a careless force, and forceless care,
As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,
Bade him win all.

* Lance. † Bruised, crushed. ‡ Shoal of fish.
§ Quantity of grass cut by a single sweep of the scythe.

*Enter* AJAX.

*Ajax.* Troilus! thou coward Troilus! [*Exit.*
*Dio.* Ay, there, there.
*Nest.* So, so, we draw together.

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Where is this Hector?
Come, come, thou boy-queller,* show thy face;
Know what it is to meet Achilles angry.
Hector! where's Hector? I will none but Hector. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VI.—Another part of the Field.*

*Enter* AJAX.

*Ajax.* Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head!

*Enter* DIOMEDES.

*Dio.* Troilus, I say! where's Troilus?
*Ajax.* What wouldest thou?
*Dio.* I would correct him.
*Ajax.* Were I the general, thou shouldst have my office,
Ere that correction:—Troilus, I say! what, Troilus!

*Enter* TROILUS.

*Tro.* O traitor Diomed!—turn thy false face, thou traitor,
And pay thy life thou owest me for my horse!
*Dio.* Ha! art thou there?
*Ajax.* I'll fight with him alone: stand, Diomed.
*Dio.* He is my prize, I will not look upon.†
*Tro.* Come both, you cogging‡ Greeks; have at you both.
[*Exeunt, fighting.*

*Enter* HECTOR.

*Hect.* Yea, Troilus? O, well fought, my youngest brother!

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Now do I see thee: Ha!—Have at thee, Hector.
*Hect.* Pause, if thou wilt.
*Achil.* I do disdain thy courtesy, proud Trojan.
Be happy, that my arms are out of use:
My rest and negligence befriend thee now,
But thou anon shalt hear of me again;
Till when, go seek thy fortune. [*Exit.*
*Hect.* Fare thee well:—
I would have been much more a fresher man,
Had I expected thee.—How now, my brother?

*Re-enter* TROILUS.

*Tro.* Ajax hath ta'en Æneas; Shall it be?
No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,
He shall not carry§ him; I'll be taken too,
Or bring him off:—Fate, hear me what I say!
I reck§ not though I end my life to-day. [*Exit.*

* Killer. † Not be a looker-on. ‡ Lying.
§ Prevail over. ‖ Care.

*Enter one in sumptuous armour.*

*Hect.* Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a goodly mark:—
No? wilt thou not?—I like thy armour well;
I'll frush* it, and unlock the rivets all,
But I'll be master of it:—Wilt thou not, beast, abide?
Why then, fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE VII.—*The same.*

*Enter* ACHILLES, *with Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Come here about me, you my Myrmidons;
Mark what I say.—Attend me where I wheel:
Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in breath;
And when I have the bloody Hector found,
Empale him with your weapons round about;
In fellest manner execute your aims.
Follow me, Sirs, and my proceedings eye:
It is decreed—Hector the great must die. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE VIII.—*The same.*

*Enter* MENELAUS *and* PARIS, *fighting: then* THERSITES.

*Ther.* The cuckold, and the cuckold-maker are at it: Now, bull! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris, 'loo! now my double-henned sparrow! 'loo, Paris, 'loo! The bull has the game:—'ware horns, ho! [*Exeunt* PARIS *and* MENELAUS.

*Enter* MARGARELON.

*Mar.* Turn, slave, and fight.
*Ther.* What art thou?
*Mar.* A bastard son of Priam's.
*Ther.* I am a bastard too; I love bastards: I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard in mind, bastard in valour, in everything illegitimate. One bear will not bite another, and wherefore should one bastard? Take heed, the quarrel's most ominous to us: if the son of a whore fight for a whore, he tempts judgment: Farewell, bastard.
*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward! [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE IX.—*Another part of the Field.*

*Enter* HECTOR.

*Hect.* Most putrified core, so fair without,
Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.
Now is my day's work done; I'll take good breath:
Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and death!
[*Puts off his helmet, and hangs his shield behind him.*

*Enter* ACHILLES *and Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to set;
How ugly night comes breathing at his heels;
Even with the veil and dark'ning of the sun,
To close the day up, Hector's life is done.

* Burst.

*Hect.* I am unarm'd; forego this 'vantage, Greek.
*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike; this is the man I seek.
[HECTOR *falls.*
So, Ilion, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink down;
Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone.—
On, Myrmidons; and cry you all amain,
*Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain.* [*A retreat sounded.*
Hark! a retreat upon our Grecian part.
*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like, my lord.
*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads the earth,
And, stickler* like, the armies separates.
My half-supp'd sword, that frankly† would have fed,
Pleased with this dainty bit, thus goes to bed.—
[*Sheaths his sword.*
Come, tie his body to my horse's tail;
Along the field I will the Trojan trail. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE X.—The same.*

*Enter* AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, *and others, marching. Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark! hark! what shout is that?
*Nest.* Peace, drums.
[*Within.*] Achilles!
Achilles! Hector's slain! Achilles!
*Dio.* The bruit is—Hector 's slain, and by Achilles.
*Ajax.* If it be so, yet bragless let it be;
Great Hector was as good a man as he.
*Agam.* March patiently along:—Let one be sent
To pray Achilles see us at our tent.—
If in his death the gods have us befriended,
Great Troy is ours, and our sharp wars are ended.
[*Exeunt, marching.*

*SCENE XI.—Another part of the Field.*

*Enter* ÆNEAS *and Trojans.*

*Æne.* Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the field:
Never go home; here starve we out the night.

*Enter* TROILUS.

*Tro.* Hector is slain.
*All.* Hector?—The gods forbid!
*Tro.* He's dead; and at the murderer's horse's tail,
In beastly sort, dragg'd through the shameful field.—
Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with speed!
Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile‡ at Troy!
I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy,
And linger not our sure destructions on!
*Æne.* My lord, you do discomfort all the host.
*Tro.* You understand me not, that tell me so:
I dare not speak of flight, of fear, of death;
But dare all imminence, that gods and men,
Address their dangers in. Hector is gone!

* An arbitrator at athletic games. † Fattening. ‡ *I. e.* derisively.

Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba?
Let him that will a screech-owl aye be call'd,
Go in to Troy, and say there—Hector's dead:
There is a word will Priam turn to stone;
Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,
Cold statues of the youth; and, in a word,
Scare Troy out of itself. But, march, away:
Hector is dead; there is no more to say.
Stay yet;—You vile abominable tents,
Thus proudly pight* upon our Phrygian plains,
Let Titan rise as early as he dare,
I'll through and through you!—And thou, great-sized coward!
No space of earth shall sunder our two hates;
I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,
That mouldeth goblins swift as frenzy thoughts.—
Strike a free march to Troy!—with comfort go:
Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.
[*Exeunt* ÆNEAS *and Trojans.*

*As* TROILUS *is going out, enter from the other side,* PANDARUS.

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you!
*Tro.* Hence, broker lackey! ignomy† and shame
Pursue thy life, and live aye with thy name. [*Exit* TROILUS.
*Pan.* A goodly med'cine for my aching bones!—O world! world! world! thus is the poor agent despised! O traitors and bawds, how earnestly are you set a' work, and how ill requited! Why should our endeavour be so loved, and the performance so loathed? what verse for it? what instance for it?—Let me see:—

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing,
Till he hath lost his honey and his sting:
And being once subdued in armed tail,
Sweet honey and sweet notes together fail.—

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths.†

As many as be here of pander's hall,
Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall:
Or, if you cannot weep, yet give some groans,
Though not for me, yet for your aching bones.
Brethren, and sisters, of the hold-door trade,
Some two months hence my will shall here be made;
It should be now, but that my fear is this,—
Some galled goose of Winchester‡ would hiss:
Till then I'll sweat, and seek about for eases;
And, at that time, bequeath you my diseases. [*Exit.*

* Pitched, fixed. † Ignominy.
† Canvas hangings for rooms, painted with emblems and mottos.
‡ Some one affected with lues.

# CORIOLANUS.

## PERSONS REPRESENTED.

CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS, *a noble Roman.*
TITUS LARTIUS, } *Generals against the Volsciens.*
COMINIUS, }
MENENIUS AGRIPPA, *Friend to Coriolanus.*
SICINIUS VELUTUS, } *Tribunes of the people.*
JUNIUS BRUTUS, }
YOUNG MARCIUS, *Son to Coriolanus.*
A ROMAN HERALD.
TULLUS AUFIDIUS, *General of the Volscians.*
LIEUTENANT to Aufidius.
CONSPIRATORS with Aufidius.
A CITIZEN of Antium.
TWO VOLSCIAN GUARDS.

VOLUMNIA, *Mother to Coriolanus.*
VIRGILIA, *Wife to Coriolanus.*
VALERIA, *Friend to Virgilia.*
GENTLEWOMAN, *attending Virgilia.*

Roman and Volscian SENATORS, PATRICIANS, ÆDILES, LICTORS, SOLDIERS, CITIZENS, MESSENGERS, SERVANTS to Aufidius, and other ATTENDANTS.

SCENE.—Partly in Rome, and partly in the Territories of the Volscians and Antiates.

## ACT I.

### *SCENE I.—Rome. A Street.*

*Enter a Company of mutinous* CITIZENS, *with Staves, Clubs, and other Weapons.*

1 *Cit.* Before we proceed any further, hear me speak.
*Cit.* Speak, speak. [*Several speaking at once.*
1 *Cit.* You are all resolved rather to die, than to famish?
*Cit.* Resolved, resolved.
1 *Cit.* First you know, Caius Marcius is chief enemy to the people.
*Cit.* We know't, we know't.
1 *Cit.* Let us kill him, and we'll have corn at our own price. Is't a verdict?
*Cit.* No more talking on't; let it be done: away, away.
2 *Cit.* One word, good citizens.
1 *Cit.* We are accounted poor citizens; the patricians, good:* What authority surfeits on, would relieve us; If they would yield us but the superfluity, while it were wholesome, we might guess, they relieved us humanely; but they think, we are too dear: the leanness that afflicts us, the object of our misery, is as an inventory to particularize their abundance; our sufferance is a gain to them.—Let us revenge this with our pikes, ere we be-

* Rich.

come rakes:* for the gods know, I speak this in hunger for bread, not in thirst for revenge.

2 *Cit.* Would you proceed especially against Caius Marcius?

*Cit.* Against him first; he's a very dog to the commonalty.

2 *Cit.* Consider you what services he has done for his country?

1 *Cit.* Very well; and could be content to give him good report for 't, but that he pays himself with being proud.

2 *Cit.* Nay, but speak not maliciously.

1 *Cit.* I say unto you, what he hath done famously, he did to that end: though soft-conscienced men can be content to say, it was for his country, he did it to please his mother, and to be partly proud; which he is, even to the altitude of his virtue.

2 *Cit.* What he cannot help in his nature, you account a vice in him: You must in no way say, he is covetous.

1 *Cit.* If I must not, I need not be barren of accusations; he hath faults, with surplus, to tire in repetition. [*Shouts within.*] What shouts are these? The other side o' the city is risen: Why stay we prating here? to the Capitol!

*Cit.* Come, come.

1 *Cit.* Soft; who come here?

*Enter* MENENIUS AGRIPPA.

2 *Cit.* Worthy Menenius Agrippa: one that hath always loved the people.

1 *Cit.* He 's one honest enough; 'Would, all the rest were so!

*Men.* What work's, my countrymen, in hand? Where go you? With bats and clubs? The matter? Speak, I pray you.

1 *Cit.* Our business is not unknown to the senate; they have had inkling, this fortnight, what we intend to to, which now we'll show 'em in deeds. They say, poor suitors have strong breaths; they shall know, we have strong arms too.

*Men.* Why, masters, my good friends, mine honest neighbours, Will you undo yourselves?

1 *Cit.* We cannot, Sir, we are undone already.

*Men.* I tell you, friends, most charitable care
Have the patricians of you. For your wants,
Your suffering in this dearth, you may as well
Strike at the heaven with your staves, as lift them
Against the Roman state; whose course will on
The way it takes, cracking ten thousand curbs
Of more strong link asunder, than can ever
Appear in your impediment: For the dearth,
The gods, not the patricians, make it; and
Your knees to them, not arms, must help. Alack,
You are transported by calamity
Thither where more attends you; and you slander
The helms o'the state, who care for you like fathers,
When you curse them as enemies.

1 *Cit.* Care for us!—True, indeed!—They ne'er cared for us yet. Suffer us to famish, and their store-houses crammed with grain; make edicts for usury, to support usurers: repeal daily any wholesome act established against the rich; and provide more piercing statutes daily, to chain up and restrain the poor.

* Thin as rakes.

If the wars eat us not up, they will; and there's all the love they bear us.

*Men.* Either you must
Confess yourselves wondrous malicious,
Or be accused of folly. I shall tell you
A pretty tale; it may be, you have heard it;
But, since it serves my purpose, I will venture
To stale't* a little more.

1 *Cit.* Well, I'll hear it, Sir; yet you must not think to fob off our disgrace† with a tale: but, an't please you, deliver.

*Men.* There was a time, when all the body's members
Rebell'd against the belly; thus accused it:—
That only like a gulf it did remain
I'the midst o'the body, idle and inactive,
Still cupboarding the viand, never bearing
Like labour with the rest; where‡ the other instruments
Did see, and hear, devise, instruct, walk, feel,
And, mutually participate,§ did minister
Unto the appetite and affection common
Of the whole body. The belly answered,—

1 *Cit.* Well, Sir, what answer made the belly?

*Men.* Sir, I shall tell you.—With a kind of smile,
Which ne'er came from the lungs,‖ but even thus
(For, look you, I may make the belly smile,
As well as speak), it tauntingly replied
To the discontented members, the mutinous parts
That envied his receipt; even so most fitly¶
As you malign our senators, for that
They are not such as you.

1 *Cit.* Your belly's answer: What!
The kingly-crowned head, the vigilant eye,
The counsellor heart, the arm our soldier,
Our steed the leg, the tongue our trumpeter,
With other muniments and petty helps
In this our fabric, if that they——

*Men.* What then?—
'Fore me, this fellow speaks!—what then? what then?

1 *Cit.* Should by the cormorant belly be restrain'd,
Who is the sink o'the body,——

*Men.* Well, what then?

1 *Cit.* The former agents, if they did complain,
What could the belly answer?

*Men.* I will tell you;
If you'll bestow a small (of what you have little)
Patience, a while, you'll hear the belly's answer.

1 *Cit.* You are long about it.

*Men.* Note me this, good friend;
Your most grave belly was deliberate,
Not rash like his accusers, and thus answer'd:
*True is it, my incorporate friends*, quoth he,
*That I receive the general food at first,*

* Make it more common. † Hardship.
‡ Whereas. § Participant.
‖ *I. e.* which indicated not pleasure but contempt. ¶ Exactly.

*Which you do live upon: and fit it is;*
*Because I am the storehouse, and the shop*
*Of the whole body: But if you do remember,*
*I send it through the rivers of your blood,*
*Even to the court, the heart,—to the seat o'the brain;*
*And, through the cranks* and offices of man,*
*The strongest nerves, and small inferior veins,*
*From me receive that natural competency,*
*Whereby they live: And though that all at once,*
*You, my good friends* (this says the belly) mark me,—
1 *Cit.* Ay, Sir; well, well.
Men. *Though all at once cannot*
*See what I do deliver out to each;*
*Yet I can make my audit up, that all,*
*From me do back receive the flour of all,*
*And leave me but the bran.* What say you to 't?
1 *Cit.* It was an answer: How apply you this?
*Men.* The senators of Rome are this good belly,
And you the mutinous members: For examine
Their counsels, and their cares; digest things rightly,
Touching the weal o'the common? you shall find,
No public benefit which you receive,
But it proceeds, or comes, from them to you,
And no way from yourselves.—What do you think?
You the great toe of this assembly?
1 *Cit.* I the great toe? Why the great toe?
*Men.* For that being one o'the lowest, basest, poorest,
Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st foremost:
Thou rascal, thou art worst in blood, to run
Lead'st first to win some vantage.—
But make you ready your stiff bats and clubs;
Rome and her rats are at the point of battle,
The one side must have bale.† Hail! noble Marcius!

*Enter* CAIUS MARCIUS.

*Mar.* Thanks.—What's the matter, you dissentious rogues,
That rubbing the poor itch of your opinion,
Make yourselves scabs?
1 *Cit.* We have ever your good word.
*Mar.* He that will give good words to thee, will flatter
Beneath abhorring.—What would you have, you curs,
That like nor peace, nor war? the one affrights you,
The other makes you proud. He that trusts you,
Where he should find you lions, finds you hares;
Where foxes, geese: You are no surer, no,
Than is the coal of fire upon the ice,
Or hailstone in the sun. Your virtue is,
To make him worthy, whose offence subdues him,
And curse that justice did it. Who deserves greatness,
Deserves your hate: and your affections are
A sick man's appetite, who desires most that
Which would increase his evil. He that depends
Upon your favours, swims with fins of lead,

* Windings. † Bane.

And hews down oaks with rushes. Hang ye! Trust ye?
With every minute you do change a mind;
And call him noble, that was now your hate,
Him vile, that was your garland. What's the matter,
That in these several places of the city
You cry against the noble senate, who,
Under the gods, keep you in awe, which else
Would feed on one another?—What's their seeking?

*Men.* For corn at their own rates; whereof, they say,
The city is well stored.

*Mar.* Hang 'em! They say?
They'll sit by the fire, and presume to know
What's done i' the Capitol: who's like to rise,
Who thrives, and who declines: side factions, and give out
Conjectural marriages; making parties strong,
And feebling such as stand not in their liking,
Below their cobbled shoes. They say, there's grain enough?
Would the nobility lay aside their ruth,*
And let me use my sword, I'd make a quarry †
With thousands of these quarter'd slaves, as high
As I could pick ‡ my lance.

*Men.* Nay, these are almost thoroughly persuaded;
For though abundantly they lack discretion,
Yet are they passing cowardly. But I beseech you,
What says the other troop?

*Mar.* They are dissolved: Hang 'em!
They said, they were an hungry: sigh'd forth proverbs;—
That hunger broke stone walls; that, dogs must eat;
That meat was made for mouths; that, the gods sent not
Corn for the rich men only:—With these shreds
They vented their complainings; which being answer'd,
And a petition granted them, a strange one,
(To break the heart of generosity §
And make bold power look pale), they threw their caps
As they would hang them on the horns o' the moon,
Shouting their emulation. ‖

*Men.* What is granted them?

*Mar.* Five tribunes to defend their vulgar wisdoms,
Of their own choice: One's Junius Brutus,
Sicinius Velutus, and I know not—'Sdeath!
The rabble should have first unroof'd the city;
Ere so prevail'd with me: it will in time
Win upon power, and throw forth greater themes
For insurrection's arguing.¶

*Men.* This is strange.

*Mar.* Go, get you home, you fragments!

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mes.* Where's Caius Marcius?

*Mar.* Here: What's the matter?

*Mes.* The news is, Sir, the Volces are in arms.

*Mar.* I am glad on't: then we shall have means to vent
Our musty superfluity:—See, our best elders.

* Pity, compassion. † Heap of dead. ‡ Pitch.
§ *I. e.* of the patricians. ‖ Factious triumph. ¶ Topic.

*Enter* COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, *and other* SENATORS; JUNIUS BRUTUS, *and* SICINIUS VELUTUS.

1 *Sen.* Marcius, 'tis true, that you have lately told us;
The Volces are in arms.
*Mar.* They have a leader,
Tullus Anfidius, that will put you to't.
I sin in envying his nobility:
And were I anything but what I am,
I would wish me only he.
*Com.* You have fought together.
*Mar.* Were half to half the world by the ears, and he
Upon my party, I'd revolt, to make
Only my wars with him: he is a lion
That I am proud to hunt.
1 *Sen.* Then, worthy Marcius,
Attend upon Cominius to these wars.
*Com.* It is your former promise.
*Mar.* Sir, it is;
And I am constant.—Titus Lartius, thou
Shalt see me once more strike at Tullus' face:
What, art thou stiff? stand'st out?
*Tit.* No, Caius Marcius;
I'll lean upon one crutch, and fight with the other,
Ere stay behind this business.
*Men.* O, true bred!
1 *Sen.* Your company to the Capitol; where, I know,
Our greatest friends attend us.
*Tit.* Lead you on:
Follow, Cominius; we must follow you;
Right worthy you * priority.
*Com.* Noble Lartius!
1 *Sen.* Hence! To your homes, be gone. [*To the* CITIZENS
*Mar.* Nay, let them follow:
The Volces have much corn; take these rats thither,
To gnaw their garners:—Worshipful mutineers,
Your valour puts well forth: pray, follow.
[*Exeunt* SENATORS, COM. MAR. TIT. *and* MENEN.
CITIZENS *steal away.*
*Sic.* Was ever man so proud as this Marcius?
*Bru.* He has no equal.
*Sic.* When we were chosen tribunes for the people,——
*Bru.* Mark'd you his lip and eyes?
*Sic.* Nay, but his taunts.
*Bru.* Being moved, he will not spare to gird the gods.
*Sic.* Be-mock the modest moon.
*Bru.* The present wars devour him: he is grown
Too proud to be so valiant.
*Sic.* Such a nature
Tickled with good success, disdains the shadow
Which he treads on at noon: But I do wonder
His insolence can brook to be commanded
Under Cominius.

* (Of.)

*Bru.* Fame, at the which he aims,—
In whom already he is well graced,—cannot
Better be held, nor more attain'd, than by
A place below the first: for what miscarries
Shall be the general's fault, though he perform
To the utmost of a man; and giddy censure
Will then cry out of Marcius, *O, if he*
*Had borne the business!*
*Sic.* Besides, if things go well;
Opinion, that so sticks on Marcius, shall
Of his demerits* rob Cominius.
*Bru.* Come:
Half all Cominius' honours are to Marcius,
Though Marcius earn'd them not; and all his faults
To Marcius shall be honours, though, indeed,
In aught he merit not.
*Sic.* Let's hence, and hear
How the despatch is made; and in what fashion,
More than in singularity, he goes
Upon his present action.
*Bru.* Let's along. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—Corioli. The Senate-House.*

*Enter* TULLUS AUFIDIUS, *and certain* SENATORS.

1 *Sen.* So, your opinion is, Aufidius,
That they of Rome are enter'd in our counsels,
And know how we proceed.
*Auf.* Is it not yours?
What ever hath been thought on in this state,
That could be brought to bodily act ere Rome
Had circumvention! † 'Tis not four days gone,
Since I heard thence; these are the words: I think,
I have the letter here; yes, here it is: [*Reads.*
*They have press'd a power, but it is not known*
*Whether for east, or west: The dearth is great;*
*The people mutinous: and it is rumour'd,*
Cominius, Marcius *your old enemy,*
*(Who is of Rome worse hated than of you),*
*And* Titus Lartius, *a most valiant Roman,*
*These three lead on this preparation*
*Whither 'tis bent: most likely, 'tis for you:*
*Consider of it.*
1 *Sen.* Our army's in the field:
We never yet made doubt but Rome was ready
To answer us.
*Auf.* Nor did you think it folly,
To keep your great pretences veil'd, till when
They needs must show themselves; which in the hatching,
It seem'd, appear'd to Rome. By the discovery,
We shall be shorten'd in our aim; which was,
To take in † many towns, ere, almost, Rome
Should know we were afoot.

* Demerits and merits had anciently the same meaning.
† Pre-occupation. ‡ To subdue.

2 *Sen.* Noble Aufidius,
Take your commission; hie you to your bands:
Let us alone to guard Corioli:
If they set down before us, for the remove
Bring up your army; but, I think, you'll find
They have not prepared for us.
*Auf.* O, doubt not that;
I speak from certainties. Nay, more.
Some parcels of their powers are forth already,
And only hitherward. I leave your honours.
If we and Caius Marcius chance to meet,
'Tis sworn between us, we shall never strike
Till one can do no more.
*All.* The gods assist you!
*Auf.* And keep your honours safe!
1 *Sen.* Farewell.
2 *Sen.* Farewell.
*All.* Farewell. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—Rome. An Apartment in* MARCIUS' *House.*

*Enter* VOLUMNIA, *and* VIRGILIA: *They sit down on two low stools, and sew.*

*Vol.* I pray you, daughter, sing; or express yourself in a more comfortable sort: If my son were my husband, I should freelier rejoice in that absence wherein he won honour, than in the embracements of his bed, where he would show most love. When yet he was but tender-bodied, and the only son of my womb; when youth with comeliness pluck'd all gaze his way;‡ when, for a day of kings' entreaties, a mother should not sell him an hour from her beholding; I,—considering how honour would become such a person; that it was no better than picture-like to hang by the wall, if renown made it not stir,—was pleased to let him seek danger where he was like to find fame. To a cruel war I sent him; from whence he returned, his brows bound with oak. I tell thee, daughter,—I sprang not more in joy at first hearing he was a man-child, than now in first seeing he had proved himself a man.

*Vir.* But had he died in the business, Madam? how then?

*Vol.* Then his good report should have been my son; I therein would have found issue. Hear me profess sincerely: Had I a dozen sons,—each in my love alike, and none less dear than thine and my good Marcius,—I had rather had eleven die nobly for their country, than one voluptuously surfeit out of action.

*Enter a* GENTLEWOMAN.

*Gent.* Madam, the lady Valeria is come to visit you.

*Vir.* 'Beseech you, give me leave to retire† myself.

*Vol.* Indeed, you shall not.
Methinks, I hear hither your husband's drum;
See him pluck Aufidius down by the hair;
As children from a bear the Volces shunning him:
Methinks, I see him stamp thus, and call thus,—

‡ Attracted all attention to him. † Withdraw.

*Come on, you cowards, you were got in fear,*
*Though you were born in Rome:* His bloody brow
With his mail'd hand then wiping, forth he goes;
Like to a harvest-man, that's task'd to mow
Or all, or lose his hire.

*Vir.* His bloody brow! O, Jupiter, no blood!

*Val.* Away, you fool! it more becomes a man,
Than gilt his trophy: The breasts of Hecuba,
When she did suckle Hector, look'd not lovelier
Than Hector's forehead, when it spit forth blood
At Grecian swords contending.—Tell Valeria,
We are fit to bid her welcome. [*Exit* GENT.

*Vir.* Heavens bless my lord from fell Aufidius!

*Vol.* He'll beat Aufidius' head below his knee
And tread upon his neck.

*Re-enter* GENTLEWOMAN, *with* VALERIA *and her* USHER.

*Val.* My ladies both, good day to you.

*Vol.* Sweet Madam,———

*Vir.* I am glad to see your ladyship.

*Val.* How do you both? you are manifest house-keepers. What, are you sewing here! A fine spot,* in good faith.—How does your little son?

*Vir.* I thank your ladyship; well, good Madam.

*Vol.* He had rather see the swords, and hear a drum, than look upon his school-master.

*Val.* O' my word, the father's son: I'll swear, 'tis a very pretty boy. O' my troth, I looked upon him o' Wednesday half an hour together: he has such a confirmed countenance. I saw him run after a gilded butterfly; and when he caught it, he let it go again; and after it again; and over and over he comes, and up again; catched it again: or whether his fall enraged him, or how 'twas, he did so set his teeth, and tear it; O, I warrant, how he mammocked† it!

*Vol.* One of his father's moods.

*Val.* Indeed la, 'tis a noble child.

*Vir.* A crack,‡ Madam.

*Val.* Come, lay aside your stitchery; I must have you play the idle huswife with me this afternoon.

*Vir.* No, good Madam; I will not out of doors.

*Val.* Not out of doors!

*Vol.* She shall, she shall.

*Vir.* Indeed, no, by your patience: I will not over the threshold, till my lord return from the wars.

*Val.* Fie, you confine yourself most unreasonably; Come, you must go visit the good lady that lies in.

*Vir.* I will wish her speedy strength, and visit her with my prayers; but I cannot go thither.

*Vol.* Why, I pray you?

*Vir.* 'Tis not to save labour, nor that I want love.

*Val.* You would be another Penelope: yet, they say, all the yarn she spun, in Ulysses' absence, did but fill Ithaca full of moths. Come; I would, your cambric were sensible as your

* Piece (of work). † Tore. ‡ Lively boy.

finger, that you might leave pricking it for pity. Come, you shall go with us.

*Vir.* No, good Madam, pardon me; indeed, I will not forth.

*Val.* In truth, la, go with me; and I'll tell you excellent news of your husband.

*Vir.* O, good Madam, there can be none yet.

*Val.* Verily, I do not jest with you; there came news from him last night.

*Vir.* Indeed, Madam?

*Val.* In earnest, it's true; I heard a senator speak it. Thus it is:—The Volces have an army forth; against whom Cominius the general is gone, with one part of our Roman power; your lord, and Titus Lartius, are set down before their city Corioli; they nothing doubt prevailing, and to make it brief* wars. This is true, on mine honour; and so, I pray, go with us.

*Vir.* Give me excuse, good Madam; I will obey you in everything hereafter.

*Vol.* Let her alone, lady; as she is now, she will but disease our better mirth.

*Val.* In troth I think, she would:—Fare you well then.—Come, good sweet lady,—Pr'ythee Virgilia, turn thy solemnness out o'door, and go along with us.

*Vir.* No: at a word, Madam; indeed, I must not. I wish you much mirth.

*Val.* Well, then farewell. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—Before Corioli.*

*Enter, with drums and colours,* MARCIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, *Officers and Soldiers. To them a* MESSENGER.

*Mar.* Yonder comes news:—A wager, they have met.

*Lart.* My horse to yours, no.

*Mar.* 'Tis done.

*Lart.* Agreed.

*Mar.* Say, has our general met the enemy?

*Mess.* They lie in view; but have not spoke as yet.

*Lart.* So, the good horse is mine.

*Mar.* I'll buy him of you.

*Lart.* No, I'll nor sell nor give him: lend you him, I will,
For half a hundred years.—Summon the town.

*Mar.* How far off lie the armies?

*Mess.* Within this mile and half.

*Mar.* Then shall we hear their larum, and they ours.
Now, Mars, I pr'ythee make us quick in work:
That we with smoking swords may march from hence,
To help our fielded† friends!—Come, blow thy blast.

*They sound a parley.—Enter, on the walls, some* SENATORS, *and others.*

Tullus Aufidius, is he within your walls?

1 *Sen.* No, nor a man that fears you less than he,
That's lesser than a little. Hark, our drums [*Alarums afar off.*
Are bringing forth our youth: We'll break our walls,
Rather than they shall pound us up: our gates,

* Short. † In the field of battle.

Which yet seem shut, we have but pinn'd with rushes;
They'll open of themselves. Hark you, far off; [*Other Alarums.*
There is Aufidius; list, what work he makes
Amongst your cloven army.
*Mar.* O, they are at it!
*Lart.* Their noise be our instruction.—Ladders, ho!

*The* VOLCES *enter and pass over the stage.*

*Mar.* They fear us not, but issue forth their city.
Now put your shields before your hearts, and fight
With hearts more proof than shields.—Advance, brave Titus:
They do disdain us much beyond our thoughts,
Which makes me sweat with wrath.—Come on, my fellows;
He that retires, I'll take him for a Volce,
And he shall feel mine edge.

*Alarum, and exeunt* ROMANS *and* VOLCES, *fighting. The* ROMANS *are beaten back to their trenches. Re-enter* MARCIUS.

*Mar.* All the contagion of the south light on you.
You shames of Rome! you herd of—Boils and plagues
Plaster you o'er; that you may be abhorr'd
Further than seen, and one infect another
Against the wind a mile! you souls of geese,
That bear the shapes of men, how have you run
From slaves that apes would beat? Pluto and hell!
All hurt behind; backs red and faces pale
With flight and agued fear! Mend, and charge home,
Or, by the fires of heaven, I'll leave the foe,
And make my wars on you: look to 't: Come on;
If you'll stand fast, we'll beat them to their wives,
As they us to our trenches followed.

*Another alarum. The* VOLCES *and* ROMANS *re-enter, and the fight is renewed. The* VOLCES *retire into Corioli, and* MARCIUS *follows them to the gates.*

So, now the gates are ope:—Now prove good seconds:
'Tis for the followers fortune widens them,
Not for the fliers: mark me, and do the like.
[*He enters the gates, and is shut in.*
1 *Sol.* Fool-hardiness; not I.
2 *Sol.* Nor I.
3 *Sol.* See, they
Have shut him in. [*Alarum continues.*
*All.* To the pot, I warrant him.

*Enter* TITUS LARTIUS.

*Lart.* What is become of Marcius?
*All.* Slain, Sir, doubtless.
1 *Sol.* Following the flyers at the very heels,
With them he enters: who, upon the sudden,
Clapp'd-to their gates; he is himself alone,
To answer all the city.
*Lart.* O noble fellow!

Who, sensible,* outdares his senseless sword,
And, when it bows,† stands up! Thou art left, Marcius:
A carbuncle, entire, as big as thou art,
Were not so rich a jewel. Thou wast a soldier
Even to Cato's wish, not fierce and terrible
Only in strokes; but, with thy grim looks and
The thunder-like percussion of thy sounds,
Thou mad'st thine enemies shake, as if the world
Were feverous and did tremble.

*Re-enter* MARCIUS *bleeding, assaulted by the enemy.*

1 *Sol.* Look, Sir.
*Lart.* 'Tis Marcius:
Let's fetch him off, or make remain alike.
[*They fight, and all enter the city.*

*SCENE V.—Within the town. A street.*

*Enter certain* ROMANS, *with spoils.*

1 *Rom.* This I will carry to Rome.
2 *Rom.* And I this.
3 *Rom.* A murrain on't! I took this for silver.
[*Alarum continues still afar off.*

*Enter* MARCIUS *and* TITUS LARTIUS, *with a trumpet.*

*Mar.* See here these movers, that do prize their hours
At a crack'd drachma!‡ Cushions, leaden spoons,
Irons of doit, doublets that hangmen would
Bury with those that wore them, these base slaves,
Ere yet the fight be done, pack up:—Down with them.—
And hark, what noise the general makes!—To him:—
There is the man of my soul's hate, Aufidius,
Piercing our Romans: Then, valiant Titus, take
Convenient numbers to make good the city;
Whilst I, with those that have the spirit, will haste
To help Cominius.
*Lart.* Worthy Sir, thou bleed'st;
Thy exercise hath been too violent for
A second course of fight.
*Mar.* Sir, praise me not:
My work hath yet not warm'd me: Fare you well.
The blood I drop is rather physical
Than dangerous to me; To Aufidius thus
I will appear, and fight.
*Lart.* Now the fair goddess, Fortune,
Fall deep in love with thee; and her great charms
Misguide thy opposer's swords! Bold gentleman,
Prosperity be thy page!
*Mar.* Thy friend no less
Than those she placeth highest! So farewell.
*Lart.* Thou worthiest Marcius!— [*Exit* MARCIUS.
Go, sound thy trumpet in the market-place;
Call thither all the officers of the town,
Where they shall know our mind. Away. [*Exeunt.*

* Having sensation. † Bends. ‡ A Roman coin.

*SCENE VI.—Near the camp of* COMINIUS.

*Enter* COMINIUS *and forces retreating.*

*Com.* Breathe you, my friends; well fought, we are come off
Like Romans, neither foolish in our stands,
Nor cowardly in retire: believe me, Sirs,
We shall be charg'd again. Whiles we have struck,
By interims, and conveying gusts, we have heard
The charges of our friends:—Ye Roman gods,
Lead their successes as we wish our own;
That both our powers, with smiling fronts encountering,

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

May give you thankful sacrifice!—Thy news?
*Mess.* The citizens of Corioli have issued,
And given to Lartius and to Marcius battle:
I saw our party to their trenches driven,
And then I came away.
*Com.* Though thou speak'st truth,
Methinks thou speak'st not well. How long is't since?
*Mess.* Above an hour, my lord.
*Com.* 'Tis not a mile; briefly we heard their drums:
How could'st thou in a mile confound* an hour,
And bring thy news so late?
*Mess.* Spies of the Volces
Held me in chase, that I was forc'd to wheel
Three or four miles about; else had I, Sir,
Half an hour since brought my report.

*Enter* MARCIUS.

*Com.* Who's yonder,
That does appear as he were flay'd? O gods!
He has the stamp of Marcius; and I have
Beforetime seen him thus.
*Mar.* Come I too late?
*Com.* The shepherd knows not thunder from a tabor,
More than I know the sound of Marcius' tongue
From every meaner man's.
*Mar.* Come I too late?
*Com.* Ay, if you come not in the blood of others,
But mantled in your own.
*Mar.* O! let me clip you
In arms as sound, as when I woo'd; in heart
As merry, as when our nuptial day was done,
And tapers burn'd to bedward.
*Com.* Flower of warriors,
How is't with Titus Lartius?
*Mar.* As with a man busied about decrees:
Condemning some to death and some to exile;
Ransoming him, or pitying, threat'ning the other:
Holding Corioli in the name of Rome,
Even like a fawning greyhound in the leash,
To let him slip at will.

* Expend.

*Com.* Where is that slave,
Which told me they had beat you to your trenches?
Where is he?' call him hither.
*Mar.* Let him alone,
He did inform the truth: but for our gentlemen,
The common file (A plague!—Tribunes for them!)
The mouse ne'er shunn'd the cat, as they did budge
From rascals worse than they.
*Com.* But how prevail'd you?
*Mar.* Will the time serve to tell? I do not think—
Where is the enemy? Are you lords o'the field?
If not, why cease you till you are so?
*Com.* Marcius,
We have at disadvantage fought, and did
Retire, to win our purpose.
*Mar.* How lies their battle? know you on which side
They have plac'd their men of trust?
*Com.* As I guess, Marcius,
Their bands in the vaward are the Antiates,
Of their best trust: o'er them Aufidius,
Their very heart of hope.
*Mar.* I do beseech you,
By all the battles wherein we have fought,
By the blood we have shed together, by the vows
We have made to endure friends, that you directly
Set me against Aufidius, and his Antiates:
And that you not delay the present;* but,
Filling the air with swords advanced, and darts
We prove this very hour.
*Com.* Though I could wish
You were conducted to a gentle bath,
And balms applied to you, yet dare I never
Deny your asking; take your choice of those
That best can aid your action.
*Mar.* Those are they
That most are willing:—If any such be here,
(As it were sin to doubt), that love this painting
Wherein you see me smear'd; if any fear
Lesser his person than an ill report;
If any think, brave death outweighs bad life,
And that his country's dearer than himself;
Let him, alone, or so many, so minded,
Wave thus [*waving his hand*], to express his disposition,
And follow Marcius,

[*They all shout, and wave their swords; take him up in their arms, and cast up their caps.*

O me, alone! Make you a sword of me?
If these shows be not outward, which of you
But is four Volces? None of you but is
Able to bear against the great Aufidius
A shield as hard as his. A certain number,
Though thanks to all, must I select: the rest
Shall bear the business in some other fight,

* Let slip the present time.

As cause will be obey'd. Please you to march;
And four shall quickly draw out my command,
Which men are best inclin'd.
*Com.* March on, my fellows:
Make good this ostentation, and you shall
Divide in all with us. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VII.—The gates of Corioli.*

TITUS LARTIUS, *having set a guard upon Corioli, going with a drum and trumpet toward* COMINIUS *and* CAIUS MARCIUS, *enters with a* LIEUTENANT, *a party of soldiers, and a scout.*

*Lart.* So, let the ports * be guarded: keep your duties,
As I have set them down. If I do send, despatch
Those centuries † to our aid; the rest will serve
For a short holding: If we lose the field,
We cannot keep the town.
*Lieu.* Fear not our care, Sir.
*Lart.* Hence, and shut your gates upon us.—
Our guider, come; to the Roman camp conduct us. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VIII.—A field of battle between the Roman and the Volcian camps.*

*Alarum. Enter* MARCIUS *and* AUFIDIUS.

*Mar.* I'll fight with none but thee; for I do hate thee
Worse than a promise-breaker.
*Auf.* We hate alike;
Not Afric owns a serpent, I abhor
More than thy fame and envy: Fix thy foot.
*Mar.* Let the first budger die the other's slave,
And the gods doom him after!
*Auf.* If I fly, Marcius,
Halloo me like a hare.
*Mar.* Within these three hours, Tullus,
Alone I fought in your Corioli walls,
And made what work I pleas'd; 'Tis not my blood,
Wherein thou seest me mask'd; for thy revenge,
Wrench up thy power to the highest.
*Auf.* Wert thou the Hector,
That was the whip ‡ of your bragg'd progeny,
Thou should'st not 'scape me here.—
[*They fight, and certain Volces come to the aid of* AUFIDIUS.
Officious, and not valiant—you have sham'd me
In your condemn'd seconds. §
[*Exeunt fighting, driven in by* MARCIUS.

*SCENE IX.—The Roman camp.*

*Alarum. A retreat is sounded. Flourish. Enter at one side,* COMINIUS, *and Romans; at the other side,* MARCIUS, *with his arm in a scarf, and other Romans.*

*Com.* If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's work,
Thou'lt not believe thy deeds: but I'll report it,

* Gates. † Companies of a hundred men.
‡ Boast, crack. § Objectionable help.

Where senators shall mingle tears with smiles;
Where great patricians shall attend, and shrug,
I' the end, admire; where ladies shall be frighted,
And, gladly quak'd,* hear more; where the dull Tribunes,
That, with the fusty plebeians, hate thine honours,
Shall say, against their hearts—*We thank the gods,*
*Our Rome hath such a soldier!*—
Yet cam'st thou to a morsel of this feast,
Having fully dined before.

*Enter* TITUS LARTIUS, *with his power,* † *from the pursuit.*

*Lart.* O general,
Here is the steed, we the caparison:
Hadst thou beheld——

*Mar.* Pray now, no more: my mother,
Who has a charter to extol her blood,
When she does praise me, grieves me. I have done,
As you have done; that's what I can; induc'd
As you have been; that's for my country:
He, that has but effected his good will,
Hath overta'en mine act.‡

*Com.* You shall not be
The grave of your deserving; Rome must know
The value of her own: 'twere a concealment
Worse than a theft, no less than a traducement,
To hide your doings; and to silence that,
Which to the spire and top of praises vouch'd,
Would seem but modest: Therefore, I beseech you,
(In sign of what you are, not to reward
What you have done), before our army hear me.

*Mar.* I have some wounds upon me, and they smart
To hear themselves remember'd.

*Com.* Should they not,
Well might they fester 'gainst ingratitude,
And tent themselves with death. Of all the horses,
(Whereof we have ta'en good, and good store), of all
The treasure, in this field achiev'd, and city,
We render you the tenth; to be ta'en forth,
Before the common distribution, at
Your only choice.

*Mar.* I thank you, general;
But cannot make my heart consent to take
A bribe to pay my sword: I do refuse it;
And stand upon my common part with those
That have beheld the doing.

[*A long flourish. They all cry* Marcius! Marcius! *cast up their caps and lances:* COMINIUS *and* LARTIUS *stand bare.*

*Mar.* May these same instruments, which you profane,
Never sound more! When drums and trumpets shall
I' the field prove flatterers, let courts and cities be
Made all of false-fac'd soothing: When steel grows

* Thrown into grateful trepidation. † Forces.
‡ Has done as much as I.

Soft as the parasite's silk, let him be made
An overture for the wars! No more, I say;
For that I have not wash'd my nose that bled,
Or foil'd some debile* wretch,—which, without note,
Here's many else have done,—you shout me forth
In acclamations hyperbolical;
As if I loved my little should be dieted
In praises sauc'd with lies.

*Com.* Too modest are you;
More cruel to your good report, than grateful
To us that give you truly: by your patience,
If 'gainst yourself you be incens'd, we'll put you
(Like one that means his proper† harm), in manacles,
Then reason safely with you.—Therefore, be it known,
As to us, to all the world, that Caius Marcius
Wears this war's garland: in token of the which
My noble steed, known to the camp, I give him,
With all his trim belonging; and, from this time,
For what he did before Corioli, call him,
With all the applause and clamour of the host,
CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS.—
Bear the addition nobly ever!

[*Flourish. Trumpets sound, and drums.*

*All.* Caius Marcius Coriolanus!

*Cor.* I will go wash;
And when my face is fair, you shall perceive
Whether I blush, or no: Howbeit, I thank you:—
I mean to stride your steed; and, at all times,
To undercrest‡ your good addition,
To the fairness of my power.

*Com.* So, to our tent:
Where, ere we do repose us, we will write
To Rome of our success.—You, Titus Lartius,
Must to Corioli back: send us to Rome
The best§ with whom we may articulate,‖
For their own good, and ours.

*Lart.* I shall, my lord.

*Cor.* The gods begin to mock me. I that now
Refus'd most princely gifts, am bound to beg
Of my lord general.

*Com.* Take it: 'tis yours.—What is 't?

*Cor.* I sometime lay, here in Corioli,
At a poor man's house, he us'd me kindly:
He cried to me; I saw him prisoner;
But then Aufidius was within my view,
And wrath o'erwhelm'd my pity: I request you
To give my poor host freedom.

*Com.* O, well begg'd!
Were he the butcher of my son, he should
Be free, as is the wind. Deliver him, Titus.

*Lart.* Marcius, his name?

*Cor.* By Jupiter, forgot:—

* Weak, feeble. † Own. ‡ Add more by doing his best.
§ Chief men. ‖ Enter into articles.

I am weary; yea, my memory is tired.—
Have we no wine here?
*Com.* Go we to our tent:
The blood upon your visage dries: 'tis time
It should be look'd to: come. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE X.—The camp of Volces.*

*A Flourish. Cornets. Enter* TULLUS AUFIDIUS, *bloody, with two or three* SOLDIERS.

*Auf.* The town is ta'en!
1 *Sol.* 'Twill be deliver'd back on good condition.
*Auf.* Condition?
I would, I were a Roman; for I cannot,
Being a Volce, be that I am.—Condition!
What good condition can a treaty find
I' the part that is at mercy? Five times, Marcius,
I have fought with thee; so often hast thou beat me;
And would'st do so, I think, should we encounter
As often as we eat.—By the elements,
If e'er again I meet him beard to beard,
He is mine, or I am his: Mine emulation
Hath not that honour in't, it had; for where *
I thought to crush him in an equal force,
(True sword to sword), I'll potch † at him some way;
Or wrath, or craft, may get him.
1 *Sol.* He's the devil.
*Auf.* Bolder, though not so subtle: My valour's poison'd,
With only suffering stain by him; for him
Shall fly out of itself: nor sleep nor sanctuary,
Being naked, sick: nor fane, nor Capitol,
The prayers of priests, nor times of sacrifice,
Embarquements ‡ all of fury, shall lift up
Their rotten privilege and custom 'gainst
My hate to Marcius: where I find him, were it
At home, upon § my brother's guard, even there
Against the hospitable canon, would I
Wash my fierce hand in his heart. Go you to the city;
Learn, how 'tis held; and what they are, that must
Be hostages for Rome.
1 *Sol.* Will not you go?
*Auf.* I am attended ‖ at the cypress grove:
I pray you
('Tis south the city mills), bring me word thither
How the world goes; that to the pace of it
I may spur on my journey.
1 *Sol.* I shall, Sir. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT II.

*SCENE I.—Rome. A Public Place.*

*Enter* MENENIUS, SICINIUS, *and* BRUTUS.

*Men.* The augurer tells me, we shall have news to-night.

* Whereas. † Poke, push. ‡ Embarments, *i. e.* prohibitions.
§ *I. e.* under. ‖ Waited for.

*Bru.* Good, or bad?

*Men.* Not according to the prayer of the people, for they love not Marcius.

*Sic.* Nature teaches beasts to know their friends.

*Men.* Pray you, who does the wolf love?

*Sic.* The lamb.

*Men.* Ay, to devour him; as the hungry plebeians would the noble Marcius.

*Bru.* He's a lamb, indeed, that baes like a bear.

*Men.* He's a bear indeed, that lives like a lamb. You two are old men; tell me one thing that I shall ask you.

*Both Trib.* Well, Sir.

*Men.* In what enormity is Marcius poor, that you two have not in abundance?

*Bru.* He's poor in no one fault, but stored with all.

*Sic.* Especially, in pride.

*Bru.* And topping all others in boasting.

*Men.* This is strange now: Do you two know how you are censured here in the city, I mean of us o' the right hand file? Do you?

*Both Trib.* Why, how are we censured?

*Men.* Because you talk of pride now,—Will you not be angry?

*Both Trib.* Well, well, Sir, well.

*Men.* Why 'tis no great matter; for a very little thief of occasion will rob you of a great deal of patience: give your disposition the reins, and be angry at your pleasures; at the least, if you take it as a pleasure to you, in being so. You blame Marcius for being proud?

*Bru.* We do it not alone, Sir.

*Men.* I know, you can do very little alone; for your helps are many; or else your actions would grow wondrous single: your abilities are too infant-like, for doing much alone. You talk of pride: O, that you could turn your eyes towards the napes* of your necks, and make but an interior survey of your good selves! O, that you could!

*Bru.* What then, Sir?

*Men.* Why, then you should discover a brace of unmeriting, proud, violent, testy magistrates, (alias, fools), as any in Rome.

*Sic.* Menenius, you are known well enough too.

*Men.* I am known to be a humorous patrician, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with not a drop of allaying Tyber in't: said to be something imperfect, in favouring the first complaint: hasty, and tinder-like, upon too trivial motion: one that converses more with the buttock of the night, than with the forehead of the morning.† What I think, I utter; and spend my malice in my breath: Meeting two such weals‡-men as you are, (I cannot call you Lycurguses), if the drink you gave me, touch my palate adversely, I make a crooked face at it. I cannot say, your worships have delivered the matter well, when I find the ass in compound with the major part of your syllables: and though I

* In allusion to the proverb, that every man has a bag before him in which he puts his neighbours' faults, and another behind him, in which he puts his own.

† Rather a late lier down than an early riser. ‡ States.

must be content to bear with those that say you are reverend grave men; yet they lie deadly, that tell, you have good faces. If you see this in the map of my microcosm, follows it, that I am known well enough too? What harm can your bisson conspectuities * glean out of this character, if I be known enough too?

*Bru.* Come, Sir, come, we know you well enough.

*Men.* You know neither me, yourselves, nor anything. You are ambitious for poor knaves' caps and legs; † you wear out a good wholesome forenoon, in hearing a cause between an orange-wife and a fosset-seller; and then re-journ the controversy of threepence to a second day of audience.—When you are hearing a matter between party and party, if you chance to be pinched with the cholic, you make faces like mummers; set up the bloody flag against all patience; and in roaring for a chamber-pot, dismiss the controversy bleeding, the more entangled by your hearing: all the peace you make in their cause, is, calling both the parties knaves: You are a pair of strange ones.

*Bru.* Come, come, you are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table, than a necessary bencher in the Capitol.

*Men.* Our very priests must become mockers, if they shall encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are. When you speak best unto the purpose, it is not worth the wagging of your beards; and your beards deserve not so honourable a grave, as to stuff a botcher's cushion, or to be entombed in an ass's pack-saddle. Yet you must be saying, Marcius is proud; who, in a cheap estimation, is worth all your predecessors, since Deucalion; though, peradventure, some of the best of them were hereditary hangmen. Good den to your worships; more of your conversation would infect my brain, being the herdsmen of the beastly plebians: I will be bold to take my leave of you.

[BRU. *and* SIC. *retire to the back of the Scene.*

*Enter* VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, *and* VALERIA, *&c.*

How now, my as fair as noble ladies, (and the moon, were she earthly, no nobler), whither do you follow your eyes so fast?

*Vol.* Honourable Menenius, my boy Marcius approaches; for the love of Juno, let's go.

*Men.* Ha! Marcius coming home?

*Vol.* Ay, worthy Menenius; and with prosperous approbation.

*Men.* Take my cap, Jupiter, and I thank thee:—Hoo! Marcius coming home?

*Two Ladies.* Nay, 'tis true.

*Vol.* Look, here's a letter from him; the state hath another, his wife another; and, I think, there's one at home for you.

*Men.* I will make my very house reel to-night:—A letter for me?

*Vir.* Yes, certain, there's a letter for you; I saw it.

*Men.* A letter for me? It gives me an estate of seven years' health, in which time I will make a lip at the physician: the most sovereign prescription in Galen is but empiricutic, and, to this preservative, of no better report than a horse-drench. Is he not wounded? he was wont to come home wounded.

*Vir.* O, no, no, no.

* Blind perceptions. † Obeisance.

*Vol.* O, he is wounded, I thank the gods for't.

*Men.* So do I too, if it be not too much:—Brings 'a victory in his pocket?—The wounds become him.

*Vol.* On's brows, Menenius: he comes the third time home with the oaken garland.

*Men.* Has he disciplined Aufidius soundly?

*Vol.* Titus Lartius writes,—they fought together, but Aufidius got off.

*Men.* And 'twas time for him too, I'll warrant him that: an he had staid by him, I would not have been so fidiused for all the chests in Corioli, and the gold that's in them. Is the senate possessed * of this?

*Vol.* Good ladies, let's go:—Yes, yes, yes: the senate has letters from the general, wherein he gives my son the whole name of the war: he hath in this action outdone his former deeds doubly.

*Val.* In troth, there's wondrous things spoke of him.

*Men.* Wondrous? ay, I warrant you, and not without his true purchasing.

*Vir.* The gods grant them true!

*Vol.* True? pow, wow.

*Men.* True? I'll be swern they are true:—Where is he wounded?—God save your good worships! [*To the Tribunes, who come forward*]. Marcius is coming home: he has more cause to be proud. Where is he wounded?

*Vol.* I' the shoulder, and i' the left arm: There will be large cicatrices to show the people, when he shall stand for his place. He received in the repulse of Tarquin, seven hurts i' the body.

*Men.* One in the neck, and two in the thigh,—there's nine that I know.

*Vol.* He had, before this last expedition, twenty-five wounds upon him.

*Men.* Now it's twenty-seven: every gash was an enemy's grave. [*A shout, and flourish*]. Hark! the trumpets.

*Vol.* These are the ushers of Marcius: before him he carries noise, and behind him he leaves tears.
Death, that dark spirit, in's nervy arm doth lie;
Which being advanced, declines,† and then men die.

*A Sennet.*‡ *Trumpet sound. Enter* COMINIUS *and* TITUS LARTIUS; *between them,* CORIOLANUS, *crowned with an oaken Garland; with Captains, Soldiers, and a Herald.*

*Her.* Know, Rome, that all alone Marcius did fight
Within Corioli' gates: where he hath won,
With fame, a name to Caius Marcius; these
In honour follows, Coriolanus:
Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus! [*Flourish.*

*All.* Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus!

*Cor.* No more of this, it does offend my heart;
Pray now, no more.

*Com.* Look, Sir, your mother,——

*Cor.* O!
You have, I know, petition'd all the gods [*Kneels.*
For my prosperity.

* Informed. † Falls. ‡ Flourish on cornets.

*Vol.* Nay, my good soldier, up;
My gentle Marcius, worthy Caius, and
By deed-achieving honour newly named,
What is it? Coriolanus, must I call thee?
But O, thy wife.——
*Cor.* My gracious* silence, hail!
Wouldst thou have laugh'd, had I come coffined home,
That weep'st to see me triumph? Ah, my dear,
Such eyes the widows in Corioli wear,
And mothers that lack sons.
*Men.* Now the gods crown thee!
*Cor.* And live you yet?—O my sweet lady, pardon.
[*To* VALERIA.
*Vol.* I know not where to turn:—O welcome home;
And welcome, general;—And you are welcome all.
*Men.* A hundred thousand welcomes: I could weep,
And I could laugh; I am light, and heavy: Welcome:
A curse begin at very root of his heart,
That is not glad to see thee!—You are three,
That Rome should dote on: yet, by the faith of men,
We have some old crab-trees here at home, that will not
Be grafted to your relish. Yet welcome, warriors:
We call a nettle, but a nettle; and
The faults of fools, but folly.
*Com.* Ever right.
*Cor.* Menenius, ever, ever.
*Her.* Give way there, and go on.
*Cor.* Your hand, and yours: [*To his Wife and Mother.*
Ere in our own house I do shade my head,
The good patricians must be visited;
From whom I have received not only greetings,
But with them change of honours.
*Vol.* I have lived
To see inherited my very wishes,
And the buildings of my fancy: only there
Is one thing wanting, which I doubt not, but
Our Rome will cast upon thee.
*Cor.* Know, good mother,
I had rather be their servant in my way,
Than sway with them in theirs.
*Com.* On, to the Capitol.
[*Flourish. Cornets. Exeunt in state, as before. The Tribunes remain.*
*Bru.* All tongues speak of him, and the bleared sights
Are spectacled to see him: Your prattling nurse
Into a rapture† lets her baby cry,
While she chats him: the kitchen malkin‡ pins
Her richest lockram§ 'bout her reechy‖ neck.
Clambering the walls to eye him; stalls, bulks, windows,
Are smother'd up, leads fill'd, and ridges horsed
With variable complexions; all agreeing
In earnestness to see him: seld¶-shown flamens**

* *I. e.* my silent Grace! † Fit. ‡ Molly, wench.
§ Linen. ‖ Greasy. ¶ Seldom. ** Priests.

Do press among the popular throngs, and puff
To win a vulgar station: * our veil'd dames
Commit the war of white and damask, in
Their nicely-gawded † cheeks, to the wanton spoil
Of Phœbus' burning kisses: such a pother,
As if that whatsoever god, who leads him,
Were slyly crept into his human powers,
And gave him graceful posture.

*Sic.* On the sudden,
I warrant him consul.

*Bru.* Then our office may,
During his power, go asleep.

*Sic.* He cannot temperately transport his honours
From where he should begin, and end; but will
Lose those that he hath won.

*Bru.* In that there's comfort.

*Sic.* Doubt not, the commoners, for whom we stand,
But they, upon their ancient malice, will
Forget, with the least cause, these his new honours;
Which that he'll give them, make as little question
As ‡ he is proud to do't.

*Bru.* I heard him swear,
Were he to stand for consul, never would he
Appear i' the market-place, nor on him put
The napless vesture of humility;
Nor, showing (as the manner is) his wounds
To the people, beg their stinking breaths.

*Sic.* 'Tis right.

*Bru.* It was his word: O, he would miss it, rather
Than carry it, but by the suit o' the gentry to him,
And the desire of the nobles.

*Sic.* I wish no better,
Than have him hold that purpose, and to put it
In execution.

*Bru.* 'Tis most like, he will.

*Sic.* It shall be to him then, as our good wills §
A sure destruction.

*Bru.* So it must fall out
To him, or our authorities. For an end
We must suggest the people, in what hatred
He still hath held them; that, to his power, he would
Have made them mules, silenced their pleaders, and
Dispropertied their freedoms: holding them,
In human action and capacity,
Of no more soul nor fitness for the world,
Than camels in their war; who have their provand ‖
Only for bearing burdens, and sore blows
For sinking under them.

*Sic.* This, as you say, suggested
At some time when his soaring insolence
Shall teach the people (which time shall not want,
If he be put upon 't; and that's as easy,

* Common standing-place. ‡ Adorned. ‡ (That.)
§ *I. e.* our advantage requires. ‖ Provender.

As to set dogs on sheep), will be his fire
To kindle their dry stubble; and their blaze
Shall darken him for ever.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Bru.* What's the matter?

*Mess.* You are sent for to the Capitol. 'Tis thought,
That Marcius shall be consul: I have seen
The dumb men throng to see him, and the blind
To hear him speak: The matrons flung their gloves,
Ladies and maids their scarfs and handkerchiefs,
Upon him as he pass'd: the nobles bended,
As to Jove's statue; and the commons made
A shower, and thunder, with their caps and shouts:
I never saw the like.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol;
And carry with us ears and eyes for the time,
But hearts for the event.

*Sic.* Have with you. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE II.—The same. The Capitol.*

*Enter two* OFFICERS *to lay cushions.*

1 *Off.* Come, come, they are almost here: How many stand for consulships?

2 *Off.* Three, they say: but 'tis thought of every one, Coriolanus will carry it.

1 *Off.* That's a brave fellow; but he's vengeance proud, and loves not the common people.

2 *Off.* 'Faith there have been many great men that have flatter'd the people, who ne'er loved them; and there be many that they have loved, they know not wherefore: so that, if they love they know not why, they hate upon no better a ground: Therefore, for Coriolanus neither to care whether they love or hate him, manifests the true knowledge he has in their disposition; and, out of his noble carelessness, lets them plainly see 't.

1 *Off.* If he did not care whether he had their love, or no, he waved indifferently * 'twixt doing them neither good, nor harm; but he seeks their hate with greater devotion than they can render it him; and leaves nothing undone, that may fully discover him their opposite.† Now, to seem to affect the malice and displeasure of the people, is as bad as that which he dislikes, to flatter them for their love.

2 *Off.* He hath deserved worthily of his country: And his ascent is not by such easy degrees as those, who, having been supple and courteous to the people, bonnetted‡ without any further deed to heave them at all into their estimation and report: but he hath so planted his honours in their eyes, and his actions in their hearts, that for their tongues to be silent, and not confess so much, were a kind of ingrateful injury; to report otherwise were a malice, that giving itself the lie, would pluck reproof and rebuke from every ear that heard it.

1 *Off.* No more of him; he is a worthy man: Make way, they are coming.

* He would have been indifferent. † Adversary. ‡ Took off caps.

*A Sennet. Enter, with* LICTORS *before them;* COMINIUS, *the Consul,* MENENIUS, CORIOLANUS, *many other* SENATORS, SICINIUS, *and* BRUTUS. *The* SENATORS *take their places; the* TRIBUNES *take theirs also by themselves.*

*Men.* Having determined of the Volces, and
To send for Titus Lartius, it remains,
As the main point of this our after-meeting,
To gratify his noble service, that
Hath thus stood for his country: Therefore, please you,
Most reverend and grave elders, to desire
The present consul, and last general
In our well-found successes, to report
A little of that worthy work perform'd
By Caius Marcius Coriolanus; whom
We meet here, both to thank and to remember
With honours like himself.

1 *Sen.* Speak good Cominius:
Leave nothing out for length, and make us think,
Rather our state 's defective for requital,
Than we to stretch it out. Masters o' the people,
We do request your kindest ears: and, after,
Your loving motion toward the common body
To yield what passes here.

*Sic.* We are convented
Upon a pleasing treaty; and have hearts
Inclinable to honour and advance
The theme of our assembly.

*Bru.* Which the rather
We shall be bless'd to do, if he remember
A kinder value of the people, than
He hath hereto priz'd them at.

*Men.* That's off, that's off,*
I would you rather had been silent: Please you
To hear Cominius speak?

*Bru.* Most willingly:
But yet my caution was more pertinent,
Than the rebuke you give it.

*Men.* He loves your people;
But tie him not to be their bedfellow.—
Worthy Cominius, speak.—Nay, keep your place.

[CORIOLANUS *rises, and offers to go away.*

1 *Sen.* Sit, Coriolanus: never shame to hear
What you have nobly done.

*Cor.* Your honours' pardon;
I had rather have my wounds to heal again,
Than here say how I got them.

*Bru.* Sir, I hope,
My words disbench'd you not.

*Cor.* No, Sir: yet oft,
When blows have made me stay, I fled from words.
You sooth'd not, therefore hurt not: But, your people,
I love them as they weigh.

* Nothing to the purpose.

*Men.* Pray now, sit down.
*Cor.* I had rather have one scratch my head i' the sun,
When the alarum were struck, than idly sit
To hear my nothings monster'd. [*Exit* CORIOLANUS.
*Men.* Masters o' the people,
Your multiplying spawn how can he flatter,
(That's thousand to one good one), when you now see,
He had rather venture all his limbs for honour,
Than one of his ears to hear it?—Proceed, Cominius.
*Com.* I shall lack voice: the deeds of Coriolanus
Should not be utter'd feebly.—It is held,
That valour is the chiefest virtue, and
Most dignifies the haver:* if it be,
The man I speak of cannot in the world
Be singly counterpois'd. At sixteen years,
When Tarquin made a head for Rome,† he fought
Beyond the mark of others; our then dictator,
Whom with all praise I point at, saw him fight,
When with his Amazonian chin‡ he drove
The bristled § lips before him: he bestrid
An o'er-press'd Roman, and i' the consul's view
Slew three opposers: Tarquin's self he met,
And struck him on || his knee; in that day's feats,
When he might act the woman in the scene, ¶
He proved best man i' the field, and for his meed
Was brow-bound with the oak. His pupil age
Man-entered thus, he waxed like a sea;
And, in the brunt of seventeen battles since,
He lurch'd** all swords o' the garland. For this last,
Before and in Corioli, let me say,
I cannot speak him home: he stopp'd the fliers;
And, by his rare example, made the coward
Turn terror into sport: as waves before
A vessel under sail, so men obey'd,
And fell below his stem: his sword (death's stamp),
Where it did mark, it took; from face to foot
He was a thing of blood, whose every motion
Was timed with dying cries: alone he enter'd
The mortal gate o' the city, which he painted
With shunless destiny, aidless came off,
And with a sudden re-enforcement struck
Corioli, like a planet: now all's his:
When by-and-by the din of war 'gan pierce
His ready sense: then straight his doubled spirit
Re-quicken'd what in flesh was fatigate,
And to the battle came he; where he did
Run reeking o'er the lives of men, as if
'Twere a perpetual spoil: and, till we call'd
Both field and city ours, he never stood
To ease his breast with panting.

* Possessor. † Raised an army. ‡ Without a beard.
§ Bearded. || *I. e.* to.
¶ *I. e.* was smooth-faced enough to act a woman's part in a play.
** Deprived.

*Men.* Worthy man!
1 *Sen.* He cannot but with measure fit* the honours
Which we devise him.
*Com.* Our spoils he kick'd at;
And look'd upon things precious, as they were
The common muck o' the world: he covets less
Than misery† itself would give; rewards
His deeds with doing them; and is content
To spend the time, to end it.
*Men.* He's right noble;
Let him be call'd for.
1 *Sen.* Call for Coriolanus.
*Off.* He doth appear.

*Re-enter* CORIOLANUS.

*Men.* The senate, Coriolanus, are well pleas'd
To make thee consul.
*Cor.* I do owe them still
My life, and services.
*Men.* It then remains
That you do speak to the people.
*Cor.* I do beseech you,
Let me o'erleap that custom; for I cannot
Put on the gown, stand naked, and entreat them,
For my wounds' sake, to give their suffrage: please you,
That I may pass this doing.
*Sic.* Sir, the people
Must have their voices; neither will they bate
One jot of ceremony.
*Men.* Put them not to't:—
Pray you, go fit you to the custom; and
Take to you, as your predecessors have,
Your honour with your form.
*Cor.* It is a part
That I shall blush in acting, and might well
Be taken from the people.
*Bru.* Mark you that!
*Cor.* To brag unto them,—Thus I did, and thus;—
Show them the unaking scars which I should hide,
As if I had received them for the hire
Of their breath only:—
*Men.* Do not stand upon 't.—
We recommend to you, tribunes of the people,
Our purpose to them;—and to our noble consul
Wish we all joy and honour.
*Sen.* To Coriolanus come all joy and honour!
[*Flourish. Then exeunt* SENATORS.
*Bru.* You see how he intends to use the people.
*Sic.* May they perceive his intent! He that will require them,
As if he did contemn what he requested
Should be in them to give.
*Bru.* Come, we'll inform them

* Become. † Avarice.

Of our proceedings here: on the market-place,
I know, they do attend us. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—The same. The Forum.*

*Enter several* CITIZENS.

1 *Cit.* Once, if he do require our voices, we ought not to deny him.

2 *Cit.* We may, Sir, if we will.

3 *Cit.* We have power in ourselves to do it, but it is a power that we have no power to do: for if he show us his wounds, and tell us his deeds, we are to put our tongues into those wounds, and speak for them; so, if he tell us his noble deeds, we must also tell him our noble acceptance of them. Ingratitude is monstrous: and for the multitude to be ingrateful, were to make a monster of the multitude; of the which, we, being members, should bring ourselves to be monstrous members.

1 *Cit.* And to make us no better thought of, a little help will serve: for once, when we stood up about the corn, he himself stuck not to call us the many-headed multitude.

3 *Cit.* We have been called so of many; not that our heads are some brown, some black, some auburn, some bald, but that our wits are so diversely coloured: and truly I think, if all our wits were to issue out of one skull, they would fly east, west, north, south; and their consent of one direct way should be at once to all the points of the compass.

2 *Cit.* Think you so? Which way, do you judge, my wit would fly?

3 *Cit.* Nay, your wit will not so soon out as another man's will, 'tis strongly wedged up in a block-head: but if it were at liberty, 'twould, sure, southward.

2 *Cit.* Why that way?

3 *Cit.* To lose itself in a fog; where, being three parts melted away with rotten dews, the fourth would return for conscience sake, to help to get thee a wife.

2 *Cit.* You are never without your tricks:—You may, you may.

3 *Cit.* Are you all resolved to give your voices? But that's no matter, the greater part carries it. I say, if he would incline to the people, there was never a worthier man.

*Enter* CORIOLANUS *and* MENENIUS.

Here he comes, and in the gown of humility; mark his behaviour. We are not to stay altogether, but to come by him where he stands, by ones, by twos, and by threes. He's to make his requests by particulars: wherein every one of us has a single honour, in giving him our own voices with our own tongues: therefore follow me, and I'll direct you how you shall go by him.

*All.* Content, content. [*Exeunt.*

*Men.* O, Sir, you are not right: have you not known
The worthiest men have done it?

*Cor.* What must I say?—
I pray, Sir,—Plague upon't! I cannot bring
My tongue to such a pace:——Look, Sir;——my wounds;—
I got them in my country's service, when
Some certain of your brethren roar'd, and ran
From the noise of our own drums.

*Men.* O me, the gods!
You must not speak of that; you must desire them
To think upon you.
*Cor.* Think upon me? Hang 'em!
I would they would forget me, like the virtues
Which our divines lose by them.
*Men.* You'll mar all;
I'll leave you: Pray you, speak to them, I pray you,
In wholesome manner. [*Exit.*

*Enter two* CITIZENS.

*Cor.* Bid them wash their faces,
And keep their teeth clean.—So, here comes a brace,
You know the cause, Sir, of my standing here.
1 *Cit.* We do, Sir; tell us what hath brought you to't.
*Cor.* Mine own desert.
2 *Cit.* Your own desert?
*Cor.* Ay, not
Mine own desire.
1 *Cit.* How! not your own desire?
*Cor.* No, Sir:
'Twas never my desire yet,
To trouble the poor with begging.
1 *Cit.* You must think, if we give you anything,
We hope to gain by you.
*Cor.* Well then, I pray, your price o' the consulship?
1 *Cit.* The price is, Sir, to ask it kindly.
*Cor.* Kindly?
Sir, I pray let me ha't: I have wounds to show you,
Which shall be yours in private.—Your good voice, Sir;
What say you?
2 *Cit.* You shall have it, worthy Sir.
*Cor.* A match, Sir:—
There is in all two worthy voices begg'd—
I have your alms; adieu.
1 *Cit.* But this is something odd.
2 *Cit.* An 'twere to give again,—But 'tis no matter.
[*Exeunt two* CITIZENS.

*Enter two other* CITIZENS.

*Cor.* Pray you now, if it may stand with the tune of your voices, that I may be consul, I have here the customary gown.

3 *Cit.* You have deserved nobly of your country, and you have not deserved nobly.

*Cor.* Your enigma?

3 *Cit.* You have been a scourge to her enemies, you have been a rod to her friends; you have not, indeed, loved the common people.

*Cor.* You should account me the more virtuous, that I have not been common in my love. I will, Sir, flatter my sworn brother the people, to earn a dearer estimation of them; 'tis a condition they account gentle: and since the wisdom of their choice is rather to have my hat than my heart, I will practise the insinuating nod, and be off to them most counterfeitly; that is,

Sir, I will counterfeit the bewitchment of some popular man, and give it bountifully to the desirers. Therefore, beseech you, I may be consul.

4 *Cit.* We hope to find you our friend; and therefore give you our voices heartily.

3 *Cit.* You have received many wounds for your country.

*Cor.* I will not seal * your knowledge with showing them. I will make much of your voices, and so trouble you no further.

*Both Cit.* The gods give you joy, Sir, heartily! [*Exeunt.*

*Cor.* Most sweet voices!—
Better it is to die, better to starve,
Than crave the hire which first we do deserve.
Why in this woolvish gown should I stand here,
To beg of Hob and Dick, that do appear,
Their needless vouches: Custom calls me to't:—
What custom wills, in all things should we do't
The dust on antique time would lie unswept,
And mountainous error be too highly heap'd
For truth to over-peer. †—Rather than fool it so,
Let the high office and the honour go
To one that would do thus.—I am half through;
The one part suffer'd, the other will I do.

*Enter three other* CITIZENS.

Here come more voices,—
Your voices: for your voices I have fought;
Watch'd for your voices; for your voices, bear
Of wounds two dozen odd; battles thrice six,
I have seen and have heard of; for your voices,
Done many things, some less, some more: your voices:
Indeed, I would be consul.

5 *Cit.* He has done nobly, and cannot go without any honest man's voice.

6 *Cit.* Therefore let him be consul: The gods give him joy, and make him good friend to the people!

*All.* Amen, Amen.——
God save thee, noble consul! [*Exeunt* CITIZENS.

*Cor.* Worthy voices!

*Re-enter* MENENIUS, *with* BRUTUS, *and* SICINIUS.

*Men.* You have stood your limitation; and the tribunes
Endue you with the people's voice: Remains.
That, in the official marks invested, you
Anon do meet the senate.

*Cor.* Is this done?

*Sic.* The custom of request you have discharged:
The people do admit you; and are summon'd
To meet anon, upon your approbation.

*Cor.* Where? at the senate-house?

*Sic.* There, Coriolanus.

*Cor.* May I then change these garments?

*Sic.* You may, Sir.

*Cor.* That I'll straight do; and, knowing myself again,
Repair to the senate-house.

* *I. e.* confirm. † Overlook.

*Men.* I'll keep you company.—Will you along?
*Bru.* We stay here for the people.
*Sic.* Fare you well. [*Exeunt* CORIOL. *and* MENEN.
He has it now; and by his looks, methinks,
'Tis warm at his heart.
*Bru.* With a proud heart he wore
His humble weeds: Will you dismiss the people?

*Re-enter* CITIZENS.

*Sic.* How now, my masters? have you chose this man?
1 *Cit.* He has our voices, Sir.
*Bru.* We pray the gods, he may deserve your loves.
2 *Cit.* Amen, Sir: To my poor unworthy notice,
He mock'd us, when he begg'd our voices.
3 *Cit.* Certainly,
He flouted us downright.
1 *Cit.* No, 'tis his kind of speech, he did not mock us.
2 *Cit.* Not one amongst us save yourself, but says,
He used us scornfully: he should have show'd us
His marks of merit, wounds received for his country.
*Sic.* Why, so he did, I am sure.
*Cit.* No; no man saw 'em. [*Several speak.*
3 *Cit.* He said, he had wounds, which he could show in private;
And with his hat, thus waving it in scorn,
*I would be consul*, says he: *aged custom,*
*But by your voices, will not so permit me;* *
*Your voices, therefore:* When we granted that,
Here was,—*I thank you for your voices,—thank you,—*
*Your most sweet voices:—now you have left your voices,*
*I have no further with you:*——Was not this mockery?
*Sic.* Why, either, you were ignorant to see't;
Or, seeing it, of such childish friendliness
To yield your voices?
*Bru.* Could you not have told him,
As you were lesson'd—When he had no power,
But was a petty servant to the state,
He was your enemy; ever spake against
Your liberties, and the charters that you bear
I' the body of the weal: and now, arriving
A place of potency, and sway o' the state,
If he should still malignantly remain
Fast foe to the plebeii,† your voices might
Be curses to yourselves? You should have said,
That, as his worthy deeds did claim no less
Than what he stood for; so his gracious nature
Would think upon you for your voices, and
Translate his malice towards you into love,
Standing your friendly lord.
*Sic.* Thus to have said,
As you were fore-advised, had touch'd his spirit,
And tried his inclination; from him pluck'd
Either his gracious promise, which you might,

* *I. e.* I can only, according to the custom, be so by your suffrages.
† Plebeians.

As cause had call'd you up, have held him to;
Or else it would have gall'd his surly nature,
Which easily endures not article
Tying him to aught; so, putting him to rage,
You should have ta'en the advantage of his choler,
And pass'd him unelected.

*Bru.* Did you perceive,
He did solicit you in free* contempt,
When he did need your loves; and do you think,
That his contempt shall not be bruising to you,
When he hath power to crush? Why, had your bodies
No heart among you? or had you tongues to cry
Against the rectorship of judgment?

*Sic.* Have you,
Ere now, denied the asker? and, now again,
On him, that did not ask, but mock, bestow
Your sued-for tongues?

3 *Cit.* He's not confirm'd, we may deny him yet.

2 *Cit.* And will deny him:
I'll have five hundred voices of that sound.

1 *Cit.* I twice five hundred, and their friends to piece 'em.

*Bru.* Get you hence instantly; and tell those friends,—
They have chose a consul, that will from them take
Their liberties; make them of no more voice
Than dogs, that are as often beat for barking,
As therefore kept to do so.

*Sic.* Let them assemble;
And, on a safer judgment, all revoke
Your ignorant election: Enforce† his pride,
And his old hate unto you: besides, forget not
With what contempt he wore the humble weed;
How in his suit he scorn'd you: but your loves,
Thinking upon his services, took from you
The apprehension of his present portance,‡
Which gibingly, ungravely he did fashion
After the inveterate hate he bears you.

*Bru.* Lay
A fault on us, your tribunes; that we labour'd
(No impediment between) but that you must
Cast your election on him.

*Sic.* Say, you chose him
More after our commandment, than as guided
By your own true affections: and that, your minds
Pre-occupied with what you rather must do
Than what you should, made you against the grain
To voice him consul: Lay the fault on us.

*Bru.* Ay, spare us not. Say, we read lectures to you,
How youngly he began to serve his country,
How long continued: and what stock he springs of,
The noble house o' the Marcians; from whence came
That Ancus Marcius, Numa's daughter's son,
Who, after great Hostilius, here was king:
Of the same house Publius and Quintus were,

* Open. † Insist upon. ‡ Carriage.

That our best water brought by conduits hither;
And Censorinus, darling of the people,
And nobly named so, being Censor twice,
Was his great ancestor.

*Sic.* One thus descended,
That hath beside well in his person wrought
To be set high in place, we did commend
To your remembrances: but you have found,
Scaling * his present bearing with his past,
That he's your fixed enemy, and revoke
Your sudden approbation.

*Bru.* Say, you ne'er had don't,
(Harp on that still), but by our putting on:
And presently, when you have drawn your number,
Repair to the Capitol.

*Cit.* We will so: almost all [*Several speak.*
Repent in their election. [*Exeunt* CITIZENS.

*Bru.* Let them go on;
This mutiny were better put in hazard,
Than stay, past doubt, for greater;
If, as his nature is, he fall in rage
With their refusal, both observe and answer
The vantage of his anger.

*Sic.* To the Capitol:
Come; we'll be there before the stream o' the people;
And this shall seem, as partly 'tis, their own,
Which we have goaded onward. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT III.

### *SCENE I.—The same. A Street.*

*Cornets.—Enter* CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, SENATORS, *and* PATRICIANS.

*Cor.* Tullus Aufidius then had made new head?

*Lart.* He had, my lord; and that it was which caused
Our swifter composition.

*Cor.* So then the Volces stand but as at first;
Ready, when time shall prompt them, to make road
Upon us again.

*Com.* They are worn, lord consul, so,
That we shall hardly in our ages see
Their banners wave again.

*Cor.* Saw you Aufidius?

*Lart.* On safe-guard he came to me; and did curse
Against the Volces, for they had so vilely
Yielded the town: he is retired to Antium.

*Cor.* Spoke he of me?

*Lart.* He did, my lord.

*Cor.* How? what?

*Lart.* How often he had met you, sword to sword:
That, of all things upon the earth, he hated
Your person most: that he would pawn his fortunes

* Weighing.

To hopeless restitution, so he might
Be call'd your vanquisher.
*Cor.* At Antium lives he?
*Lart.* At Antium.
*Cor.* I wish, I had a cause to seek him there,
To oppose his hatred fully.—Welcome home. [*To* LARTIUS.

*Enter* SICINIUS *and* BRUTUS.

Behold! these are the tribunes of the people,
The tongues o'the common mouth. I do despise them;
For they do prank* them in authority,
Against all noble sufferance.
*Sic.* Pass no farther.
*Cor.* Ha! what is that?
*Bru.* It will be dangerous to
Go on; no farther.
*Cor.* What makes this change?
*Men.* The matter?
*Com.* Hath he not pass'd the nobles, and the commons?
*Bru.* Cominius, no.
*Cor.* Have I had children's voices?
1 *Sen.* Tribunes, give way; he shall to the market-place.
*Bru.* The people are incensed against him.
*Sic.* Stop,
Or all will fall in broil.
*Cor.* Are these your herd?—
Must these have voices, that can yield them now,
And straight disclaim their tongues?—What are your offices?
You being their mouths, why rule you not their teeth?
Have you not set them on?
*Men.* Be calm, be calm.
*Cor.* It is a purposed thing, and grows by plot,
To curb the will of the nobility:—
Suffer it, and live with such as cannot rule,
Nor ever will be ruled.
*Bru.* Call't not a plot:
The people cry, you mock'd them; and, of late,
When corn was given them gratis, you repined;
Scandal'd the suppliants for the people; call'd them
Time-pleasers, flatterers, foes to nobleness.
*Cor.* Why, this was known before.
*Bru.* Not to them all.
*Cor.* Have you inform'd them since?
*Bru.* How! I inform them!
*Cor.* You are like to do such business.
*Bru.* Not unlike,
Each way to better yours.
*Cor.* Why then should I be consul? By yon clouds,
Let me deserve so ill as you, and make me
Your fellow-tribune.
*Sic.* You show too much of that,
For which the people stir: If you will pass
To where you are bound, you must inquire your way,

* Plume, deck.

Which you are out of, with a gentler spirit;
Or never be so noble as a consul,
Nor yoke with him for tribune.
*Men.* Let's be calm.
*Com.* The people are abused:—Set on. This paltering.
Becomes not Rome; nor has Coriolanus
Deserved this so dishonour'd rub, laid falsely *
I' the plain way of his merit.
*Cor.* Tell me of corn!
This was my speech, and I will speak't again;—
*Men.* Not now, not now.
1 *Sen.* Not in this heat, Sir, now.
*Cor.* Now, as I live, I will.—My nobler friends,
I crave their pardons:—
For the mutable, rank-scented many,† let them
Regard me as I do not flatter, and
Therein behold themselves: I say again,
In soothing them, we nourish 'gainst our senate
The cockle‡ of rebellion, insolence, sedition,
Which we ourselves have plough'd for, sow'd, and scatter'd,
By mingling them with us, the honour'd number;
Who lack not virtue, no, nor power, but that
Which they have given to beggars.
*Men.* Well, no more.
1 *Sen.* No more words, we beseech you.
*Cor.* How! no more?
As for my country I have shed my blood,
Not fearing outward force, so shall my lungs
Coin words till their decay, against those meazels
Which we disdain should tetter§ us, yet sought
The very way to catch them.
*Bru.* You speak o'the people,
As if you were a god to punish, not
A man of their infirmity.
*Sic.* 'Twere well,
We let the people know't.
*Men.* What, what? his choler?
*Cor.* Choler!
Were I as patient as the midnight sleep,
By Jove, 'twould be my mind.
*Sic.* It is a mind,
That shall remain a poison where it is,
Not poison any further.
*Cor.* Shall remain!—
Hear you this Triton of the minnows? mark you
His absolute *shall?*
*Com.* 'Twas from the canon.‖
Cor. *Shall!*
O good, but most unwise patricians, why,
You grave, but reckless senators, have you thus
Given Hydra here to choose an officer,
That with his peremptory *shall*, being but
The horn and noise o' the monsters, wants not spirit

* Treacherously. † Populace. ‡ Weed. § Scab. ‖ According to law.

To say, he'll turn your current in a ditch,
And make your channel his? If he have power,
Then veil your ignorance: if none, awake
Your dangerous lenity. If you are learned,
Be not as common fools; if you are not,
Let them have cushions by you. You are plebeians,
If they be senators: and they are no less,
When both your voices blended, the greatest taste
Most palates theirs. They choose their magistrate;
And such a one as he, who puts his *shall*,
His popular *shall*, against a graver bench
Than ever frown'd in Greece! By Jove himself,
It makes the consuls base: and my soul akes,
To know, when two authorities are up,
Neither supreme, how soon confusion
May enter 'twixt the gap of both, and take
The one by the other.

*Com.* Well—on to the market-place.

*Cor.* Whoever gave that counsel, to give forth
The corn o' the storehouse gratis, as 'twas used
Sometime in Greece,———

*Men.* Well, well, no more of that.

*Cor.* (Though there the people had more absolute power),
I say, they nourish'd disobedience, fed
The ruin of the state.

*Bru.* Why, shall the people give
One, that speaks thus, their voice?

*Cor.* I'll give my reasons,
More worthier than their voices. They know, the corn
Was not our recompence; resting well assured
They ne'er did service for't: Being press'd to the war,
Even when the navel of the state was touch'd,
They would not thread* the gates: this kind of service
Did not deserve corn gratis: being i'the war,
Their mutinies and revolts, wherein they show'd
Most valour, spoke not for them: The accusation
Which they have often made against the senate,
All cause unborn, could never be the native†
Of our so frank donation. Well, what then?
How shall this bosom multiplied digest
The senate's courtesy? Let deeds express
What's like to be their words:—*We did request it;*
*We are the greater poll,‡ and in true fear*
*They gave us our demands:*—Thus we debase
The nature of our seats, and make the rabble
Call our cares, fears: which will in time break ope
The locks o' the senate, and bring in the crows
To peck the eagles.—

*Men.* Come, enough.

*Bru.* Enough, with over-measure.

*Cor.* No, take more:
What may be sworn by, both divine and human,
Seal what I end withal!—This double worship,—

* Pass through. † Natural cause. ‡ Number.

Where one part does disdain with cause, the other
Insult without all reason; where gentry, title, wisdom
Cannot conclude, but by the yea and no
Of general ignorance,—it must omit
Real necessities, and give way the while
To unstable slightness: purpose so barr'd, it follows,
Nothing is done to purpose: Therefore, beseech you,—
You that will be less fearful than discreet;
That love the fundamental part of state,
More than you doubt* the change of 't; that prefer
A noble life before a long, and wish
To jump† a body with a dangerous physic
That's sure of death without it,—at once pluck out
The multitudinous tongue, let them not lick
The sweet which is their poison: your dishonour
Mangles true judgment, and bereaves the state
Of that integrity which should become it;
Not having the power to do the good it would,
For the ill which doth control it.

*Bru.* He has said enough.

*Sic.* He has spoken like a traitor, and shall answer
As traitors do.

*Cor.* Thou wretch! despite o'erwhelm thee!—
What should the people do with these bald tribunes?
On whom depending, their obedience fails
To the greater bench: In a rebellion,
When what's not meet, but what must be was law,
Then were they chosen; in a better hour,
Let what is meet, be said it must be meet,
And throw their power i' the dust.

*Bru.* Manifest treason.

*Sic.* This a consul? no.

*Bru.* The Ædiles, ho!—Let him be apprehended.

*Sic.* Go, call the people; [*Exit* BRUTUS.] in whose name, myself
Attach thee, as a traitorous innovator,
A foe to the public weal: Obey, I charge thee,
And follow to thine answer.

*Cor.* Hence, old goat!

*Sen. & Pat.* We'll surety him.

*Com.* Aged Sir, hands off.

*Cor.* Hence, rotten thing, or I shall shake thy bones
Out of thy garments.

*Sic.* Help, ye citizens.

*Re-enter* BRUTUS, *with the* ÆDILES, *and Rabble of* CITIZENS.

*Men.* On both sides, more respect.

*Sic.* Here's he, that would
Take from you all your power.

*Bru.* Seize him, Ædiles.

*Cit.* Down with him, down with him! [*Several speak.*

2 *Sen.* Weapons, weapons, weapons!
[*They all bustle about* CORIOLANUS.

* Redoubt; fear. † Agitate.

Tribunes, patricians, citizens!—what ho!
Sicinius, Brutus, Coriolanus, citizens!
*Cit.* Peace, peace, peace; stay, hold, peace!
*Men.* What is about to be?—I am out of breath;
Confusion's near: I cannot speak:—You, tribunes
To the people,—Coriolanus, patience:—
Speak, good Sicinius.
*Sic.* Hear me, people;—Peace.
*Cit.* Let's hear our tribune:—Peace. Speak, speak, speak.
*Sic.* You are at point to lose your liberties:
Marcius would have all from you; Marcius,
Whom late you have named for consul.
*Men.* Fie, fie, fie!
This is the way to kindle, not to quench.
1 *Sen.* To unbuild the city, and to lay all flat.
*Sic.* What is the city, but the people?
*Cit.* True,
The people are the city.
*Bru.* By the consent of all, we were establish'd
The people's magistrates.
*Cit.* You so remain.
*Men.* And so are like to do.
*Cor.* That is the way to lay the city flat;
To bring the roof to the foundation;
And bury all, which yet distinctly ranges,
In heaps and piles of ruins.
*Sic.* This deserves death.
*Bru.* Or let us stand to our authority,
Or let us lose it:—We do here pronounce,
Upon the part o' the people, in whose power
We were elected theirs, Marcius is worthy
Of present death.
*Sic.* Therefore, lay hold of him;
Bear him to the rock Tarpeian, and from thence
Into destruction cast him.
*Bru.* Ædiles, seize him.
*Cit.* Yield, Marcius, yield.
*Men.* Hear me one word.
'Beseech you, tribunes, hear me but a word.
*Ædi.* Peace, peace.
*Men.* Be that you seem, truly your country's friend,
And temperately proceed to what you would
Thus violently redress.
*Bru.* Sir, those cold ways,
That seem like prudent helps, are very poisonous
Where the disease is violent:—Lay hands upon him,
And bear him to the rock.
*Cor.* No; I'll die here. [*Drawing his sword.*
There's some among you have beheld me fighting;
Come, try upon yourselves what you have seen me.
*Men.* Down with that sword;—Tribunes, withdraw a while.
*Bru.* Lay hands upon him.
*Men.* Help, Marcius! help,
You that be noble; help him, young, and old!

*Cit.* Down with him, down with him!

[*In this mutiny, the* TRIBUNES, *the* ÆDILES, *and the People, are all beat in.*

*Men.* Go, get you to your house; be gone, away,
All will be naught else.

2 *Sen.* Get you gone.

*Cor.* Stand fast;
We have as many friends as enemies.

*Men.* Shall it be put to that?

1 *Sen.* The gods forbid!
I pr'ythee, noble friend, home to thy house;
Leave us to cure this cause.

*Men.* For 'tis a sore upon us,
You cannot tent yourself: Be gone, 'beseech you.

*Com.* Come, Sir, along with us.

*Cor.* I would they were barbarians (as they are,
Though in Rome litter'd), not Romans (as they are not,
Though calved i' the porch o' the Capitol),—

*Men.* Be gone;
Put not your worthy rage into your tongue;
One time will owe* another.

*Cor.* On fair ground,
I could beat forty of them.

*Men.* I could myself
Take up a brace of the best of them; yea, the two tribunes.

*Com.* But now 'tis odds beyond arithmetic;
And manhood is call'd foolery, when it stands
Against a falling fabric.—Will you hence,
Before the tag† return? whose rage doth rend
Like interrupted waters, and o'erbear
What they are used to bear.

*Men.* Pray you, be gone:
I'll try whether my old wit be in request
With those that have but little; this must be patch'd
With cloth of any colour.

*Com.* Nay, come away.

[*Exeunt* CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, *and others.*

1 *Pat.* This man has marr'd his fortune.

*Men.* His nature is too noble for the world:
He would not flatter Neptune for his trident,
Or Jove for his power to thunder. His heart 's his mouth:
What his breast forges, that his tongue must vent;
And, being angry, does forget that ever
He heard the name of death. [*A noise within.*
Here's goodly work!

2 *Pat.* I would they were a-bed!

*Men.* I would they were in Tyber!—What, the vengeance,
Could he not speak them fair?

*Re-enter* BRUTUS *and* SICINIUS, *with the Rabble.*

*Sic.* Where's this viper,
That would depopulate the city, and
Be every man himself?

* *I. e.* will compensate for. † Tag-rag.

*Men.* You worthy tribunes,—
*Sic.* He shall be thrown down the Tarpeian rock
With rigorous hands; he hath resisted law,
And therefore law shall scorn him further trial
Than the severity of the public power,
Which he so sets at nought.
1 *Cit.* He shall well know,
The noble tribunes are the people's mouths,
And we their hands.
*Cit.* He shall* sure on 't. [*Several speak together.*
*Men.* Sir,—
*Sic.* Peace.
*Men.* Do not cry, havoc, where you should but hunt
With modest warrant.
*Sic.* Sir, how comes it, that you
Have holp to make this rescue?
*Men.* Hear me speak:—
As I do know the consul's worthiness,
So can I name his faults:—
*Sic.* Consul!—what consul?
*Men.* The consul Coriolanus.
*Bru.* He a consul!
*Cit.* No, no, no, no, no.
*Men.* If, by the tribunes' leave, and yours, good people,
I may be heard, I'd crave a word or two;
The which shall turn you to no further harm,
Than so much loss of time.
*Sic.* Speak briefly then;
For we are peremptory, to despatch
This viperous traitor: to eject him hence,
Were but one danger; and, to keep him here,
Our certain death; therefore it is decreed,
He dies to-night.
*Men.* Now the good gods forbid,
That our renowned Rome, whose gratitude
Towards her deserved† children is enroll'd
In Jove's own book, like an unnatural dam
Should now eat up her own!
*Sic.* He's a disease, that must be cut away.
*Men.* O, he's a limb, that has but a disease;
Mortal, to cut it off; to cure it, easy.
What has he done to Rome, that's worthy death?
Killing our enemies? The blood he hath lost
(Which, I dare vouch, is more than that he hath,
By many an ounce), he dropp'd it for his country:
And, what is left, to lose it by his country,
Were to us all, that do't, and suffer it,
A brand to the end o' the world.
*Sic.* This is clean kam.‡
*Bru.* Merely§ awry: when he did love his country,
It honour'd him.
*Men.* The service of the foot
Being once gangrened, is not then respected
For what before it was?

* (Be). † Deserving. ‡ Crooked. § Absolutely.

*Bru.* We'll hear no more:—
Pursue him to his house, and pluck him thence;
Lest his infection, being of catching nature,
Spread further.
*Men.* One word more, one word.
This tiger-footed rage, when it shall find
The harm of unscann'd swiftness,* will, too late,
Tie leaden pounds to his heels. Proceed by process;
Lest parties (as he is beloved) break out,
And sack great Rome with Romans.
*Bru.* If it were so,—
*Sic.* What do ye talk?
Have we not had a taste of his obedience?
Our Ædiles smote? ourselves resisted?—Come:—
*Men.* Consider this;—He has been bred i' the wars
Since he could draw a sword, and is ill school'd
In boulted† language; meal and bran together
He throws without distinction. Give me leave,
I'll go to him, and undertake to bring him
Where he shall answer, by a lawful form
(In peace), to his utmost peril.
1 *Sen.* Noble tribunes,
It is the humane way: the other course
Will prove too bloody: and the end of it
Unknown to the beginning.
*Sic.* Noble Menenius,
Be you then as the people's officer:
Masters, lay down your weapons.
*Bru.* Go not home.
*Sic.* Meet on the market-place:—We'll attend you there:
Where, if you bring not Marcius, we'll proceed
In our first way.
*Men.* I'll bring him to you:—
Let me desire your company. [*To the* SENATORS.] He must come,
Or what is worst will follow.
1 *Sen.* Pray you, let's to him. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—A Room in* CORIOLANUS' *House.*

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, *and* PATRICIANS.

*Cor.* Let them pull all about mine ears; present me
Death on the wheel, or at wild horses' heels;
Or pile ten hills on the Tarpeian rock,
That the precipitation might down stretch
Below the beam of sight, yet will I still
Be thus to them.

*Enter* VOLUMNIA.

1 *Pat.* You do the nobler.
*Cor.* I muse, my mother
Does not approve me further, who was wont
To call them woollen vassals, things created
To buy and sell with groats; to show bare heads
In congregations, to yawn, be still, and wonder,
When one but of my ordinance‡ stood up
To speak of peace, or war. I talk of you; [*To* VOLUMNIA.

* Inconsiderate haste. † Sifted. ‡ Rank.

Why did you wish me milder? Would you have me
False to my nature? Rather say, I play
The man I am.
*Vol.* O, Sir, Sir, Sir,
I would have had you put your power well on,
Before you had worn it out.
*Cor.* Let go.
*Vol.* You might have been enough the man you are,
With striving less to be so: Lesser had been
The thwartings of your dispositions, if
You had not show'd them how you were disposed
Ere they lack'd power to cross you.
*Cor.* Let them hang.
*Vol.* Ay, and burn too.

*Enter* MENENIUS, *and* SENATORS.

*Men.* Come, come, you have been too rough, something too rough.
You must return, and mend it.
1 *Sen.* There's no remedy;
Unless, by not so doing, our good city
Cleave in the midst, and perish.
*Vol.* Pray be counsell'd:
I have a heart as little apt as yours,
But yet a brain, that leads my use of anger,
To better vantage.
*Men.* Well said, noble woman:
Before he should thus stoop to the herd, but that
The violent fit o' the time craves it as physic
For the whole state, I would put mine armour on
Which I can scarcely bear.
*Cor.* What must I do?
*Men.* Return to the tribunes,
*Cor.* Well,
What then? what then?
*Men.* Repent what you have spoke.
*Cor.* For them?—I cannot do it to the gods;
Must I then do 't to them?
*Vol.* You are too absolute;
Though therein you can never be too noble,
But when extremities speak. I have heard you say,
Honour and policy, like unsever'd friends,
I' the war do grow together: Grant that, and tell me,
In peace, what each of them by th' other lose,
That they combine not there.
*Cor.* Tush, tush!
*Men.* A good demand.
*Vol.* If it be honour, in your wars, to seem
The same you are not (which, for your best ends,
You adopt your policy), how is it less, or worse,
That it shall hold companionship in peace
With honour, as in war; since that to both
It stands in like request?
*Cor.* Why force* you this?
*Vol.* Because that now it lies you on to speak

* Urge.

To the people; not by our own instruction,
Nor by the matter which your heart prompts you to,
But with such words that are but rooted in
Your tongue, though but bastards, and syllables
Of no allowance, to your bosom's truth.
Now, this no more dishonours you at all,
Than to take in* a town with gentle words,
Which else would put you to your fortune, and
The hazard of much blood.—
I would dissemble with my nature, where,
My fortunes, and my friends, at stake, required,
I should do so in honour: I am in this,
Your wife, your son, these senators, the nobles;
And you will rather show our general lowts
How you can frown, than spend a fawn upon them,
For the inheritance of their loves, and safeguard
Of what that want† might ruin.

*Men.* Noble lady!—
Come, go with us; speak fair: you may salve so,
Not what is dangerous present, but the loss
Of what is past.

*Vol.* I pr'ythee now, my son,
Go to them, with this bonnet in thy hand;
And thus far having stretched it (here be with them),
Thy knee bussing the stones (for in such business
Action is eloquence, and the eyes of the ignorant
More learned than the ears), waving thy head,
Which often thus correcting thy stout heart,
That humble as the ripest mulberry,
Now will not hold the handling: Or, say to them,
Thou art their soldier, and being bred in broils,
Hast not the soft way, which, thou dost confess,
Were fit for thee to use, as they to claim,
In asking their good loves; but thou wilt frame
Thyself, forsooth, hereafter theirs, so far
As thou hast power, and person.

*Men.* This but done,
Even as she speaks, why, all their hearts were yours:
For they have pardons, being ask'd, as free
As words to little purpose.

*Vol.* Pr'ythee now,
Go, and be ruled: although, I know thou hadst rather
Follow thine enemy in a fiery gulf,
Than flatter him in a bower. Here is Cominius.

*Enter* COMINIUS.

*Com.* I have been i' the market-place: and, Sir, 'tis fit
You make strong party, or defend yourself
By calmness, or by absence; all's in anger.

*Men.* Only fair speech.

*Com.* I think, 'twill serve, if he
Can thereto frame his spirit.

*Vol.* He must, and will:—
Pr'ythee, now, say, you will, and go about it.

* Subdue. † *I.e.* of their love.

*Cor.* Must I go show them my unbarb'd sconce?* Must I
With my base tongue, give to my noble heart
A lie, that it must bear? Well, I will do't:
Yet were there but this single plot† to lose
This mould of Marcius, they to dust should grind it,
And throw it against the wind.—To the market-place:—
You have put me now to such a part, which never
I shall discharge to the life.

*Com.* Come, come, we'll prompt you.

*Vol.* I pr'ythee now, sweet son; as thou hast said,
My praises made thee first a soldier, so,
To have my praise for this, perform a part
Thou hast not done before.

*Cor.* Well, I must do't:
Away, my disposition, and possess me
Some harlot's spirit! My throat of war be turn'd,
Which quired with‡ my drum, into a pipe
Small as an eunuch, or the virgin voice
That babies lulls asleep! The smiles of knaves
Tent § in my cheeks; and school-boys' tears take up
The glasses of my sight! A beggar's tongue
Make motion through my lips; and my arm'd knees,
Who bow'd but in my stirrup, bend like his
That hath received an alms!—I will not do't:
Lest I surcease to honour mine own truth,
And by my body's action, teach my mind
A most inherent baseness.

*Vol.* At thy choice then:
To beg of thee, it is my more dishonour,
Than thou of them. Come all to ruin; let
Thy mother rather feel thy pride, than fear
Thy dangerous stoutness; for I mock at death
With as big heart as thou. Do as thou list.
Thy valiantness was mine, thou suck'dst it from me;
But owe ‖ thy pride thyself.

*Cor.* Pray, be content;
Mother, I am going to the market-place;
Chide me no more, I'll mountebank their loves,
Cog their hearts from them, and come home beloved
Of all the trades in Rome. Look, I am going:
Commend me to my wife. I'll return consul;
Or never trust to what my tongue can do
I' the way of flattery, further.

*Vol.* Do your will. [*Exit.*

*Com.* Away, the tribunes do attend you; arm yourself
To answer mildly; for they are prepared
With accusations, as I hear, more strong
Than are upon you yet.

*Cor.* The word is, mildly:—Pray you, let us go;
Let them accuse me by invention, I
Will answer in mine honour.

*Men.* Ay, but mildly.

*Cor.* Well, mildly be it then; mildly. [*Exeunt.*

* Unshaven head. † Piece; individual body.
‡ Sounded loud as. § Dwell. ‖ Own.

*SCENE III.—The same. The Forum.*

*Enter* SICINIUS *and* BRUTUS.

*Bru.* In this point charge him home, that he affects
Tyrannical power: If he evade us there,
Enforce him with his envy * to the people;
And that the spoil, got on the Antiates,
Was ne'er distributed.—

*Enter an* ÆDILE.

What, will he come?
*Æd.* He's coming.
*Bru.* How accompanied?
*Æd.* With old Menenius, and those senators
That always favour'd him.
*Sic.* Have you a catalogue
Of all the voices that we have procured
Set down by the poll?
*Æd.* I have; 'tis ready, here.
*Sic.* Have you collected them by tribes?
*Æd.* I have.
*Sic.* Assemble presently the people hither:
And when they hear me say, *It shall be so*
*I' the right and strength o' the commons*, be it either
For death, for fine, or banishment, then let them,
If I say, fine, cry *fine;* if death, cry *death;*
Insisting on the old prerogative
And power i' the truth o' the cause.
*Æd.* I shall inform them.
*Bru.* And when such time they have begun to cry,
Let them not cease, but with a din confused
Enforce the present execution
Of what we chance to sentence.
*Æd.* Very well.
*Sic.* Make them be strong, and ready for this hint,
When we shall hap to give 't them.
*Bru.* Go about it.— [*Exit* ÆDILE.
Put him to choler straight: He hath been used
Ever to conquer, and to have his worth †
Of contradiction: being once chafed, he cannot
Be rein'd again to temperance; then he speaks
What's in his heart; and that is there, which looks
With us to break his neck.

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINIUS, SENATORS, *and* PATRICIANS.

*Sic.* Well, here he comes.
*Men.* Calmly, I do beseech you.
*Cor.* Ay, as an ostler, that for the poorest piece
Will bear the knave ‡ by the volume.—The honour'd gods
Keep Rome in safety, and the chairs of justice
Supplied with worthy men! plant love among us!
Throng our large temples with the shows of peace,
And not our streets with war!
1 *Sen.* Amen, amen!

* Insist upon his hatred. † *I. e.* his pennyworth, share.
‡ (Being called a).

*Men.* A noble wish.

*Re-enter* ÆDILE, *with* CITIZENS.

*Sic.* Draw near, ye people.
*Æd.* List to your tribunes; audience: Peace, I say.
*Cor.* First, hear me speak.
*Both Tri.* Well, say.—Peace, ho.
*Cor.* Shall I be charged no further than this present?
Must all determine here?
*Sic.* I do demand,
If you submit you to the people's voices,
Allow their officers, and are content
To suffer lawful censure for such faults
As shall be proved upon you?
*Cor.* I am content.
*Men.* Lo, citizens, he says, he is content:
The warlike service he has done, consider:
Think on the wounds his body bears, which show
Like graves i' the holy churchyard.
*Cor.* Scratches with briers,
Scars to move laughter only.
*Men.* Consider further,
That when he speaks not like a citizen,
You find him like a soldier: Do not take
His rougher accents for malicious sounds,
But, as I say, such as become a soldier,
Rather than envy* you.
*Com.* Well, well, no more.
*Cor.* What is the matter,
That being pass'd for consul with full voice,
I am so dishonour'd, that the very hour
You take it off again?
*Sic.* Answer to us.
*Cor.* Say then: 'tis true, I ought so.
*Sic.* We charge you, that you have contrived to take
From Rome all season'd† office, and to wind
Yourself into a power tyrannical;
For which, you are a traitor to the people.
*Cor.* How! Traitor?
*Men.* Nay; temperately: Your promise.
*Cor.* The fires i' the lowest hell fold in the people!
Call me their traitor.—Thou injurious tribune!
Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths,
In thy hands clutch'd as many millions, in
Thy lying tongue both numbers,‡ I would say,
Thou liest, unto thee, with voice as free
As I do pray the gods.
*Sic.* Mark you this, people?
*Cit.* To the rock with him; to the rock with him!
*Sic.* Peace.
We need not put new matter to his charge:
What you have seen him do, and heard him speak,
Beating your officers, cursing yourselves,

* Import ill will to. † Of long standing.
‡ *I.e.* if thy tongue could denounce twenty million and twenty thousand deaths.

Opposing laws with strokes, and here defying
Those whose great power must try him; even this,
So criminal, and in such capital kind,
Deserves the extremest death.
*Bru.* But since he hath
Served well for Rome,——
*Cor.* What do you prate of service?
*Bru.* I talk of that, that know it.
*Cor.* You?
*Men.* Is this
The promise that you made your mother?
*Com.* Know,
I pray you,——
*Cor.* I'll know no further:
Let them pronounce the steep Tarpeian death,
Vagabond exile, flaying; pent to linger
But with a grain a day, I would not buy
Their mercy at the price of one fair word;
Nor check my courage for what they can give,
To have't with saying, Good morrow.
*Sic.* For that he has
(As much as in him lies) from time to time
Envied* against the people, seeking means
To pluck away their power; as now at last
Given hostile strokes, and that not† in the presence
Of dreaded justice, but on the ministers
That do distribute it; In the name o' the people,
And in the power of us the tribunes, we,
Even from this instant banish him our city;
In peril of precipitation
From off the rock Tarpeian, never more
To enter our Rome gates: I' the people's name,
I say, it shall be so.
*Cit.* It shall be so,
It shall be so; let him away: he's banish'd,
And so it shall be.
*Com.* Hear me, my masters, and my common friends;——
*Sic.* He's sentenced: no more hearing.
*Com.* Let me speak:
I have been consul, and can show for Rome,
Her enemy's marks upon me. I do love
My country's good, with a respect more tender,
More holy, and profound, than mine own life,
My dear wife's estimate,‡ her womb's increase,
And treasure of my loins; then if I would,
Speak that——
*Sic.* We know your drift: Speak what?
*Bru.* There's no more to be said, but he is banish'd,
As enemy to the people, and his country:
It shall be so.
*Cit.* It shall be so, it shall be so.
*Cor.* You common cry § of curs! whose breath I hate
As reek o' the rotten fens, whose love I prize
As the dead carcasses of unburied men
That do corrupt my air, I banish you;

* Shown hatred. † (Only). ‡ Value. § Pack.

And here remain with your uncertainty!
Let every feeble rumour shake your hearts!
Your enemies, with nodding of their plumes,
Fan you into despair! Have the power still
To banish your defenders; till, at length,
Your ignorance (which finds not, till it feels),
Making not reservation of yourselves
(Still your own foes), deliver you, as most
Abated* captives, to some nation
That won you without blows! Despising,
For you, the city, thus I turn my back:
There is a world elsewhere.

[*Exeunt* CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, MENENIUS, SENATORS, *and* PATRICIANS.

*Æd.* The people's enemy is gone, is gone!

*Cit.* Our enemy 's banish'd! he is gone! Hoo! hoo!

[*The people shout, and throw up their caps.*

*Sic.* Go, see him out of gates, and follow him,
As he hath follow'd you, with all despite;
Give him deserved vexation. Let a guard
Attend us through the city.

*Cit.* Come, come, let us see him out at gates; come:—
The gods preserve our noble tribunes!—Come. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT IV.

*SCENE I.—The same. Before a Gate of the City.*

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, MENENIUS, COMINIUS, *and several young* PATRICIANS.

*Cor.* Come, leave your tears; a brief farewell:—the beast
With many heads butts me away.—Nay, mother,
Where is your ancient courage? you were used
To say, extremity was the trier of spirits;
That common chances common men could bear;
That when the sea was calm, all boats alike
Show'd mastership in floating: fortune's blows,
When most struck home, being gentle, wounded, craves
A noble cunning:† you were used to load me
With precepts, that would make invincible
The heart that conn'd them.

*Vir.* O heavens! O heavens!

*Cor.* Nay, I pr'ythee, woman,—

*Vol.* Now the red pestilence strike all trades in Rome,
And occupations perish!

*Cor.* What, what, what!
I shall be loved when I am lack'd. Nay, mother,
Resume that spirit, when you were wont to say,
If you had been the wife of Hercules,
Six of his labours you'd have done, and saved
Your husband so much sweat.—Cominius,
Droop not; adieu:—Farewell, my wife! my mother!
I'll do well yet.—Thou old and true Menenius,

* Subdued.

† For him who is so wounded to be calm, requires high discipline of the mind.

Thy tears are salter than a younger man's,
And venomous to thine eyes.—My sometime general,
I have seen thee stern, and thou hast oft beheld
Heart-hard'ning spectacles; tell these sad women,
'Tis fond * to wail inevitable strokes,
As 'tis to laugh at them.—My mother, you wot well,
My hazards still have been your solace: and
Believe't not lightly (though I go alone
Like to a lonely dragon, that his fen
Makes fear'd, and talk'd of more than seen), your son
Will, or exceed the common, or be caught
With cautelous † baits and practice.

*Vol.* My first ‡ son,
Whither wilt thou go? Take good Cominius
With thee a while: Determine on some course,
More than a wild exposture to each chance,
That starts i' the way before thee.

*Cor.* O the gods!

*Com.* I'll follow thee a month, devise with thee,
Where thou shalt rest, that thou mayst hear of us,
And we of thee; so, if the time thrust forth
A cause for thy repeal, we shall not send
O'er the vast world, to seek a single man;
And lose advantage, which doth ever cool
I' the absence of the needer.

*Cor.* Fare ye well:—
Thou hast years upon thee; and thou art too full
Of the war's surfeits, to go rove with one
That's yet unbruised: bring me but out at gate.—
Come, my sweet wife, my dearest mother, and
My friends of noble touch, § when I am forth,
Bid me farewell, and smile. I pray you, come.
While I remain above the ground, you shall
Hear from me still; and never of me aught
But what is like me formerly.

*Men.* That's worthily
As any ear can hear.—Come, let's not weep.—
If I could shake off but one seven years
From these old arms and legs, by the good gods,
I'd with thee every foot.

*Cor.* Give me thy hand:—
Come. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—The same. A Street near the Gate.*

*Enter* SICINIUS, BRUTUS, *and an* ÆDILE.

*Sic.* Bid them all home; he's gone, and we'll no farther.—
The nobility are vex'd, who, we see, have sided
In his behalf.

*Bru.* Now we have shown our power,
Let us seem humbler after it is done,
Than when it was a doing.

*Sic.* Bid them home:
Say, their great enemy is gone, and they
Stand in their ancient strength.

*Bru.* Dismiss them home. [*Exit* ÆDILE.

* Foolish. † Insidious. ‡ Noblest. § True metal.

*Enter* VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, *and* MENENIUS.

Here comes his mother.
*Sic.* Let's not meet her.
*Bru.* Why?
*Sic.* They say she's mad.
*Bru.* They have ta'en note of us:
Keep on your way.
*Vol.* O, you're well met: The hoarded plague o' the gods
Requite your love!
*Men.* Peace, peace; be not so loud.
*Vol.* If that I could for weeping, you should hear.—
Nay, and you shall hear some.—Will you be gone? [*To* BRUTUS.
*Vir.* You shall stay too [*To* SICIN.]: I would I had the power
To say so to my husband.
*Sic.* Are you mankind?
*Vol.* Ay, fool; is that a shame?—Note but this fool.—
Was not a man my father? Hadst thou foxship*
To banish him that struck more blows for Rome,
Than thou hast spoken words?
*Sic.* O blessed heavens!
*Vol.* More noble blows, than ever thou wise words;
And for Rome's good.—I'll tell thee what;—Yet go:—
Nay, but thou shalt stay too:—I would my son
Were in Arabia, and thy tribe before him,
His good sword in his hand.
*Sic.* What then?
*Vir.* What then?
He'd make an end of thy posterity.
*Vol.* Bastards, and all.—
Good man, the wounds that he does bear for Rome!
*Men.* Come, come, peace.
*Sic.* I would he had continued to his country,
As he began: and not unknit himself
The noble knot he made.
*Bru.* I would he had.
*Vol.* I would he had? 'Twas you incensed the rabble:
Cats, that can judge as fitly of his worth,
As I can of those mysteries which heaven
Will not have earth to know.
*Bru.* Pray, let us go.
*Vol.* Now, pray, Sir, get you gone:
You have done a brave deed. Ere you go, hear this:
As far as doth the Capitol exceed
The meanest house in Rome: so far, my son
(This lady's husband here, this, do you see),
Whom you have banish'd, does exceed you all.
*Bru.* Well, well, we'll leave you.
*Sic.* Why stay we to be baited
With one that wants her wits?
*Vol.* Take my prayers with you.—
I would the gods had nothing else to do, [*Exeunt* TRIBUNES.
But to confirm my curses! Could I meet them
But once a day, it would unclog my heart
Of what lies heavy to't.

* Mean cunning.

*Men.* You have told them home,
And, by my troth, you have cause. You'll sup with me?
*Vol.* Anger 's my meat; I sup upon myself,
And so shall starve with feeding.—Come let's go:
Leave this faint puling, and lament as I do,
In anger, Juno-like. Come, come, come.
*Men.* Fie, fie, fie! [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE III.—A highway between Rome and Antium.*

*Enter a* ROMAN *and a* VOLCE, *meeting.*

*Rom.* I know you well, Sir, and you know me: your name I think, is Adrian.
*Vol.* It is so, Sir: truly, I have forgot you.
*Rom.* I am a Roman; and my services are, as you are, against them: Know you me yet?
*Vol.* Nicanor? No,—
*Rom.* The same, Sir.
*Vol.* You had more beard, when I last saw you; but your favour is well appeared by your tongue.* What's the news in Rome? I have a note from the Volcian state, to find you out there: You have well saved me a day's journey.
*Rom.* There hath been in Rome strange insurrection: the people against the senators, patricians, and nobles.
*Vol.* Hath been! Is it ended then? Our state thinks not so; they are in a most warlike preparation, and hope to come upon them in the heat of their division.
*Rom.* The main blaze of it is past, but a small thing would make it flame again. For the nobles receive so to heart the banishment of that worthy Coriolanus, that they are in a ripe aptness, to take all power from the people, and to pluck from them their tribunes for ever. This lies glowing, I can tell you, and is almost mature for the violent breaking out.
*Vol.* Coriolanus banished?
*Rom.* Banished, Sir.
*Vol.* You will be welcome with this intelligence, Nicanor.
*Rom.* The day serves well for them now. I have heard it said, the fittest time to corrupt a man's wife, is when she's fallen out with her husband. Your noble Tullus Aufidius will appear well in these wars, his great opposer, Coriolanus, being now in no request of his country.
*Vol.* He cannot choose. I am most fortunate, thus accidentally to encounter you: You have ended my business, and I will merrily accompany you home.
*Rom.* I shall, between this and supper, tell you most strange things from Rome; all tending to the good of their adversaries. Have you an army ready, say you?
*Vol.* A most royal one: the centurions, and their charges, distinctly billeted, already in the entertainment,† and to be on foot at an hour's warning.
*Rom.* I am joyful to hear of their readiness, and am the man, I think, that shall set them in present action. So, Sir, heartily well met, and most glad of your company.
*Vol.* You take my part from me, Sir; I have the most cause to be glad of yours.
*Rom.* Well, let us go together. [*Exeunt.*

* Your voice manifests to me that I am right in thinking I remembered your features.
† In pay.

*SCENE IV.—Antium. Before* AUFIDIUS'S *House.*

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, *in mean apparel, disguised and muffled.*

*Cor.* A goodly city is this Antium: City,
'Tis I that made thy widows; many an heir
Of these fair edifices 'fore my wars
Have I heard groan, and drop: then know me not;
Lest that thy wives with spits, and boys with stones,

*Enter a* CITIZEN.

In puny battle slay me.—Save you, Sir.
*Cit.* And you.
*Cor.* Direct me, if it be your will,
Where great Aufidius lies: Is he in Antium?
*Cit.* He is, and feasts the nobles of the state,
At his house this night.
*Cor.* Which is his house, 'beseech you?
*Cit.* This, here, before you.
*Cor.* Thank you, Sir; farewell. [*Exit* CITIZEN.
O, world, thy slippery turns! Friends now fast sworn,
Whose double bosoms seem to wear one heart,
Whose hours, whose bed, whose meal, and exercise,
Are still together, who twin, as 'twere, in love
Unseparable, shall within this hour,
On a dissension of a doit, break out
To bitterest enmity: So, fellest foes,
Whose passions and whose plots have broke their sleep
To take the one the other, by some chance,
Some trick not worth an egg, shall grow dear friends,
And interjoin their issues. So with me:—
My birth-place hate I, and my love 's upon
This enemy town.—I'll enter: if he slay me,
He does fair justice; if he give me way,
I'll do his country service. [*Exit.*

*SCENE V.—The same. A Hall in* AUFIDIUS'S *House.*

*Music within. Enter a* SERVANT.

1 *Serv.* Wine, wine, wine! What service is here! I think our fellows are asleep. [*Exit.*

*Enter another* SERVANT.

2 *Serv.* Where's Cotus! my master calls for him. Cotus! [*Exit.*

*Enter* CORIOLANUS.

*Cor.* A goodly house: The feast smells well: but I
Appear not like a guest.

*Re-enter the first* SERVANT.

1 *Serv.* What would you have, friend? Whence are you? Here's no place for you: Pray, go to the door.
*Cor.* I have deserved no better entertainment,
In being Coriolanus.

*Re-enter second* SERVANT.

2 *Serv.* Whence are you, Sir? Has the porter his eyes in his head, that he gives entrance to such companions?* Pray, get you out.
*Cor.* Away!
2 *Serv.* Away? Get you away.
*Cor.* Now thou art troublesome.

* Fellows.

2 *Serv.* Are you so brave? I'll have you talked with anon.

*Enter a third* SERVANT. *The first meets him.*

3 *Serv.* What fellow's this?

1 *Serv.* A strange one as ever I looked on: I cannot get him out o' the house: Pr'ythee, call my master to him.

3 *Serv.* What have you to do here, fellow? Pray you, avoid the house.

*Cor.* Let me but stand; I will not hurt your hearth.

3 *Serv.* What are you?

*Cor.* A gentleman.

3 *Serv.* A marvellous poor one.

*Cor.* True, so I am.

3 *Serv.* Pray you, poor gentleman, take up some other station; here's no place for you; pray you, avoid: come.

*Cor.* Follow your function, go!
And batten* on cold bits. [*Pushes him away.*

3 *Serv.* What, will you not? Pr'ythee, tell my master what a strange guest he has here.

2 *Serv.* And I shall. [*Exit.*

3 *Serv.* Where dwellest thou?

*Cor.* Under the canopy.

3 *Serv.* Under the canopy?

*Cor.* Ay.

3 *Serv.* Where's that?

*Cor.* I' the city of kites and crows.

3 *Serv.* I' the city of kites and crows?—What an ass it is!—Then thou dwellest with daws too?

*Cor.* No, I serve not thy master.

3 *Serv.* How, Sir! Do you meddle with my master?

*Cor.* Ay; 'tis an honester service than to meddle with thy mistress:
Thou prat'st, and prat'st; serve with thy trencher, hence!
[*Beats him away.*

*Enter* AUFIDIUS *and the second* SERVANT.

*Auf.* Where is this fellow?

2 *Serv.* Here, Sir; I'd have beaten him like a dog, but for disturbing the lords within.

*Auf.* Whence comest thou? what wouldest thou? Thy name? Why speak'st not? Speak, man: What's thy name?

*Cor.* If, Tullus, [*Unmuffling.*
Not yet thou know'st me, and seeing me, dost not
Think me for the man I am, necessity
Commands me name myself.

*Auf.* What is thy name? [SERVANTS *retire.*

*Cor.* A name unmusical to the Volcians' ears,
And harsh in sound to thine.

*Auf.* Say, what's thy name?
Thou hast a grim appearance, and thy face
Bears a command in't; though thy tackle 's torn,
Thou show'st a noble vessel: What's thy name?

*Cor.* Prepare thy brow to frown: Know'st thou me yet?

*Auf.* I know thee not: Thy name?

*Cor.* My name is Caius Marcius, who hath done
To thee particularly, and to all the Volces,
Great hurt and mischief; thereto witness may

* Feed.

My surname, Coriolanus: The painful service,
The extreme dangers, and the drops of blood
Shed for my thankless country, are requited
But with that surname; a good memory,*
And witness of the malice and displeasure
Which thou shouldst bear me: only that name remains;
The cruelty and envy of the people,
Permitted by our dastard nobles, who
Have all forsook me, hath devour'd the rest;
And suffer'd me by the voice of slaves to be
Whoop'd out of Rome. Now, this extremity
Hath brought me to thy hearth; Not out of hope,
Mistake me not, to save my life; for if
I had fear'd death, of all the men i' the world
I would have 'voided thee: but in mere spite,
To be full quit of those my banishers,
Stand I before thee here. Then if thou hast
A heart of wreak† in thee, that will revenge
Thine own particular wrongs, and stop those maims
Of shame seen through thy country, speed thee straight,
And make my misery serve thy turn; so use it,
That my revengeful services may prove
As benefits to thee; for I will fight
Against my canker'd country with the spleen
Of all the under§ fiends. But if so be
Thou darest not this, and that to prove more fortunes
Thou art tired, then, in a word, I also am
Longer to live most weary, and present
My throat to thee, and to thy ancient malice:
Which not to cut, would show thee but a fool;
Since I have ever follow'd thee with hate,
Drawn tuns of blood out of thy country's breast;
And cannot live but to thy shame, unless
It be to do thee service.

*Auf.* O, Marcius, Marcius,
Each word thou hast spoke hath weeded from my heart
A root of ancient envy.‖ If Jupiter
Should from yon cloud speak divine things, and say,
'*Tis true:* I'd not believe them more than thee,
All noble Marcius.—O, let me twine
Mine arms about that body, where against
My grained ash an hundred times hath broke,
And scared the moon with splinters! Here I clip¶
The anvil of my sword; and do contest,
As hotly and as nobly with thy love,
As ever in ambitious strength I did
Contend against thy valour. Know thou first,
I loved the maid I married; never man
Sigh'd truer breath; but that I see thee here,
Thou noble thing! more dances my rapt heart,
Than when I first my wedded mistress saw
Bestride my threshold. Why, thou Mars! I tell thee,
We have a power on foot; and I had purpose
Once more to hew thy target from thy brawn,**

* Memorial. † Resentment. ‡ Disgraceful diminutions.
§ Infernal. ‖ Hatred. ¶ Embrace. ‡ Arm.

Or lose mine arm for't: Thou hast beat me out
Twelve several times, and I have nightly since
Dreamt of encounters 'twixt thyself and me;
We have been down together in my sleep,
Unbuckling helms, fisting each other's throat,
And waked half dead with nothing. Worthy Marcius,
Had we no quarrel else to Rome, but that
Thou art thence banish'd, we would muster all
From twelve to seventy; and, pouring war
Into the bowels of ungrateful Rome,
Like a bold flood o'er-beat. O, come, go in,
And take our friendly senators by the hands;
Who now are here, taking their leaves of me,
Who am prepared against your territories,
Though not for Rome itself.

*Cor.* You bless me, gods!

*Auf.* Therefore, most absolute Sir, if thou wilt have
The leading of thine own revenges, take
The one half of my commission; and set down,—
As best thou art experienced, since thou know'st
Thy country's strength and weakness,—thine own ways:
Whether to knock against the gates of Rome,
Or rudely visit them in parts remote,
To fright them, ere destroy. But come in:
Let me commend thee first to those, that shall
Say, *yea*, to thy desires. A thousand welcomes!
And more a friend than e'er an enemy;
Yet, Marcius, that was much. Your hand. Most welcome!

[*Exeunt* CORIOLANUS *and* AUFIDIUS.

1 Serv. [*advancing*]. Here's a strange alteration!

2 *Serv.* By my hand, I had thought to have strucken him with a cudgel; and yet my mind gave me, his clothes made a false report of him.

1 *Serv.* What an arm he has! He turned me about with his finger and his thumb, as one would set up a top.

2 *Serv.* Nay, I knew by his face that there was something in him: He had, Sir, a kind of face, methought,—I cannot tell how to term it.

1 *Serv.* He had so: looking as it were,——'Would I were hanged, but I thought there was more in him than I could think.

2 *Serv.* So did I, I'll be sworn: He is simply the rarest man i' the world.

1 *Serv.* I think, he is: but a greater soldier than he, you wot one.

2 *Serv.* Who? my master?

1 *Serv.* Nay, it's no matter for that.

2 *Serv.* Worth six of him.

1 *Serv.* Nay, not so neither; but I take him to be the greater soldier.

2 *Serv.* 'Faith, look you, one cannot tell how to say that; for the defence of a town, our general is excellent.

1 *Serv.* Ay, and for an assault too.

*Re-enter third* SERVANT.

3 *Serv.* O, slaves, I can tell you news; news, you rascals.

1, 2 *Serv.* What, what, what? let's partake.

3 *Serv.* I would not be a Roman, of all nations; I had as lieve be a condemned man.

1, 2 *Serv.* Wherefore? wherefore?

3 *Serv.* Why, here's he that was wont to thwack our general,—Caius Marcius.

1 *Serv.* Why do you say thwack our general?

3 *Serv.* I do not say, thwack our general; but he was always good enough for him.

2 *Serv.* Come, we are fellows, and friends: he was ever too hard for him; I have heard him say so himself.

1 *Serv.* He was too hard for him directly, to say the truth on't: before Corioli, he scotched him and notched him like a carbonado.*

2 *Serv.* An he had been cannibally given, he might have broiled and eaten him too.

1 *Serv.* But, more of thy news?

3 *Serv.* Why, he is so made on here within, as if he were son and heir to Mars: set at upper end o' the table: no question asked him by any of the senators, but they stand bald before him: Our general himself makes a mistress of him; sanctifies himself with's hand, and turns up the white o' the eye to his discourse. But the bottom of the news is, our general is cut i' the middle, and but one half of what he was yesterday; for the other has half, by the entreaty and grant of the whole table. He'll go, he says, and sowle† the porter of Rome gates by the ears: He will mow down all before him, and leave his passage polled.‡

2 *Serv.* And he's as like to do't, as any man I can imagine.

3 *Serv.* Do't? he will do't: For, look you, Sir, he has as many friends as enemies: which friends, Sir (as it were), durst not (look you, Sir) show themselves (as we term it) his friends, whilst he's in directitude.

1 *Serv.* Directitude! what's that?

3 *Serv.* But when they shall see, Sir, his crest up again, and the man in blood, they will out of their burrows, like conies after rain, and revel all with him.

1 *Serv.* But when goes this forward?

3 *Serv.* To-morrow, to-day, presently. You shall have the drum struck up this afternoon: 'tis as it were, a parcel of their feast, and to be executed ere they wipe their lips.

2 *Serv.* Why, then we shall have a stirring world again. This peace is nothing, but to rust iron, increase tailors, and breed ballad-makers.

1 *Serv.* Let me have war, say I; it exceeds peace, as far as day does night; it's sprightly, waking, audible, and full of vent. Peace is a very apoplexy, lethargy; mulled,§ deaf, sleepy, insensible; a getter of more bastard children, than war's a destroyer of men.

2 *Serv.* 'Tis so: and as wars, in some sort may be said to be a ravisher; so it cannot be denied, but peace is a great maker of cuckolds.

1 *Serv.* Ay, and it makes men hate one another.

3 *Serv.* Reason; because they then less need one another. The wars, for my money. I hope to see Romans as cheap as Volcians. They are rising, they are rising.

*All.* In, in, in, in. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE VI.—*Rome. A public place.*

*Enter* SICINIUS *and* BRUTUS.

*Sic.* We hear not of him, neither need we fear him;
His remedies are tame i' the present peace

* Meat cut across to be broiled. † Pull. ‡ Cleared. § Softened.

And quietness o' the people, which before
Were in wild hurry. Here do we make his friends
Blush, that the world goes well; who, rather had,
Though they themselves did suffer by't, behold
Dissentious numbers pestering streets, than see
Our tradesmen singing in their shops, and going
About their functions friendly.

*Enter* MENENIUS.

*Bru.* We stood to't in good time. Is this Menenius?
*Sic.* 'Tis he, 'tis he: O, he is grown most kind
Of late.—Hail, Sir!
*Men.* Hail to you both!
*Sic.* Your Coriolanus, Sir, is not much miss'd,
But with his friends; the commonwealth doth stand;
And so would do, were he more angry at it.
*Men.* All's well; and might have been much better, if
He could have temporized.
*Sic.* Where is he, hear you?
*Men.* Nay, I hear nothing; his mother and his wife
Hear nothing from him.

*Enter three or four* CITIZENS.

*Cit.* The gods preserve you both.
*Sic.* Good-e'en, our neighbours.
*Bru.* Good-e'en to you all, good-e'en to you all.
1 *Cit.* Ourselves, our wives, and children, on our knees,
Are bound to pray for you both.
*Sic.* Live, and thrive!
*Bru.* Farewell, kind neighbours: we wish'd Coriolanus
Had loved you as we did.
*Cit.* Now the gods keep you!
*Both Tri.* Farewell, farewell. [*Exeunt* CITIZENS.
*Sic.* This is a happier and more comely time,
Than when these fellows ran about the streets,
Crying, Confusion.
*Bru.* Caius Marcius was
A worthy officer i' the war; but insolent,
O'ercome with pride, ambitious past all thinking,
Self-loving,——
*Sic.* And affecting one sole throne,
Without assistance.
*Men.* I think not so.
*Sic.* We should by this, to all our lamentation,
If he had gone forth consul, found it so.
*Bru.* The gods have well prevented it, and Rome
Sits safe and still without him.

*Enter* ÆDILE.

*Æd.* Worthy tribunes,
There is a slave, whom we have put in prison,
Reports,—the Volces with two several powers
Are enter'd in the Roman territories;
And with the deepest malice of the war
Destroy what lies before them.
*Men.* 'Tis Aufidius,
Who, hearing of our Marcius' banishment,
Thrusts forth his horns again into the world:

Which were inshell'd, when Marcius stood for Rome,
And durst not once peep out.
*Sic.* Come, what talk you
Of Marcius?
*Bru.* Go see this rumourer whipp'd. It cannot be,
The Volces dare break with us.
*Men.* Cannot be!
We have record, that very well it can;
And three examples of the like have been
Within my age. But reason with the fellow,
Before you punish him, where he heard this:
Lest you should chance to whip your information,
And beat the messenger who bids beware
Of what is to be dreaded.
*Sic.* Tell not me:
I know this cannot be.
*Bru.* Not possible.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* The nobles, in great earnestness, are going
All to the senate-house; some news is come,
That turns their countenances.
*Sic.* 'Tis this slave;—
Go whip him 'fore the people's eyes:—his raising!
Nothing but his report!
*Mess.* Yes, worthy Sir,
The slave's report is seconded; and more,
More fearful is deliver'd.
*Sic.* What more fearful?
*Mess.* It is spoke freely out of many mouths
(How probable, I do not know), that Marcius,
Join'd with Aufidius, leads a power 'gainst Rome;
And vows revenge as spacious, as between
The young'st and oldest thing.
*Sic.* This is most likely!
*Bru.* Raised only, that the weaker sort may wish
Good Marcius home again.
*Sic.* The very trick on't.
*Men.* This is unlikely:
He and Aufidius can no more atone,*
Than violentest contrariety.

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* You are sent for to the senate:
A fearful army, led by Caius Marcius,
Associated with Aufidius, rages
Upon our territories; and have already,
O'erborne their way, consumed with fire, and took
What lay before them.

*Enter* COMINIUS.

*Com.* O, you have made good work!
*Men.* What news? what news?
*Com.* You have holp to ravish your own daughters, and
To melt the city leads upon your pates;
To see your wives dishonour'd to your noses;——
*Men.* What's the news? what's the news?

* Be reconciled.

*Com.* Your temples burn'd in their cement; and
Your franchises, whereon you stood, confined
Into an auger's bore.
*Men.* Pray now, your news?—
You have made fair work, I fear me:—Pray, your news?
If Marcius should be join'd with Volcians,—
*Com.* If!
He is their god; he leads them like a thing
Made by some other deity than nature,
That shapes man better: and they follow him,
Against us brats, with no less confidence,
Than boys pursuing summer butterflies,
Or butchers killing flies.
*Men.* You have made good work,
You, and your apron men; you that stood so much
Upon the voice of occupation,* and
The breath of garlic-eaters!
*Com.* He will shake
Your Rome about your ears.
*Men.* As Hercules
Did shake down mellow fruit: You have made fair work!
*Bru.* But is this true, Sir?
*Com.* Ay; and you'll look pale
Before you find it other. All the regions
Do smilingly revolt; and, who resist,
Are only mock'd for valiant ignorance,
And perish constant fools. Who is't can blame him?
Your enemies, and his, find something in him.
*Men.* We are all undone, unless
The noble man have mercy.
*Com.* Who shall ask it?
The tribunes cannot do't for shame; the people
Deserve such pity of him, as the wolf
Does of the shepherds: for his best friends, if they
Should say, *Be good to Rome*, they charged him even
As those should do that had deserved his hate,
And therein show'd like enemies.
*Men.* 'Tis true:
If he were putting to my house the brand
That should consume it, I have not the face
To say, '*Beseech you, cease.*—You have made fair hands,
You, and your crafts! you have crafted fair!
*Com.* You have brought
A trembling upon Rome, such as was never
So incapable of help.
*Tri.* Say not, we brought it.
*Men.* How! Was it we? We loved him; but, like beasts,
And cowardly nobles, gave way to your clusters,
Who did hoot him out o' the city.
*Com.* But, I fear,
They'll roar him in again. Tullus Aufidius,
The second name of men, obeys his points
As if he were his officer:—Desperation

* Mechanics.

Is all the policy, strength, and defence,
That Rome can make against them.

*Enter a troop of* CITIZENS.

*Men.* Here come the clusters.—
And is Aufidius with him?—You are they
That made the air unwholesome, when you cast
Your stinking, greasy caps, in hooting at
Coriolanus' exile. Now he's coming;
And not a hair upon a soldier's head
Which will not prove a whip; as many coxcombs,
As you threw caps up, will he tumble down,
And pay you for your voices. 'Tis no matter;
If he could burn us all into one coal,
We have deserved it.

*Cit.* 'Faith, we hear fearful news.

1 *Cit.* For mine own part,
When I said, banish him, I said, 'twas pity.

2 *Cit.* And so did I.

3 *Cit.* And so did I; and, to say the truth, so did very many of us: That we did, we did for the best; and though we willingly consented to his banishment, yet it was against our will.

*Com.* You are goodly things, you voices!

*Men.* You have made
Good work, you and your cry!*—Shall us to the Capitol?

*Com.* O, ay; what else? [*Exeunt* COMINIUS *and* MENENIUS.

*Sic.* Go, masters, get you home, be not dismay'd;
These are a side, that would be glad to have
This true, which they so seem to fear. Go home,
And show no sign of fear.

1 *Cit.* The gods be good to us; come, masters, let's home. I ever said, we were i' the wrong, when we banish'd him.

2 *Cit.* So did we all. But come, let's home. [*Exeunt* CITIZENS.

*Bru.* I do not like this news.

*Sic.* Nor I.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol:—Would, half my wealth
Would buy this for a lie!

*Sic.* Pray, let us go. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VII.—A camp, at a small distance from Rome.*

*Enter* AUFIDIUS, *and his* LIEUTENANT.

*Auf.* Do they still fly to the Roman?

*Lieu.* I do not know what witchtraft's in him; but
Your soldiers use him as the grace 'fore meat,
Their talk at table, and their thanks at end;
And you are darken'd in this action, Sir,
Even by your own.

*Auf.* I cannot help it now;
Unless, by using means, I lame the foot
Of our design. He bears himself more proudly
Even to my person, than I thought he would,
When first I did embrace him: Yet his nature
In that's no changeling; and I must excuse
What cannot be amended.

*Lieu.* Yet I wish, Sir
(I mean for your particular), you had not

* Pack.

Join'd in commission with him: but either
Had borne the action of yourself, or else
To him had left it solely.

*Auf.* I understand thee well; and be thou sure,
When he shall come to his account, he knows not
What I can urge against him. Although it seems,
And so he thinks, and is no less apparent
To the vulgar eye, that he bears all things fairly,
And shows good husbandry for the Volcian state;
Fights dragon-like, and does achieve as soon
As draw his sword: yet he hath left undone
That, which shall break his neck, or hazard mine,
Whene'er we come to our account.

*Lieu.* Sir, I beseech you, think you he'll carry Rome?

*Auf.* All places yield to him ere he sits down;
And the nobility of Rome are his:
The senators, and patricians, love him too;
The tribunes are no soldiers; and their people
Will be as rash in the repeal, as hasty
To expel him thence. I think, he'll be to Rome,
As is the osprey to the fish, who takes it
By sovereignty of nature. First he was
A noble servant to them; but he could not
Carry his honours even: whether 'twas pride,
Which out of daily fortune ever taints
The happy man; whether defect of judgment,
To fail in the disposing of those chances
Which he was lord of; or whether nature,
Not to be other than one thing, not moving
From the casque to the cushion,* but commanding peace
Even with the same austerity and garb
As he controll'd the war; but, one of these
(As he hath spices of them all, not all,†
For I dare so far free him), made him fear'd,
So hated, and so banish'd: But he has a merit,
To choke it in the utterance. So our virtues
Lie in the interpretation of the time:
And power, unto itself most commendable,
Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair
To extol what it hath done.
One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one nail;
Right by rights fouler, strengths by strengths do fail.
Come, let's away. When, Caius, Rome is thine,
Thou art poor'st of all; then shortly art thou mine. [*Exeunt.*

---

## ACT V.

### *SCENE I.—Rome. A Public Place.*

*Enter* MENENIUS, COMINIUS, SICINIUS, BRUTUS, *and others.*

*Men.* No, I'll not go: you hear, what he hath said,
Which was sometime his general; who loved him
In a most dear particular. He called me, father:

* The chair of civil authority. † Not all in their full extent.

But what o' that? Go, you that banish'd him,
A mile before his tent fall down, and kneel
The way into his mercy: Nay, if he coy'd *
To hear Cominius speak, I'll keep at home.
*Com.* He would not seem to know me.
*Men.* Do you hear?
*Com.* Yet one time he did call me by my name:
I urged our old acquaintance, and the drops
That we have bled together. Coriolanus
He would not answer to: forbade all names;
He was a kind of nothing, titleless,
Till he had forged himself a name i' the fire
Of burning Rome.
*Men.* Why, so; you have made good work:
A pair of tribunes that have rack'd † for Rome,
To make coals cheap: A noble memory! ‡
*Com.* I minded him, how royal 'twas to pardon
When it was less expected: He replied,
It was a bare petition of a state
To one whom they had punish'd.
*Men.* Very well:
Could he say less?
*Com.* I offer'd to awaken his regard
For his private friends: His answer to me was,
He could not stay to pick them in a pile
Of noisome, musty chaff: He said, 'twas folly,
For one poor grain or two, to leave unburnt,
And still to nose the offence.
*Men.* For one poor grain
Or two? I am one of those; his mother, wife,
His child, and this brave fellow too, we are the grains:
You are the musty chaff; and you are smelt
Above the moon: We must be burnt for you.
*Sic.* Nay, pray, be patient: If you refuse your aid
In this so never-heeded help, yet do not
Upbraid us with our distress. But, sure, if you
Would be your country's pleader, your good tongue,
More than the instant army we can make,
Might stop our countryman.
*Men.* No; I'll not meddle.
*Sic.* I pray you, go to him.
*Men.* What should I do?
*Bru.* Only make trial what your love can do
For Rome towards Marcius.
*Men.* Well, and say that Marcius
Return me, as Cominius is return'd,
Unheard; what then?—
But as a discontented friend, grief-shot
With his unkindness? Say't be so?
*Sic.* Yet your good will
Must have that thanks from Rome, after the measure
As you intended well.
*Men.* I'll undertake it:
I think, he'll hear me. Yet to bite his lip,
And hum at good Cominius, much unhearts me.

* Was unwilling. † Harassed by exactions. ‡ Memorial

He was not taken well; he had not dined:
The veins unfill'd, the blood is cold, and then
We pout upon the morning, are unapt
To give or to forgive; but when we have stuff'd
These pipes and these conveyances of our blood
With wine and feeding, we have suppler souls
Than in our priest-like fasts: therefore I'll watch him
Till he be dieted to my request,
And then I'll set upon him.

*Bru.* You know the very road into his kindness,
And cannot lose your way.

*Men.* Good faith, I'll prove him,
Speed how it will. I shall ere long have knowledge
Of my success. [*Exit.*

*Com.* He'll never hear him.

*Sic.* Not?

*Com.* I tell you, he does sit in gold, his eye
Red as 'twould burn Rome; and his injury
The jailer to his pity. I kneel'd before him;
'Twas very faintly he said, *Rise;* dismiss'd me
Thus, with his speechless hand: What he would do,
He sent in writing after me; what he could not,
Bound with an oath, to yield to his conditions:
So, that all hope is vain,
Unless his noble mother, and his wife;
Who, as I hear, mean to solicit him
For mercy to his country. Therefore, let's hence,
And with our fair entreaties haste them on. [*Exeunt.*

*SCENE II.—An advanced Post of the Volcian Camp before Rome. The* GUARD *at their Stations.*

*Enter to them,* MENENIUS.

1 *G.* Stay: Whence are you?

2 *G.* Stand, and go back.

*Men.* You guard like men; 'tis well; But, by your leave,
I am an officer of state, and come
To speak with Coriolanus.

1 *G.* From whence?

*Men.* From Rome.

1 *G.* You may not pass, you must return: our general
Will no more hear from thence.

2 *G.* You'll see your Rome embraced with fire before
You'll speak with Coriolanus.

*Men.* Good my friends,
If you have heard your general talk of Rome,
And of his friends there, it is lots * to blanks,
My name hath touch'd your ears: it is Menenius.

1 *G.* Be it so; go back: the virtue of your name
Is not here passable.

*Men.* I tell thee, fellow,
Thy general is my lover: † I have been
The book of his good acts, whence men have read
His fame unparallel'd, haply, amplified
For I have ever verified ‡ my friends
(Of whom he's chief), with all the size that verity

* Prizes. † Friend. ‡ Done justice to.

Would without lasping suffer: nay, sometimes,
Like to a bowl upon a subtle * ground,
I have tumbled past the throw; and in his praise
Have, almost, stamp'd the leasing: Therefore, fellow,
I must have leave to pass.

1 *G.* 'Faith, Sir, if you had told as many lies in his behalf, as you have uttered words in your own, you should not pass here: no, though it were as virtuous to lie, as to live chastely. Therefore, go back.

*Men.* Pr'ythee, fellow, remember my name is Menenius, always factionary on the party of your general.

2 *G.* Howsoever you have been his liar (as you say, you have), I am one that, telling true under him, must say, you cannot pass. Therefore go back.

*Men.* Has he dined, canst thou tell? for I would not speak with him till after dinner.

1 *G.* You are a Roman, are you?

*Men.* I am as thy general is.

1 *G.* Then you should hate Rome, as he does. Can you, when you have pushed out your gates the very defender of them, and, in a violent popular ignorance, given your enemy your shield, think to front his revenges with the easy groans of old women, the virginal palms of your daughters, or with the palsied intercession of such a decayed dotant as you seem to be? Can you think to blow out the intended fire your city is ready to flame in, with such weak breath as this? No, you are deceived; therefore, back to Rome, and prepare for your execution: you are condemned, our general has sworn you out of reprieve and pardon.

*Men.* Sirrah, if thy captain knew I were here, he would use me with estimation.

2 *G.* Come, my captain knows you not.

*Men.* I mean, thy general.

1 *G.* My general cares not for you. Back, I say, go, lest I let forth your half pint of blood;—back,—that's the utmost of your having:—back.

*Men.* Nay, but fellow, fellow,——

*Enter* CORIOLANUS *and* AUFIDIUS.

*Cor.* What's the matter?

*Men.* Now, you companion, † I'll say an errand for you; you shall know now that I am in estimation; you shall perceive that a Jack ‡ guardant cannot office me from my son Coriolanus: guess, but by my entertainment with him, if thou stand'st not i' the state of hanging, or of some death more long in spectatorship, and crueller in suffering; behold now presently, and swoon for what's to come upon thee.—The glorious gods sit in hourly synod about thy particular prosperity, and love thee no worse than thy old father Menenius does! O, my son! my son! thou art preparing fire for us; look thee, here's water to quench it. I was hardly moved to come to thee; but being assured, none but myself could move thee, I have been blown out of your gates with sighs; and conjure thee to pardon Rome, and thy petitionary countrymen. The good gods assuage thy wrath, and turn the dregs of it

* Deceitful. † Fellows. ‡ Jack in office.

upon this varlet here; this, who, like a block, hath denied my access to thee.

*Cor.* Away!

*Men.* How! away?

*Cor.* Wife, mother, child, I know not. My affairs
Are servanted to others: Though I owe
My revenge properly,* my remission lies
In Volcian breasts. That we have been familiar
Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison, rather
Than pity note how much.—Therefore be gone.
Mine ears against your suits are stronger, than
Your gates against my force. Yet, for† I loved thee,
Take this along; I writ it for thy sake, [*Gives a letter.*
And would have sent it. Another word, Menenius,
I will not hear thee speak. This man, Aufidius,
Was my beloved in Rome: yet thou behold'st—

*Auf.* You keep a constant temper. [*Exeunt* COR. *and* AUFID.

1 *G.* Now, Sir, is your name Menenius?

2 *G.* 'Tis a spell, you see, of much power: You know the way home again.

1 *G.* Do you hear how we are shent‡ for keeping your greatness back?

2 *G.* What cause, do you think, I have to swoon?

*Men.* I neither care for the world, nor your general: for such things as you, I can scarce think there's any, you are so slight. He that hath a will to die by himself,§ fears it not from another. Let your general do his worst. For you, be that you are, long; and your misery increase with your age! I say to you, as I was said to, Away! [*Exit.*

1 *G.* A noble fellow, I warrant him.

2 *G.* The worthy fellow is our general: He is the rock, the oak not to be wind-shaken. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE III.—The Tent of* CORIOLANUS.

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, AUFIDIUS, *and others.*

*Cor.* We will before the walls of Rome to-morrow
Set down our host.—My partner in this action,
You must report to the Volcian lords, how plainly‖
I have borne this business.

*Auf.* Only their ends
You have respected; stopp'd your ears against
The general suit of Rome; never admitted
A private whisper, no, not with such friends
That thought them sure of you.

*Cor.* This last old man,
Whom with a crack'd heart I have sent to Rome,
Loved me above the measure of a father;
Nay, godded me, indeed. Their latest refuge
Was to send him: for whose old love, I have
(Though I show'd sourly to him) once more offer'd
The first conditions, which they did refuse,
And cannot now accept, to grace him only,
That thought he could do more; a very little

* My revenge is my own; pardon is with the Volcians. † Because.
‡ Reprimanded. § By his own hands. ‖ Openly.

I have yielded too: Fresh embassies, and suits,
Nor from the state, nor private friends, hereafter
Will I lend ear to.—Ha! what shout is this? [*Shout within.*
Shall I be tempted to infringe my vow
In the same time 'tis made? I will not.—

*Enter in mourning habits,* VIRGILIA, VOLUMNIA, *leading young* MARCIUS, VALERIA, *and Attendants.*

My wife comes foremost; then the honour'd mould
Wherein this trunk was framed, and in her hand
The grandchild to her blood. But, out, affection!
All bond and privilege of nature, break!
Let it be virtuous, to be obstinate.—
What is that curt'sy worth? or those doves' eyes,
Which can make gods forsworn?—I melt, and am not
Of stronger earth than others.—My mother bows;
As if Olympus to a molehill should
In supplication nod: and my young boy
Hath an aspect of intercession, which
Great nature cries, *Deny not,*—Let the Volces
Plough Rome, and harrow Italy; I'll never
Be such a gosling to obey instinct; but stand,
As if a man were author of himself,
And knew no other kin.

*Vir.* My lord and husband!

*Cor.* These eyes are not the same I wore in Rome.

*Vir.* The sorrow, that delivers us thus changed,
Makes you think so.

*Cor.* Like a dull actor now,
I have forgot my part, and I am out,
Even to a full disgrace. Best of my flesh,
Forgive my tyranny; but do not say,
For that, *Forgive our Romans.*—O, a kiss
Long as my exile, sweet as my revenge!
Now by the jealous queen of heaven, that kiss
I carried from thee, dear; and my true lip
Hath virgin'd it e'er since.—You gods! I prate,
And the most noble mother of the world
Leave unsaluted: Sink, my knee, i' the earth; [*Kneels.*
Of thy deep duty more impression show
Than that of common sons.

*Vol.* O, stand up bless'd!
Whilst, with no softer cushion than the flint,
I kneel before thee; and unproperly
Show duty, as mistaken all the while
Between the child and parent. [*Kneels.*

*Cor.* What is this?
Your knees to me? to your corrected son?
Then let the pebbles on the hungry* beach
Fillip the stars; then let the mutinous winds
Strike the proud cedars 'gainst the fiery sun;
Murd'ring impossibility, to make
What cannot be, slight work.

*Vol.* Thou art my warrior;
I holp to frame thee. Do you know this lady?

* Barren.

*Cor.* The noble sister of Publicola,
The moon of Rome; chaste as the icicle,
That's curded by the frost from purest snow,
And hangs on Dian's temple: Dear Valeria!
*Vol.* This is a poor epitome of yours,
Which by the interpretation of full time
May show like all yourself.
*Cor.* The god of soldiers,
With the consent of supreme Jove, inform
Thy thoughts with nobleness; that thou mayst prove
To shame invulnerable, and stick i' the wars
Like a great sea-mark, standing every flaw,*
And saving those that eye thee!
*Vol.* Your knee, Sirrah.
*Cor.* That's my brave boy.
*Vol.* Even he, your wife, this lady, and myself,
Are suitors to you.
*Cor.* I beseech you, peace:
Or, if you'd ask, remember this before;
The things, I have forsworn to grant, may never
Be held by you denials. Do not bid me
Dismiss my soldiers, or capitulate
Again with Rome's mechanics:—Tell me not
Wherein I seem unnatural: Desire not
To allay my rages and revenges, with
Your colder reasons.
*Vol.* O, no more, no more!
You have said, you will not grant us anything;
For we have nothing else to ask, but that
Which you deny already: Yet we will ask;
That, if you fail in our request, the blame
May hang upon your hardness: therefore hear us.
*Cor.* Aufidius, and you Volces, mark; for we'll
Hear nought from Rome in private.—Your request?
*Vol.* Should we be silent, and not speak, our raiment,
And state of bodies would bewray† what life
We have led since thy exile. Think with thyself,
How more unfortunate than all living women
Are we come hither: since that thy sight, which should
Make our eyes flow with joy, hearts dance with comforts,
Constrains them weep, and shake with fear and sorrow;
Making thy mother, wife, and child, to see
The son, the husband, and the father, tearing
His country's bowels out. And to poor we,
Thine enmity 's most capital: thou barr'st us
Our prayers to the gods, which is a comfort
That all but we enjoy: For how can we,
Alas! how can we for our country pray,
Whereto we are bound; together with thy victory,
Whereto we are bound? Alack! or we must lose
The country, our dear nurse; or else thy person,
Our comfort in the country. We must find
An evident calamity, though we had
Our wish, which side should win: for either thou
Must, as a foreign recreant, be led

* Gust. † Betray.

With manacles thorough our streets, or else
Triumphantly tread on thy country's ruin;
And bear the palm, for having bravely shed
Thy wife and children's blood. For myself, son,
I purpose not to wait on fortune, till
These wars determine:* if I cannot persuade thee
Rather to show a noble grace to both parts,
Than seek the end of one, thou shalt no sooner
March to assault thy country, than to tread
(Trust to't, thou shalt not) on thy mother's womb,
That brought thee to this world.

*Vir.* Ay, and on mine,
That brought you forth this boy, to keep your name
Living to time.

*Boy.* He shall not tread on me;
I'll run away, till I am bigger, but then I'll fight.

*Cor.* Not of a woman's tenderness to be,
Requires nor child nor woman's face to see.
I have sat too long. [*Rising.*

*Vol.* Nay go not from us thus.
If it were so, that our request did tend
To save the Romans, thereby to destroy
The Volces whom you serve, you might condemn us,
As poisonous of your honour: No; our suit
Is, that you reconcile them: while the Volces
May say, *This mercy we have show'd;* the Romans,
*This we received;* and each in either side
Give the all-hail to thee, and cry, *Be bless'd*
*For making up this peace!* Thou know'st, great son,
The end of war 's uncertain; but this certain,
That, if thou conquer Rome, the benefit
Which thou shalt thereby reap, is such a name,
Whose repetition will be dogg'd with curses;
Whose chronicle thus writ,—*The man was noble,*
*But with his last attempt he wiped it out;*
*Destroy'd his country; and his name remains*
*To the ensuing age, abhorr'd.* Speak to me, son:
Thou hast affected the fine strains† of honour,
To imitate the graces of the gods;
To tear with thunder the wide cheeks o' the air,
And yet to charge thy sulphur with a bolt
That should but rive an oak. Why dost not speak?
Think'st thou it honourable for a noble man
Still to remember wrongs?—Daughter, speak you:
He cares not for your weeping.—Speak thou, boy:
Perhaps, thy childishness will move him more
Than can our reasons.—There is no man in the world
More bound to his mother; yet here he lets me prate
Like one i' the stocks. Thou hast never in thy life
Show'd thy dear mother any courtesy;
When she (poor hen!) fond of no second brood,
Has cluck'd thee to the wars, and safely home,
Loaden with honour. Say, my request 's unjust,
And spurn me back: But, if it be not so,
Thou art not honest; and the gods will plague thee,

* Conclude. † Refinements.

That thou restrain'st from me the duty, which
To a mother's part belongs. He turns away:
Down, ladies; let us shame him with our knees.
To his surname Coriolanus 'longs more pride,
Than pity to our prayers. Down; an end:
This is the last:—So we will home to Rome,
And die among our neighbours.—Nay, behold us:
This boy, that cannot tell what he would have,
But kneels, and holds up hands, for fellowship,
Does reason* our petition with more strength
Than thou hast to deny't.—Come, let us go:
This fellow had a Volcian to his mother;
His wife is in Corioli, and his child
Like him by chance:—Yet give us our despatch:
I am hush'd until our city be afire,
And then I'll speak a little.

*Cor.* O, mother, mother! [*Holding* VOLUM. *by the hands, silent.*
What have you done? Behold, the heavens do ope,
The gods look down, and this unnatural scene
They laugh at. O my mother, mother! O!
You have won a happy victory to Rome:
But, for your son,—believe it, O, believe it,
Most dangerously you have with him prevail'd,
If not most mortal to him. But, let it come:
Aufidius, though I cannot make true wars,
I'll frame convenient peace. Now, good Aufidius,
Were you in my stead, say, would you have heard
A mother less? or granted less, Aufidius?

*Auf.* I was moved withal.

*Cor.* I dare be sworn, you were:
And, Sir, it is no little thing, to make
Mine eyes to sweat compassion. But, good Sir,
What peace you'll make, advise me; For my part,
I'll not to Rome, I'll back with you; and pray you,
Stand to me in this cause.—O mother! wife!

*Auf.* I am glad, thou hast set thy mercy and thy honour
At difference in thee: out of that I'll work
Myself a† former fortune. [*Aside.*

[*The ladies make signs to* CORIOLANUS.

*Cor.* Ay, by-and-by; [*To* VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, *&c.*
But we will drink together; and you shall bear
A better witness back than words, which we,
On like conditions, will have counter-seal'd.
Come, enter with us. Ladies, you deserve
To have a temple built you: all the swords
In Italy, and her confederate arms,
Could not have made this peace. [*Exeunt.*

## *SCENE IV.—Rome. A public place.*

*Enter* MENENIUS *and* SICINIUS.

*Men.* See you yond' coign‡ o' the Capitol: yond' corner stone?

*Sic.* Why, what of that?

*Men.* If it be possible for you to displace it with your little finger, there is some hope the ladies of Rome, especially his

* Argue for. † *I. e. my* former. ‡ Angle.

mother, may prevail with him. But I say, there is no hope in't; our throats are sentenced, and stay* upon execution.

*Sic.* Is't possible, that so short a time can alter the condition of a man?

*Men.* There is differency between a grub, and a butterfly; yet your butterfly was a grub. This Marcius is grown from man to dragon: he has wings; he's more than a creeping thing.

*Sic.* He loved his mother dearly.

*Men.* So did he me: and he no more remembers his mother now, than an eight year old horse. The tartness of his face sours ripe grapes. When he walks, he moves like an engine, and the ground shrinks before his treading. He is able to pierce a corslet with his eye; talks like a knell, and his hum is a battery. He sits in his state,† as a thing made‡ for Alexander. What he bids be done, is finished with his bidding. He wants nothing of a god but eternity, and a heaven to throne in.

*Sic.* Yes, mercy, if you report him truly.

*Men.* I paint him in the character. Mark what mercy his mother shall bring from him: There is no more mercy in him, than there is milk in a male tiger; that shall our poor city find: and all this is 'long of you.

*Sic.* The gods be good unto us!

*Men.* No, in such a case the gods will not be good unto us. When we banished him, we respected not them: and, he returning to break our necks, they respect not us.

*Enter a* MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Sir, if you'd save your life, fly to your house;
The plebeians have got your fellow-tribune,
And hale him up and down; all swearing, if
The Roman ladies bring not comfort home,
They'll give him death by inches.

*Enter another* MESSENGER.

*Sic.* What's the news?

*Mess.* Good news, good news;—The ladies have prevail'd,
The Volces are dislodged, and Marcius gone:
A merrier day did never yet greet Rome,
No, not the expulsion of the Tarquins.

*Sic.* Friend,
Art thou certain this is true? is it most certain?

*Mess.* As certain as I know the sun is fire:
Where have you lurk'd, that you make doubt of it?
Ne'er through an arch so hurried the blown tide,
As the recomforted through the gates. Why, hark you;
[*Trumpets and Hautboys sounded, and Drums beaten, all together. Shouting also within.*
The trumpets, sackbuts, psalteries, and fifes,
Tabors, and cymbals, and the shouting Romans,
Make the sun dance. Hark you! [*Shouting again.*

*Men.* This is good news:
I will go meet the ladies. This Volumnia
Is worth of consuls, senators, patricians,
A city full: of tribunes, such as you,
A sea and land full: You have pray'd well to-day;

* Stay but for. † Chair of state. ‡ To resemble.

This morning, for ten thousand of your throats
I'd not have given a doit. Hark, how they joy!
[*Shouting and Music.*

*Sic.* First, the gods bless you for their tidings: next,
Accept my thankfulness.

*Mess.* Sir, we have all
Great cause to give great thanks.

*Sic.* They are near the city?

*Mess.* Almost at point to enter.

*Sic.* We will meet them, and help the joy. [*Going.*

*Enter the Ladies, accompanied by* SENATORS, PATRICIANS, *and People. They pass over the Stage.*

1 *Sen.* Behold our patroness, the life of Rome:
Call all your tribes together, praise the gods,
And make triumphant fires; strew flowers before them:
Unshout the noise that banish'd Marcius,
Repeal* him with the welcome of his mother;
Cry,—Welcome, ladies, welcome!—

*All.* Welcome, ladies!
Welcome! [*A flourish with Drums and Trumpets. Exeunt.*

## *SCENE V.—Antium. A Public Place.*

*Enter* TULLUS AUFIDIUS, *with Attendants.*

*Auf.* Go tell the lords of the city, I am here:
Deliver them this paper: having read it,
Bid them repair to the market-place; where I,
Even in theirs and in the commons' ears,
Will vouch the truth of it. Him I accuse,
The city ports† by this hath enter'd, and
Intends to appear before the people, hoping
To purge himself with words: Despatch. [*Exeunt Attendants.*

*Enter Three or Four* CONSPIRATORS *of* AUFIDIUS'S *Faction.*

Most welcome!

1 *Con.* How is it with our general?

*Auf.* Even so,
As with a man by his own alms empoison'd,
And with his charity slain.

2 *Con.* Most noble Sir,
If you do hold the same intent wherein
You wish'd us parties, we'll deliver you
Of your great danger.

*Auf.* Sir, I cannot tell;
We must proceed, as we do find the people.

3 *Con.* The people will remain uncertain, whilst
'Twixt you there's difference; but the fall of either
Makes the survivor heir of all.

*Auf.* I know it;
And my pretext to strike at him admits
A good construction. I raised him, and I pawn'd
Mine honour for his truth: Who being so heighten'd,
He water'd his new plants with dews of flattery,
Seducing so my friends: and, to this end,
He bow'd his nature, never known before
But to be rough, unswayable, and free.

* Recall. † Gates.

3 *Con.* Sir, his stoutness,
When he did stand for consul, which he lost
By lack of stooping,——
*Auf.* That I would have spoke of:
Being banish'd for't he came unto my hearth;
Presented to my knife his throat: I took him;
Made him joint-servant with me: gave him way
In all his own desires; nay, let him choose
Out of my files, his projects to accomplish,
My best and freshest men; served his designments
In mine own person; holp* to reap the fame,
Which he did end all his; and took some pride
To do myself this wrong: till, at the last,
I seem'd his follower, not partner; and
He waged me with his countenance,† as if
I had been mercenary.
1 *Con.* So he did, my lord:
The army marvell'd at it. And, in the last,
When he had carried Rome; and that we look'd
For no less spoil, than glory,——
*Auf.* There was it;
For which my sinews shall be stretch'd upon him.
At a few drops of women's rheum,‡ which are
As cheap as lies, he sold the blood and labour
Of our great action; Therefore shall he die,
And I'll renew me in his fall. But, hark!
[*Drums and Trumpets sound, with great shouts of the People.*
1 *Con.* Your native town you enter'd like a post,
And had no welcomes home; but he returns,
Splitting the air with noise.
2 *Con.* And patient fools,
Whose children he hath slain, their base throats tear,
With giving him glory.
3 *Con.* Therefore, at your vantage,
Ere he express himself, or move the people
With what he would say, let him feel your sword,
Which we will second. When he lies along,
After your way his tale pronounced shall bury
His reasons with his body.
*Auf.* Say no more;
Here come the lords.

*Enter the* LORDS *of the City.*

*Lords.* You are most welcome home.
*Auf.* I have not deserved it.
But, worthy lords, have you with heed perused
What I have written to you?
*Lords.* We have.
1 *Lord.* And grieve to hear it.
What faults he made before the last, I think,
Might have found easy fines: but there to end,
Where he was to begin; and give away
The benefit of our levies, answering us
With our own charge;§ making a treaty, where
There was a yielding; This admits no excuse.

* Helped.
‡ Tears.
† Thought me rewarded with good looks.
§ Rewarding us with our own expenses.

*Auf.* He approaches, you shall hear him.

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, *with Drums and Colours; a Crowd of* CITIZENS *with him.*

*Cor.* Hail, lords! I am return'd your soldier;
No more infected with my country's love,
Than when I parted hence, but still subsisting
Under your great command. You are to know,
That prosperously I have attempted, and
With bloody passage, led your wars, even to
The gates of Rome. Our spoils we have brought home,
Do more than counterpoise, a full third part,
The charges of the action. We have made peace,
With no less honour to the Antiates,
Than shame to the Romans: And we here deliver,
Subscribed by the consuls and patricians,
Together with the seal o' the senate, what
We have compounded on.

*Auf.* Read it not, noble lords;
But tell the traitor, in the highest degree
He hath abused your powers.

*Cor.* Traitor!—How now?

*Auf.* Ay, traitor, Marcius.

*Cor.* Marcius!

*Auf.* Ay, Marcius, Caius Marcius; Dost thou think
I'll grace thee with that robbery, thy stol'n name
Coriolanus in Corioli?—
You lords and heads of the state, perfidiously
He has betray'd your business, and given up
For certain drops of salt,* your city Rome
(I say, your city), to his wife and mother:
Breaking his oath and resolution, like
A twist of rotten silk; never admitting
Counsel o' the war; but at his nurse's tears
He whined and roar'd away your victory;
That pages blush'd at him, and men of heart
Look'd wondering each at other.

*Cor.* Hear'st thou, Mars?

*Auf.* Name not the god, thou boy of tears,—

*Cor.* Ha!

*Auf.* No more.†

*Cor.* Measureless liar, thou hast made my heart
Too great for what contains it. Boy! O slave!
Pardon me, lords, 'tis the first time that ever
I was forced to scold. Your judgments, my grave lords,
Must give this cur the lie: and his own notion
(Who wears my stripes impress'd on him; that must bear
My beating to his grave); shall join to thrust
The lie unto him.

1 *Lord.* Peace, both, and hear me speak.

*Cor.* Cut me to pieces, Volces; men and lads,
Stain all your edges on me.—Boy! False hound!
If you have writ your annals true, 'tis there,
That like an eagle in a dove-cote, I
Flutter'd your Volces in Corioli:
Alone I did it.—Boy!

* Drops of tears. † No more than a boy of tears.

*Auf.* Why, noble lords,
Will you be put in mind of his blind fortune,
Which was your shame, by this unholy braggart,
'Fore your own eyes and ears?
*Con.* Let him die for't. [*Several speak at once.*
Citizens. [*Speaking promiscuously.*] Tear him to pieces, do it presently. He killed my son;—my daughter;—He killed my cousin Marcus;—He killed my father.—
2 *Lord.* Peace, ho;—no outrage;—peace.
The man is noble, and his fame folds in
This orb o' the earth.* His last offence to us
Shall have judicious† hearing.—Stand, Aufidius,
And trouble not the peace.
*Cor.* O, that I had him,
With six Aufidiuses, or more, his tribe,
To use my lawful sword!
*Auf.* Insolent villain!
*Con.* Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill him.
[AUFIDIUS *and the* CONSPIRATORS *draw, and kill* CORIOLANUS, *who falls, and* AUFIDIUS *stands on him.*
*Lords.* Hold, hold, hold, hold.
*Auf.* My noble masters, hear me speak.
1 *Lord.* O Tullus,—
2 *Lord.* Thou hast done a deed whereat valour will weep.
3 *Lord.* Tread not upon him.—Masters all, be quiet;
Put up your swords.
*Auf.* My lords, when you shall know (as in this rage,
Provoked by him, you cannot), the great danger
Which this man's life did owe you, you'll rejoice
That he is thus cut off. Please it your honours
To call me to your senate, I'll deliver
Myself your loyal servant, or endure
Your heaviest censure.
1 *Lord.* Bear from hence his body,
And mourn you for him: let him be regarded
As the most noble corse, that ever herald
Did follow to his urn.
2 *Lord.* His own impatience
Takes from Aufidius a great part of blame.
Let's make the best of it.
*Auf.* My rage is gone,
And I am struck with sorrow.—Take him up:
Help, three o' the chiefest soldiers: I'll be one.—
Beat thou the drum, that it speak mournfully:
Trail your steel pikes.—Though in this city he
Hath widow'd and unchilded many a one,
Which to this hour bewail the injury,
Yet he shall have a noble memory.‡—
Assist. [*Exeunt, bearing the body of* CORIOLANUS.
*A dead March sounded.*

* Overspreads the world. † Judicial. ‡ Memorial.

END OF VOL. III.

PRINTED BY COX (BROTHERS) AND WYMAN, GREAT QUEEN STREET.